



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2019

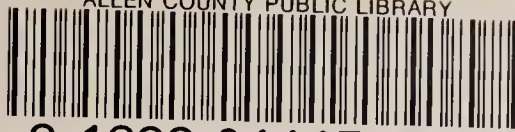
<https://archive.org/details/historyofsalemma02perl>

GEN

ATTENTION:
BAR CODE IS LOCATED
INSIDE OF BOOK!!!



ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01115 3738

Gc 974.402 Sa32pe v.2 1638-1670
Perley, Sidney
The history of Salem,
Massachusetts



A.W. Elson & Co., Belmont, Mass.

George Corwin

THE
HISTORY OF SALEM
MASSACHUSETTS

By SIDNEY PERLEY

Author of

History of Boxford; Goodridge Memorial; Poets of Essex County;
Historic Storms of New England; Dwellings of Box-
ford; Indian Land Titles of Essex County;
Hovey Book; Plumer Genealogy; etc.

VOLUME II
1638—1670

SALEM, MASS.
SIDNEY PERLEY
1926

Allen County Public Library
900 Webster Street
PO Box 2270
Fort Wayne, IN 46801-2270

PREFACE

1236191



THIS volume of the History of Salem relates to the beginning of the fisheries and commerce of the town, of salt and glass making, education, construction of highways and bridges, taverns, fortifications, mills, establishment of the Cape Ann Side and Salem Village parishes and the towns of Wenham, Manchester, Marblehead and Beverly, the persecution of the Quakers and the general development of the town.

In this volume appear the existing pictures of the earliest dwelling houses.

The photogravure frontispiece is a portrait of Capt. George Corwin, the wealthiest and most prominent of the merchants of his time. It was painted about two hundred and fifty years ago, but the name of the artist is unknown. Captain Corwin was commander of the troop of horse, and as a part of his costume, shown in the portrait, is the scarf he wore at the head of his troopers. The portrait, neckcloth and silver-headed cane are in the possession of the Essex Institute. In 1798, the painting was possessed by his great-grandson Samuel Curwin, and, in 1802, by Dr. William Bentley. It was then in an injured condition, —the extreme parts being separated, but the face was untouched. Doctor Bentley had purchased it of the family, in the spring of the year last named, for half a guinea. The Italian artist, Michele Felice Corné, from Naples, was in Salem at that

time, teaching art and painting, and he repaired it as much as he could without changing the original.

SIDNEY PERLEY.

Salem, Mass., May 4, 1926.

CONTENTS

Chapter I.	SALT MAKING,	Page 1
	II. THE GAME PRESERVE,	18
	III. THE GLASS WORKS,	30
	IV. ENLARGING THE MEETING HOUSE,	60
	V. DEPARTURE OF HUGH PETER,	65
	VI. THE FIRST SCHOOL,	91
	VII. FEDERATION OF THE COLONIES,	97
	VIII. THE BRIDGE,	130
	IX. WENHAM,	147
	X. MONSIEUR DE LA TOUR,	155
	XI. MANCHESTER,	172
	XII. SHIP TAVERN,	176
	XIII. MARBLEHEAD,	196
	XIV. FORT ON WINTER ISLAND,	203
	XV. QUAKER PERSECUTION,	242
	XVI. REV. JOHN HIGGINSON,	276
	XVII. BELLINGHAM AND DENISON GRANTS,	294
	XVIII. THE SOUTH MILLS,	336
	XIX. COMMERCE,	346
	XX. THE PRISON,	374
	XXI. BEVERLY,	406
	XXII. NEW MEETING HOUSE,	419
	XXIII. SALEM VILLAGE PARISH,	435
	INDEX,	447

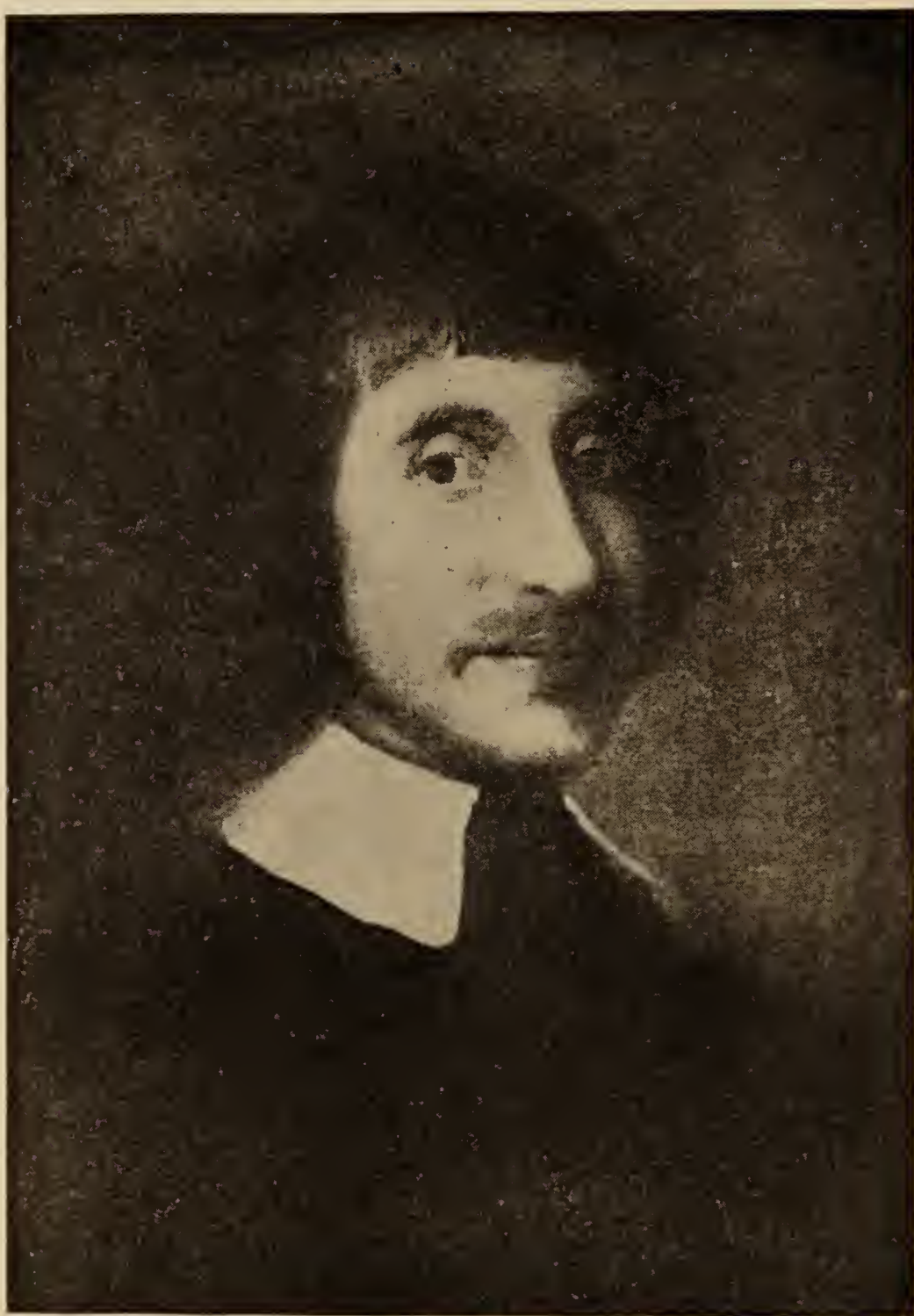
LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

Portrait and Autograph of Capt. George Corwin,	<i>Frontispiece</i>
Portrait and Autograph of John Winthrop, jr.,	I
Autograph of Richard More,	I
Gravestone of Richard More,	2
Autograph of John Coit,	2
Autograph of William Robinson,	3
Autograph of Samuel Corning,	II
Autograph of Samuel Smith,	12
Autograph of Nathaniel Pickman,	15
Autograph of Robert Hubbard,	15
Map of Salt House Point,	16
Autograph of Emmanuel Downing,	19
Autograph of William Flint,	19
Autograph of Roger Preston,	22
Autograph of John Procter,	22
Coy Pond,	25
Plan of the Game Preserve,	26
House of Emmanuel Downing,	27
Portrait and autograph of Sir George Downing,	29
Plan of the Pester grant,	31
The Osborne house,	33
Autograph of Robert Prince,	33
Capt. George Corwin's coat of arms,	39
View of Glass House field,	57
Plan of Glass House field,	58
Autograph of Esdras Reade,	62
Autograph of Henry Birdsall,	64
Seven Men's bounds,	67
Autograph of Thomas Pickton,	69
Autograph of Henry Silsbee,	70
Autograph of Nicholas Patch,	70
Autograph of Elizabeth Nickson,	73
Autograph of Richard Prince,	74
Autograph of John Marston,	78
Autograph of Rev. Edward Norris,	82
Plan of Norris grant,	83
Title page of Hugh Peter's "Legacy,"	89
Autograph of Edward Norris, jr.,	91
Autograph of Daniel Epes,	92

House of Daniel Epes,	95
Autograph of Joseph Dallever,	97
Autograph of Thomas Robbins,	120
Autograph of Walter Price,	120
Autograph of John Neale,	122
Autograph of Henry Reinolds,	125
Autograph of Thomas Wheeler,	132
Autograph of John Bullfinch,	133
Pillory,	134
Autograph of John Kitchen,	135
Autograph of John Reeves,	140
Autograph of Philip Cromwell,	142
Map of Essex County, 1643,	145
Map of Wenham,	147
Autograph of John Thurston,	149
Autograph of Daniel Rumball,	156
Autograph of David Carwithy,	157
Autograph of John Porter,	161
John Porter house,	164
Autograph of Henry True,	165
Townsend Bishop house,	168
Map of Manchester,	173
Autograph of Edward Bishop,	180
Cabot Street bridge,	181
Butts bridge,	182
Horse bridge,	186
Ferry landing at Draper's point,	190
Friends' grist mill,	191
Autograph of Elias Mason,	194
Map of Marblehead,	197
Autograph of John Tucker,	203
Autograph of James Patch,	203
Autograph of John Hill,	203
Autograph of Thomas Rix,	205
Pine Tree shilling (both sides),	214
Autograph of Thomas Barnes,	216
Broad Street burying ground,	219
Plan of Putnam's grant,	219
Plan of Broad Street burying ground;	220
John Beckett house,	223
Autograph of John Beckett,	223
Whipping post,	226
Autograph of Joseph Miles,	233
Autograph of Samuel Pickman,	233
House of John Mason,	235
Autograph of John Croade,	235
Lawrence Southwick house,	245
Nicholas Phelps house,	249
Letter of Lawrence Southwick and others,	251
Autograph of Winlock Christoson,	265
Autograph of Thomas Maule,	271

Thomas Maule house,	272
Quaker meeting house,	273
Autograph of Richard Harvey,	279
Autograph of George Keazer,	280
John Pickering house,	281
Pickering fireback,	281
Autograph of John Sampson,	282
Autograph of Hugh Jones,	283
Plan of Parsonage lot, Salem,	286
Portrait and autograph of Rev. John Higginson,	287
Autograph of Bray Wilkins,	294
Autograph of John Gingell,	294
Plan of Bellingham and Denison grants,	296
View of the Pond and Hill (Middleton),	297
Autograph of Timothy Lindall,	298
Autograph of Joseph Holton,	299
Autograph of William Lake,	303
Autograph of Mathew Price,	304
Woodcock house,	307
Autograph of William Woodcock,	307
Autograph of William Seagrave,	308
Plan of house lots,	308
Christopher Babbidge house,	309
Staircase in Babbidge house,	310
Autograph of Christopher Babbidge,	313
Richard Sibley house,	314
Autograph of Isaac Hull,	316
Ruck House,	317
Autograph of Anthony Ashby,	318
Goodale house,	319
Layout of house lots,	321
Autograph of Stephen Haskett,	321
Autograph of John Baxter,	323
Autograph of Joseph Phippen,	327
Autograph of William Downton,	332
Autograph of Edward Humber,	332
Autograph of Gilbert Tapley,	332
Downing grant,	333
Joseph Porter house,	334
South Mills,	338
Plan of South Mills site,	342
New Road to Marblehead,	343
Forest River bridge,	345
Grants at Burying point,	354
Location of Wharves,	355
Autograph of William Curtis,	375
Autograph of James Hadlock,	375
Autograph of Samuel Beadle,	385
Autograph of Richard Croade,	388
Autograph of Nicholas Manning,	388
Autograph of Henry Colburn,	391

Log bridge,	395
Exercise Conant house,	396
Autograph of Elisha Kebee,	396
Autograph of Alister Macmillan,	399
Autograph of Michael Coombs,	403
Autograph of Edmond Counter,	404
Parsonage lot, Beverly,	407
Autograph of Rev. Jeremiah Hubbard,	409
Autograph of Rev. John Hale,	410
Map of Beverly,	417
Wadsworth burying ground (Danvers),	419
Autograph of James Browne,	420
Trask burying ground,	421
George Gardner house,	423
Autograph of Peter Harvey,	423
Mansfield house,	424
Post in Mansfield house,	424
Autograph of Thomas Ives,	424
Joseph Houlton house,	427
John Day house,	428
Map of Salem Village Parish,	441
Autograph of Rev. James Bayley,	441



Jo En Swinbrop

HISTORY OF SALEM

CHAPTER I.

SALT MAKING.



AMONG the passengers who came to America on the ship Mayflower in 1620 were three children of one family. Why they came without their parents is unknown. These were Richard, Ellen and Jasper More. Richard was twelve years of age; Jasper was called "a child," and died the first winter; and Ellen was called "a little girl." Richard came with the family of William Brewster, Jasper with the family of John Carver and Ellen with the family of Edward Winslow. The heads of all these families became governors of Plymouth Colony and, with William Bradford, were the leading men in that colony. Richard More¹ became a mariner and settled in Salem, where he was received an inhabitant Jan. 1, 1637-8. At the same time he was granted by the town of Salem half an acre of land "on (Darb) the neck." Captain More freighted along the coast from here to the West Indies and between England and this country. He lived where the Salem Hospital formerly stood on Charter Street, and had his wharf where the Lydia E. Pinkham Memorial now stands, in the rear of his house. His family burial place was at the northeasterly corner of the first addition (marked *A* on the plan in volume I, page

Richard: More

¹RICHARD MORE¹ married, first, Christian —, who died March 18, 1676, at the age of sixty; married, second, Jane —, who died Oct. 8 (5?), 1686, aged fifty-five; he died in 1696; children, baptized in Salem: 1. *Samuel*,² baptized March 6, 1642; 2. *Thomas*,² baptized March 6, 1642; 3. *Caleb*,² baptized March 31, 1644; died Jan. 4, 1674-5, aged "thirty-four;" 4. *Joshua*,² baptized May 3, 1646; 5. *Richard*,² baptized Jan. 2, 1647-8; 6. *Susanna*,² baptized May 12, 1650; married Samuel Dutch; 7. *Christian*,² baptized Sept. 5, 1652; married Joshua Conant.

183) to the Charter Street burying ground;¹ and, Jan. 22, 1678-9, the selectmen allowed him to fence in "his wife's and son Caleb's graves about fourteen foot in length & about ten foot in breadth." He died in 1696, and his remains lie with theirs. His is the only marked grave of the passengers of the Mayflower on its initial voyage in 1620.



Jan. 1, 1637-8, the inhabitants of Marblehead were taxed eight pounds of the rate of one hundred and twenty pounds of Salem, as follows (the number before each name probably has reference to the number of acres of land possessed by them there): 140 Moses Maverick; 150 Wm Stephens; 40 Archibald Tomson; 20 Wm Charles; 20 John Heart; 50 John Peach; 10 John Lyon; 20 Anthony Thatcher; 30 John Goite;¹ 20 Richard Seeres;² 10 Richard Greeneway; 20 John Gatchell; 20 Samuel Gatchell;³ 15 John Bennett;⁴ 15 Wakefield;⁵ 10 Erasmus James; 30 Thomas Gray; 50 John Deuerux; 30 Nicholas Meriott; 10

John Coit

SAMUEL MORE;² married Sarah —; child: 1. Samuel,³ born Nov. 15, 1673; died Nov. 24, 1673. RICHARD MORE²; master mariner; married Sarah —; lived in Salem: 1. —,³ baptized Dec. —, 1674; 2. Thomas,³ baptized June 1, 1679; 3. Christian,³ baptized Aug. —, 1681; 4. Sarah,³ baptized Jan. —, 1683-4; 5. Caleb,³ baptized April 15, 1688.

¹John Goyte (Coit) lived in Dorchester in 1635; removed to Marblehead, then to Gloucester in 1646 and about 1651 to New London, Conn., where he died Aug. 29, 1659. His wife was named Mary. Children: 1. John; lived in Gloucester; married Mary Stephens of Gloucester May 21, 1652; died there in the winter of 1661-2; she survived him; 2. Joseph, baptized in Salem July 30, 1643; 3. Mary, baptized in Salem July 30, 1643; 4. Mary (Martha?), baptized in Salem March 17, 1644-5. There were other children.

²Richard Sears was a trader; lived in Plymouth in 1630, and removed to Marblehead; married Dorothy —; died in 1676; children: 1. Knyvett, born in 1635; 2. Paul, born in 1637; 3. Silas, born in 1639. (Perhaps he had a daughter Deborah, who married Zechariah Paddock in 1639.)

³Samuel Gatchell, brother to John Gatchell; husbandman; of Hampton in 1644 and of Salisbury in 1648; married Dorcas —; living in 1670; she died June 12, 1685; children: 1. Susanna; married Joseph Norton March 10, 1662; 2. Samuel, born about 1636; mariner; lived in Marblehead in 1679; married Bethiah — before 1669; 3. Joseph; living in 1677; 4. Priscilla, born Feb. 26, 1649; married Solomon Ramsford.

⁴John Bennett lived in Marblehead, and removed to New London; married Margaret —; died in the spring of 1663; she survived him; child: 1. Mary, baptized in Salem Sept. 2, 1638; married Elias White.

⁵John Wakefield probably removed to Plymouth in 1639, and to Wells in 1656; probably married Elizabeth, widow of Edmund Littlefield.

William Wakefield, who married Rebecca Littlefield in Salem March 13, 1698-9, may have been of this family.

Abraham Whitehaire; 5 George Vicary;¹ 5 John Russell;² 5 Nicholas Listin; 5 Philip Beare.

There were many persons admitted inhabitants of the town in 1638, and much land was granted to them. Jan. 1, 1637-8, the town granted to John Gedney eighty acres of land, six acres of it being meadow, "lying near to Mr. Gardner."

Jan. 15, 1637-8, Francis Felmingham was granted by the town two hundred acres of land "about the great pond or out that way." This tract was located northerly of the main street, in Wenham, from the meeting house to the Hamilton line.

Jan. 29, 1637-8, the town granted to Richard Thurston a ten-acre lot. Richard Bartholomew³ was received an inhabitant and granted ten acres of land. Five acres of land was granted to widow Greene. Mr. Bacheller and Robert Moulton, jr., desired accommodation of land for a farm for each. There was granted to Edmond Marshall, Richard Rootes, Richard Norman, Joseph Pope, Mrs. Felton, William Robinson,⁴ James Standish and George Harris twenty acres a piece that was Mr. Thorndike's; and also to

William Robinson

John Tomkins five acres of land lying by his other five acres. Mr. Stilman requested enlargement for himself and accommodation for his son. John Webster, a baker, was received as an inhabitant and granted five acres of land. William Hathorne was granted a ten-acre lot near the mill. Mr. Garford and William Lord were granted fifty acres each; Mr. Emery forty acres near Mackerel Cove; and Nicholas Woodbury a ten-acre lot. Joseph Hull was received as an inhabitant and granted two hundred acres of land. Robert Morgaine was granted twenty-five acres of land; Thomas Lothrop fifty, Humphrey Woodbury forty and Thomas Browning sixty.

¹George Vickery married Rebecca Phippeny (daughter of David); and removed to Hull alias Nantucket, Suffolk County, Massachusetts, where they were living in 1650 and 1672.

²John Russell lived in Marblehead in 1641; and had a wife in 1643.

³Richard Bartholomew was apparently a merchant and unmarried, and died, probably on a voyage to London, in the early spring of 1646, leaving his brothers Henry, William, Thomas and Abraham and sister Sara. His mother was then living.

⁴WILLIAM ROBINSON¹ lived in that part of Salem which is now Peabody; tailor; married Isabelle —; she died first; and he died in the summer of 1678; children: 1. Joseph²; eldest son; married; lived in Barbadoes in 1677; no children; 2. Anna,² baptized Dec. 3, 1637; 3. Samuel,² baptized Dec. 26, 1639; 4. John²; 5. Mary,² baptized March 12, 1642-3; probably married John Gooss June 18, 1665; 6. Timothy,² baptized April 28, 1644; 7. Martha,² born Feb. 2, 1645-6; died Feb. 5, 1645-6; 8. Sarah²; married — Newbury before 1677; 9. Hester,² baptized May 28, 1654.

Feb. 24, 1637-8, Lieutenant Davenport delivered up his farm to the town, and was promised one in another place. Michael Lambert¹ was granted half an acre in Winter Harbor, if he shall inhabit there, which he did not do. Richard Adams had his five acres of land changed to some land at the mill. He was also granted some land to set a house on near Lieutenant Davenport's; and Mr. Fiske one hundred and fifty acres of land for a farm. There was granted to Mr. Stileman twenty acres of land near the meadow which Mr. Weston and he had; to Mr. Stileman's son thirty acres near his father; to Mr. Bacheller sixty acres for a farm; and to Robert Moulton, jr., forty acres for a farm.

At the general court at Newton, March 12, 1637-8, John Endecott and John Winthrop, jr., and deputies Richard Adams, John Woodbury and Edmond Batter were present. May 2, 1638, it was ordered that the several towns should bear the charges of their magistrates' and deputies' diet and lodging. The deputies who subsequently represented Salem in the general court during the colonial period were as follows: Jacob Barney, 1638, 1647, 1653; Henry Bartholomew, 1645, 1646, 1649-1652, 1654, 1658, 1660, 1662, 1663, 1667, 1669, 1671-1674, 1676, 1684; Edmond Batter, 1642, 1643, 1655, 1661, 1663-1665, 1668, 1670, 1671, 1675, 1677, 1678, 1682, 1685; Townsend Bishop, 1640; William Browne, 1654, 1659, 1666, 1675, 1677, 1680; George Corwin, 1666, 1667, 1669, 1670, 1672, 1674, 1676; John Corwin, 1679; Emanuel Downing, 1639-1641, 1644, 1648; Samuel Gardner,

SAMUEL ROBINSON²; tailor; (wife Jane in 1660?); married Martha Haukins Aug. 15, 1664; died in the autumn of 1723; children: 1. *Samuel*,³ born Dec. 19, 1665; 2. Thomas,³ born July 6, 1667. 3. Mary,³ born Oct. —, 1669; died Aug. —, 1670; 4. William,³ born July 29, 1671; 5. Job,³ born Nov. —, 1672; died Jan. —, 1672-3; 6. Martha,³ born Jan. 20, 1673-4; married, first, William Beans; second, Samuel Pope; 7. Mary³; probably married James Simonds; 8. Elizabeth³; probably married Joseph Prince; 9. Susanna³; probably married John Chubb July 14, 1701; 10. *Abel*,³ born Jan. 14, 1689. JOHN ROBINSON²; tailor; married Sarah Mason Oct. 16, 1665; she was living in 1708, and he in 1727; children: 1. Elias,³ born Jan. 25, 1666-7; 2. John,³ born Nov. 25, 1668; 3. Joseph,³ born Sept. 27, 1670; 4. Sara,³ born Feb. 18, 1672-3. TIMOTHY ROBINSON²; married Mary Kitchen Feb. 20, 1665; died in the spring of 1668; she married, secondly, Thomas Hanson June 3, 1669; child: 1. Timothy,³ born March 15, 1667-8.

SAMUEL ROBINSON³; carter or carman; married Mary — in or before 1680; died in the autumn of 1699; she married, secondly, John Blevin July 29, 1701, and removed to Swanzev before 1716; children: 1. Nathaniel,⁴ born July 3, 1688; 2. Whittemore,⁴ born Jan. 18, 1689-90; 3. Samuel⁴; living in 1699; 4. William,⁴ born Nov. 26, 1698; lived in Swanzev in 1716. ABEL ROBINSON³; married Elizabeth Callum (published Jan. 12, 1710-1); children: 1. *Abel*,⁴ born Oct. 22, 1712; 2. Samuel,⁴ born Jan. 25, 1714-5.

ABEL ROBINSON⁴; lived in Salem, cordwainer, in 1738; married Annie Standley (published Dec. 3, 1735); children: 1. Anne,⁵ baptized June 19, 1737; 2. Elizabeth,⁵ baptized June 18, 1738.

¹Michael Lambert probably removed to Lynn before 1648.

1681, 1682; Bartholomew Gedney, 1678; John Hathorne, 1683; William Hathorne, 1639-1646, 1648-1652, 1654, 1656-1661; Thomas Lothrop, 1647, 1653, 1664; Jeffry Massey, 1639; John Porter, 1668; John Price, 1679; Walter Price, 1665; John Putnam, 1677, 1680, 1686; John Ruck, 1685; William Trask, 1639; and John Woodbury, 1639.

March 12, 1637-8, the general court ordered that thereafter "every town shall present a man to be allowed to sell wine and strong water made in the country and no other strong water is to be sold." Mr. Gott was the one appointed to sell wine and strong water in Salem. John Blackleach, John Holgrave and William Pester had previously sold wine here.

At the same court, it was ordered "that all great cattle shall be herded, and they that plant are to secure their corn in the day-time; but if the cattle do hurt corn in the night, the owners of the cattle shall make good the damages."

At this court, Hugh Peter and William Hawthorne were appointed members of a commission to revise and compile the laws which applied to and were in force in the colony. The literary part of the work was performed by Rev. Nathaniel Ward of Ipswich. It was called the "Body of Liberties," and was adopted by the general court Dec. 10, 1641. Mr. Ward graduated at Emmanuel College, Cambridge, in 1603; and at first practised law for several years, and then adopted theology. He preached in a parish in Hertfordshire for about ten years, and was unceremoniously silenced. He then emigrated to Massachusetts.

The first roads were only foot paths or paths for horseback riding. When the earth was bare, carts with two wheels soon began to be used, and when snow was upon the ground sleds took their place. Roads were not constructed for some years. Neither were they repaired. The first record of the town of this nature was the order, Feb. 15, 1635-6, "that whosoever hath or shall cut any trees and leave [them] in the paths about the town to the disturbance of carts, cattle or passengers" should remove them within fifteen days. March 3, 1637-8, the town voted that highways should be mended by the citizens, under order of Thomas Gardner, Richard Brackenbury and John Balch, as overseers. Aug. 19, 1639, the town first chose surveyors for the mending of highways, Thomas Gardner and Jarvais Garford being elected. Feb. 26, 1643-4, Roger Conant and John Balch were chosen by the town to mend the highway between Wenham and "the head of the river." June 13, 1644, the town ordered that Mr. Downing and Mr. Batter shall be surveyors of the highway towards the mill and the farms "that ways," and Goodman Scruggs and Mr. Conant of the highways "towards Wenham and that

ways." Surveyors of highways are not again mentioned until 1658.¹ They were usually appointed by the selectmen, and frequently called overseers.

Jan. 13, 1644-5, the "seven men" ordered that owners of land and houses next the water side should maintain a good way for horse and man of at least eight feet in width, and be liable for such ways as are defective.

¹April 26, 1658, for Cape Ann Side, were chosen William Dixe and James Patch; for the town, John Neale and William Flint; to Strongwater brook and at Thomas James' and Mr. Gardner's and for the bridges about the Governor's farm, Jacob Barney and Thomas Putnam. Nov. 21, 1658, John Patch was chosen for Cape Ann Side, in the place of his brother.

March 14, 1659-60, from the bridge to the Neck, Thomas Hale and Philip Cromwell; for Cape Ann Side and to Farmer Porter's, Henry Herrick, sr., and John Lovett, sr.; and for the county highways between the bridge and Crane River, etc., John Porter and Thomas Putnam.

Jan. 8, 1660-1, between Frost-fish River and Horse bridge, "as you go to Ipswich," John Porter and Jacob Barney. April 22, 1661, on Cape Ann Side, Thomas Lawthrope and Roger Haskall.

Dec. 23, 1662, for the town to the foot of the hill beyond the bridge, William Flint and John Neale; for Cape Ann Side and Bass River, William Dodge, sr., John Dodge (Richard's son); from Cape Ann Side to the bridge at the town, John Porter and Jacob Barney, sr.; and from Nicholas Phelps' to Thomas Goldthwaite's and thence by the pond by the way to Lynn, Thomas Flint and John Southwick.

Nov. 18, 1664, from the bridge at the end of the town to the lines of the towns of Lynn, Ipswich, Andover and Topsfield, Nathaniel Felton and Samuel Eborne.

March 6, 1666, for Cape Ann Side, Edward Bishop and William Dodge, jr.; beyond Strongwater brook, Richard Leech and Anthony Buckston; and "this side of Strongwater brook," John Neale and John Pickering.

March 12, 1666-7, "from the town to the bridge," Edward Flint and Thomas Robbins; "beyond the bridge," Samuel Aburne and Josiah Southwick; and for Cape Ann Side, Benjamin Balch and Lot Conant.

March 20, 1667-8, from the bridge to the lower part of the town, William Brown, jr., and John Pickering; "beyond the bridge" to Benjamin Scarlet's, William Traske and Samuel Gascoine; "for the farms beyond Ben. Scarlet's," Thomas Putnam, Robert Prince and John Porter; and for Cape Ann Side, William Rayment and John Patch.

July 21, 1669, Nathaniel Putnam, Joshua Rea and Joseph Huchenson were appointed as overseers to mend all country and county highways, beginning at Rum bridge near Benjamin Scarlet's and so to John Procter's and any and everywhere about the farms; and from the bridge or causeway at the town's end and so downwards in all parts of the town "till you come to Mordechaie Crevet's," Henry Bartholmew and Eliezer Hawthorne,

March 18, 1669-70, between the causeway and Winter Island, Edward Flint and Anthony Ashby; and from the causeway or bridge to the farms and to John Procter's and other ways, Anthony Buxton and Jacob Barney, jr.

April 4, 1671, between Strongwater brook and Winter Island, William Flint, John Neal, Joseph Phippen, sr., and John Massey; and from Strongwater brook up to the farms and all other ways, John Southwick and Eleazer Giles.

Nov. 13, 1672, William Flint, Joshua Buffum and Josiah Southwick, "Espetially the Grt bridge at the Townes End and strong Watter brooke."

March 3, 1637-8, Edward Calcott¹ desired to become an inhabitant and to have a ten-acre lot. There was granted to Jeffry Massey and Richard Brackenbury fifty acres of land adjoining the land formerly granted, in consideration that they had fifty acres of rocks granted to them formerly, which was useless.

In the Salem quarterly court, March 27, 1638, there were present as magistrates Colonel Endecott, John Humphrey, Cap-

Jan. 20, 1673-4, between Thomas Cromwell's corner and the town bridge, Captain Price, John Ruck and Edward Flint; and between Thomas Cromwell's to the lower end of the town, Mr. Grafton and Mr. Prince.

March 18, 1676-7, Nehemiah Willoughby and Joshua Buffum were chosen surveyors of highways.

March 13, 1678-9, from the bridge to the lower end of the town, Timothy Lindall and Edward Grove; and above the bridge, Caleb Buffum and Daniel Southwick.

Dec 5, 1679, from the bridge to Lynn or Reading bounds, Eleazer Giles; from Gardner's brook to Mr. Endecott's plain, Nathaniel Felton; and at the Village, Nathaniel Putnam, Thomas Putnam and Sergeant Fuller.

March 15, 1679-80, from the bridge to the lower end of the town, Timothy Lindoll, Edward Grove and Thomas Maule; and from the bridge above or without the town, Joseph Boyce, jr., and John Bleven.

March 21, 1680-1, from the bridge to the point, Lt. John Pickering and Edward Grove; for above or without the bridge, John Trask and Isaac Cook.

March 20, 1681-2, from the bridge to the point of rocks, John Cromwell and James Poland; and above or without the bridge, Samuel Gaskin and Joseph Boyce.

March 19, 1682-3, from the bridge to the point of rocks and the cut, Samuel Wakefield, Caleb Buffum, Mr. Phipeny, sr., and John Ingerson, sr.; and without the bridge, Isaac Cooke, Samuel Gaskin, William Osborne and Joseph Boyce, jr.

March 11, 1683-4, from the bridge to the point of rocks and the cut, Robert Kitchen, Samuel Shattock, jr., John Grafton, Gilbert Taply; and without the bridge, Joshua Buffum and Daniel Southwick.

March 17, 1684-5, from the west end of the bridge and so down to Winter Island, Ens. John Marston, Stephen Sewall, Thomas Ives and Mr. Babedge; and from the bridge to the Butts brook and so to Benjamin Scarlett's, and for the farms, Lt. Israel Porter, Serg. John Leach, Thomas Flint, sr., William Sibly, Jonathan Putnam and Daniel Rea.

March 8, 1685-6, from the west end of the bridge and so to Winter Island, Joseph Phipen, sr., Jonathan Eager, Robert Ketchen and Deliverance Parkman; and from the bridge to the Butts brook and so to Benjamin Scarlett's and for all the farms, Joshua Ray, jr., John Flint, Nathaniel Ingersoll, Edward Putnam, Joseph Pope and Zachariah Goodale.

April 11, 1687, from the bridge to the Butts brook and so to Benjamin Scarlett's, Eleazer Giles and William Osborne; and from the west end of the bridge and so down to Winter Island, Benjamin Marston, Mannasseh Marston, John Rogers and William Curtice, sr.

July 30, 1688, Benjamin Marston, Mannasseh Marston, John Rogers and William Curtice, sr.

March 25, 1689, within the bridge, Lt. John Pickering and Henry Bartholmew, jr.; and from the bridge within Ipswich road, Isaac Cook, William Osborne and Samuel Gardner.

¹Edward Calcott probably removed to Hampton soon afterward.

tain Turner, William Hathorne, Edward Howe and Roger Conant. In this court, from Salem, during the colonial period were John Endecott, who sat constantly until his removal to Boston in 1655; John Humphrey, 1638-1641; William Hathorne, 1638-1647, 1649, 1651, 1652, 1657-1679; Roger Conant, 1638, 1639; John Winthrop, jr., 1638, 1639; John Winthrop, 1639; Emanuel Downing, 1639-1644, 1649; William Browne, 1678-1683; Bartholmew Gedney, 1680-1683; John Hathorne, 1684, 1685.

At this court, on that date, Abram Whiteire was sentenced to sit in the stocks one hour for misdemeanors. Richard Lambert was fined ten shillings and ordered to sit in the stocks on two public days for drunkenness, and Robert Morgan was fined one pound and Edward Hall, servant to Mr. Friend, was fined ten shillings, each for "being overseen in drink." Other kinds or degrees of drunkenness at this period were tippling, common tippling, drinking, much in drink, excessive drinking, suspicion of drunkenness, distempered with drink, disguised with drink, overtaken with drink, overcome with drink and second drunk. It must have been interesting as well as difficult to determine the grades of the offence.

The Salem jurymen at this session were John Woodbury, foreman, Lawrence Leech, Peter Palfrey, Jeffry Massy, Richard Davenport, Thomas Venner and George Norton.¹ The trial jury,

¹The Salem jurymen in this court during the remainder of the colonial period were as follows: John Alderman, 1639-1641, 1647, 1649; William Allen, 1638, 1642; Daniel Andrews, 1676, 1681, 1684; Samuel Archer, 1645, 1647; Anthony Ashby, 1663, 1664, 1670; John Balch, 1638, 1647; Jacob Barney, 1638-1640, 1646, 1652, 1654, 1658, 1660, 1662, 1664, 1667; Henry Bartholomew, 1640, 1641, 1644-1646, 1659, 1661, 1668; John Batchelder, 1683; Joseph Batchelder, 1639; Edmund Batter, 1638-1640, 1649, 1651, 1654, 1666, 1669; Nathaniel Beadle, 1672-1675, 1678, 1684; Samuel Beadle, 1673; Henry Birdsall, 1639; Richard Bishop, 1644, 1647, 1648, 1651, 1653, 1656, 1662, 1664; Townsend Bishop, 1643; John Blackleeche, 1643; William Bowditch, 1679, 1681; Joseph Boyce, 1659; Richard Brackenbury, 1639, 1640, 1649; Edward Bridges, 1676; James Browne, 1665, 1670, 1672; John Browne, 1653, 1657, 1659, 1667, 1673; Jonathan Browne, 1666; William Browne, 1652, 1665, 1667; John Bulfinch, 1643; John Buttolls, 1665; Ezekiel Cheever, 1681; William Clark, 1639; John Clifford, 1671, 1673; Abraham Cole, 1672; Lot Conant, 1666; Roger Conant, 1642, 1644-1646, 1653, 1654, 1657; Isaac Cooke, 1675; Samuel Corning, 1654, 1659, 1661, 1662, 1664; John Corwin, 1666; David Corwithen, 1651, 1654, 1658; Richard Croade, 1679; Philip Cromwell, 1663, 1672, 1676; William Curtice, 1672; Richard Davenport, 1638-1642; William Dixy, 1647, 1649, 1651, 1653, 1655, 1656, 1664, 1666; John Dodge, 1672; William Dodge, 1647, 1653, 1656, 1657, 1661-1663, 1667; Samuel Eborne, 1663; Thomas Edwards, 1644, 1645; Zerubbabel Endecott, 1665; Philip English, 1682, 1685; Daniel Epps, 1678; Benjamin Felton, 1659, 1660; Nathaniel Felton, 1649, 1655, 1664, 1666, 1668, 1669, 1671, 1675, 1683; Edmond (Edward) Feveryear, 1681, 1683; Edward Flint, 1675, 1677, 1680, 1682; Thomas Flint, 1682; William Flint, 1656, 1659, 1668; John Fuller, 1679, 1684; George Gardner, 1647, 1648, 1654,

both civil and criminal, consisted of twelve men, and no super-

1658, 1662, 1665, 1667, 1671; John Gardner, 1660, 1661, 1663, 1668, 1672; Joseph Gardner, 1661, 1662, 1666, 1667, 1670; Samuel Gardner, 1657, 1660, 1661, 1664, 1667, 1669, 1672, 1673, 1678-1680; Thomas Gardner, 1639, 1640, 1642, 1647-1650, 1652-1655, 1657, 1658, 1670, 1673, 1678, 1681; Garvas Garford, 1639, 1642, 1643, 1646; Bartholmew Gedney, 1672, 1675; Eleazer Gedney, 1670; John Gedney, 1639-1641, 1665, 1667, 1668; Benjamin Gerrish, 1679, 1684; Eleazer Giles, 1675, 1678; William Goult, 1657; John Grafton, 1673, 1676, 1680, 1683; Joseph Grafton, 1667, 1676, 1682; Edward Grove, 1676, 1678; Thomas Hale, 1657, 1658, 1660; John Hardy, 1644, 1647, 1650; Joseph Hardy, 1653, 1673, 1679; Roger Haskell, 1655, 1662, 1664; Eleazer Hathorne, 1666, 1668, 1673, 1674, 1676, 1678; John Hathorne, 1648, 1674; Henry Herrick, 1648, 1649, 1653, 1659; John Higginson, 1673, 1674; William Hirst, 1678, 1683, 1684; John Holgrave, 1639, 1653; Richard Hollingworth, 1673; William Hollingworth, 1667; Obadiah Holme, 1642, 1644, 1645; Joseph Holton, 1670; John Horne (Orne), 1654, 1685; Joseph Hutchenson, 1663, 1679, 1683; John Ingersoll, 1669, 1684; Nathaniel Ingerson, 1680; John Jackson, 1645; Thomas Jeggles, 1670, 1673; Ephraim Kempton, 1683; John King, 1669; John Kitchen, 1644-1646, 1651, 1655, 1661; Robert Kitchen, 1680, 1682; William Lake, 1669; Francis Lawes, 1644; John Leach, 1679, 1681; Lawrence Leach, 1638-1640, 1642; Richard Leach, 1654, 1661, 1672; Robert Lemon, 1657; Timothy Lindall, 1678, 1680, 1684; William Lord, 1640, 1642, 1643, 1645, 1649; Thomas Lothrop, 1640, 1641, 1643, 1644, 1646, 1652, 1655, 1657, 1663, 1665, 1668; Nicholas Manning, 1666, 1674; Benjamin Marston, 1681; John Marston, 1678, 1680; Manasseh Marston, 1671, 1674, 1678, 1681; Elias Mason, 1660, 1669, 1671, 1675; Jeffrey Massey, 1638-1642, 1645, 1647, 1649-1653, 1655, 1659-1661; Roger Maury, 1642; John Millord, 1657; Richard Moore, 1653, 1658, 1662, 1664, 1670; James Moulton, 1642; Robert Moulton, 1639-1641, 1644, 1647; Jeremiah Neale, 1676, 1677, 1684; John Neale, 1654, 1665, 1669; John Norman, 1674, 1677, 1682, 1684; George Norton, 1638-1640, 1659; Francis Nurse, 1674, 1675, 1677-1679, 1683; Thomas Oliver, 1664; William Osborne, 1642; Peter Palfrey, 1638, 1640-1642, 1644-1646, 1648-1650; Deliverance Parkman, 1682, 1685; David Phippen, 1681; Joseph Phippen, 1667, 1668, 1683; Samuel Phippen, 1683; John Pickering, 1661, 1664, 1671, 1678, 1681, 1684; Benjamin Pickman, 1682, 1685; Nathaniel Pickman, 1658, 1661; Samuel Pickman (Pitman), 1663, 1671, 1673; Joseph Pope, 1647, 1648, 1654, 1655; Israel Porter, 1674, 1677; John Porter, 1646, 1652, 1654, 1664, 1669; Nathaniel Porter, 1642; John Price, 1674; Walter Price, 1649, 1653, 1656-1658; Richard Prince, 1644, 1645, 1650, 1653, 1654, 1664, 1668, 1672; Richard Pritharch, 1682; John Procter, 1673; John Putnam, 1655, 1657, 1659, 1661, 1665, 1669, 1674, 1676, 1678, 1682-1684; Jonathan Putnam, 1683; Nathaniel Putnam, 1652, 1655, 1658, 1664, 1668, 1670, 1671, 1673, 1677; Thomas Putnam, 1651, 1654, 1660, 1662, 1666, 1668, 1679, 1683; Daniel Ray, 1642, 1649; Joshua Ray, 1666; John Rayment, 1657, 1661, 1662, 1664, 1666; Richard Rayment, 1638, 1642; William Rayment, 1667; Esdras Reade, 1638, 1642; Charles Redford, 1684; Thomas Robbins, 1660, 1665; John Robinson, 1649, 1651; Thomas Rootes, 1659; George Ropes, 1663; John Ruck, 1654, 1661, 1663, 1672, 1678; John Sanders, 1639, 1679; Thomas Scruggs, 1642; Stephen Sewall, 1684; Michael Shafin, 1642, 1654, 1656; Samuel Shattock, 1654, 1684; John Sibley, 1639; Francis Skerry, 1653, 1654, 1656, 1665, 1680; Henry Skerry, 1658, 1659, 1663, 1673; Thomas Spooner, 1644, 1653; James Standish, 1641, 1642; Elias Stilman, 1638, 1640, 1649, 1651-1653; William Sweatland, 1684; John Swinerton, 1652; John Trask, 1677; Habakkuk Turner, 1680; John Turner, 1676; James Underwood, 1652, 1660; Thomas Venner, 1638-1640, 1643; Hilliard Veren, 1650,

numeraries. Each session of the court was for both civil and criminal business. The grand jury¹ consisted of about thirteen

1653, 1655, 1672, 1675, 1679; Philip Verrin, 1638, 1644; Jonathan Walcutt, 1685; Joshua Ward, 1679; Simon Willard, 1683; George Williams, 1639, 1647, 1650, 1653; Isaac Williams, 1660, 1666; John Williams, 1667, 1670, 1674, 1676, 1680; Samuel Williams, 1671, 1680; Nehemiah Willoughby, 1676, 1684; Peter Wolfe, 1639; Humphrey Woodbury, 1657, 1659, 1665; John Woodbury, 1638-1641; William Woodbury, 1649; Edward Woollan, 1673, 1677.

¹The grand jurymen from Salem from 1642 until Sir Edmund Andros suspended the operation of the colonial charter, in 1686, were as follows: Samuel Aborn (Eborne), 1656, 1660, 1661, 1667, 1669, 1673, 1674, 1680, 1681, 1683, 1684; John Alderman, 1643, 1644, 1648, 1649; Daniel Andrews, 1672; Thomas Antrum, 1643, 1659; Anthony Ashby, 1665; Christopher Babbidge, 1666, 1670, 1675, 1676, 1678, 1679, 1681-1684; John Balch, 1642-1644; Jacob Barney, 1642-1644, 1649-1652, 1655, 1670; Henry Bartholmew, 1642-1644, 1647, 1665; Edmond Batter, 1642, 1648-1655, 1658, 1659; Richard Bishop, 1649, 1650, 1653, 1654, 1659; John Blackleech, 1642; Joseph Boyce, 1655; Richard Brackenbury, 1656; William Browne, 1649, 1650, 1653, 1654; Anthony Buxton, 1662, 1663, 1666, 1677, 1680, 1681; Roger Conant, 1643, 1644, 1647, 1649-1652, 1655; Samuel Corning, 1657, 1657; John Corwin, 1672; William Dixy, 1645, 1659, 1661, 1668, 1669; John Dodge, 1664, 1665; William Dodge, 1645, 1658, 1659, 1666; William Dounton, 1682, 1683; Thomas Edwards, 1645; Benjamin Felton, 1666; Nathaniel Felton, 1660, 1661, 1676, 1679, 1680, 1683, 1684; Edward Flint, 1673, 1674, 1676; William Flint, 1662, 1663; Robert Fuller, 1680-1685; Thomas Fuller, 1673, 1674, 1676, 1679, 1680, 1682, 1683; George Gardner, 1655; Thomas Gardner, 1642-1644, 1671, 1672; Gervas Garford, 1642, 1644, 1647; Bartholmew Gedney, 1665; Eleazer Gedney, 1675, 1676; John Gedney, 1644, 1647; Thomas Goldthwaite, 1661; Edward Grove, 1672; John Hardy, 1642; Joseph Hardy, 1682, 1683; Henry Herrick, 1650-1655, 1660-1664, 1667; John Holgrave, 1654, 1655; John Holmes, 1680, 1681; Joseph Houlton, 1684, 1685; Edward Humber, 1665; Joseph Hutchinson, 1661, 1668, 1669, 1674, 1675; John Ingersoll, 1673, 1674; Thomas Jeggles, 1683, 1684; George Keazer, 1668, 1670, 1677, 1679, 1680, 1684, 1685; Allen Keniston, 1644, 1647; William King, 1648, 1649; John Kitchen, 1647, 1653, 1654, 1658; Francis Lawes, 1649, 1650, 1661, 1664; Lawrence Leach, 1642, 1645; John Loomis, 1681, 1682; William Lord, 1642, 1644, 1647; Thomas Lothrop, 1642, 1644, 1647, 1651, 1652; Manasseh Marston, 1682; Jeffrey Massey, 1642-1644, 1652-1656, 1663, 1667; Moses Maverick, 1642, 1645; Jeremiah Meachum, 1677, 1679, 1680; Richard More, 1673, 1674; Jeremiah Neale, 1678, 1679; John Neale, 1648, 1649, 1660-1663, 1667; George Norton, 1657; Francis Nurse, 1671, 1672; Peter Palfrey, 1642, 1647; John Patch, 1663; Joseph Phippen, 1672, 1683-1685; John Pickering, 1668, 1669; Nathaniel Pickman (Pitman), 1671, 1672; John Porter, 1647, 1649-1652, 1656, 1658, 1659, 1666; Walter Price, 1645, 1647, 1650-1653, 1659, 1663, 1668, 1669, 1672; Richard Prince, 1645, 1648, 1649, 1651, 1652; John Putnam, 1663, 1671, 1672; Nathaniel Putnam, 1653, 1654, 1659, 1661, 1665, 1674, 1675, 1681, 1682; Thomas Putnam, 1648, 1649, 1652, 1653, 1655, 1658, 1659, 1672, 1679, 1680; Daniel Ray, 1645; Joshua Ray (Rea), 1664, 1674, 1675, 1680, 1681, 1683; John Rayment, 1653, 1654, 1668, 1669; Esdras Reade, 1643; Charles Redford, 1684; Thomas Rix, 1664, 1676, 1679, 1680; Josiah Rootes, 1665; Thomas Rootes, 1655, 1662-1664, 1669, 1674-1676, 1678; John Ruck, 1657, 1673-1676, 1680, 1681, 1683, 1684; Thomas Scruggs, 1647; Francis Skerry, 1659, 1661, 1663, 1667, 1670, 1673, 1674, 1676, 1678, 1679, 1682, 1683; Henry

or fifteen men. Juries of inquest were composed of twelve men who lived near the scene of the occurrence to be investigated, and were informally requested to serve by the constable.

At a town meeting, March 31, 1638, Mr. Fiske desired enlargement of his farm; and there was granted to John Stratton one hundred acres of land for a farm,¹ and to Elias Stilman an addition of sixteen acres adjoining to his thirty acres. It was then agreed that Mr. Hathorne should have the marsh ground lying before the gunsmith's house or lot, and also the meadow or marsh along to the little brook betwixt the two hills, in consideration of his many employments for the town and country so long as he is continued in such affairs or the like.

On the twenty-third of the next month, at the meeting of the whole town, there was granted to William Hathorne all the salt marsh lying along the South River on the west side from the house of Richard Waters to the little brook called the Frost fish brook, which ran from between the two hills, being about three or four acres. There was also granted to Samuel Corning² one *Samuell Corning* acre of ground next to Mr. Hawthorne, and a five-acre lot on the Forest River side in exchange of it. There was granted to John Pease five acres of land next to Samuel Corning's near the water mill. It was ordered that Mr. Johnson's meadow at Brooksby and the lieutenant's meadow there be laid out within ten days. There was then granted to Samuel Smith³ two hundred acres of land, being fifty more than his

Skerry, 1655, 1660, 1661, 1664; Thomas Spooner, 1643, 1649-1652, 1654, 1655, 1659; Elias Stilman, 1642; Job Swinerton, 1652, 1653, 1675-1677; James Symonds, 1677, 1681, 1682; John Symonds, 1657; John Thorndike, 1653, 1654; William Trask, 1669, 1674, 1675, 1681, 1682; Thomas Trusler, 1648, 1649; Mark Vermais, 1643; Philip Verrin, 1642, 1648; Thomas Watson, 1656; Henry West, 1678, 1679, 1681-1684; Resolved White, 1676; Thomas Wickes, 1654, 1655; Isaac Williams, 1671, 1672; Edward Woolland, 1671, 1672; Humphrey Woodbury, 1666; John Woodbury, 1642-1644, 1647; William Woodbury, 1643, 1644, 1647.

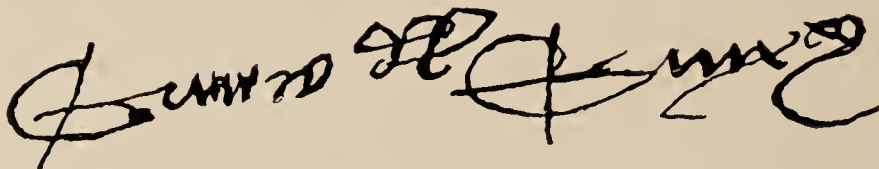
¹This was laid out in Salem Village near the lands of Mr. Hawthorne and Lieutenant Davenport, and Mr. Stratton mortgaged it to Valentine Hill of Boston.—*Lechford's Note Book*, page 126.

²Samuel Corning (Corney, Cornish) was born about 1616; planter and husbandman; married Elizabeth —, who died Aug. 18, 1688, aged about eighty-five; he died soon afterward; children: 1. Remember, baptized May 3, 1640; 2. Samuel, baptized March 14, 1641; lived in Beverly; married Hannah Batcheller; died May 11, 1714, aged seventy-three; she died, his widow, Feb. 17, 1717-8; 3. Elizabeth, baptized June 4, 1643.

³SAMUEL SMITH¹ was one of the very first settlers in Enon, which became Wenham; married Sarah —; died in the autumn of 1642; she married, secondly, Daniel Rumball; children: 1. Thomas²; 2. Marie²; living in 1642; 3. Sarah²; married Hon. William Browne.

THOMAS SMITH²; living in 1642; children: 1. Benjamin,³ baptized Feb. 17, 1636-7; 2. Nathaniel,³ baptized March 24, 1639-40.

former grant of one hundred acres, which was annulled. It was agreed that William Allyn should have an acre of salt marsh at or near the end of his lot.

A handwritten signature in dark ink, appearing to read "George Emery". The script is cursive and somewhat stylized, with the first name "George" written in a larger, more prominent hand than the last name "Emery".

There was granted to George Emery half an acre of marsh over against Mr. Endecott's farm. This lot was probably in the North field and adjoining Waters River.

The spring of 1638 was so cold that the seed corn rotted in the ground, and planting had to be repeated, in some instances twice; but the weather became warmer and the crop was saved.

The first day of June was a typical June day, with bright sunshine and a gentle west wind. In the middle of the afternoon, while the men were in the field, and the women in the house, acute ears noticed a low and distant murmuring sound from the west, which became clearer and nearer, until it resembled the rumble of thunder. Not a cloud was seen. It became louder until it resembled the rattle of many carriages fast driven on pavements. Labor ceased, as the people questioned as to what it was, and the earth began to tremble beneath their feet. They threw down their tools and reeled as though intoxicated. The people indoors heard the sound and felt the tremble of the earth, and the houses shook until it seemed they must collapse. Imperfectly built, of rough and uneven stones, on the outside of the house, almost perpendicular and without mortar, except for pointing, chimneys readily yielded to the shaking they received and the tops of many of them fell off, striking on the house or ground. Pewter platters and dishes, standing upon shelves, knocked together and fell. The first shock continued about four minutes. The people resumed their labor. Half an hour later, the trembling was again heard and the earth quaked. This quickly passed, being milder than the first. The islands were shaken violently and the vessels in the harbor and those sailing along the coast were affected as if a series of tidal waves had passed under them.

The people of that time must have been more affected by such an experience than those of to-day, though earthquakes are always disquieting. The people of that period must have had many doubts and fears, as they were not only superstitious, but this was an almost unknown region, which only lately had been believed to be filled with terrors. This was the greatest earthquake of that century, and an epoch in the history of the people.

At a court of assistants, held at Cambridge June 5, 1638, John Bennet and Philip Deare (Beare?) were referred to Salem court for their drunkenness; and Francis Weston's wife was censured to be set two hours in the bilboes at Cambridge and Salem, upon a lecture day.

From the beginning of the settlement of the colony the crime of adultery was punishable with death, but the law was allowed to fall into disuse. At the general court, June 6, 1637, John Hathaway and Robert Allen were both indicted and, September 7, found guilty of adultery with Margaret, wife of Edward Seale of Marblehead. She was also found guilty. Seale was a beastly drunkard, and was sentenced, at the same court, to be set in the bilboes and be severely whipped. The next succeeding March 12th, all three were sentenced to be severely whipped and banished, never to return upon pain of death. At the latter court, the original law was confirmed. In his Journal,¹ Winthrop wrote of this incident as follows: "1638: 1: 30. Edward Seale of Marblehead twenty pounds for his wife's appearance when she shall be called for after her delivery." Hathaway and the Seales never came back, but a Robert Allen appears in Salem in 1642, and subsequently in Manchester, but it hardly seems reasonable that he was identical with the Marblehead man of that name, as the life of the Manchester man was so different from that of the Robert Allen who was of Marblehead in 1637.

June 25, 1638, William Wood was granted half an acre of land near Strongwater brook or mill [end] brook, and also ten acres. Thomas Reed was granted half an acre of land lying by his other lot.

On the eastern side of South River, opposite Castle Hill, there was formerly a long and narrow strip of salt marsh called "the deacons' marsh" for nearly two centuries. This constituted the two acres of marsh given to John Horne until the town should further dispose of it, and two acres given to Charles Gott upon the same condition (and also one acre "more, if there be any in the town's hands when other men are provided for"). Messrs. Horne and Gott were the deacons of the church in Salem.

The town also ordered that Richard Adams, widow Smith, Samuel Cornish and Joseph Grafton's mother-in-law, all of whom were forgotten in the division, should each have half an acre apiece of marsh land. One acre of marsh was granted to Mr. Clark, one acre to Moses Maverick, three-fourths of an acre to Jeffry Easty, three-fourths to John Hart, and to Mr. Gafford and John Stone their proportions of marsh meadow if they continued in Salem. There was granted to Roger Maury a strip of

¹Winthrop's Journal, Boston, 1825, volume II, page 349.

two and a half acres of meadow and one and a half acres of upland lying between the farms of Robert Moulton and John Gedney. This was located near the present West Peabody railroad junction station.

SALT MAKING

The Company in England sent salt to Salem by Endecott in 1628; and men skilled in making salt were promised to be provided for the colony. The settlers were allowed to make salt for their own use, but not for transportation or sale. The next year, the Company sent five weigh of salt in the Whelp and ten in the Talbot; but this probably was principally for preserving fish.

The colonists at Jamestown, Va., began to send salt to the Puritan settlers in the Massachusetts Bay Colony in 1633. This was salt made by solar evaporation of the water of the ocean, which was run into large shallow pans several inches in depth, and remained there till it was evaporated, leaving a layer of salt in the pan. Salt made in this way was coarser than that produced by boiling sea water.

In the spring of 1638, Governor Winthrop's son John¹ contemplated making this kind of salt in Salem. He was born at Groton, Suffolk County, England, Feb. 12, 1605-6, and was educated at Trinity College, in Dublin. He studied law at the Inner Temple, in London; but soon abandoned it. He then entered the naval service, under the Duke of Buckingham, in the unsuccessful expedition for the relief of the French Protestants at Rochelle in 1627. After a tour of the continent, he returned to London, and in 1631 emigrated to New England. Two years later, he was one of the grantees of Agawam, now Ipswich.

June 25, 1638, the town of Salem granted to him "liberty to set a salt house upon Ryall's side with wood for his occasions about the same house, and common for two cows to pasture in." Mr. Winthrop immediately erected a house on the northerly side

¹John Winthrop married, first, his cousin Martha Fones, who died in 1634 or 1635, and, second, Elizabeth, daughter of Edward Reade of Wickford, Essexshire, England, step-daughter of Hugh Peter; children, by the second wife: 1. Elizabeth; married, first, Rev. Antipas Newman of Wenham in 1658; he died Oct. 15, 1672; and she married, secondly, Zerubbabel Endecott; 2. Lucy; married Edward Palmer of New London, Conn.; 3. Margaret; married John Corwin of Salem; 4. Martha; married Richard Wharton of Boston; 5. Anne; married John Richards of Boston; 6. John, born in Ipswich March 14, 1638; served in the army of General Monk in Scotland and elsewhere until the Restoration; then returned to New England and figured in the Indian wars; was major-general in the expedition to Canada in 1690; governor of Connecticut from 1698 to 1707; and died in Boston Nov. 27, 1707; 7. Waitstill, born in Boston Feb. 27, 1642; soldier in the Indian wars; major-general; judge of the superior court and chief justice of Massachusetts.

of Bass River at its junction with Danvers River, in which he hired a family to live, and also lived there himself with his family "some considerable time and carried on the design of making salt,"¹ that year and the

Nath: Pickman

next. The house was built by Nathaniel Pickman.² Robert Hebard,³ then about

twenty-three years old, lived with house.⁴ William Bennett, then about thirty-four years old, did carpentry work there at times for him.

Robert Hebard

The town granted to Mr. Winthrop, Aug. 19, 1639, "a little neck of land adjoining to the salt house built by the said Mr. Winthrop containing about sixteen acres or thereabouts, more or less, lying between a cove which is on the north side of his said house and a little brook lying to the west of the said house." This point of land is the first one on the right in the view of Danvers River on page 81, volume I.

The following is a copy of a letter written here to his father:

¹See papers in Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, volume VI, pages 244 and 248.

²NATHANIEL PICKMAN¹ (Pitman) was born about 1616; house carpenter; lived on the eastern side of Central Street in the middle of what is now Charter Street; married Tabitha, widow of Andrew Dike; she died Sept. 10, 1668; he died in the autumn of 1684; children: 1. Hannah²; married John Sanders Nov. 5, 1661; 2. Tabitha²; married Edward Fever-year Aug. 30, 1664; 3. Mary²; married Robert Hodges June 22, 1665; 4. Nathaniel², born about 1648; 5. Bethiah²; married, first, John Silsby Feb. 15, 1673; second, Alexander Cole in 168--.

NATHANIEL PICKMAN²; married Parina — before 1673; died in or before 1698; children: 1. Tabitha,³ born Nov. 4, 1670; married John Baker of Charlestown March 9, 1695-6; 2. Elizabeth,³ born Dec. 25, 1673; of Boston, unmarried, in 1698; 3. Nathaniel,³ born April 13, 1676; mariner in 1698; 4. Joseph³; living in 1698; 5. Benjamin³; living in 1698; 6. Isannah³; living in 1698; 7. Hannah³; living in 1698; 8. Mary³; living in 1698; 9. Abigail³; living in 1698.

³Robert Hibbard (Hibbert); born about 1615; bricklayer; lived in the Beverly part of Salem on the south side of Colon Street, about halfway between Cabot and Heather streets; called John Luff "father" in 1667; married Joan —; Bridget Luff (Love) (probably John's mother), aged eighty-four, was living in their family in 1671; he died in Beverly May 7, 1684; she was living, his widow, in 1693; children: 1. Mary, born Nov. 27, 1641; 2. John, born Jan. 24, 1642-3; married Ruth Waldern Nov. 16, 1679; 3. Sarah, born Sept. 26, 1644; died Dec. 8, 1644; 4. Joseph, baptized May 7, 1648; lived in Beverly; married Abigail Graves Oct. 20, 1670; died May 14, 1701; 5. Robert, baptized May 7, 1648; lived in Wenham; married Mary —; 6. Hannah; living in 1671; 7. Joanna, baptized March 9, 1651-2; 8. Elizabeth, baptized May 1, 1653; 9. Abigail, baptized May 6, 1655; married Thomas Blashfield of Beverly March 28, 1676; 10. Samuel, baptized June 20, 1658; husbandman; lived in Beverly in 1690; married Mary Bond of Haverhill Nov. 16, 1679; had children.

⁴Files of Ipswich Quarterly Court Records, volume 26, leaf 48.

SIR,— These calling in this night intending to goe towards Boston tomorrow, I am bold to present my humble duty & my wives to your selfe & my brother, desiring to lett you understand y^t we are in good health (blessed be God) wth the rest of our friends here, & at my uncle Downings. Heer is noe news to write you of. Joseph Grafton was on friday sevensight at Pascataway, having made his voyage hence thither and back againe in 3 daies, but there was noe ship come then to the Isle of Sholes. Just now are come to me y^t came from Quinipiack certifying y^t Mr. Goose was arrived there: Before he



MAP OF SALT HOUSE POINT.

came thence he saw my brother Steven there well; the merchants then were about to hire Mr. Goose his ship for England, but this party coming out of the bay, I suppose it is not news to you. Last weeke one having laded his canoe wth wood coming where the sea was a little ruffe, she filled presently wth water, but not sinking right downe he was succoured by another boate & so saved. Goodman Giles of this towne came to me this day & told me he had order for Sergeant Watson by your order to pay me 10 bushels of corne, but hauing no notice thereof from you, I doubted it might be some mistake. Thus

craving your praiera & blessing I comend you to the Almighty & rest
Your obedient son

JOHN WINTHROP.

Myselfe & wife salute our brothers & friends wth you.¹

On the opposite page is reproduced a rough map, made by Daniel Epes, the schoolmaster, March 28, 1677,² showing the boundaries of this land and the location of the salt house.

About 1645, Mr. Winthrop removed to what is now New London, Conn., and devoted himself to the interests of the Connecticut colonies, being elected in 1651, the first governor of the united colonies. He held the office seventeen years. He was highly educated, accomplished, upright, generous and efficient, and was elected a member of the Royal Society, in England, as a tribute to his scientific attainments. He died in Boston, while there temporarily, April 3, 1676, and was buried by the side of his father in King's Chapel churchyard.

The salt house was probably gone before 1670, and Mr. Winthrop gave the land to his daughter Mrs. Elizabeth Newman, wife of Rev. Antipas Newman of Wenham and, later, wife of Zerubbabel Endecott of Salem.

This neck of land was known for a century as Salthouse neck or point, later as Salt'us point and now as Salter's point.

¹Winthrop's Letters (1867 edition), volume II, page 264.

²Files of the Ipswich Quarterly Court, volume 26, leaf 44.

CHAPTER II.

THE GAME PRESERVE.



AMONG the adventurers who belonged to the Massachusetts Bay Company in England in 1629 was Emanuel Downing, whose wife was Lucy, sister of Gov. John Winthrop, and daughter of Adam Winthrop, Lord of the manor of Groton, in Suffolkshire, and his wife Anna. Lucy Winthrop was baptized Jan. 27, 1601. Mr. Downing was a barrister of the Inner Temple; and in 1633 and later he appeared before the Privy Council in London in behalf of the Colony. He lived, in 1626, "at the Sign of the Bishop," on Fleet Street, London. In 1637, he concluded to remove to New England, and wrote the following letter to Mr. Winthrop:—

To the Honourable his verie loving brother John Winthrop, Governor
of the Massachusetts in New England,
Good Brother:

. . . Its noe small comfort to me that I haue hope ere long to
enioy your Companie. I purpose God willinge to sett forth hence in
the begynning of Aprill at furthest and to take your sonne hence with
me.

.
I follow your councell in coming to the bay before I resolute where
to pitche. I pray helpe me to hire or buy some house (so as I may
sell y^e againe if I shall remove) in some plantacion about the Bay.
Thus for present I take leave and rest leaving you and your affayres
to y^e blessed protection of y^e Almighty.

Your assured and loving brother,

EM. DOWNINGE.

21 9ber 1637.

Mr. Downing was licensed to pass from England beyond the seas March 13, 1637-8, and sailed immediately; and upon his arrival probably went directly to Governor Winthrop's house in

Boston. In June, he settled in Salem, and within a month thereafter purchased of Robert Cole the three hundred acres of land, lying in what is now Peabody, at Proctor's Crossing, which had been granted to him by the town Dec. 28, 1635.¹ Mr. Downing

John Downing

erected a house upon it, and called this country seat "Groton," after the name of the English home of his

wife. They lived upon this place. It was not far from Governor Endecott's orchard farm and a highway ran from one to the other.

July 16, 1638, the town granted to Mr. Downing one hundred acres of land adjoining to Mr. Cole's farm which he had purchased, lying on the southwest side of said farm, next Roger Maury's farm; but, Oct. 17, 1638, this grant was reversed, and instead the town granted to him one hundred acres on the north side of and adjoining the farm bought of Cole, whereby the farm might be commodious to him. Four hundred acres of land, eighty acres being meadow, was also granted to him July 6th, which tract lay adjoining to Humphrey Bishop's farm north-westerly.

When Mr. Downing was in England in the summer of 1645, on Sunday, April 6th, while Mrs. Downing and her family were at meeting in the town, the chimney of the house caught fire, and the house was wholly consumed, the house and bedding, apparel and the household furniture and furnishings being worth, Governor Winthrop wrote, two hundred pounds. Upon his return from England, Mr. Downing apparently bought the house and land on Essex Street, where he afterwards lived. He and his family let the farm to various tenants as long as it was owned by the Downings.

From about 1646 to 1648,² William Flint³ was the tenant. He appeared in Salem early in the summer of 1642, and became the tenant of Mr. Downing, and probably con-

William Flint

¹See volume I, pages 303 and 340.

²See Records and Files of the Essex County Quarterly Courts, volume I, page 213; and Essex Registry of Deeds, book 15, leaf 5.

³WILLIAM FLINT¹ is stated by Mr. Shattuck, in his History of Concord, N. H., to have been a son of Thomas Flint, who came from Matlock, Derbyshire, England, and whose uncle was William Wood, author of New England's Prospect. Thomas Flint was one of the early settlers of Concord, Mass., a magistrate and many years a deputy to the general court, and, says

tinued there until 1653, when he purchased the house and land of Thomas James on the northeasterly corner of Flint and Broad streets. In the winter of 1655-6, Mr. Flint lived in the house of Captain Hawthorne.

the same author, spent thousands of pounds sterling for the benefit of the colony. William Flint had a brother Thomas, who came to Salem soon after himself. William Flint was born about 1603, married, but left his wife in England, as his mother would not allow her to come to America with him. In 1644, he married Alice Williams, by whom he had children. He had brought one or two children with him when he came to America. He died April 2, 1673; and she died Oct. 5, 1700. Children: 1. Alice,² born about 1636; married, first, Henry Bullock; and, second, John Pickering; 2. *Edward*,² born about 1638; 3. Elizabeth,² born about 1640; married John Woodis; 4. Margaret,² born about 1642; married — Goodwin; 5. *Thomas*,² born about 1644; 6. Hannah,² born about 1647; married Joshua Ward.

ENS. EDWARD FLINT²; yeoman; married Elizabeth Hart Oct. 20, 1659; died in the summer of 1711; she survived him; children: 1. John,³ born March 26, 1660; 2. William,³ born Aug. 12, 1661; 3. Thomas,³ born Feb. 1, 1662-3; 4. Hannah³; married Robert Orange of Boston; 5. *David*³; 6. Deborah³; married Thomas Lee of Boston; 7. *Joseph*³; 8. Elizabeth³; married Joseph Deane; 9. Benjamin,³ born about 1679; yeoman; died, unmarried, Dec. 28, 1732; 10. Sarah³; married Jacob Willard; 11. Abigail³; married, first, Edward Holloway June 9, 1704; and, second, Benjamin Gerrish. QUARTERMASTER THOMAS FLINT²; yeoman; married Elizabeth Johnson Aug. 12, 1678; died in 1719; she survived him; children: 1. Ruth³, born May 11, 1679; married David Flint; 2. Timothy,³ born Sept. 30, 1680; died before 1732; 3. John,³ born June 21, 1684; died young; 4. *Joseph*,³ born Aug. 1, 1687; 5. Elizabeth,³ baptized Oct. —, 1689; married Peter King of Marblehead; 6. Abigail,³ born Aug. 8, 1692; living in 1732; 7. Mary,³ baptized Sept. —, 1694; living in 1732; 8. Rebecca,³ baptized Jan. 29, 1698; married John White of Gloucester Sept. 23, 1720; 9. Sarah,³ baptized Feb. 2, 1700-1; married William Grafton Sept. 23, 1720.

DAVID FLINT³; flesher and fellmonger; married Ruth Flint Jan. 4, 1699; died in 1736; children: 1. Ruth,⁴ baptized Aug. 2, 1702; died in infancy; 2. Ruth,⁴ baptized May 28, 1704; married Thomas Metcalf of Gloucester Oct. 31, 1728; 3. Huldah,⁴ baptized Oct. 27, 1706; married John Holman of Marblehead Nov. 13, 1724; 4. Hannah,⁴ born about 1708; married Thomas Cruft of Marblehead Oct. 4, 1722; 5. *William*,⁴ baptized Dec. 7, 1712; 6. *John*,⁴ baptized Dec. 7, 1712; 7. David,⁴ baptized March 27, 1715; yeoman, fisherman and truckman; lived in Marblehead; married Hannah Holman Dec. 12, 1734; and had several children. JOSEPH FLINT³; married Experience Darby June 22, 1698; she died Jan. 1, 1714-5; children: 1. Joseph,⁴ born April 7, 1699; probably died before 1714; 2. Jonathan,⁴ born Jan. 3, 1701-2; probably died before 1714; 3. Mary,⁴ born April 4, 1703; married Samuel Wainwright of Ipswich Jan. 27, 1724-5; 4. Edward,⁴ born about 1705; shopkeeper; lived in Haverhill; married, first, Lydia Peaslee of Haverhill Nov. 22, 1733; she died Nov. 4, 1740; second, Martha Emerson of Portsmouth, N. H., before 1745; she died Sept. 8, 1745; married, third, Abiah Roberts Nov. 3, 1747; had children. JOSEPH FLINT³; cordwainer and husbandman; married Mary Johnson of Boston Aug. 9, 1709; died in the summer of 1752; she survived him; children: 1. *Joseph*,⁴ baptized July 15, 1716; 2. Mercy,⁴ baptized July 15, 1716; married John Marston; 3. Elizabeth,⁴ baptized July 14, 1717; married Edward Britton.

Mr. Flint's son Thomas Flint hired it from 1649 to 1653. In 1656, Mrs. Downing leased the farm to George Norton of Salem, carpenter, for ten years from March 1, 1655-6, the rent to be eighteen pounds a year, and to be paid in Indian corn, wheat, barley, pork, cheese and cattle. The lessee agreed not to cut lumber for sale, and to build upon the farm a strong and sufficient house in every way like that of Mr. Treadwell of Ipswich, except that the chimneys should be catted instead of being wholly made of brick. Mr. Norton was to leave the house tenantable at the end of the term, "extraordinary casualty hereby only excepted," in consideration of which he was to have the use of the farm rent free for one year.¹ Mr. Norton assigned the lease to Roger Preston² of Ipswich March 14, 1658-9, and Mr. Preston removed

WILLIAM FLINT⁴; brickmaker; married Lydia Hayward (Howard) July 25, 1735; was living in 1739; child: 1. John⁵; living in 1736. JOHN FLINT⁴; married Jane Salisbury Jan. 2, 1734-5; died in 1735; she survived him; child: 1. John,⁵ born Nov. 30, 1735. JOSEPH FLINT⁴; husbandman; married Hannah Stone July 28, 1738; died Dec. —, 1745; she survived him; child: 1. Mary⁵; living, unmarried, in 1752.

JOHN FLINT⁵; married Susannah Webb Sept. 29, 1756; died before 1767; she was his widow in 1815; children: 1. John,⁶ born Jan. 1, 1757; 2. Susannah,⁶ born in 1759; married Josiah Parsons of Newmarket, N. H.; 3. Jonathan⁶; died at sea; 4. Joseph⁶; died at sea.

JOHN FLINT⁶; shoemaker; married Margaret Cheever; drowned Dec. 28, 1813; children: 1. Abigail⁷; married Timothy Harraden; 2. Jonathan,⁷ born Aug. 12, 1788; lived in New York; mariner; died at sea, on board brig Theresa, from Puerto Cabello, Nov. 27, 1825, unmarried; 3. Joseph,⁷ born in 1790; tinman; died Oct. 28, 1817; 4. Susannah⁷; 5. Mary⁷; 6. Sally⁷; 7. Priscilla.⁷

¹Records and Files of the Essex County Quarterly Courts, volume III, page 286.

²ROGER PRESTON¹ was a husbandman and lived in Ipswich as early as 1657 and until the spring of 1660, when he removed to Salem, where he afterwards lived; married Martha —, who was born about 1622; he died in the winter of 1665-6; she married, secondly, Nicholas Holt of Andover May 21, 1666; Mr. Holt died before 1703; she died, his widow, in Andover March 21, 1702-3; children (also, perhaps, Mary, who married Nathaniel Ingerson, and Elizabeth, who married William Henfield): 1. Thomas,² born about 1643; 2. Samuel,² born about 1651; lived in Andover; married Susanna Gutterson May 27, 1672, in Andover; she died Dec. 29, 1710; he died July 10, 1738; had children; 3. Jacob,² born about 1653; lost at sea, in a ketch, on a fishing trip to the Eastward in the summer of 1679, being cast away and never heard from.

THOMAS PRESTON²; married Rebecca Nurse April 15, 1669; died in 1697; children: 1. Rebecca,³ born May 12, 1670; married Ezekiel Upton of Reading in 1692; 2. Mary,³ born Feb. 15, 1671-2; married Peter Cloyce of Framingham Dec. 13, 1693; 3. John,³ born Nov. 20, 1673; 4. Martha,³ born Oct. 21, 1676; married David Judd Dec. 7, 1705; 5. Elizabeth,³ born about 1677; died Nov. 21, 1693; 6. Thomas³; 7. David³; lived in Windham, Conn.; married Elizabeth Martin of Ipswich Aug. 2, 1726; died before 1734; 8. Jonathan³; of Salem, husbandman, in 1711; married Elizabeth Voden Aug. 10, 1714.

to the farm one year later. When he secured this lease, in the winter of 1658-9, he was living on the farm of William Cogswell, in Ipswich, of which he then had a lease. On the Downing farm, he conducted an ordinary and sold strong liquors "for the entertainment of strangers." He died in the winter of 1665-6. Upon the expiration of the lease, a new lessee took possession. This was

John Proctor

Roger Preston
John Proctor, also of Ipswich, son of John Proctor,¹ and was born about 1632. As the house was situated upon the high road between Boston and Ipswich

many travelers passed that way and houses being far apart he

JOHN PRESTON³; husbandman; married, first, Elizabeth —; second, Mrs. Mary Rea Dec. 28, 1736; he died July 6, 1744; she survived him; children: 1. *Moses*,⁴ born July 6, 1715; 2. *John*,⁴ born Sept. 4, 1717; 3. Philip,⁴ born March 6, 1719-20; served in the expedition against Louisburg, Cape Breton, in 1745; was brought home sick, and died April 14, 1748, unmarried. THOMAS PRESTON³; lived in Reading in 1711, of Salem in 1716, 1725 and 1735; husbandman; married Anna Leach June —, 1708; he died in the winter of 1741-2; she died, his widow, in 1753; children, baptized in Salem Village: 1. Thomas,⁴ baptized Sept. 25, 1709; weaver and husbandman; lived in Salem in 1742; living in 1747; married Rebecca Gross of Marblehead Dec. 9, 1731; 2. Rebecca,⁴ baptized April 20, 1712; married William Trevy of Marblehead (published Aug. 28, 1730); 3. Anna,⁴ baptized Oct. 31, 1714; of Salem in 1741-2; living in 1749; 4. Mary⁴; of Salem in 1742.

MOSES PRESTON⁴; married Mary Leach of Beverly (published Nov. 7, 1736); lived in Salem in 1736; died in or before 1744; children: 1. *Moses*⁵; died in or before 1749; oldest son; 2. Joseph⁵; living in 1749; 3. Elizabeth⁵; living in 1749; 4. John⁵; living in 1749; youngest son. LT. JOHN PRESTON⁴; yeoman; married Hannah Putnam July 12, 1744; she died March 28, 1771; he died June 14, 1771; lived in the Danvers part of Salem; children: 1. Elizabeth,⁵ born May 9, 1745; married Ebenezer Nichols; 2. John,⁵ born Sept. 8, 1746; living in 1774; 3. Philip,⁵ born Oct. 30, 1748; died May 29, 1749; 4. Joshua,⁵ born March 22, 1751; died May 11, 1751; 5. David,⁵ born March 20, 1752; died Jan. 16, 1774; 6. Hannah,⁵ born Aug. 8, 1754; married Amos Tapley; 7. Levi,⁵ born Oct. 21, 1756; 8. Moses,⁵ born April 20, 1758; died Feb. 26, 1824; 9. Aaron,⁵ born March 24, 1760; died April 9, 1760; 10. Daniel,⁵ born June 11, 1761; died July 1, 1762.

¹JOHN PROCTOR¹ was born about 1595; married Martha —; sailed from London, England, in 1635, in the ship Susan and Ellen, with his wife Martha, aged twenty-eight, and children, John, aged three, and Mary, aged one; lived in Ipswich; died in the autumn of 1672; she survived him; children: 1. *John*,² born about 1632; 2. Mary²; 3. Martha²; 4. Abigail,² born about 1639; 5. Sarah²; 6. Joseph²; 7. Hannah²; 8. Benjamin.²

JOHN PROCTOR²; husbandman; removed to Salem in 1666; married, first, Martha —; she died in Ipswich June 13, 1659; married, second, Elizabeth Thorndike Dec. —, 1662; she died Aug. 30, 1672; married, third, Elizabeth Bassett of Lynn April 1, 1674; he was executed as a wizard Aug. 19, 1692; she survived him, and married, secondly, Daniel Richards of

also found that requests for refreshments were frequent. In

Lynn (published Sept. 22, 1699); children: 1. John³; died Oct. —, 1658; 2. Martha³; died Oct. 14, 1658; 3. Mary,³ born Jan. 1, 1657-8; died Feb. —, 1657-8; 4. *Benjamin*,³ born June 10, 1659; 5. Elizabeth,³ born about 1663; married Thomas Very; 6. Martha,³ born April 1, 1665; died May 10, 1665; 7. Martha,³ born June 4, 1666; living in 1682; 8. Mary,³ born Oct. 20, 1667; died Feb. 15, 1667-8; 9. John,³ born Oct. 28, 1668; 10. Mary,³ born Jan. 30, 1669-70; 11. *Thorndike*,³ born July 15, 1672; 12. William,³ born Feb. 6, 1674-5; living in 1695; 13. Sarah,³ born Jan. 28, 1676; married Edward Munnion of Lynn Oct. 23, 1700; 14. Samuel,³ born Jan. 11, 1685-6; living in 1695; 15. Elisha,³ born April 28, 1687; died Nov. 11, 1688; 16. Abigail,³ born Jan. 27, 1689; living in 1695; 17. *John*,³ born Jan. 27, 1692-3. JOSEPH PROCTOR²; lived in Ipswich; married, second, Sarah, widow of Richard Ingersoll; children: 1. Joseph,³ born Feb. 25, 1677; 2. Jacob,³ born Jan. 25, 1679(?); 3. Daniel,³ born Jan. 30, 1679; 4. Martha,³ born Dec. 10, 1681; 5. Mary,³ born July 28, 1683; 6. Abigail,³ born April 13, 1685; 7. *Francis*,³ born Jan. 8, 1686; 8. Jonathan,³ born April 15, 1693.

BENJAMIN PROCTOR³; married Mary Whittredge Dec. 18, 1694; died in the spring of 1717; she died, his widow, Nov. 5, 1748; children: 1. Mary,⁴ born Oct. 12, 1695; married Robert Wilson March 6, 1717-8; 2. Priscilla,⁴ born Dec. 11, 1699; married Jonathan Foster; 3. Sarah,⁴ born Jan. 2, 1702-3; married Ebenezer Southwick; 4. *John*,⁴ born in 1705. THORNDIKE PROCTOR³; yeoman; lived in the Danvers part of Salem; married, first, widow Hannah Endecott Dec. 15, 1697; she died Aug. 9, 1737; he married, second, Mrs. Sarah Allen of Marblehead (published March 31, 1739); he died in the early spring of 1758; children: 1. *Nathan*,⁴ born Oct. 18, 1698; 2. *Thorndike*,⁴ born June 2, 1700; 3. *Ebenezer*,⁴ born Aug. 16, 1702; 4. *Jonathan*,⁴ born Aug. 2, 1705; 5. *Benjamin*.⁴ JOHN PROCTOR³; yeoman; lived in the Peabody part of Salem; married Mary —; died in 1745; she married, secondly, Daniel Marble (published July 2, 1748); children: 1. Abigail⁴; married Samuel Goldthwait; 2. Rachel⁴; married, first, Jonathan Mackmallon; second, Nathaniel Massey; 3. Mary⁴; married Abraham Pierce Aug. 22, 1744; 4. Hannah⁴; married John Balcum of Mansfield, Conn. (published April 20, 1745); 5. Elizabeth⁴; unmarried in 1750, in Salem; 6. John⁴; yeoman; married Mary Collier of Marblehead (published Nov. 6, 1736); died in the summer of 1747; she survived him. FRANCIS PROCTOR³; lived in Marblehead until about 1717, when he removed to Salem; married Keziah Darling (published Dec. 27, 1712); died in the autumn of 1732; she returned to Marblehead, where she was living in 1744; children: 1. John,⁴ born Sept. 12, 1715; fisherman; married Mary Goldthwait (published Nov. 3, 1738); died in the expedition to Cape Breton in 1745, without issue; 2. Martha,⁴ baptized Oct. 12, 1718; married Jonathan Burroughs July 3, 1742; 3. Francis,⁴ baptized Nov. 12, 1721; lived in Marblehead; married Sarah —; had children; 4. Robert,⁴ baptized July 19, 1724; 5. Hannah,⁴ baptized Oct. 16, 1726; living in 1744; 6. Sarah,⁴ baptized July 2, 1732.

JOHN PROCTOR⁴; lived in the Danvers part of Salem; married Lydia Waters Dec. 14, 1727; she died Aug. 4, 1769; he died in Danvers in 1774; children: 1. John,⁵ born Sept. 14, 1728; lived in Danvers; married Mary Epps Nov. 6, 1751; died in 1771; 2. Lydia,⁵ born March 31, 1730; published to Jonathan Flint of Reading Aug. 1, 1751; 3. Benjamin,⁵ born Jan. 28, 1731; lived in Danvers; married Keziah Littlefield of Wells (published June 23, 1758); died Feb. 24, 1799; she died, his widow, March 5, 1811; had children; 4. Mary,⁵ born Dec. 3, 1733; married Joseph Pickering; 5. Sarah,⁵ born Aug. 21, 1736; married John Gould of Gloucester July 16, 1761; 6. Sylvester,⁵ born Oct. 26, 1738; lived in Danvers; married, first, Abigail Gale Jan. 18, 1763; she died Oct. 20, 1771; married, second,

November, after he had removed to the farm, he petitioned the

Mehitable Porter Oct. 22, 1772; he died in Danvers March 21, 1790; she died there June 6, 1814; had children; 7. Prudence,⁵ born Nov. 21, 1740; married James Buffington Feb. 14, 1765; 8. Joseph,⁵ born Aug. 31, 1743; married Elizabeth Epes (published Jan. 29, 1768); died in 1804; 9. Daniel,⁵ born May 14, 1746; died in Danvers Oct. 21, 1766. NATHAN PROCTOR⁴; lived in the Danvers part of Salem; yeoman; married Mary Reed May 14, 1723; they died in October, 1775; children: 1. Stephen,⁵ born March 22, 1724; lived in Danvers; married Elizabeth Newhall of Lynn Jan. 3, 1760; died Sept. 13, 1807; she died Jan. 28, 1819; had children; 2. Jacob,⁵ born Feb. 12, 1726; died Nov. 16, 1728; 3. Mary,⁵ born Dec. 21, 1728; married Peter Cross Oct. 24, 1754; 4. Hannah,⁵ born Oct. 22, 1730; married Abel Waters; 5. Ruth,⁵ born Jan. 21, 1732; married John Marble (published May 6, 1758); 6. Nathan,⁵ born Nov. 25, 1735; lived in Danvers; married Abigail Waters Oct. 22, 1761; had children; 7. Jacob,⁵ born Oct. 12, 1737; 8. Sarah,⁵ born April 11, 1741. THORNDIKE PROCTOR⁴; blacksmith; married Abigail Wilson April 5, 1721; died July 17, 1774; she died Dec. 11, 1784; children: 1. Hannah,⁵ born Nov. 9, 1723; died May 6, 1727; 2. Thorndike,⁵ born Nov. 26, 1725; married Lydia Shillaber (published Nov. 19, 1749); living in 1774; 3. Abigail,⁵ born Aug. 27, 1727; married George Daland Oct. 5, 1744; 4. Hannah,⁵ born Sept. 3, 1729; married Matthew Mansfield June 14, 1750; 5. Elizabeth⁵; married Robert Shillaber of Danvers Nov. 30, 1758; 6. Robert⁵; 7. Lydia⁵; married Benjamin Symonds; 8. Mary⁵; married Robert Foster Feb. 27, 1766; 9. Sarah⁵; married Charles Worthen Dec. 15, 1768; 10. Ebenezer,⁵ born about 1741. EBENEZER PROCTOR⁴; cordwainer; married Mary Houlton Dec. 1, 1725; child: 1. Sarah,⁵ baptized April 19, 1730. JONATHAN PROCTOR⁴; married Desire Jacobs March 18, 1735-6; died March 10, 1750-1; children: 1. Desire,⁵ baptized April 17, 1737; 2. Jonathan,⁵ baptized Feb. 25, 1738-9; living in 1755. 3. Thorndike,⁶ baptized March 29, 1741; 4. Hannah,⁵ baptized May 15, 1743; married Timothy Felton; 5. Sarah,⁵ baptized Sept. 8, 1745; living in 1755; 6. Elizabeth,⁵ born Feb. 13, 1750-1; living in 1755. BENJAMIN PROCTOR⁴; married — —; she was his widow in 1755; child: 1. Sarah⁵; married — Merritt before 1755.

ROBERT PROCTOR⁵; blacksmith and yeoman; married, first, Hannah Goodhue(?); she died May 20, 1766; married, second, Hannah Favour (published Oct. 23, 1774); he died Feb. —, 1803; she died, his widow, Dec. 10, 1828; children: 1. Thorndike,⁶ born about 1758; master mariner; died, unmarried, in the winter of 1791-2; 2. Robert,⁶ born Dec. 23, 1760; 3. Martha,⁶ born in 1763; 4. —⁶ (son), born about 1772; died July —, 1794; 5. Benjamin,⁶ born Oct. 24, 1775; 6. —⁶ (son), born about 1781; died Aug. —, 1795. EBENEZER PROCTOR⁵; blacksmith; married Martha Gott of Danvers March 29, 1769; died June 15, 1804; she died Aug. 9, 1824; children: 1. Eben,⁶ baptized June 10, 1781; 2. Daniel,⁶ born in 1772; mariner; died at Havana July —, 1802; 3. Polly,⁶ baptized June 10, 1781; married Nathan Luther of Newport, R. I., Nov. 12, 1797; 4. Abigail,⁶ baptized June 10, 1781; living in 1799; 5. Deborah,⁶ born Sept. 4, 1785(?); died in the summer of 1804; 7. Eben,⁶ baptized Feb. 1, 1784. THORNDIKE PROCTOR⁵; married Mary —; died in the autumn of 1775; children: 1. Abigail,⁶ born about 1756; married Zadock Buffington about August, 1776; 2. William,⁶ born in 1760; 3. Thorndike,⁶ born in 1763.

ROBERT PROCTOR⁶; blacksmith and shopkeeper; married Lydia Kilbern Nov. 13, 1808; died Dec. 4, 1841; child: 1. Martha Ann,⁷ baptized Aug. 23, 1811; married David Nichols April 5, 1835. WILLIAM PROCTOR⁶; merchant and cordwainer; married Elizabeth Masury Nov. 8, 1783; she died May —, 1793; he died Feb. 23, 1803; children: 1. Elizabeth,⁷ born about



COY POND.

selectmen for a license to entertain travelers, stating that "I live at Mr. Downing's farm which is in the common roadway, which occasioneth several travelers to call in for some refreshment as they pass along and finding it like to be very chargable in case I should continue to accomodate such upon free cost, do therefore earnestly request you that you would be pleased to grant me liberty to set up a house of entertainment to sell beer, cider, liquors," etc.; and the Salem court licensed him to keep a house of public entertainment and to sell strong waters only to strangers. The license was continued for many years. John Proctor remained on the farm until the Witchcraft delusion swept him into its net and he lost his life with other victims upon the tree, Aug. 19, 1692. After his death, his son Benjamin carried on the farm until its title passed from the Downing family, by its conveyance by Charles Downing of London, England, esquire, son of Sir George and grandson of Emanuel Downing, to Thorndike Proctor Sept. 13, 1700.¹

An interesting matter, which savors of English custom, is the granting of a private game preserve in Salem in 1638. Emmanuel Downing had brought from England, at great expense, "all things fitting for taking wild fowl by way of duck coy." In July, 1638, he was granted five hundred acres of land by the town of Salem. When the general court assembled, September 6th,² "being desirous to encourage . . . such designs as tend to public good, do give him full liberty to place the same duck coy

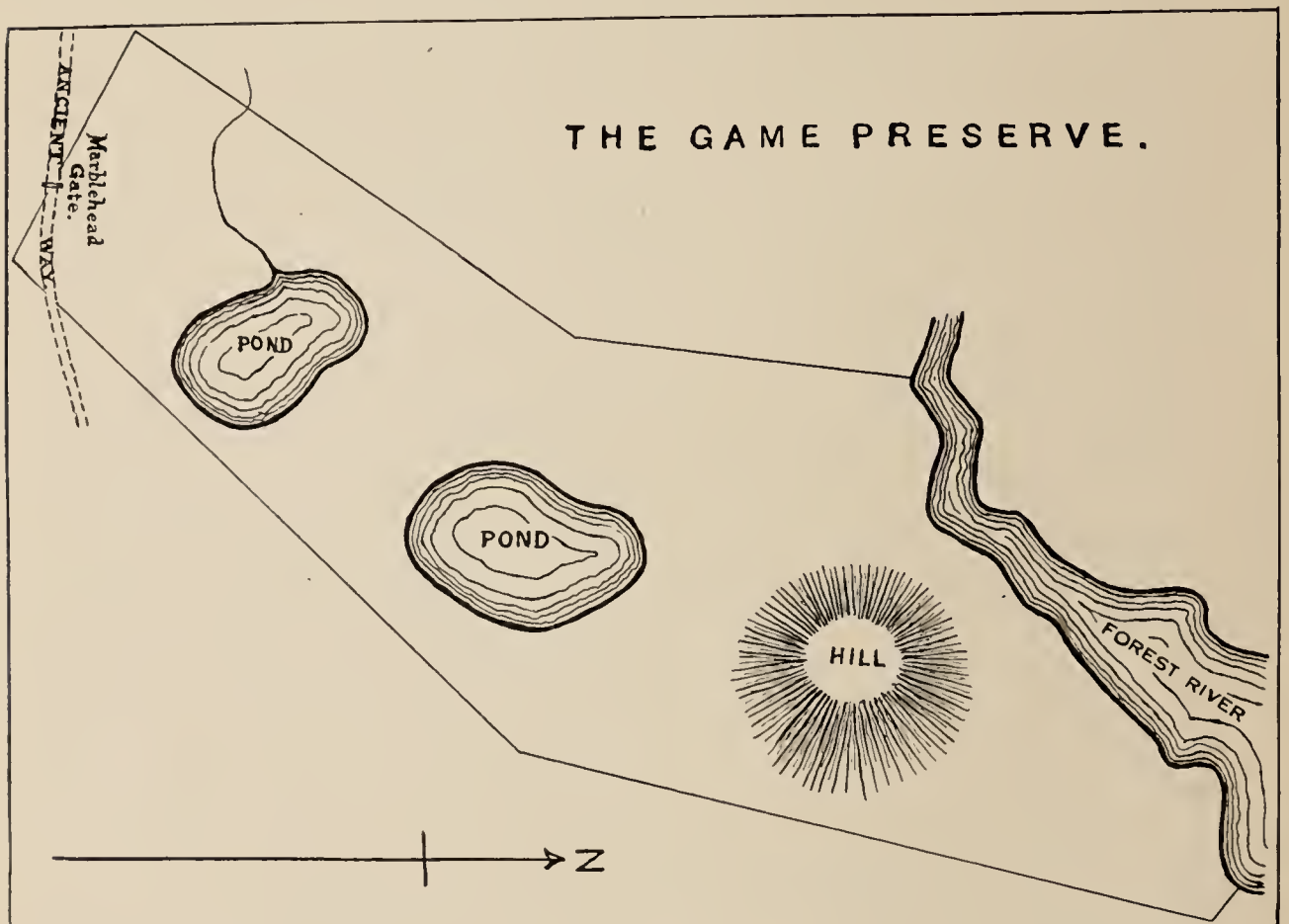
1784; 2. Mary,⁷ born about 1788; 3. *William*,⁷ born about 1791. THORNDIKE PROCTOR⁶; goldsmith; married Elizabeth Hathorne April 4, 1788; died Sept. 9, 1790; she died Dec. 15, 1834; child: 1. *Thorndike*,⁷ baptized July 19, 1789.

WILLIAM PROCTOR⁷; merchant; removed to Brooklyn, N. Y., in 1827; married Sarah G. Holman April 11, 1813; children: 1. Mary Elizabeth,⁸ born Sept. 19, 1813; died March 29, 1815; 2. William Henry,⁸ born Nov. 26, 1814; died Feb. 10, 1829; 3. Charles Edward,⁸ born Oct. 18, 1815; died on the coast of Africa Feb. 13, 1842; 4. Francis Pierce,⁸ born Dec. 29, 1816; 5. Joseph Holman,⁸ born May 4, 1818; 6. Mary Elizabeth,⁸ born March 26, 1819; died Sept. 5, 1819; 7. Caroline Elizabeth,⁸ born March 15, 1820; 8. Sarah Holman,⁸ born Aug. 29, 1821; died Sept. 21, 1821; 9. Horace Masury,⁸ born Aug. 6, 1822; died Sept. 27, 1822; 10. George Frederick,⁸ born Nov. 10, 1824; died April 20, 1825; 11. Sarah Ellen,⁸ born Feb. 3, 1828; 12. Augusta Pierce,⁸ born Feb. 6, 1831. THORNDIKE PROCTOR⁷; merchant; married Elizabeth M. Rust July 3, 1814; died Jan. 9, 1834; she survived him; children: 1. Thorndike,⁸ baptized March 3, 1816; living in 1836; 2. John Henry,⁸ born about 1817; mariner; died off Cape Horn Jan. 23, 1849; 3. Elizabeth Hathorne,⁸ born in 1819; died Dec. 3, 1821; 4. Charles Frederick,⁸ born about 1821; living in 1836; 5. Elizabeth Hathorne,⁸ born in 1824.

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 15, leaves 5 and 6; book 17, leaf 7.

²Mr. Endecott and deputies John Winthrop, jr., Thomas Flint, William Hathorne, John Woodberry and Jacob Barney were present.

in some convenient place within the bounds of Salem, as the town and he can agree, and that it shall not be lawful for any person to shoot in any gun within half a mile of the pond where such duck coy shall be placed, nor shall use any other means for disturbance of the fowl there," except with permission of Mr. Downing, and punished in the discretion of the court. The order extended to all other places where any duck decoy should be placed by like license from the court.



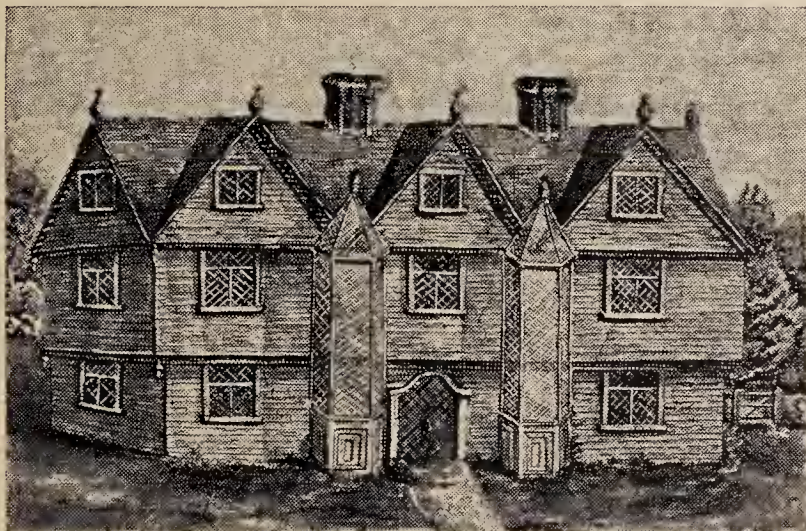
PLAN OF THE GAME PRESERVE.

Although the court said that this order applied to other decoys, no similar rights were granted to any other person. Mr. Downing apparently did not consult the town of Salem nor request it to grant to him a pond and land for this purpose. There was a tract of about fifty acres of land that he deemed to be adapted to his purpose, but it was a part of the grant to John Humphrey, on Forest River. It contained two ponds, now known as Coy ponds, and a hill, now called Legg's hill, which overlooked the ponds. Mr. Humphrey conveyed to Mr. Downing, on the same day, the grant of the right to maintain this shooting ground, "the two ponds and so much high ground about the ponds as is needful to keep the duck coy private from the disturbance of plowmen, herdsman or others passing by that way which he may

enclose so as he take above fifty acres of upland round about the same."¹

This exclusive privilege was enjoyed by Mr. Downing only a few years, as he finally returned to England in 1652, and died there about 1657, having granted this tract of land to his grandson Solomon Stoddard of Boston, "fellow of the College of Cambridge." After possessing the land for ten years, Mr. Stoddard conveyed it to Moses Maverick and Richard Rowland, both of Marblehead, May 1, 1667.²

Mr. Downing was propounded for an assistant, and Governor Winthrop, his brother-in-law, wrote in his Journal, May 22, 1639, that he knew him "to be a very able man, etc. and one who had done many good offices for the country for these ten years, yet the people would not choose him."



DOWNING HOUSE.

The mansion house³ of Mr. Downing, on Essex Street, was large, two stories in height and many gabled, having a "great" room, "great" entry, "great" stairs and "great" chamber. There was also a leanto. There were two chimney stacks. It had two columns of leaded sash and diamond-shaped panes on either side of the front door. There were great lanterns for lighting the ample grounds in front, by the use of candles, on festive and other occasions, being entered from each floor through doors. Undoubtedly it was the finest house then built in the Colony. There is some evidence that it had belonged to and was probably occupied by Rev. Hugh Peter, before his departure to England.

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 1, leaf 1.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 3, leaf 26.

³The picture of this house is from a photographic copy of a water color, made in 1819, which is now in the possession of the Essex Institute.

Mr. Downing went to England in 1642, 1644 and finally in 1652; and Aug. 8, 1656, with the consent of her husband, Mrs. Downing conveyed the messuage to Joseph Gardner who had married their daughter Ann, as her dowry and marriage portion.¹ Captain Gardner lived here until his tragic death, at the hands of the Indians, in King Philip's War, Dec. 19, 1675. He willed all his estate to his wife, who survived him, and married, secondly, Gov. Simon Bradstreet, who then lived in Boston, June 6, 1676. Governor Bradstreet removed to Salem and lived in this house until his death, March 27, 1697, at the age of ninety-four. His remains lie in his tomb in the Charter Street burial ground. His wife survived him, and continued to live here until April 19, 1713, when she died, having devised the estate to her sister's grandchildren,—daughters of Col. John Wainwright of Ipswich. They were Elizabeth, wife of Addington Davenport, esquire, Anne, wife of Adam Winthrop, esquire, and Lucy, wife of Paul Dudley, all of Boston. About two months later these ladies leased the estate to Elisha Odlin, and he conducted a tavern in the old manse, naming it the "Sign of the Globe." In December, 1715, Benjamin Ropes of Salem succeeded Mr. Odlin as landlord of the tavern, and Nov. 1, 1716, Mr. Ropes purchased the estate of the three owners for three hundred and twenty pounds.² Much of the land of the original homestead had from time to time been sold, and thus the premises had been much reduced in extent. Mr. Ropes died in the autumn of 1717; and his widow Ann married John Green. Mrs. Green continued the tavern business in this house for two years, and then it was conducted by her husband until 1726, when her son Benjamin Ropes had become of age. At his mother's request Benjamin became the innkeeper at the Globe Tavern, the business being conducted in the easterly end of the old mansion. Benjamin died Sept. 26, 1732, at the age of thirty-one. Three of the heirs of the deceased Benjamin Ropes conveyed their interests, one-fifth each, to Miles Ward, jr., of Salem, joiner, as follows: Thomas Ropes of Salem, mariner, July 27, 1734;³ Joseph Lamberth of Salem, tailor, and wife Lydia, daughter of the deceased, March 22, 1738;⁴ and George Ropes of Marblehead, cooper, June 26, 1739.⁵ Mr. Ward conveyed the three-fifths interest to Nathaniel Ingersoll of Salem, mariner, July 3, 1741.⁶ Benjamin Ropes, the son of the deceased Benjamin,

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 1, leaf 31.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 31, leaf 95.

³Essex Registry of Deeds, book 66, leaf 254.

⁴Essex Registry of Deeds, book 77, leaf 256.

⁵Essex Registry of Deeds, book 78, leaf 44.

⁶Essex Registry of Deeds, book 83, leaf 208.



G. Downing

died leaving a son named Benjamin, who died soon after and his mother, Hannah Ropes inherited his double share (two-fifths) of the house and land. Captain Ingersoll and Mrs. Ropes took down the ancient house in 1753.

Mr. Downing married Lucy Winthrop April 10, 1622. Their oldest child was George, who was born in 1624, and came to Salem with his parents in the spring of 1638, at the age of fourteen. He entered Harvard College and ranked second in the first class. He returned to England; lived in Gamlangay, Cambridgeshire; married Frances Howard; and was knighted and made a baronet by Charles II, July 1, 1661, for his good conduct in Holland. He died in 1684. Downing Street, the financial center of London, was named for him; and his grandson of the same name established by will, in 1800, Downing College, at Cambridge, England, on a more liberal foundation than any other college at that distinguished educational center. Other children, than George and Ann, were James, who was the son of Mr. Downing by his first wife, — Ware, and came with Governor Winthrop in the Arbella, in 1630; Mary, who came to New England in May, 1633, with Governor Coddington in the Mary and Jane, and married Anthony Stoddard of Boston; Susan, who came with Mary; Lucy; Dorcas, who was baptized in Salem Feb. 7, 1640-1; and John, who was baptized in Salem March 1, 1640-1; merchant; lived at Nevis; and probably died in Boston April 29, 1694.

CHAPTER III.

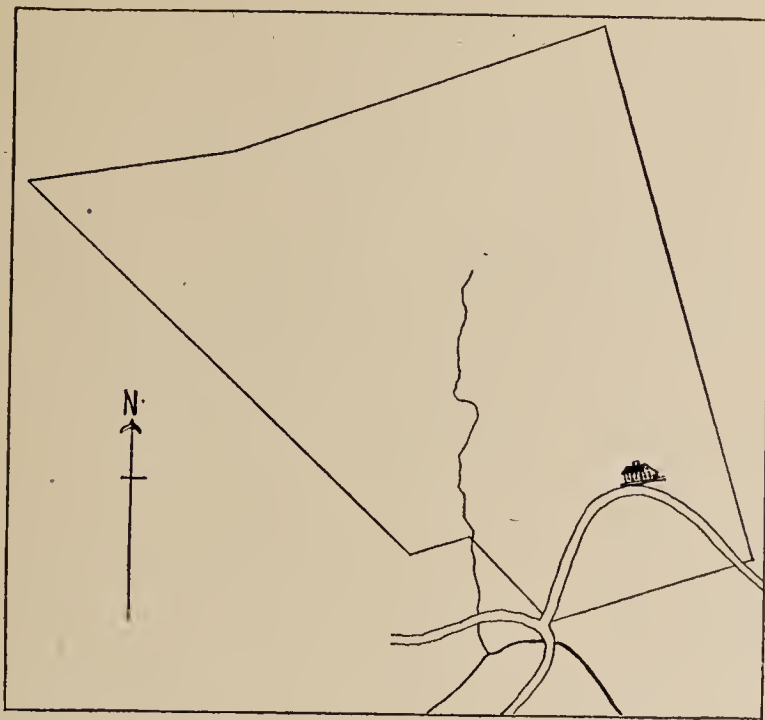
THE GLASS WORKS.



AT the Salem court, June 26, 1638, there were present Colonel Endecott, William Hathorne, Roger Conant and two magistrates from Lynn. Marmeduke Barton, servant of Francis Weston, was sentenced to be whipped and have a lock put upon one of his feet for running away from his master and filing off his lock. After Weston's removal, Barton became servant of Dea. John Horne. In the local court, Sept. 29, 1640, he was ordered to be severely whipped for running away and pilfering. He acknowledged that he went into two houses on the Lord's day and took half a cheese and a piece of cake out of Goodman Gouldsmith's and ate it, and also took a knife and a little milk. The other house was near the Great Cove, where he took nothing. His master asked the court for mercy for his servant. In the same court, Jan. 25, 1641-2, Barton was fined for receiving stolen silver, and was also ordered to be whipped the next day, being lecture day. The following June, the general court condemned him to slavery till the further order of the court, and also ordered him to be branded.

July 16, 1638, at a town meeting, Thomas Edwards, having six in his family, desired an acre of salt marsh as others had. John Friend requested a grant of two hundred acres of land. William Pester demanded a ten-acre lot and a farm; also, the exchange of Parmiter's ten-acre lot which he had purchased of him. William Gault¹ was received as an inhabitant and granted

¹William Gault, born about 1608, lived on the south side of Charter Street, next easterly of the cemetery, in the house later owned and occupied by Dr. Francis Gahtman; came from Yarmouth, Norfolkshire, England; cordwainer; embarked May 11, 1637, in the Mary Ann, being unmarried; married Mary —; died April 1, 1659; she married, secondly, Richard Bishop July 22, 1660; children: 1. Rebecca, born about 1641; married John Bly Nov. 11, 1663; 2. Deborah, born about 1645; married Edward Winter Nov. 17, 1669; 3. Sarah, born about 1647; married Henry Colborne Dec.



PLAN OF THE PESTER GRANT.

ten acres of planting ground. William Lord was granted about one and a half acres of upland lying next to his marsh lot, provided he should pay to the town five shillings an acre for it. Daniel Baxter propounded himself to be an inhabitant. John Harbert desired further accommodation, William Fisk, a ten-acre lot, and Robert Page,¹ some sixty acres of land near the old planters.

On the same day (July 16, 1638), the seven men granted to William Pester² a ten-acre lot of land and a farm of one hundred and fifty acres, upon the condition that within a year he should improve it. He apparently satisfied the requirement and received title to the land. William Trask owned it a few years later, and conveyed it to Robert Prince Dec. 20, 1655. Mr. Prince³ built

—, 1665. Mehitable Gault, who married Gov. John Easton of Rhode Island Feb. 4, 1661, was probably another daughter.

¹Robert Page, born about 1604, came from Ormsby, near Yarmouth, Norfolkshire, England, in 1637, with his wife Lucy and three children, Francis, Margaret and Susanna; removed to Hampton; representative; died Sept. 22, 1679; children: 1. Francis; living in 1679; 2. Margaret; married William Moulton; 3. Susanna; died before 1679; 4. Thomas, baptized in Salem Sept. 1, 1639; had children; 5. Rebecca, baptized in Salem Sept. 1, 1639; married John Smith; 6. Mary; married Samuel Fogg; 7. Hannah; married Henry Dow.

²In 1640, William Pester wrote to his "uncle Will^m Pester Esq^r at Barnard Castle my Lord Chamberlaynes house in Thames streete, London."

³ROBERT PRINCE¹ appears as a servant, with Bethiah and Lydia, probably his sisters, in the tavern of John Gedney in 1651. They were there in 1654. Rebecca Prince, perhaps another sister, married John Putnam and settled in Salem Village in 1652. She was called "step daughter" by Mr. Gedney. ROBERT PRINCE² married Sarah Warren of Watertown April 5, 1662; died June 4, 1674; she married, secondly, Alexander Osborne, an Irishman; she

upon it the house which lately stood on Spring Street and known

was accused of witchcraft, and died in the jail in Boston in May, 1692; children: 1. James,² born Jan. 19, 1664-5; died Sept. —, 1666; 2. *James*,² born about Aug. 15, 1668; 3. Elizabeth,² born Feb. 19, 1669-70; 4. *Joseph*.²

JAMES PRINCE²; farmer; lived on his father's homestead; married Sarah (Rea), widow of Jacob Phillips; died early in 1724; children: 1. Charity,³ born June 10, 1693; married Solomon Trow March 20, 1722; 2. Sarah,³ born Jan. 3, 1695-6; married Thomas Reddin Sept. 26, 1717; 3. Rebecca,³ baptized Dec. 11, 1698; married Robert Glanfield Dec. 25, 1727; 4. *James*,³ baptized Jan. 12, 1700-1; 5. *David*,³ baptized Jan. 31, 1702-3; 6. *Jonathan*,³ baptized July 20, 1707. JOSEPH PRINCE²; married Elizabeth Robinson Jan. 3, 1698-9; children: 1. *Robert*,³ born Dec. 29, 1700; 2. Joseph,³ born May 30, 1702; died at the age of six weeks; 3. Timothy,³ born Oct. —, 1703; died young; 4. Elizabeth,³ baptized July 29, 1705; died young; 5. Solomon,³ baptized March 30, 1707; cordwainer; lived in Salem; 6. Susanna,³ baptized July 3, 1709; 7. Abel,³ baptized April 8, 1711; 8. Martha,³ baptized June 11, 1713; 9. Elizabeth,³ baptized March 18, 1715-6; married John Nichols of Middleton Oct. 2, 1739; 10. William,³ baptized Sept. 8, 1717; married Mary Holland of Pomfret (published Sept. 1, 1744); 11. Samuel,³ baptized June 7, 1719; 12. *Timothy*,³ baptized Aug. 12, 1722.

JAMES PRINCE³; yeoman; married Hannah Putnam Dec. 2, 1730; died in 1755; she died June 19, 1798; lived on his father's homestead, and was the first treasurer of Danvers; children: 1. James,⁴ born Sept. 15, 1731; lived in Danvers; married Elizabeth Preston Sept. 18, 1755; died July 24, 1796; she died Dec. 18, 1822; had children; 2. Huldah,⁴ born Feb. 9, 1733-4; married Timothy Prince; 3. David,⁴ born Nov. 27, 1738; cordwainer; lived in Danvers; died Jan. 28, 1796; 4. John,⁴ born Jan. 26, 1743-4; died April 18, 1744; 5. John,⁴ born Nov. 20, 1745; living in 1800; 6. Amos,⁴ born Feb. 7, 1747-8; lived in Danvers; had children. DAVID PRINCE³; married Phebe Fuller Dec. 3, 1724; removed to Sutton about 1729, and died there; children: 1. David,⁴ born Oct. 23, 1725; 2. Sarah,⁴ born April 28, 1727; 3. Stephen,⁴ born Oct. 4, 1730; 4. John,⁴ born Nov. 27, 1733. DR. JONATHAN PRINCE³; lived on the southern end of Hawthorne Hill, at the head of Ingersoll Street in Danvers; married, first, Abigail Rogers of Billerica; second, Mary Porter; he died in May, 1753; his widow Mary died in 1782; children: 1. Abigail⁴; 2. Jonathan,⁴ born Jan. 21, 1734; lived in Danvers; physician; married Lydia Holton June 6, 1754; died at Salem Dec. 11, 1759; she died in Danvers May 11, 1761; no children; 3. Daniel,⁴ born Sept. 12, 1735; married, first, Elizabeth Rea March 15, 1763; second, Anne Felton; probably removed to Bow, N. H.; had children; 4. Nathan,⁴ born June 21, 1738; died Nov. 23, 1759; 5. Ezra,⁴ born Nov. 29, 1741; cooper; lived in Danvers; married Emme Goodale of Danvers March 1, 1770; died about September, 1771; no issue; 6. Mary,⁴ born May 27, 1744; died April 26, 1766; 7. Asa,⁴ born Feb. 22, 1747; captain; was at Lexington, Bunker Hill and Lake George, and fought gallantly; lived in Danvers; married Elizabeth Nichols June 15, 1769; had children; 8. Sarah,⁴ born July 13, 1749; 9. Ruth,⁴ born July 28, 1751; married Daniel Bigsbe of Topsfield May 2, 1776. ROBERT PRINCE³; married Mary Fowls (published March 5, 1728-9); probably removed to Connecticut about 1747; children: 1. Joseph,⁴ baptized July 19, 1730; 2. Ebenezer,⁴ baptized July 9, 1732; 3. Mary,⁴ baptized April 21, 1734; 4. Sarah,⁴ baptized July 25, 1736; 5. David,⁴ baptized Feb. 19, 1737-8; 6. Sarah,⁴ baptized June 29, 1740; 7. Elizabeth,⁴ baptized March 13, 1742-3. ABEL PRINCE³; married Hannah Eaton July 31, 1735; was dead in 1741; children: 1. Elizabeth,⁴ baptized June 8, 1740; 2. Anna,⁴ baptized June 8, 1740; 3. Hannah,⁴ baptized Aug. 16, 1741. TIMOTHY PRINCE³; lived in Danvers till 1760, and removed to Pomfret,



THE OSBORNE HOUSE.

as the ancient Osborne house. He died June 4, 1674, having devised the house and land to his two minor sons, James and Joseph, subject to his widow Sarah's improvement of the estate

during their minority. She married, secondly, Alexander Osborne, an Irishman, and vainly attempted to hold the property after the

Robert Prince

boys arrived at maturity. The action of Mrs. Osborne, who was influenced to do so by her husband, caused resentment among the neighbors. Her husband died and she became bedridden and an easy prey to the accusing girls in the witchcraft incriminations. She died in the jail in Boston, awaiting trial, May 10, 1692, having been in that prison more than two months. In the division of the real estate, in 1696, this house and the easterly portion of the grant was assigned to the son James, who lived here and died in 1724, having devised it to his sons, James and David. They divided it, and the house and land under and around it was

Conn.; married, first, Mary Putnam Nov. 8, 1744; she died Dec. 17, 1754; married, second, Huldah Prince Oct. 15, 1755; they were living at Pomfret in 1778; children: 1. Samuel,⁴ born Nov. 9, 1745; 2. Phebe,⁴ born Dec. 9, 1748; died May 23, 1750; 3. Betty,⁴ born Dec. 17, 1751; 4. Timothy,⁴ born Nov. 3, 1756; 5. Hannah,⁴ born Oct. 3, 1760; 6. Abel.⁴

released to James, who lived here and died, in 1775, having devised it to his sons David and John. David died in 1797, having devised his half part to his brother, who conveyed the place to Nathan Peirce of Salem Jan. 6, 1800.¹ He died in 1812, having devised it to his son George Peirce of Salem, merchant, who died in 1822, having devised it to his wife Elizabeth, who died in 1826, and the property descended to her young children who, by their guardian, conveyed it to Stephen Phillips of Salem, merchant, July 7, 1826.² Through several mesne conveyances it came to George Nichols, jr., of Salem, tanner, in 1853. He removed to the farm, and became a farmer; but, however, conveyed it to Stephen Driver of Salem, shoe manufacturer, the next year.³ To this time, the house had had the customary overhanging second story in front, and Mr. Driver, without changing the rooms, built out the first story even with the second, except for a short distance about five inches of the overhang was left at the western end. Mr. Driver died in 1868; and the widow and heirs conveyed the estate to George M. Underwood of Pawtucket, R. I., April 28, 1869.⁴ Mr. Underwood removed to Danvers, and, Feb. 7, 1872, conveyed the place to Jacob E. Spring of Brownfield, Me.⁵ In 1891, it became the property of St. John's Normal College, which sold the house, in 1915, to Daniel Cahill, who removed it to the northeasterly side of Maple Street, some twenty rods northwesterly from the railroad bridge, where it now stands.

At the session of the general court, Sept. 6, 1638, Capt. John Underhill, commander of the militia in Boston, being "committed for abusing the court, by his gross and palpable dissimulation and equivocation, or mental reservation, in his petition, and after saying his failing was only in the manner," was banished and ordered to go out of the jurisdiction within fourteen days, and not to return. He was ordered to take passage in the ship of Salem then bound for England. Two years later, Oct. 8, 1640, Captain Underhill came into the court, under safe conduct, and "openly and humbly acknowledged and bewailed his offences against God and this commonwealth, as he had formerly done the like to the church of Boston, who have thereupon received him again into the church, this court, also, being charitably and well persuaded of the truth of his repentance, are willing to forgive his former offences, so far as may concern every of our private interests, and are freely reconciled to him in Christian love,"

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 166, leaf 133.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 242, leaf 36.

³Essex Registry of Deeds, book 503, leaf 169.

⁴Essex Registry of Deeds, book 771, leaf 184.

⁵Essex Registry of Deeds, book 847, leaf 91.

suspended his sentence of banishment till the end of the next court of elections that they might have further proof of his repentance. On that date (June 2, 1641), his sentence of banishment was repealed.

At the general court, Sept. 6, 1638, Moses Maverick was given permission to sell "a tun of wine at Marble Head, and not to exceed this year."

At the same court, it was declared that every inhabitant in each town is liable to contribute to all charges, both in church and commonwealth, whereof he doth or may receive benefit, according to his ability, and if he does not do so voluntarily he may be assessed therefor.

In the first volume,¹ it is mentioned that, by order of the general court, Sept. 3, 1634, a market was established in Salem, to be held every Wednesday. Apparently, this market, because of its frequency, failed to produce desired results, as families probably only purchased supplies sufficient for the ensuing week. Thus sales would be comparatively small, and there was no inducement for merchants to bring merchandise from a distance and sell a small quantity each week. After four years' experience with the market, the English system of fairs was instituted.

From the time of King John, fairs had been held in England, as well as other European countries, usually semi-annually, at which people procured their supplies for a half-year. These fairs were markets infrequently held and purchases were on a much larger scale. Animals, supplies, goods and merchandise were brought from distant places in great variety and quantity. A fair was the sole emporium of domestic commerce, and was on a scale proportionate to the number and needs of purchasers.

Not only were there pens for domestic animals, filled with respective kinds, but booths and stands for the sale of articles of food, apparel, dress materials, wares and other merchandise.

There were many means of amusement, such as exhibitions of trained animals, magicians, gamesters and acrobats to draw from the visitors what small coin they might have with them. There were also various shows, performers on tight ropes, lotteries, stage plays and dancing. Refreshments were beer and gingerbread. To the confusion and excitement were added strange sights and a medley of noises. Trumpets called attention to certain performers, fiddles marked the place of the dancing and hawkers cried their goods. Flying flags and banners with the bright clothing of the people made the occasion very attractive.²

¹Page 278.

²In a tract published in 1641, is a description of a Bartholomew fair, and Brand's Popular Antiquities, page 556, quotes a portion of it.

Not only were there sales of corporal things, but labor was offered for sale at these fairs. At the places set apart for this purpose stood the carter with his whip, the cowherd with a lock of cowhair in his hat, the shepherd with his crook, laborers and mechanics each with an implement of his labor. They stood there from an early hour in the morning.¹

In England, at the time of the settlement of Salem, no fair could be held without a grant from the sovereign power; and officers were appointed to cause peace to be maintained and to examine the quality of goods exposed for sale, with power to confiscate those that were unfit for use. Sales at fairs were free from taxes. This was the complete substitute for modern free trade.

The general court, Sept. 6, 1638, authorized fairs at Salem, Watertown and Dorchester. The fair at Salem was ordered to be held twice each year; on the last Wednesday in May and September. The spring fair was appointed on election day, which was almost a holiday. Those days were usually selected for fairs as the people were then freer to give it their time and attention. The fairs were similar to those of England, to which the people here had been accustomed when living in the homeland.

In England, as well as in New England, the attendance at fairs diminished as the towns increased in number, and the distance between them lessened and better roads and other means of communication enabled goods to be brought in more freely and easily. Commerce by water also assisted in this. In Northumberland, at least, fairs were the chief centers of country traffic as late as the sixteenth century. English fairs had greatly declined by the middle of the eighteenth century.

In Salem, the growth of commerce and local production by which most of the needs of the people were supplied, caused the change from fairs into more modern systems of markets and stores.

In New England, the word fair has completely lost its old-world meaning, and is now almost exclusively applied to industrial and agricultural exhibitions, the latter being generally county fairs.

Election week continued to be observed as a holiday season, elections were held (until 1831), also, and generally trainings.

¹Such a market as this is thus referred to in the New Testament: A householder "went out early in the morning to hire laborers . . . And he went out about the third hour and saw others standing in the market-place. . . And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle? They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us."—*Matt. 20 : 1-7.*

Places of amusement were at Fort Pickering, on Winter Island, or Juniper point, at Castle Hill, at Bell Tavern, in what is now Peabody, and at Danvers Square. At these centres refreshments were sold, coppers were pitched and props thrown, and jumping and wrestling entertained the crowd. There were also the negro fiddler and dancing.

Owners of slaves almost universally gave them the privileges of election week in Salem and its vicinity at least, and it, too, became their annual holiday season. Fun was rampant from Monday morning till Saturday night, being at its height on Wednesday, election day, when they, too, elected a governor to be the director of the holiday week the next year. Election cake is still made in some old-fashioned families, but the gingerbread of the ancient days has long ago disappeared from refreshment booths.

Sept. 6, 1638, the general court ordered "intimation to be given to the elders of each church of the desire of the Court to keep the last Thursday of the eighth month a day of thanksgiving for the safe coming of so many ships this year, and the seasonable weather in the spring, and now to ripen the harvest."

At the same time, the general court ordered that excommunicated persons, appearing in other assemblies and boldly speaking lightly of the ordinances and their censure, should be fined and imprisoned, and after six months probation, be banished, if they continued in so doing. This law remained in force only a year, however.

At the Salem court, Sept. 25, 1638, William Poole, a servant of Col. John Endecott, was sentenced for running away from his master to do twelve months further service for him. He was before the same court, March 30, 1641, for stealing stockings from Thomas Rood (Root?) and taking away a canoe belonging to Mr. Emery, and was ordered to return the stockings, and be whipped for lying. In the Salem town meeting, March 1, 1655-6, his request to become an inhabitant was refused; and his name disappeared from the local records.

At a town meeting, Oct. 29, 1638, appeared George Curwyn,¹ a young man of twenty-nine years, who had come to Salem with

¹CAPT. GEORGE CORWIN¹; merchant; married, first, Elizabeth, daughter of John Herbert and widow of John White, in 1636; she died Sept. 15, 1668; married, second, Elizabeth, daughter of Gov. Edward Winslow of Plymouth and widow of Robert Brooks, Sept. 22, 1669; he died Jan. 3, 1685; she was his widow in 1696; children: 1. Abigail,² born Aug. 1, 1637; died young; 2. John,² born July 25, 1638; 3. Jonathan,² born Nov. 14, 1640; 4. Hannah,² born in 1642; died young; 5. Abigail,² baptized Nov. 30, 1643; married, first, Eleazer Hathorne; second, James Russell; 6. Hannah,² baptized Jan. 4, 1645-6; married William Browne; 7. Elizabeth,² baptized July 2, 1648; died before 1685; 8. Penelope,² born Aug. 7, 1670; married,

his wife and two children. He was born in Workington, Cumber-

Josiah Wolcott Feb. 19, 1684-5; died Nov. 28, 1690; 9. Susanna,² born Dec. 10, 1672; married Edward Lyde of Boston Nov. 29, 1694; died before 1701; 10. George,² born in 1674; died before 1684.

CAPT. JOHN CORWIN²; merchant; married Margaret, daughter of John Winthrop, jr., May —, 1665; died July 12, 1683; she removed to Boston in 1693, and died Sept. 28, 1697; children: 1. *George*,³ born Feb. 26, 1666-7; 2. Elizabeth,³ born April 28, 1668; of Boston, unmarried, in 1709; 3. Lucy,³ born May 11, 1670; married, first, John Elliston Sept. 24, 1696; was his widow in 1709; married, second, Thomas Guinn March 20, 1710; and was his widow in 1733; 4. Hannah,³ born April 4, 1672; married Rev. Peter Thacher Oct. 14, 1708; 5. Samuel,³ born Oct. 12, 1674; 6. Mary,³ baptized Sept. —, 1676; married Thomas Smith of Boston May 9, 1701; 7. Margaret³; married Abiel Walley of Boston June 27, 1710. HON. JONATHAN CORWIN²; merchant; one of the judges of the witchcraft court, court of common pleas, probate court and superior court; married Elizabeth (Sheafe), widow of Robert Gibbs of Boston March 20, 1675-6; died July 25, 1718; she died Aug. 29, 1718; children: 1. Elizabeth,³ born May 5, 1678; married James Lindall; 2. Margaret,³ born April 15, 1679; died Nov. 5, 1679; 3. Sarah,³ born Aug. 12, 1680; died Dec. 19, 1689; 4. Jonathan,³ born Oct. 2, 1681; died Aug. 12, 1682; 5. *George*,³ born May 21, 1683; 6. John,³ born July 9, 1684; died Sept. 10, 1684; 7. Margaret,³ born Nov. 30, 1685; died Feb. 23, 1685-6; 8. Anna,³ born Aug. 1, 1687; 9. Jonathan,³ born Sept. 15, 1689; died Dec. 25, 1689; 10. Harbert,³ born Dec. 15, 1690; died Feb. 10, 1690-1.

CAPT. GEORGE CORWIN³; merchant; sheriff, who executed the witches; married, first, Susanna Gedney April 23, 1688; second, Lydia Gedney before 1693; died in 1696; she died, his widow, Dec. 23, 1700; child: 1. Bartholomew,⁴ born June 21, 1693; lived in Westerly, R. I.; married Esther Burt; died in 1747; had children. REV. GEORGE CORWIN; H. C., 1701; pastor of First Church; married Mehitabel Parkman July 27, 1711; died Nov. 23, 1717; she died Nov. 13, 1718; children: 1. Jonathan,⁴ born May 26, 1713; died Nov. 6, 1718; 2. Samuel,⁴ born Dec. 17, 1715; H. C., 1735; esquire; married, first, Sarah —; second, Abigail Russell of Charlestown May 27, 1750; she died March 31, 1793; he died April 10, 1802; 3. *George*,⁴ born Dec. 4, 1717.

GEORGE CURWEN⁴; merchant; married Sarah Pickman March 18, 1738; died April 10, 1802; she died Jan. 5, 1810, aged ninety-one; children: 1. *George*,⁵ born June 4, 1739; drowned at sea Jan. —, 1761; 2. Mehitabel,⁵ born Jan. 23, 1741; married Richard Ward Nov. 8, 1764; had son Samuel Curwen Ward,⁶ born June 29, 1769, who had a son Samuel Curwen Ward,⁷ born Nov. 26, 1795, who had his name changed to *Samuel Curwen*, at the request of his great-uncle Samuel Corwin (see below); 3. Sarah,⁵ born Jan. —, 1742-3; died, unmarried, Feb. 26, 1773, at the age of thirty years.

SAMUEL CURWEN [WARD]¹; married Priscilla Barr March 22, 1818; died near Bellona Arsenal, Va., July 3, 1831; she died Nov. 27, 1863; children: 1. James Barr,⁸ born Dec. 20, 1818; 2. *Samuel Ropes*,⁸ born Dec. 28, 1820; 3. George Rea,⁸ born July 4, 1823; died, unmarried, March 17, 1900.

JAMES BARR CURWEN⁸; married, first, Rebecca Hovey Endicott Feb. 3, 1848; she died Aug. 11, 1883; married, second, Mary Shepard Osgood; she died Aug. 24, 1885; he died March 23, 1894; children: 1. Samuel Endicott,⁹ born Nov. 8, 1848; died July 6, 1849; 2. Caroline Endicott,⁹ born Jan. 7, 1852; married James Henry Davis of North Andover Nov. 17, 1875; 3. James Endicott,⁹ born Jan. 14, 1856; died March 19, 1857; 4. George

land County, England, Dec. 10, 1610. This new comer was a man of education and property and became a merchant. He wore a seal ring which was cut with the following coat of arms. He requested of his townsmen accommodation, that is, a grant of land. For a similar purpose, Robert Buffum¹ also appeared at the meeting. He was of about the same age as Mr. Corwin. He lived at the west-erly corner of Essex and Boston streets, and many of his descendants were zealous Quakers. At the same town meeting, Richard Dodge was admitted an inhabitant, and desired to be accommodated with land. He was brother of William Dodge in



Endicott,⁹ born March 8, 1861; lived in Andover; married Helen Haven Dana Oct. 18, 1882; died in 1896; she died June —, 1918. CAPT. SAMUEL ROPES CURWEN⁸; shipmaster; married his cousin Mary Smith Holman May 15, 1846; died Nov. 11, 1870; she died May 9, 1902; children: 1. Henry,⁹ born Sept. 9, 1847, in Wenham; merchant; lived in Salem; died, unmarried, July 13, 1872; 2. *Samuel Holman*,⁹ born Aug. 5, 1849, in Salem; 3. Caroline Rea,⁹ born Sept. 16, 1851, in Salem; died Jan. 6, 1852; 4. *Charles Frederick*,⁹ born July 18, 1853, in Salem; 5. Betsey Holman,⁹ born June 2, 1856; lives in Salem, unmarried.

SAMUEL HOLMAN CURWEN⁹; jeweler; married Abbie C. Merrill Nov. 4, 1874; died July 22, 1895; she died, his widow, Dec. 31, 1911; children: 1. James Henry,¹⁰ born Oct. 29, 1875; is in the navy; 2. *Ernest Worcester*,¹⁰ born April 23, 1877; 3. *Richard Brown*,¹⁰ born Feb. 17, 1891. CHARLES FREDERICK CURWEN⁹; founder; married Ada L. Perkins May 19, 1880; died Dec 29, 1909; children: 1. ———¹⁰ (son), stillborn Oct. 24, 1886; 2. George Barr,¹⁰ born June 30, 1888; graduated at Columbia College; married Helen Marguerite Deppler of Asbury, N. J., Sept. 8, 1915; died Feb. 1, 1918; no children.

ERNEST WORCESTER CURWEN¹⁰; married Cecelia Biron of Revere July 24, 1901; children: 1. Helen,¹¹ born May 8, 1902; 2. Dorothy,¹¹ born Feb. 17, 1905; died Aug. 20, 1905. RICHARD BROWN CURWEN;¹⁰ married Helen Mary Frohock Sept. 19, 1920; child: 1. Robert Worcester,¹¹ born June 13, 1921.

¹ROBERT BUFFUM¹ may have come from Yorkshire; farmer; married Tamazin —; died Aug. 6, 1669; the stone which formerly indicated his burialplace is in Harmony Grove Cemetery and marked "R. B."; she died, his widow, in May or June, 1688; children: 1. Sarah²; married William Bean; 2. *Joshua*,² born April 22, 1635; 3. Deborah²; married Robert Wilson; 4. Margaret²; married John Smith; 5. Lydia,² born Feb. 19, 1644; married, first, John Hill Aug. 26, 1664; second, George Locker; 6. Mary,² born about 1648; married Jeremiah Neal; 7. *Caleb*,² born Sept. 29, 1650.

JOSHUA BUFFUM²; builder of vessels; married Damaris Pope in or before 1663; died in 1705; children: 1. Mary,³ born Nov. 27, 1663; 2. Damaris,³ born Sept. 30, 1671; married John Ruck; 3. *Joshua*,³ born May 10, 1681; 4. Samuel,³ born Aug. 21, 1683; removed to Newport, R. I., be-

Salem and of Michael Dodge in England. His house was not

fore 1708; cooper; married Amy (or Anne) —. CALEB BUFFUM²; husbandman; married Hannah Pope March 26, 1672; lived in Salem in 1715; children: 1. *Caleb*,³ born May 14, 1673; 2. *Robert*,³ born Dec. 1, 1675; 3. *Tamasin*³; married Lawrence Southwick; 4. *Hannah*³; married John Osborne; 5. *Benjamin*³; 6. *Jonathan*.³

JOSHUA BUFFUM³; yeoman; married, first, — —; second, Hannah, widow of Eleazer Pope; died in the winter of 1761-2; children: 1. *Joshua*⁴; 2. *Elizabeth*,⁴ born Nov. 6, 1703; married — Britton; 3. *Mary*,⁴ born July 8, 1723; married Stephen Pope; 4. *Lydia*,⁴ born Oct. 10, 1726; married Enos Pope; 5. *Damaris*⁴; died, unmarried, about 1781; 6. *Abigail*⁴; married — Reed. CALEB BUFFUM³; married Mary —; died before 1730; children: 1. *Mary*,⁴ born July 5, 1705; married Thomas Nichols; 2. *Caleb*,⁴ born June 22, 1710; removed to Newport, R. I.; 3. *Joshua*,⁴ born Oct. 15, 1713; 4. *Hannah*,⁴ born about 1716; 5. *Samuel*,⁴ born in 1721. ROBERT BUFFUM³; blacksmith; married, first, Elizabeth Farrar of Lynn May 13, 1700; she died June 23, 1702; married, second, Sarah Blaney of Lynn Dec. 20, 1703; married, third, Susannah —; he died about August, 1746; she probably died about 1775; children: 1. *Hannah*,⁴ born Aug. 9, 1701; died June 28, 1702; 2. *Sarah*,⁴ born Oct. 4, 1704; died Nov. 22, 1704; 3. *Sarah*⁴; published to Daniel Needham Oct. 7, 1727, in Marblehead; 4. *James*⁴; hatter; probably never married; died in Salem about 1766; 5. *Robert*,⁴ born June 12, 1709; 6. *Joseph*,⁴ born Feb. 23, 1711-2; 7. *Elizabeth*,⁴ born Dec. 4, 1713; died Nov. 26, 1714; 8. *Elizabeth*,⁴ born in 1717-8; married Ebenezer Pope. BENJAMIN BUFFUM³; blacksmith; married Elizabeth Buxton; removed to Smithfield, R. I., in 1739; children: 1. *Elizabeth*,⁴ born June 26, 1709; 2. *Hannah*,⁴ born Sept. 1, 1711; 3. *Esther*,⁴ born Sept. 16, 1714; 4. *Joseph*,⁴ born Sept. 20, 1717; married Margaret Osborn March 29, 1737; removed to Rhode Island; 5. *Lydia*,⁴ born May 26, 1722; 6. *Benjamin*,⁴ born March 15, 1725-6; 7. *Rachel*,⁴ born Dec. 24, 1727. JONATHAN BUFFUM³; married, first, Mercy —; second, Mary —; died about 1729; his widow married John Southwick; children: 1. *Jonathan*,⁴ born Dec. 8, 1713; died Dec. 8, 1713; 2. *Mercy*⁴; 3. *Deborah*,⁴ born Feb. 1, 1716-7; 4. *Jonathan*,⁴ born Sept. 16, 1719; 5. *Mary*⁴; living in 1729; 6. *Mehitable*⁴; unmarried in 1749.

JOSHUA BUFFUM⁴; fisherman and mariner; married, first, — —; second, Rachel (Bassett), widow of William Bean March 2, 1760; died about 1768; children: 1. *Jane*⁵; married Amos Mason of Swanzey; 2. *Joshua*,⁵ born about 1752; mariner; 3. *Abigail*,⁵ born about 1755; married Benjamin Symonds; 4. *Samuel*.⁵ JOSHUA BUFFUM⁴; cordwainer; married Sarah Lester Dec. 8, 1743; removed to Berwick, Me.; child: 1. *Samuel*,⁵ born June —, 1744. SAMUEL BUFFUM⁴; glazier; married Lucretia Derby; lived in Berwick, Me., until 1744, when he returned to Salem; died before 1782; she died in Ju—, 1815; children: 1. *Lucretia*,⁵ born Oct. 31, 1750; married Zachariah Collins of Lynn, where she died Nov. 25, 1801; 2. *Lydia*,⁵ born Oct. —, 1762; married Jedediah Johnson Nov. 4, 1781. JOSEPH BUFFUM⁴; blacksmith; children: 1. *Robert*⁵; tailor; married Rachel — before 1773; 2. *Isaac*,⁵ born about 1737; 3. *Elizabeth*⁵; married Daniel Southwick; 4. *Joseph*,⁵ born before 1749; blacksmith; married Jane —; died before 1786; she married, second, Joseph Wadleigh of Kensington, N. H.; 5. *Eunice*,⁵ born before 1749; 6. *Susannah*,⁵ born after 1749. JONATHAN BUFFUM⁴; trader; married Sarah —; died in 1793; she died Oct. 30, 1815; children: 1. *Mercy*,⁵ born July 2, 1747; 2. *Jonathan*,⁵ born Oct. 15, 1753; 3. *Caleb*,⁵ born July 16, 1759; yeoman; died, unmarried, June 25, 1847; 4. *Peace*,⁵ born Nov. 10, 1764; died, unmarried, Dec. 30, 1850.

large, being two stories in height, and having a parlor. It stood

SAMUEL BUFFUM⁵; sailmaker; married Nancy Lane; died May 23, 1818; child: 1. Joshua,⁶ born March —, 1814; died in Lynn Nov. 24, 1867. SAMUEL BUFFUM⁵; sailmaker; married Anne Stowe of St. John, Newfoundland, June 26, 1771; died May 23, 1818; she died April 17, 1828; children: 1. Ann,⁶ born Feb. 7, 1773; 2. Nancy⁶; married — Osborn; 3. Sarah Lester,⁶ born in 1784; died, unmarried, Nov. 12, 1866; 4. John⁶; probably died between 1818 and 1825; 5. Samuel⁶; 6. William S.⁶, born about 1786; 7. Henry⁶; probably died between 1818 and 1825. ISAAC BUFFUM⁵; married Eunice —; died March 10, 1830, aged ninety-three; children: 1. Ezekiel,⁶ born about 1772; yeoman; married Sarah — in 1837; died Aug. 9, 1843; 2. Sarah,⁶ born about 1774; died, unmarried, March 22, 1846. JONATHAN BUFFUM⁵; tailor and yeoman; married Anne Purington of Lynn April 28, 1778; died March 31, 1835; she died Feb. 5, 1842; children: 1. Mercy,⁶ born April 5, 1779; married John Alley Dec. 23, 1800; died Oct. 29, 1862; 2. William,⁶ born March 12, 1782; 3. Edward,⁶ born Dec. 29, 1784; 4. Israel,⁶ born Feb. 16, 1787; cordwainer; lived in Lynn; married Ruth Oliver Dec. 19, 1800; she died Aug. 3, 1866; he died in Lynn April 9, 1874; had children; 5. Anna,⁶ born Nov. 29, 1789; married William Frye of Danvers Oct. 21, 1813; 6. Jonathan,⁶ born Oct. 9, 1793; shoe-manufacturer in 1836 and painter in 1850; lived in Lynn; married Hannah Breed of Lynn May 15, 1816; she was his wife in 1843; he died in Lynn March 17, 1880.

SAMUEL BUFFUM⁶; sailmaker; died before 1828; child: 1. Joshua,⁷ born about 1814; of Salem, mariner, in 1828; died in Lynn in 1867. WILLIAM S. BUFFUM⁶; tailor; married Frances K. Milod March 14, 1810; died Nov. 8, 1826; she died in Andover, his widow, Sept. 16, 1869; child: 1. Emily F. M.⁷; married Samuel Raymond of Boston and Andover. WILLIAM BUFFUM⁶; trader, tanner and farmer; lived in Troy in 1835; married Mary Chase of Swanzey Sept. 5, 1809; she died Dec. 8, 1846; he died Jan. 20, 1855; children: 1. Jonathan Chase,⁷ born Feb. 23, 1811; married Phebe L. Chase May 30, 1836; 2. Sarah Slade,⁷ born Nov. 22, 1812; married Alfred A. Raymond of Boston Sept. 19, 1841; 3. Mary Chase,⁷ born Feb. 11, 1815; married Joseph M. Fuller of Lynn Feb. 16, 1842; 4. Caleb,⁷ born Oct. 22, 1816; 5. Peace,⁷ born Oct. 22, 1818; married Joseph A. Wood Oct. 2, 1849; lived in Watertown, Wis.; 6. William Penn,⁷ born July 28, 1821; married Martha J. Tibbetts Nov. 6, 1853; died Nov. 11, 1878; she died Feb. 11, 1904; had a child; 7. Israel C.⁷, born April 25, 1823; housewright; died in Ipswich, unmarried, May 21, 1855; 8. Robert,⁷ born July 7, 1828. EDWARD BUFFUM⁶; chaise and harness maker; removed to Lynn about 1826; married Sybil Chase of Swansey; she died July 24, 1852; he died April 28, 1862; children: 1. Edward Slade,⁷ born Aug. 20, 1818; 8. Martha Slade,⁷ born June 22, 1820; married Thomas J. Gifford; 3. David Chase,⁷ born Nov. 7, 1822; probably died before 1862; 4. George,⁷ born March 8, 1825; carpenter; lived in Salem in 1862; 5. Anna Maria,⁷ born Oct. 23, 1828; married Aaron Augustus Kehew; 6. Lydia,⁷ born Dec. 3, 1831; died Oct. 2, 1832; 7. Lucy Ellen,⁷ born Aug. 21, 1833; unmarried in 1862.

CALEB BUFFUM⁷; cordwainer and grocer; married Mary Eliza Barr Feb. 3, 1839; died —; she died, his widow, Dec. 15, 1905; children: 1. Caleb Henry,⁸ born May 31, 1839; 2. Charles Mason,⁸ born Jan. 17, 1841; 3. Mary Eliza,⁸ born Jan. 20, 1843; died, unmarried, Feb. 8, 1916; 4. James Barr,⁸ born Feb. 9, 1846; died Jan. 1, 1847; 5. Emma Ropes,⁸ born May 7, 1848; died Oct. 27, 1853; 6. Maria,⁸ born Nov. 20, 1850; 7. Hannah Maria,⁸ born in 1851; married James Frank Hill Oct. 17, 1872; 8. Franklin B.⁸, born June 20, 1853; 9. Alice,⁸ born July 31, 1856; lived in Salem; 10.

on the south side of Dodge Street, in what is now Beverly, about a quarter of a mile easterly of Alewife brook. He died in 1671,¹ having in his will devised the house and land around it to his sons Edward and Joseph. Feb. 15, 1708-9, Edward released his half of the estate to his brother Joseph.² Joseph Dodge died Aug. 10, 1716; and the title descended to his son Dr. Joseph Dodge of Beverly. The house was burned just before May 29, 1736.³ At the same meeting, Mark Vermais⁴ and widow Alice

Grace,⁸ born Oct. 10, 1858; married Joseph T. Ingalls of Lynn Nov. 27, 1879. ROBERT BUFFUM⁷; married Elizabeth —; child: 1. Annie,⁸ born Jan. 27, 1862. EDWARD SLADE BUFFUM⁷; lived in Chelsea in 1862; married Ellen C. —; child: 1. Albert,⁸ born May 20, 1850, in Salem.

CHARLES MASON BUFFUM⁸; hardware dealer; married Maria Adelia Perley of Danvers Nov. 26, 1868; died May 20, 1885; child: 1. Laura Peirce,⁹ born May 25, 1873; school teacher; married, first, Albert Vitty; second, George Harvey of East Weare, N. H.

¹RICHARD DODGE¹ married Edith —; died June 15, 1671, leaving an estate of the value of seventeen hundred and sixty-four pounds; she died, his widow, Jan. 27, 1677-8, aged seventy-five; children: 1. John,² born about 1635; 2. Mary²; married Zachariah Herrick; 3. Sarah,² born about 1641 (baptized July 3, 1641); married — —; 4. Richard,² born about 1642 (baptized July 3, 1644); lived in Wenham; married Mary Eaton Feb. 23, 1667-8; died April 13, 1705; she died Nov. 2, 1716; had children; 5. Samuel²; married Mary —; she died Aug. 6, 1717; had children; 6. Edward²; lived in Beverly; married Mary Haskell April —, 1673; had children; 7. Joseph,² born about 1651; lived in Beverly; married Sarah Eaton Feb. 21, 1671; died in Beverly Aug. 10, 1716, at the age of sixty-five.

JOHN DODGE²; lived in Beverly; married Sarah —; died Jan. 14, 1722-3; children: 1. Deliverance,³ born March 15, 1660-1; 2. John,³ born April 15, 1662; lived in Wenham; married Ruth —; 3. Josiah,³ born June 4, 1665; lived in Beverly; married Sarah —; died Jan. 19, 1714; 4. Sarah,³ born Jan. 13, 1667; 5. Ebenezer,³ born Aug. 1, 1670; 6. Mary,³ born Aug. 15, 1672; 7. Deborah,³ baptized Dec. 6, 1674; died July 8, 1675; 8. Andrew,³ baptized Oct. 29, 1676.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 21, leaf 80.

³See Essex Registry of Deeds, book 72, leaf 105.

⁴Mark Vermais was perhaps son of Mrs. Alice Vermais. She was admitted to the Salem church in 1639. He was engaged to be married to Katherine — in 1640, but she forsook him and married Nicholas Pacy of Lowestoft, Suffolkshire, England, merchant. Mrs. Vermais had a daughter Abigail, who was admitted to the church in Salem in 1640, and married, first, Robert Bethune of Boston; second, Edward Hutchinson; and, probably a son Benjamin, who belonged to the Salem church, and married Mercy, eldest daughter of Gov. William Bradford of Plymouth in 1648, and removed to Boston and thence to Plymouth. The Vermais family remained in Salem only a few years. Mrs. Vermais conveyed the title to some land in the Northfield in 1655, but had previously removed from the town. She died Feb. 9, 1656. There is a small hill in Danvers, lying south-westerly from the junction of Andover Street and Pope's lane, which perpetuates the name, though spelled differently. In 1666, it was called Shermaid's hill; in 1699, Scarcemaid's hill; in 1701, Scaremaid's hill; and in 1703, Fairmaid's hill. The family name was sometimes written Fearmayes.

Vermais desired accommodation of land at Salem; Robert Penn was admitted an inhabitant; Joshua Verin and Thomas Truslar desired a ten-acre lot each; and Henry Cooke¹ desired to be an

¹HENRY COOK¹; slaughterer; married Judith Birdsale June —, 1639; died Dec. 25, 1661; she died, his widow, Sept. 11, 1689; children: 1. *Isaac*,² born April 3, 1640; 2. *Samuel*,² born Sept. 30, 1641; of Salem in 1673; 3. *Judith*,² born Sept. 15, 1643; married John Pudney; 4. *Rachel*,² born Sept. 25, 1645; married Elisha Kebee; 5. *John*,² born Sept. 6, 1647; 6. *Mary*² (twin), born Sept. 15, 1650; married Robert Moulton; 7. *Martha*² (twin), born Sept. 15, 1650; living in 1667; 8. *Henry*,² born Dec. 30, 1652; 9. *Elizabeth*,² born Sept. —, 1654; died Sept. —, 1654; 10. *Hannah*,² born Sept. —, 1658; married Daniel Canady.

ISAAC COOK²; husbandman; married Elizabeth Buxton May 3, 1664; died in the autumn of 1692; she was his widow in 1713; children: 1. *Elizabeth*,³ born Sept. 23, 1665; married — Wilson about 1685; 2. *Isaac*,³ born Jan. 9, 1666; died April 6, 1671; 3. *Mary*,³ born Nov. 12, 1668; living in 1692; 4. *Abigail*,³ born April 12, 1670; living in 1692; 5. *Hannah*,³ born Oct. 15, 1671; married William King June 4, 1695; 6. *John*,³ born Dec. 23, 1673; probably died young; 7. *Isaac*,³ born Sept. 3, 1674; died Oct. 8, 1679; 8. *Rachel*,³ born Feb. 20, 1675-6; died Oct. 15, 1679; 9. *Ebenezer*,³ born Dec. 24, 1677; died Oct. 20, 1679; 10. *Samuel*,³ born Oct. 1, 1679; 11. *Henry*,³; 12. *Sarah*,³; living in 1692; 13. *Lydia*,³; under eighteen in 1692. JOHN COOK²; blacksmith; married Mary Buxton Dec. 28, 1671; died in the summer of 1716; she survived him; children: 1. *Mary*,³ born Nov. 11, 1672; died Aug. 23, 1691; 2. *John*,³ born Aug. 20, 1674; 3. *Elizabeth*,³ born April 7, 1676; married John Chapman; 4. *Samuel*,³ born Nov. 3, 1678; died Oct. 11, 1679; 5. *Joseph*,³ born March 9, 1680; 6. *Hannah*,³ born Sept. 9, 1684; married Thomas Purchase; 7. *Lydia*,³ born March 1, 1687; unmarried in 1716; 8. *Isaac*,³ born April 16, 1689; 9. *Ebenezer*,³ born Aug. 24, 1691. HENRY COOK²; husbandman; removed to Wallingford, Conn., about 1680; married Mary Hale "last of September, 1678;" child: 1. *Mary*,³ born July 15, 1678.

SAMUEL COOK³; husbandman; married Mary Small Jan. 21, 1702-3; died in the spring of 1718; she survived him; children: 1. *Isaac*,⁴ born in 170-; 2. *Charles*,⁴ born in 170-; 3. *Mary*,⁴ baptized April 18, 1708; published to Jasper Needham Nov. 30, 1731; 4. *Samuel*,⁴ baptized Dec. 10, 1710; 5. *Daniel*,⁴ baptized Sept. 23, 1716. HENRY COOK³; married Rachel Dyer April 11, 1722; died in the summer of 1743; she survived him; children: 1. *Sarah*,⁴ born about 1732; married Thomas Whittredge of Beverly June 10, 1753; 2. *Rachel*,⁴; of Danvers, unmarried, in 1755; 3. *Mary*,⁴; of Danvers, unmarried, in 1755. JOHN COOK³; mariner; married Hannah Dean June 11, 1701; died in the autumn of 1721; she died in 1745; children: 1. *John*,⁴ born April —, 170-; died young; 2. *Samuel*,⁴ born in 170-; 3. *Joseph*,⁴ born April 1, 170-; 4. *Benjamin*,⁴ born in 170-; 5. *Mary*,⁴; married Joseph Glover; 6. *Elizabeth*,⁴; married Joseph Henderson; 7. *Hannah*,⁴; married Nathaniel Archer; 8. *George*,⁴ born March 5, 1719; died between 1731 and 1745. JOSEPH COOK³; blacksmith; married Margaret Cox Aug. 14, 1706; they were living in Salem in 1718; children: 1. *Joseph*,⁴ born April 17, 1707; 2. *James*,⁴ born March 22, 1709-10; 3. *William*,⁴ born Jan. 14, 1711-2; 4. *Margaret*,⁴ born Aug. 20, 1714; married Edward Diamond Dec. 7, 1733. ISAAC COOK³; blacksmith and fisherman; married Martha Anniball Oct. 17, 1717; died in the early summer of 1754; she was his widow in 1757; children: 1. *Robert*,⁴ baptized May 17, 1719; 2. *Isaac*,⁴ baptized July 31, 1720; 3. *Jonathan*,⁴ baptized Sept. 2, 1722. EBENEZER COOK³; married Margaret Webb Oct. 22, 1718; she married, secondly, John

inhabitant. Mr. Cooke was a butcher; and lived on Washington

Darling of Mendon in 1749; children: 1. Ebenezer,⁴ born Aug. 25, 1719; 2. John,⁴ born April 20, 1721; 3. Daniel,⁴ born Oct. 12, 1722; cordwainer; lived in Salem in 1749, and in Mendon in 1765 and 1779; yeoman in 1779; married Abigail —; she was of Mendon, his widow, in 1803; 4. Samuel,⁴ born July 12, 1724; 5. Jonathan,⁴ born May 23, 1727; died young; 6. Benjamin,⁴ born July 12, 1729; 7. Jonathan,⁴ born Sept. 19, 1731.

ISAAC COOK⁴; cordwainer, shoemaker and shoreman; lived in the Danvers part of Salem; married Elizabeth Waters Jan. 17, 1726-7; died in the winter of 1752-3; she lived in Danvers, his widow, in 1757; children: 1. Hannah,⁵ born about 1728; married Samuel Darby Dec. —, 1753; 2. Abigail,⁵ born about 1737; married Daniel Felton Dec. 12, 1765; 3. Lydia,⁵ born about 1740; married Daniel Reed of Danvers Nov. 19, 1765. CHARLES COOK⁴; blacksmith; married Hannah —; died in the autumn of 1750; she was his widow in 1751; children: 1. Charles⁵; aged under fourteen in 1751; 2. Hannah⁵; married Ebenezer Pike of Woburn (published March 29, 1777). SAMUEL COOK⁴; lived in Peabody part of Salem; married Elizabeth Douglass July 28, 1735; children: 1. Henry,⁵ baptized April 22, 1739; lived in Danvers; mariner; married Sarah Mansfield Nov. 12, 1761; died in the summer of 1771; she died in Danvers March 11, 1810; had children; 2. Thomas,⁵ baptized April 22, 1739; 3. Mercy,⁵ baptized July 27, 1740; 4. Samuel,⁵ baptized Feb. 28, 1741-2; killed at the battle of Lexington April 19, 1775; 5. Desire,⁵ baptized April 1, 1744; married John Reed Jan. 18, 1774; 6. Elizabeth,⁵ baptized in 1745; married Jonathan Tarbell. SAMUEL COOK⁴; fisherman and cordwainer; married, first, Abigail Henderson Oct. 22, 1730; she died about 1748; he married, second, Abial Burton Aug. 22, 1751; they were living in Salem in 1771; children: 1. Abigail,⁵ baptized Sept. 18, 1737; married George West April 28, 1751; 2. Samuel,⁵ born in 1731; married Elizabeth Symonds Dec. 8, 1754; died Dec. 21, 1813; had a daughter; 3. Margaret,⁵ baptized Sept. 18, 1737; married William Gray March 16, 1760; 4. Mary,⁵ baptized May 7, 1738; married Samuel Symonds Aug. 10, 1760; 5. John,⁵ baptized July 19, 1741. JOSEPH COOK⁴; fisherman; married Eunice Pope Nov. 11, 1728; they were living July 18, 1769, and his will was proved Feb. 6, 1770; children: 1. Eunice,⁵ born Sept. 6, 1729; married George Beckford; 2. Hannah,⁵ born June 19, 1732; married Benjamin Deland Sept. 20, 1752; 3. John,⁵ born July 22, 1735; married Susannah Burton (Buxton?) Dec. 1, 1762; 4. Joseph,⁵ baptized Dec. 18, 1737; died young; 5. Abigail,⁵ baptized June 22, 1740; 6. Joseph,⁵ baptized Sept. 5, 1742; victualer in 1775; married Susannah Cook Oct. 1, 1768. BENJAMIN COOK⁴; fisherman and mariner; married Elizabeth Phippen Dec. 24, 1730; she was living in 1766, and he in 1799; children: 1. Benjamin,⁵ baptized April 11, 1736; 2. Elizabeth,⁵ baptized April 11, 1736; married Jonathan Buxton of Danvers June 27, 1757; 3. John,⁵ baptized March 27, 1737; 4. Susannah,⁴ baptized Sept. 30, 1739; married John Tarrant May 6, 1757; 5. George,⁵ baptized May 23, 1742; 6. Hannah,⁵ baptized April 17, 1748; married — Cain. JOSEPH COOK⁴; fisherman; married Rachel Britton April 18, 1734; living in 1750; children: 1. Joseph⁵ (twin), baptized Aug. 13, 1738; 2. William⁵ (twin), baptized Aug. 13, 1738; probably married Damaris Marston June 18, 1774; 3. Mary,⁵ baptized Sept. 21, 1740; 4. Edward,⁵ baptized Aug. 15, 1742. JAMES COOK⁴; fisherman, mariner and shoreman; married Rachel Phippen Sept. 18, 1732; both were living in 1768; she died before 1782; children: 1. James,⁵ baptized Feb. 9, 1734-5; 2. Margaret,⁵ baptized April 11, 1736; died young; 3. Rachel,⁵ baptized Sept. 17, 1738; married Nathan Offat Sept. 6, 1764; 4. Margaret,⁵ baptized Oct. 19, 1740; died young; 5. Ebenezer,⁵ baptized Oct. 17, 1742; 6. Hannah,⁵ baptized Jan. 11, 1746-7; married Edward Cox Oct. 17, 1769; 7. Joseph,⁵

Street, on the southeasterly corner of the site of the Masonic

baptized March 11, 1748-9; 8. *Benjamin*,⁵ baptized Sept. 1, 1751; 9. *Margaret*,⁵ baptized April 21, 1754. *WILLIAM COOK*⁴; shipwright; married Lydia Frost Nov. 17, 1737; lived in Salem in 1754; was dead in 1765; she was his widow in 1770; children: 1. *Mary*,⁵; married Benjamin Clifton April 16, 1767; 2. *Margaret*,⁵; married Joseph Hovey of Boston May 20, 1766. *ROBERT COOK*⁴; cordwainer; married widow Margaret Dimond June 17, 1743; they lived in Salem in 1768; children: 1. *Martha*,⁵ baptized April 8, 1744; married John Morong; 2. *Robert*,⁵ baptized April 12, 1747; 3. *Susannah*,⁵ baptized April 8, 1753; married William Luscomb; 4. *Elizabeth*,⁵ baptized Aug. 24, 1755; married John Daniels April 1, 1780. *ISAAC COOK*⁴; mariner, laborer and yeoman; married Sarah Masury July 9, 1747; he was living in 1783; she died, his widow, before Dec. 22, 1801; children: 1. *Isaac*,⁵ baptized April 30, 1749; died in the fall of 1751; 2. *Sarah*,⁵ baptized Feb. 24, 1750-1; lived in Danvers; married Joseph Foster; 3. *Stephen*,⁵ baptized Oct. 8, 1752; married Mary Carriage of Marblehead July 4, 1776; 4. *Benjamin*,⁵ baptized Nov. 28, 1754; married Elizabeth (Webb), widow of Joshua Beckford (published March 28, 1778); 5. *Martha*,⁵ baptized June 11, 1758. *CAPT. JONATHAN COOK*⁴; mariner and shoreman; married Mehitable Grant Dec. 26, 1745; they were living in 1780; children: 1. *Jonathan*,⁵ born Dec. 27, 1746; died young; 2. *Mehitable*,⁵ baptized Aug. 20, 1749; married Benjamin Blyth; 3. *Jonathan*,⁵ baptized June 16, 1751; died young; 4. *Mary*,⁵ baptized May 20, 1753; died Dec. 1, 1756; 5. *Jonathan*,⁵ baptized Sept. 18, 1757; shoreman; married Love Herron Sept. 18, 1781; died in 1804; she died, his widow, Feb. 6, 1818; 6. *Mary*,⁵ baptized before 1761; 7. *Orchard*,⁵ baptized March 27, 1763.

*BENJAMIN COOK*⁵; married Sarah Cook (daughter of Samuel) Nov. 8, 1764; child: 1. *George*,⁶ baptized Oct. 22, 1769. *CAPT. JOHN COOK*⁵; fisherman and mariner; married Margaret Webb Sept. 23, 1760; drowned at sea in the spring of 1787; she married, secondly, Isaac Mansfield of Newbury July 19, 1801; children: 1. *George*,⁶; mariner; living in 1805; 2. *Samuel*,⁶ born about 1784; living in 1805; 3. *Anna*,⁶ born about 1786; living in 1805. *EBENEZER COOK*⁵; fisherman; married Hannah Downing Dec. 10, 1767; they were living in 1782; children: 1. *Hannah*,⁶ baptized Nov. 12, 1769; 2. *Lucy*,⁶ baptized April 21, 1771; married Jacob Martin July 10, 1785; 3. *Elizabeth*,⁶ baptized Sept. 12, 1773; married William Carlton; 4. *Richard*,⁶ baptized April 5, 1778. *JOSEPH COOK*⁵; mariner; married Lydia Peel July 26, 1772; was dead in 1810; she was living in 1825; children: 1. *Joseph*,⁶ baptized April 27, 1776; 2. *James*,⁶ baptized April 27, 1776; 3. *Lydia*,⁶ baptized Jan. 17, 1779; died, unmarried, July 27, 1823; 4. *Ebenezer*,⁶ baptized Aug. 25, 1782. *BENJAMIN COOK*⁵; married Anne Clough (published Sept. 17, 1774); children: 1. *Benjamin*,⁶ baptized June 30, 1776; mariner; married Lydia Chapman July 25, 1801; they were living in 1811. *ROBERT COOK*⁵; fisherman and mariner; married Elizabeth Luscomb Sept. 15, 1775; died between 1806 and 1821; she died before Feb. 20, 1821; children: 1. *Elizabeth*,⁶ baptized Dec. 29, 1776; married Samuel Barnard May 30, 1799; 2. *Robert*,⁶ baptized March 29, 1778; 3. *Benjamin*,⁶ baptized March —, 1780; died before 1806; 4. *Benjamin*,⁶ baptized April —, 1782; died before 1806; 5. —⁶; died Feb. —, 1784; 6. *John Morong*,⁶ baptized Nov. —, 1785; 7. *Martha*,⁶; married Leonard Barnard Oct. 13, 1805.

*JOSEPH COOK*⁶; mariner; married Catherine Brown Sept. 10, 1797; died in 1814; she survived him; children: 1. *Joseph*,⁷ born about 1800; yeoman; lived in Reading in 1828; 2. *Mary T.*,⁷ born about 1802; married Alden Kittredge; 3. *George Trask*,⁷ born about 1804; cordwainer; lived in Reading in 1828; 4. *Sally*,⁷; married George Smith; 5. *James*,⁷ born about 1809; living in 1828; 6. *Catharine*,⁷ born about 1811; living in 1828.

Temple. He bought the house and land of Edmond Thompson Jan. 17, 1645;¹ and died there in 1665. His widow, Judith Cooke, conveyed the property to Walter Price Jan. 13, 1663;² and he gave it to his son Theodore Price. The latter died in 1672; and the administrator of his estate conveyed the house, barn and land to Hilliard Veren July 9, 1672.³ Mr. Veren lived here until he conveyed the estate to Ezekiel Cheever March 4, 1677-8.⁴ Ezekiel Cheever's brother Thomas Cheever of Malden conveyed the same to Rev. Nicholas Noyes April 14, 1684.⁵ The latter lived here during the witchcraft period, and died in 1717. The administrator of his estate conveyed the property to Rev. Samuel Fisk, his successor in the ministry, July 18, 1718;⁶ and Mr. Fisk conveyed it to Benjamin Pickman Dec. 15, 1762.⁷ Mr. Pickman took the old house down in 1764.

Governor Winthrop came to Salem, by water, about Nov. 1, 1638, having had a boisterous trip. He wrote to his wife on the eighth the following letter:—

To my Dear Wife, Mrs. winthrop at Boston

My Deare,—I prayse God we came safe to Salem, though we had very stormy windes. We found all well. I doubt I shall not returne before the 2: daye next weeke, & then my broth: P: will come wth me. The Lo: blesse thee & all o^r familye, & send us a happy meetinge. I kisse thee & rest

thy faithfull husband,

J: W:

Salem: 9^{ber}: 8: 1638.⁸

He was entertained at Salem with all the respect the people could show him, and on his return to Boston on the twelfth, six of the chief military officers, with carbines, were sent to guard him.

ROBERT COOK⁶; painter; married Hannah Gowan Feb. 2, 1800; died in July, 1815; she survived him; children: 1. Mary Ann,⁷ born about 1805; married Hazleton Page of Hampstead, N. H., Nov. 13, 1835; 2. Robert,⁷ born about 1807; lived in Salem in 1834; 3. —⁷; died before Oct. 20, 1815; 4. Benjamin,⁷ born June or July, 1815; probably died young. JOHN MORONG COOK⁶; painter; married, first, Sally Brown March 30, 1809; and second, Susan Herron Sept. 6, 1818; his wife Susan died May 26, 1822; he died March 31, 1826; children: 1. William,⁷ born about 1813; living in 1831; 2. Sally B.,⁷ born in 1819; married Daniel S. Lawrence June 4, 1846.

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 8, leaf 70.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 2, leaf 76.

³Essex Registry of Deeds, book 3, leaf 156.

⁴Essex Registry of Deeds, book 4, leaf 190.

⁵Essex Registry of Deeds, book 6, leaf 123.

⁶Essex Registry of Deeds, book 33, leaf 222.

⁷Essex Registry of Deeds, book 112, leaf 115.

⁸Winthrop's Letters, page 231 (1867 edition).

At a meeting, Nov. 12, 1638, the town granted to Mr. Hugh Peter, "our present pastor," a farm of upland, containing two hundred acres, lying near the head of Frost Fish River, and twenty acres of fresh marsh next to Mr. Endecott's ten acres in the great marsh near Mr. Sharp's farm. It was also agreed that Marke Vermais, Robert Penny, Joshua Verine, Thomas Trusler, Richard Dodge, Robert Adams,¹ Henry Bayley and William Nichols² should each have a ten-acre lot. Mr. Adams was a tailor, from Devonshire, England, and thirty-seven years old. He came to Salem from Ipswich and lived at what is now numbered ninety Washington Street, opposite the city hall. Mr. Nichols was a husbandman, about thirty-nine years of age and probably lived near the pound, on the easterly side of what is now known as North Central Street, just above Gardner Street, in Peabody.

The town of Salem, having formerly granted several portions of land at Marblehead, laid the lots out Nov. 14, 1638, as follows: To Mr. Walton on the main, eight acres; Moses Mavericke at the same place, ten acres; John Coitt on the Neck, three acres; Will Keene³ and Nick Liston on John Peach's neck, three acres, and more to them on the Great Neck, five acres; Rich. Sears, four acres where he had planted formerly; John Wakefield, four acres on the Neck; John Gachell and Samuel Gachell, six acres on the Neck; Tho Sams,⁴ three acres on the Neck; John Lyon, four acres near his house; the widow Blancher, six acres on the

¹Robert Adams, born in 1601, came to Ipswich in 1635; removed from Salem to Newbury in 1640; married, first, Eleanor —; and, second, Sarah (Glover), widow of Henry Short of Newbury Feb. 6, 1678; died Oct. 12, 1682; she died Oct. 24, 1697; children: 1. John (eldest son); married — Woodman; 2. Joanna, born in 1634; married Launcelot Granger Jan. 4, 1654; removed to Suffield, Conn.; 3. Abraham, born in Salem in 1639; lived in Newbury; husbandman; married Mary Pettingell Nov. 10, 1670; she died in Newbury Sept. 19, 1705; he died there June 14, 1714; had children; 4. Robert; 5. Elizabeth; 6. Mary; 7. Isaac; 8. Jacob, born April 23, 1649; 9. Hannah, born June 25, 1650; 10. Jacob, born April 13, 1654; cordwainer; removed to Suffield, Conn., about 1686; representative in 1711-1714 and 1717, and died at the general court in Boston in November, 1717; had children.

²William Nichols was born in 1599, and removed to a house he had built within the limits of Topsfield, which became a part of Middleton upon the incorporation of the latter town in 1728. He died in the winter of 1695-6, at the age of ninety-six, being known as "old Nichols;" his wife Mary survived him; children: 1. John, born in 1640; married Lydia —; lived on his father's homestead in Topsfield; died in 1700; had children; 2. Mary; married Thomas Cave of Topsfield; 3. Hannah; married Thomas Wilkins May —, 1667.

³William Kieney lived in Marblehead as late as 1645. He had a servant named John Colever in 1643.

⁴Thomas Sams lived in Marblehead as late as 1646.

Neck; Ralph Warrin, two acres on the Neck; George Ching,¹ three acres on the Neck; Philip Beare, three acres near the widow Tomson's; John Bennet, four acres upon John Peach's neck; and Rosamond James,² four acres upon the main.

At a meeting, Nov. 26, 1638, the town granted to Robert Wheaden ten acres of land; to Richard Stackhouse³ ten acres; and to ———, a gardner, ten acres. John Cook desired five acres to be added to twenty acres formerly granted to him. There were granted to Lt. Davenport (which the town desired him to seek out, as before) two hundred acres of upland and twenty acres of meadow, lying on the east side of the great meadow where Mr. Endecott hath his ten acres of meadow. Ten acres were granted to Mr. Velyn, if there is any not already granted to others out of the land which was formerly Mr. Thorndike's; also, the hay that grows upon a slope of ground near to the pond which Mr. Clarke hath the half of, and it is about two acres of meadow, until the land be disposed of to some other man; to Samuel Archer one neck of land lying out against the sea near Jeffry Creeke Island, containing about twenty acres, and eight acres of meadow in Kettle Island Cove; to Henry Harwood⁴ a ten-acre lot and a half-acre lot, which were formerly granted to Michael Lambert near Winter Island; to John Holgrave one hundred acres of land next to Mr. Peter's farm, and ten acres of meadow lying in the great meadow, he resigning up the land granted to him in Marble neck; to John Leech a ten-acre lot on the great north neck; and to William and Richard Dodge eighty acres of land lying on the easterly end of the farms of Mr. Conant, John Woodbury and John Balch, whereof twelve acres are meadow.

¹George Chin died in Marblehead in the winter of 1653-4; his wife Elizabeth survived him.

²Erasmus James?

³Richard Stackhouse lived in Salem as late as 1678 and in Beverly as late as 1693; married Susanna ———, who was born about 1617; children: 1. Jonathan, baptized May 14, 1648; 2. Hannah, born about 1647; married ——— Harris before 1677; 3. Abigail, baptized May 14, 1648; 4. Ruth, baptized July 8, 1649; married Roger Haskins; 5. Samuel, baptized Feb. 13, 1652-3; 6. Mary, baptized June 25, 1654.

A Sarah Stackhouse was baptized in Salem July 17, 1670.

⁴Henry Harwood (Harod, Harrod, Hayward, Haywood and Herod) is said to have come to America with Gov. John Winthrop in 1630, and lived at first in Boston. He came to Salem in 1638, and had his house at the foot of Beckett street, being a shoemaker. He married Elizabeth ———, who was probably a widow, as she had a daughter Elizabeth, wife of Mathew Nixon. Mr. Harwood called Jane, wife of Richard Flinder, "kinswoman"; and Mr. Flinder called him "uncle." Mr. Harwood died in February, 1663-4; and she died, his widow, in 1670. Child: 1. John, baptized in Boston in 1632; married Em—— July 11, 1659; children, John and Jonathan, died last week of April, 1662.

At a quarterly court, in Boston, Dec. 4, 1638, John Holgrave was found guilty of contempt of court, for drawing wine against an order of the court and for causing his daughter to deliver a paper to a juryman out of court, adjudging him "to have broken the rule of hospitality & the peace;" "Richard Greaves & Peter Bussaker, for quarrelling and fighting, are refered to the Court at Salem"; and Richard Hollingsworth, for prophaning the Sabbath in traveling, was censured to be set in the stocks upon a lecture day, at Salem."

Thomas Oliver,¹ a calender, came from Norwich, England, in 1637, and lived in a small house which stood on the southern corner of Washington and Church streets. His wife Mary, who was then thirty-five years old, came with him. She was a strong Puritan, and before coming to America had suffered for refusing to bow at the name of Jesus, during the exercises of the Established Church, though she was conformable to all other orders. They were poor, and had made few acquaintances. Apparently, she had not become a member of the church in Salem, but attended its services, and in 1638, at the celebration of the sacrament of the Lord's Supper, without giving public satisfaction to the church of her faith and without covenanting or professing to "walk with them according to the rule of the gospel," she stood and asked for the privilege of partaking of it. She remained standing, and when denied her request, she plead her right until Governor Endecott threatened to send the constable to put her out. She was arrested for disturbing the church, and brought to the court in Boston. In her examination, Dec. 4, 1638, she gave such peremptory answers that she was sent to the prison until she procured sureties for her good behavior. After about three or four days spent in prison, she submitted herself to Governor Winthrop, and acknowledged that she was in fault in disturbing the church. Upon her husband giving a bond for her good behavior, she was discharged from confinement. Winthrop afterward learned that she still held to her former opinions, which he deemed very dangerous, as, first, "The church is the heads of the people, both magistrates and ministers, met together, and that these have power to ordain ministers, &c."; second, "That all who dwell in the same town and will profess their faith in Christ Jesus ought to be received to the sacraments there; and that she was persuaded, that, if Paul were at Salem, he would call the inhabitants there 'saints' "; and, third, "That excommunication is no other but when Christians withdraw private communion from one that hath offended." Mrs. Oliver apparently held that every one who believed in the Savior was a member

¹See volume I, page 443.

of the body of Christ, as stated in the Bible, and that it was unnecessary, in order to partake of the elements of the Lord's Supper, that one should be a formal member of an organized church; also, that the law of the Sabbath was not now binding upon any one as a religious institution. It is remarkable that any one in those times should have worked out ideas of their own concerning the real constituency of the church.

She was not always choice in her language, and was probably unlettered; but she had strength of character and great force. Governor Winthrop wrote, in his Journal, Dec. 13, 1638, that "for ability of speech and appearance of zeal and devotion she was far before Mrs. Hutchinson, and so the fitter instrument to have done hurt."

Sept. 24, 1639, Mrs. Oliver was sentenced to prison at Boston indefinitely for her speeches at the arrival of some new comers. She was ordered to be taken by constables of Salem and Lynn to the prison in Boston and answer at the next court there.

Governor Winthrop also states that when she was whipped she "stood without tying, and bare her punishment with a masculine spirit, glorying in her suffering. But after (when she came to consider the reproach, which would stick by her, &c.) she was much dejected by it."

For saying that all ministers in the country were blood-thirsty men, the Salem court ordered her, July 1, 1646, to be tied to the whipping post with a slit stick on her tongue. Robert Cotty, who heard her make this statement, told her that she spoke blasphemy; and she replied that her blood was too thin for them to draw out.

March 2, 1647-8, the Salem court fined her for working on the Sabbath in the time of church services, and for abusing Captain Hathorne, uttering mutinous speeches. She also denied "the morality of the Sabbath." The witnesses against her were John Robinson and John Bayllis. She was also ordered to sit in the stocks one hour, if the weather be moderate; also for saying, "You in New England are thieves and robbers." Robert Gutch testified that she came into his house in such gladness of spirit that he could not understand it, and said to some persons who were there, and were not church members, "Lift up your heads, your redemption draweth nigh." She was advised to remember what she was punished for, and she said that she came out of that with a scarf and a ring; upon which Gutch asked her if she remembered this passage: "That there were some whose necks had iron sinews and brows of brass."¹ She replied by saying that

¹"Because I knew that thou art obstinate, and thy neck an iron sinew, and thy brow brass."—*Isaiah* 48 : 4.

she "did hope to live to tear his flesh in pieces and all such as he." Henry Cook heard her say it. She was also bound to good behavior, and, refusing to give bond, was ordered to be sent to Boston goal.

John Robinson, who had testified against her, seized her in a violent manner and put her in the stocks. She immediately brought suit against him for false imprisonment, and recovered ten shillings damages.

In the Ipswich court, Nov. 13, 1649, Mrs. Oliver was fined for stealing two goats. In the Salem court, Dec. 27, 1649, she was presented for speaking against the governor, saying that he was unjust, corrupt and a wretch, and that he made her pay for stealing two goats when "there was no proof of it." She was convicted, and sentenced to be whipped not more than twenty strokes next lecture day at Salem if the weather be moderate.

Criminations clustered around her. She accused Robert Adams of taking her ladder. She complained to the court in Salem that Henry Cooke had a pick axe of her's; and the court ordered him to pay her four shillings for it. George Ropes stated that she had kept away a spade of his, and the court ordered her to pay him five shillings for it.

Mr. Oliver left his family and returned to England, and, Nov. 15, 1648, she was ordered to go to him. The last time she appears is in the Salem court Feb. 29, 1649-50, when she and her children were to remove out of the jurisdiction. Mr. Oliver returned to Salem in 1652, and lived here until his death, in 1679.

The saddest scene of all in the quarterly court in Boston, Dec. 4, 1638, was the conviction and sentence to death of Dorothy, wife of John Talby, of Salem, whose domestic troubles have already been mentioned. Mr. and Mrs. Talby were members of the church, and their daughter Difficulty was baptized on Christmas day, 1636. Mrs. Talby was esteemed for godliness, etc., but after the birth of the child she became melancholy and possessed of delusions. She sometimes tried to kill herself and her husband by refusing to eat "meat" and not permitting them to eat it, saying it had been so revealed to her. He complained to the Salem court, June 27, 1637, that she frequently laid hands on him to the danger of his life. She manifested contempt for the authority of the court, who ordered her to be chained to a post, being allowed only to "come to the place of God's worship," until she repented. The church was very patient with her, and after various admonitions, which were unavailing, they "cast" her out of the church. Whereupon she became worse, and, September 25th following, she was ordered to be whipped for misdemeanors against her husband. For a time, she behaved herself more

dutifully to her husband, etc.; but this continued only a few weeks. Her mind again became more clouded, and delusions controlled her. She believed that God revealed to her the necessity of taking the life of her baby, in order to save the child from future misery. Her acquaintances and even Governor Winthrop himself believed that she was possessed by Satan and by the delusions he caused her to believe were from God, she was led to take the child's life, by breaking its neck. She made no secret of the murder, and when apprehended confessed the deed. In the court, on this day, upon her arraignment, she, however, stood mute a good while,—until the governor told her that if she did not plead she would be pressed to death. She then confessed the truth of the indictment. She was duly sentenced. When she was to receive judgment, she would neither uncover her face nor stand, but as she was forced. She gave no testimony of her repentance, neither at the time of her sentence nor at her execution, by hanging, in Boston, two days later. She desired to be beheaded, as that method would be less painful and less shameful. Hugh Peter, her late pastor, and Rev. Mr. Wilson of Boston went with her to the place of execution, but could do no good. Mr. Peter gave an exhortation to the people to take heed of revelations, etc., and of despising the ordinances of excommunication as she had done; and when he addressed her, denouncing her crime, she turned her back and would have gone away had she not been forcibly detained. After the rope had been placed about her neck and her face covered with a cloth, she pulled the latter off and put it between the rope and her neck. She was then cast off, and, after a swing or two, she caught at the ladder.

Mr. Talby¹ was himself subsequently excommunicated from the Salem church “for much pride and unnaturalness to his wife.” Perhaps Mr. Peter, after his second marriage, had received light on Mrs. Talby's mental condition,—that it was one which demanded more reasonable and humane treatment.

On the thirteenth of the month, a general fast was kept upon the motion of the elders to the governor and council. The chief occasion was the great extent of sickness, “pox and fevers,” through the country, the apparent decay of religion, the general declining of professors to the world, etc.

¹John Talby died in the winter of 1644-5, leaving children: Anne, living in 1645; John, eldest son, living in Salem as late as 1657, an idle man, of whose support the town took charge; and Stephen, who, in 1657, commanded the ketch *Adventure*, which sailed between Boston and London. In volume I, page 362, it is stated that Mr. Talby was living in Salem in 1654; but this statement has reference to his son John, and not to his father who had died nine years before.

THE GLASS WORKS.

A leading member of the Plymouth Company wrote to his friends in England to "Bring paper and linseed oil for your windows," and Mr. Higginson wrote from Salem, in 1629, to "Bring glass for your windows."

A glass house was erected in Salem in 1638. It was located in that part of the town which is now Peabody on the southerly side of Aborn Street, the original highway to Boston; and Abbott Street now runs by the glass house field. The product of these glass works consisted of bottles and coarse articles of inferior glass; and probably window glass.

One of the leading glass makers was Ananias Conklin,¹ who was granted by the town, June 25, 1638, the ten acres of land which had been granted to Augustine Killam and by him exchanged with the town for another lot. Mr. Concline built a house, and the town granted to him an acre of land near it Aug. 19, 1639; and, April 4, 1640, twenty poles of land for a yard before his door. He established the business of glass making here, and erected a building for that purpose before the end of the year 1638.

Mr. Conclin was joined by Obadiah Holmes² (Hullme) to whom the town granted, Jan. 27, 1638-9, one acre of land for a house lot near the glass house and ten acres more. He was granted a quarter of an acre more near his garden May 2, 1642; and, Sept. 22, 1645, there was added to his grant about a dozen square rods, which he sold to Philemon Dickinson.

These glass makers were joined by Lawrence Southwick,³ who had half an acre of land here before April 17, 1639, when

¹Ananias Conclin probably married Susan —; removed to Southold, L. I., in 1650, and to East Hampton, L. I., about 1653; died in 1657; children: 1. Jeremiah, born in 1635; married Mary Gardiner; she married, second, Robert Starr of Salem Dec. 30, 1669; had children; 2. Benjamin; married Hannah Mulford; 3. Lewis, baptized in Salem April 30, 1643; died at Amagansette, L. I., Oct. 2, 1716; ancestor of Hon. Roscoe Conklin of New York; 4. Hester; living in 1657, being under eighteen years of age.

²Mr. Holmes' wife Catherine was admitted to the church in Salem in 1639.

³LAWRENCE SOUTHWICK,¹ tradition says, originated in Lancashire, married Cassandra —; they were admitted to the church in Salem April 24, 1639; they were banished, as Quakers, from the Colony in 1659, and went by water to Shelter Island, L. I., where they died in the summer of 1660; children: 1. John,² born in 1620; 2. Mary,² born in 1630; married Henry Trask; 3. Josiah,² born in 1632; 4. Provided,² born in 1635; died in 1640; 5. Daniel,² born in 1637; 6. Provided,² born Dec. —, 1641; married Samuel Gaskill.

JOHN SOUTHWICK²; husbandman; married, first, Sarah, widow of Samuel Tidd in 1642; second, Anne, widow of Thomas Flint; she died in the summer of 1668; third, Sarah Burnett Feb. 3, 1668-9; died Oct. 25,

the town granted to him half an acre adjoining thereto. In the

1672; she married, second, Thomas Cooper; children: 1. Sarah,³ born June 16, 1644; married Thomas Buffington; 2. Mary,³ born Oct. 10, 1646; married Thomas Burt Nov. 18, 1672; 3. *Samuel*,³ born Feb. 19, 1658-9; 4. *John*,³ born Jan. —, 166—; 5. Isaac,³ born Nov. —, 1669; died Feb. —, 1669-70; 6. Isaac,³ born Jan. 27, 1670-1; lived in Reading; married Anna —; had children; 7. Sarah,³ born Aug. 15, 1672. JOSIAH SOUTHWICK²; yeoman; married Mary Boyce Dec. 13, 1653; died in 1692; she was his widow in 1694; children: 1. Deborah,³ born Jan. 13, 1655-6; married — Thresher; 2. *Josiah*,³ born Jan. 27, 1657-9; 3. Joseph,³ born April —, 1662; married Ann —; both living in Salem in 1694; 4. Mary,³ born Nov. —, 1664; unmarried in 1694; 5. Cassandra,³ born Nov. —, 1667; married Jacob Mott of Portsmouth, R. I.; 6. Deliverance,³ born April 9, 1669; 7. Jonathan,³ born Oct. 16, 1670; 8. Ruth,³ born Feb. 21, 1674-5; unmarried in 1694; 9. Hopestill,³ born Aug. 30, 1678; 10. Solomon,³ born Jan. 9, 1683-4; removed to Rhode Island before 1711; married in 1712; had children. DANIEL SOUTHWICK²; yeoman; married Esther Boyce Feb. 23, 1663-4; she was living in 1718; he died in the winter of 1718-9; children: 1. *Lawrence*,³ born in 1664; 2. Esther,³ born June 26, 1665; married James Buxton; 3. Elizabeth,³ born June 26, 1668; married John Wilkins; 4. *Daniel*,³ born March 25, 1671; 5. Eleanor,³ born June 25, 1674; married Samuel Osborn; 6. Mercy,³ born in 1676; married John Osborn; 7. Hannah,³ born Aug. 7, 1677; married Thomas Buffington.

SAMUEL SOUTHWICK³; husbandman; married Mary Ross of Ipswich June 24, 1686; died in the winter of 1709-10; she was his widow in 1711; children: 1. Samuel,⁴ born Jan. 30, 1688-9; died before 1709; 2. *Ebenezer*,⁴ born Nov. 9, 1690; 3. Hannah,⁴ born Feb. 24, 1691-2; living in 1711; 4. *Jonathan*,⁴ born about 1694; 5. Benjamin,⁴ born in 1696; settled in New Salem, where he lived in 1743; married Abigail Burt in 1722; 6. David,⁴ born in 1701; lived in Williamstown; married Thankful Grig; died in 179—; 7. Mercy,⁴ born in 1698; living in 1728; 8. Mary,⁴ born in 1700; married Henry Hutchins in 1736; 9. Elizabeth,⁴ born in 1702; living in 1728; 10. *Provided*,¹⁰ born in 1704; married John Carroll. JOHN SOUTHWICK³; blacksmith and husbandman; married Hannah Follett Dec. 23, 1687; she was living in 1742; he died in the autumn of 1743; children: 1. John,⁴ born Dec. 13, 1688; died young; 2. Joseph,⁴ born Jan. 1, 1690-1; died Oct. 1, 1691; 3. Sarah,⁴ born Feb. 9, 1693-4; probably married Thomas Hutchins Jan. 7, 1719-20; 4. *John*,⁴ born May —, 1695; 5. *Abraham*,⁴ born in 1696; 6. Hannah,⁴ born July 27, 1698; probably married Ebenezer Shaw March 17, 1720-1; 7. *Benjamin*,⁴ born Jan. 22, 1701-2; 8. *Isaac*,⁴ born Sept. 23, 1704. JOSIAH SOUTHWICK³; husbandman; removed to Northampton, N. J., about 1702; married Ruth Symonds; children: 1. Josiah,⁴ born about 1686; lived in Northampton in 1759; 2. James,⁴ born about 1689; yeoman; lived in Northampton in 1759; 3. Ruth,⁴ born about 1692; married William Cranmer of Northampton in 1716. LAWRENCE SOUTHWICK³; husbandman; married Tamson Buffum Aug. 24, 1704; died in the winter of 1718-9; she survived him; children: 1. *Daniel*,⁴ born in 1705; 2. Josiah,⁴ born in 1707; tailor; married Mary Cass of Hampton March 20, 1735-6; 3. *Caleb*,⁴ born in 1709; 4. Lawrence,⁴ born Jan. 11, 1711; cordwainer and shoemaker; lived in Dighton; married, first, Hannah Shove of Dighton May 8, 1739; second, Patience Handy; died in Uxbridge in 1795; had twenty children; 5. Esther,⁴ born in 171—; married Ephraim Silsbee of Lynn Nov. 9, 1738; 6. David,⁴ born in 1714; lived in Dudley and New Salem; married Hannah —; had children; 7. Joseph,⁴ born in 1716. DANIEL SOUTHWICK³; husbandman; married Jane — in 1696; died in 1732-3; she was living in 1738; children: 1. *Jonathan*,⁴ born in 1697; 2. Elizabeth,⁴ born in 1702;

spring of 1639, these three constituted the glassmakers here.

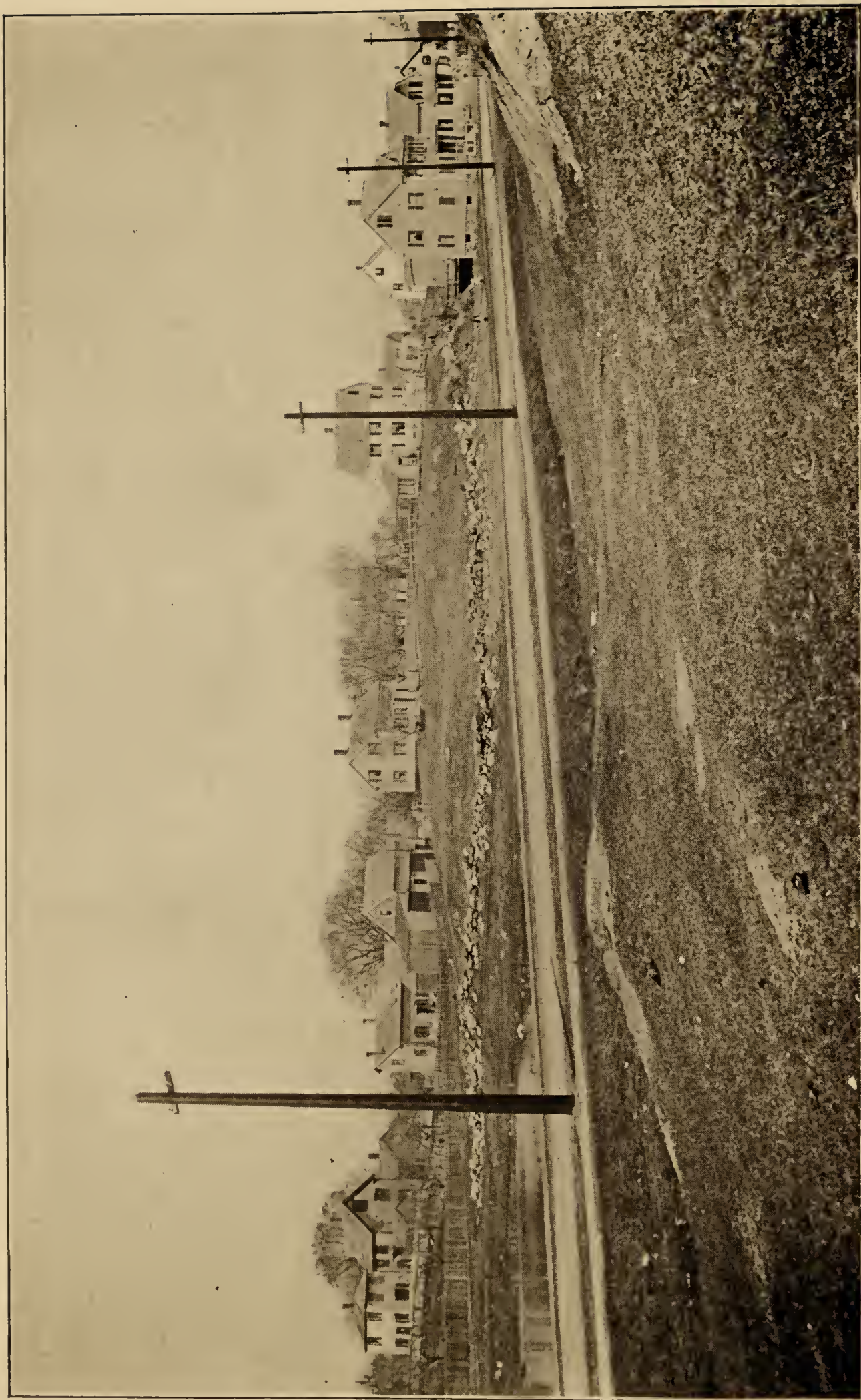
married Jonathan Buxton; 3. Hannah,⁴ born in 1704; married a Girdler or Poller in 1724; 4. *John*,⁴ born May —, 1709; 5. Daniel,⁴ born in 1721; cordwainer and husbandman; settled in Smithfield, R. I.; married Ruth Mussey of Smithfield Feb. 8, 1742; she died Jan. 16, 1790; he died March 3, 1804; had children.

EBENEZER SOUTHWICK⁴; yeoman; married, first, Sarah Proctor April 9, 1724; second, Mary Whitman Oct. 18, 1727; she was living in 1771; he died in the spring of 1777; children: 1. Sarah,⁵ born May 24, 1728; married Joseph Stacey in 1749; 2. Mary,⁵ born Dec. 22, 1729; married — Upton; 3. Ebenezer,⁴ born Jan. 23, 1734-5; yeoman; lived in Danvers in 1783; married Susanna (Orr) Foster of North Yarmouth in 1758; she died Aug. 9, 1811; he died Jan. 8, 1820; had children; 4. Lois,⁵ born March 3, 1735-6; unmarried in 1771; 5. Hannah,⁵ born in 1738; married — Lefavor; 6. Lydia,⁵ born in 1740; died before 1771. JONATHAN SOUTHWICK⁴; removed to South Williamstown in 1735; married Elizabeth Dowty Sept. 17, 1727; children: 1. Jesse,⁵ born in 1728; lived in South Williamstown; married Copia Wright in 1760; 2. Ichabod,⁵ born in 1730; settled in South Williamstown; 3. Mary,⁵ born in 1732; 4. Rebecca,⁵ born in 1734; 5. Samuel,⁵ born in 1736; 6. Lemuel,⁵ born in 1738; 7. Jonathan,⁵ born in 1740; 8. Elizabeth,⁵ born Aug. 9, 1741. JOHN SOUTHWICK⁴; husbandman; lived in the Danvers part of Salem; married Mary Trask Jan. 8, 1710-1; she died before 1767; he died in 1771; children: 1. *John*,⁵ born in 1710; 2. William,⁵ born in 1715; yeoman; lived in Danvers; married Sarah Chapman July 12, 1753; died before 1767; 3. Mary,⁵ born in 1717; married Ebenezer King Dec. 25, 1735; 4. Hannah,⁵ born in 1719; married Zachariah King; 5. Elizabeth,⁵ born in 1721; married Robert Wilson; 6. *Joseph*,⁵ born in 1723; 7. George,⁵ born about 1736; lived in Danvers; married widow Sarah (Shatswell) Platts of Rowley Dec. 18, 1760; she was living in 1803; he died in 1808; had children. ABRAHAM SOUTHWICK⁴; bricklayer; married Sarah —; they were living in 1754; he died before 1769; children: 1. Isaac,⁵ baptized April 26, 1730; died before 1754; 2. Abraham,⁵ baptized April 26, 1730; laborer; married Mary Aborn Dec. 28, 1755; drowned in a well March 8, 1775; 3. Sarah,⁵ baptized April 26, 1730; married Nathaniel Clark of Wells Oct. 24, 1751; 4. Joseph,⁵ baptized July 18, 1731; died before 1754; 5. Margaret,⁵ baptized Oct. 6, 1734; married Amos Newhall of Lynn Dec. 7, 1750. BENJAMIN SOUTHWICK⁴; husbandman; lived in Reading, Salem and Danvers; married Sarah Southwick of Reading in 1720; children: 1. Isaac,⁵ born in 1720; published to Mary Felton Oct. 12, 1741; 2. Benjamin,⁵ born in 1722; lived in Mendon, Blackstone and Dudley; married Miriam Benson; had a child; 3. Sarah,⁵ born in 1724; 4. Mercy,⁵ born in 1730. ISAAC SOUTHWICK⁴; husbandman; lived in the Danvers part of Salem; married Esther Clark of Wells (published June 5, 1731); died in the spring of 1780; she was his widow in 1782; children: 1. Isaac,⁵ born in 1732; yeoman; lived in Danvers, Mass., and Amherst, N. H.; married Elizabeth Dresser; both living in 1782; had children; 2. Nathaniel,⁵ born in 1734; 3. Esther,⁵ baptized June 15, 1740; 5. Susanna,⁵ born in 1740; married — Jaffrey; 6. Benjamin,⁵ born in 1742; living in 1774; 7. John,⁵ baptized May 6, 1744. DANIEL SOUTHWICK⁴; tanner and currier; removed to Mendon in 1742; was a Quaker preacher; married Ruth Shove of Dighton Feb. 8, 1730; died Nov. 19, 1776; children: 1. Lawrence,⁵ born Jan. 11, 1731; tanner; lived in Uxbridge, Mass., and Clinton, N. Y.; married, first, Dorcas Brown in 1753; she died Dec. 17, 1757; second, Hannah Southwick Sept. 6, 1759; she died in 1809; he died in 1810; had children; 2. Edward,⁵ born March 15, 1734; married Elizabeth Southwick June 1, 1769; 3. Lydia,⁵ born Dec. 22, 1735; married Amos

Sept. 14, 1640, the town received John Conclin as an inhabitant and granted to him five and a half acres of land near the glass

Osborn; 4. Daniel,⁵ born Oct. 18, 1737; married Mary Mabbett; 5. Eleanor,⁵ born Feb. 2, 1739; married Daniel Read of Smithfield July 1, 1762; 6. Josiah,⁵ born July 17, 1742; killed while wrestling; 7. Elizabeth,⁵ born Sept. 4, 1744; 8. George,⁵ born Dec. 14, 1747; 9. Theophilus,⁵ born Nov. 29, 1750. CALEB SOUTHWICK⁴; blacksmith; living in 1742; married Ruth Gould of Charlestown (published April 8, 1732); child: 1. Tamson,⁵ born in 1736; married Daniel Aldrich May 1, 1759. JOSEPH SOUTHWICK⁴; tanner and currier; lived in the Peabody part of Salem; married Bethiah Killam of Bellingham May 31, 1739; died June 1, 1791; she died April 8, 1803; children: 1. Bethiah,⁵ born Oct. 2, 1741; married, first, Jonathan Deen; second, Joshua Pope; 2. Anna,⁵ born Dec. 30, 1743; married Jeremiah Hacker; 3. Joseph,⁵ born Sept. 3, 1746; died Nov. 19, 1773; 4. Esther,⁵ born Oct. 24, 1748; married James Torrey of Falmouth Nov. 15, 1770; 5. Tamson,⁵ born Oct. 28, 1750; married William Frye; 6. Josiah,⁵ born Sept. 14, 1752; 7. Cassandra,⁵ born March 11, 1755; 8. Edward,⁵ born March 1, 1757; 9. Caleb,⁵ born April 3, 1763. JONATHAN SOUTHWICK⁴; husbandman; married, first, Hannah Osborn May 21, 1735; she died in 1775; married, second, Elizabeth (Buffum), widow of Daniel Comstock June 28, 1786; children: 1. Jonathan⁵; married Judith Mussey Nov. 1, 1759; 2. Enoch⁵; died young; 3. Zacheus,⁵ born in 1740; died young; 4. Hannah,⁵ born in 1742; married Lawrence Southwick; 5. John,⁵ born Sept. 6, 1744; married Chloe Bartlett; she died April 25, 1817; he died Jan. 31, 1831; 6. Elizabeth,⁵ born in 1746; married Edward Southwick; 7. Esther,⁵ born in 1748; married James Buxton; 8. George,⁵ born Feb. 8, 1750; married Lydia Sargent Feb. 15, 1774; died Oct. 12, 1825, at North Collins, N. Y.; 9. Jacob,⁵ born June 4, 1751; married Sarah Fowler June 4, 1778; 10. Enoch,⁵ born in 1754; 11. Mercy,⁵ born in 1757; 12. Zacheus,⁵ born Sept. 5, 1760. JOHN SOUTHWICK⁴; shopkeeper and husbandman; lived in the Danvers part of Salem; married Mary, widow of Jonathan Buffum Jan. 28, 1730-1; died Oct. 1, 1784; she died May 12, 1790; children: 1. Mehitabel,⁵ born Aug. 19, 1725; married — Varney Oct. 6, 1758; 2. Zacheus,⁵ born April 14, 1732; 3. Hannah,⁵ born Aug. 22, 1734; married Daniel Purington Oct. 28, 1756; 4. Daniel,⁵ born Aug. 10, 1736; married Elizabeth Buffum Nov. 17, 1763; 5. Elizabeth,⁵ born Feb. 8, 1738; married Jonathan Buxton; 6. *Josiah*,⁵ born July 17, 1742.

JOHN SOUTHWICK⁵; yeoman; lived in Danvers; married Elizabeth Wilson in 1743; died about Feb. 1, 1785; she was his widow in 1795; children: 1. John⁶; 2. George,⁶ born in 1750; married Hephzibah Burrell July 9, 1769; killed in the battle of Lexington April 19, 1775; had children; 3. Mary,⁶ baptized June 6, 1762; 4. Prudence,⁶ baptized May 25, 1766. JOSEPH SOUTHWICK⁵; potter and yeoman; lived in Danvers; married Mary Wilson Sept. 13, 1743; died in 1786; children: 1. Mary,⁶ born in 1744; 2. Susan,⁶ born in 1746; died Sept. 22, 1791; 3. Hannah,⁶ born Nov. 16, 1756; 4. Elizabeth,⁶ born Aug. 21, 1759; 5. Ruth,⁶ baptized March 11, 1764. JOSIAH SOUTHWICK⁵; tanner; lived in Danvers; married Elizabeth Southwick of Danvers April 28, 1767; he was dead in 1812; she died Feb. 15, 1818; children (first and last born in Salem): 1. *John*,⁶ born March 9, 1768; 2. Daniel,⁶ born March 12, 1769; died Jan. 30, 1770; 3. Phebe,⁶ born March 1, 1770; married William Cobb of Portland Dec. 27, 1791; 4. Hannah,⁶ born Nov. 9, 1771; married Abijah Purington; 5. Daniel,⁶ born Dec. 31, 1773; died at Portland July 27, 1799; 6. Elizabeth,⁶ born Aug. 10, 1775; died Aug. 28, 1777; 7. Cassandra,⁶ born July 10, 1777; died Aug. 13, 1777; 8. Elizabeth,⁶ born Dec. 5, 1778; married Ebenezer Allen; 9. Cassandra,⁶ born March 2, 1781; married Stephen Nichols.



GLASS HOUSE FIELD.

house. John Conclin¹ was from Nottinghamshire, England, and was a glassmaker, being associated with Ananias Conclin here from this time.

The glass business apparently never flourished here. To encourage it, the general court voted, Dec. 10, 1641, "that if the town of Salem lend the glass men thirty pounds, they should be allowed it again out of their next rate, and the glass men to repay it again, if the work succeed, when they are able."

Apparently, Messrs Holmes and Southwick had dropped out of the business about 1642. They may have been the undertakers of the glass works, who engaged the Conclins to make the glass.

In 1642, upon the request of the town, the Colony loaned to "Ananias Conclyne and other poor people" eight pounds, which the town, Feb. 27, 1642-3, promised at the next Indian corn harvest, to repay.

Oct. 1, 1645, the Conklins sent the following petition² to the general court, praying that they might be relieved from their engagement to the undertakers of the glass works:—

The right worp^{ll} the Governo^r, Deput Governo^r, & Affiftants, together wth Deputies; the humble petition of John Conklin & Ananias Conkcloyne

Sheweth,

That y^r Petitioners have beene imployed Divers yeares about the glaffe worke, & the vndertakers now this three yeares neglected the fame, fo that yo^r petitioners are not able to fubfift, & fhallbe receffitated either wholly to leave it of, or to remove elfe where, for better accomodation of them felvs; wherefore theire humble request first

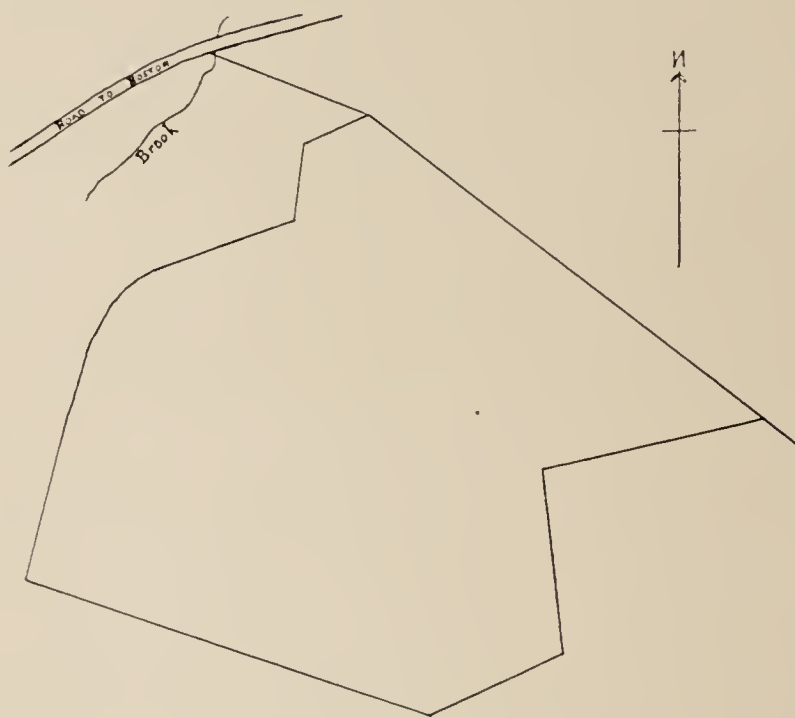
JOHN SOUTHWICK⁶; school master; lived in Salem; married Rebecca Alley of Lynn Oct. 19, 1796; died May 24, 1833; she died, his widow, Jan. 21, 1837; children: 1. James Alley,⁷ born March 28, 1799; died June 22, 1820; 2. ———⁷ (son), born Dec. 22, 1801; died Dec. 22, 1801; 3. *John Alley*,⁷ born Oct. 25, 1802; 4. Lois Alley,⁷ born Oct. 30, 1804; married John Mansfield Ives; 5. Josiah Erastus,⁷ born Sept. 24, 1806; died at sea, unmarried, on board ship Francis Sept. 1, 1835; 6. Rebecca H.,⁷ born Nov. 20, 1810; died April 24, 1812.

JOHN ALLEY SOUTHWICK⁷; cashier of the Mercantile Bank; married Elizabeth Kinsman Oct. 17, 1826; died Aug. 18, 1831; she died Dec. 2, 1831; children: 1. Mary Ann,⁸ born March 24, 1828; living in 1838; 2. Eliza Kinsman,⁸ born Sept. 30, 1829; living in 1838.

¹John Conclin married Elizabeth Allsaebrook Jan. 24, 1625-6, in Nottinghamshire, England; removed to Southold, L. I., in 1650, and to Huntington, L. I., about 1660; died Feb. 23, 1684; children: 1. John, born in Nottinghamshire about 1630; captain; representative; lived in Hashamomack; married Sarah (Horton), widow of William Salmon Dec. 2, 1657; died April 6, 1694; had children; 2. Timothy; settled in Huntington about 1662; had children; 3. Jacob, baptized Jan. 18, 1649-50; lived in Hashamomack; 4. Elizabeth, baptized Jan. 18, 1649-50; married ——— Wood.

²Massachusetts Archives, volume 59, page 21.

is vnto this Honoured Court, that they might be freed from their ingagment vnto the former vndertakers & left free to joyne wth such as will carry on the worke effectually, except the former vndertakers will forthwth doe the fame, that So the worke w^{ch} they conceiue to be a publick good vfe for the Countrie may not fall to the ground.



PLAN OF GLASS HOUSE FIELD.

Upon this petition, the general court "conceive it very expedient (in regard of the public interest) to grant the petition, provided that if any of the parties interested shall (upon timely notice) show cause" at the next general court.

The glass house continued to stand as late as 1670, but the business was probably not revived. This tract of land was called "the glass house field" as late as 1735. Holmes left town in 1645, and the Conclins removed to Southold, L. I., in 1650. Mr. Southwick remained, being a yeoman. Even now much vitrified slag from the glass furnace is upon and in the soil near the wall which ran across the premises, as shown in the illustration, the photograph for which was taken about twenty-five years ago. Abbott Street is shown in the foreground. The glass house was situated above the wall; and in the low land was a pond.

The house of Ananias Conclin was owned by Henry Rennalds as early as 1664, and apparently it was gone before 1689. The house of Obadiah Holmes was probably gone before 1702. The house of Lawrence Southwick stood on Main Street, opposite Washington Street. It was taken down in 1862. The house of John Conclin apparently came into the possession of Josiah Southwick before 1688. He died, possessed of it, in 1693, and it

descended to his son Solomon Southwick, who had removed to Rhode Island before Nov. 22, 1711, when he conveyed the house and land to Joseph Boyce.¹ Twelve days later, Mr. Boyce conveyed the land, but excepted "ye bricks of ye dwelling house." This indicates that the house had been destroyed by fire or otherwise at that time.

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 24, leaf 111.

CHAPTER IV.

ENLARGING THE MEETING HOUSE.



At the quarterly court, in Salem, on Christmas day, 1638, a number of civil cases and some criminal matters were heard. Richard Graves and Peter Busgutt, a smith, were indicted for breach of the peace, and Graves was ordered to sit one hour in the stocks for beating Busgutt in his own house; Mathew Reade, servant to Mr. Charles Gott, was ordered to be severely whipped for drunkenness on the Lord's day, pilfering from his master, etc.; and Jane, wife of Joshua Verrin, was presented for absence from religious worship. Mr. Peter requested time to confer with her again.

At a town meeting, held two days later, Matthew Prior¹ was admitted an inhabitant and six acres of land was granted to him; Edward Ingram² was granted six acres; Henry Cooke six acres; John Pickering's man six acres; and John Hardy forty acres of upland and six acres of meadow next to the eastward of the land granted to William and Richard Dodge.

Jan. 21, following, the town granted to Mathew Waller twenty acres of land in addition to his ten; Thomas Read twenty acres; Thomas Truslar one hundred acres; Abraham Temple five acres in addition to his five acres; John Robinson³ ten acres of planting ground; Nicholas Pacy a ten-acre lot; and to John Abbey five acres. At the same time, John Blackleeche was granted fifty acres as an addition to his grant of three hundred acres,⁴ as fifty acres of his said former grant was rocky ground, and there-

¹Matthew Prior removed to Long Island, and was of Brookhaven in 1665. His daughter Sarah married, first, John Gould of Newport, and, second, Gov. Walter Clark.

²Edward Ingram (Ingeram, Ingerum, Ingraham) came from London, in the *Blessing*, in 1635, at the age of eighteen. He was in Salem in 1640.

³John Robinson died in 1653.

⁴At Beverly Farms.

fore he had "an insufficient amount of ground to maintain a plow," the additional fifty acres being that which had been granted to Mr. Gott upon the plain, and was adjoining said three-hundred-acre grant.

Edward Giles sold to Edward Harnett¹ about eight acres of land, and to end a dispute as to the acreage, being claimed to be four acres too little, the town granted to the purchaser six acres adjoining to John Borne's ten-acre lot, Jan. 27, 1638-9.

On the same day, Joseph Younge² was admitted an inhabitant; Sargeant Dixy requested the grant of some hay ground about Jeffry's creek; and Edward Ingram was granted five or six acres of land at the ten-acre lots at the Great Cove.

Feb. 4, 1638-9, the town granted thirty acres of land at the head of Bass River to William King; five acres each to Daniel Baxter³ and Henry Cook, twenty-five acres of land, lying between the lands of William Bennett and Samuel Archer, at Jeffry's Creek, to Robert Allyn; a ten-acre lot lying between Mr. Downing's farm and Mr. Endecott's, and a farm of two hundred acres, to Mr. Keniston; a ten-acre lot (formerly of Mr. Gardner, John Barber and Richard Bishop, which they resigned to the town) to George Ingersoll; eighty acres of land, next to the land of Mr. Fisk and Mr. Smith; thirty acres of land, near the farm of James Smith, to Samuel Eborne; a ten-acre lot to Thomas James; a ten-acre lot near Mr. Downing's farm to Joseph Younge; five acres of land to Thomas Fryar;⁴ some land to George Curwen; fifty acres of land to widow Vermais; and one hundred acres to John Friend. On this date, Henry Bayly requested a little nook of land next Mr. Conant's house at Cat Cove, and was granted, eleven days later, about three quarters of an acre at Burley's cove. Henry Swan requested "some accomodation for his settling together with admittance into the plantation," and, a week later, was granted a ten-acre lot near the pond by Mr. Blackleech's farm.

¹Edward Harnett was a tailor; had wife Priscilla; and removed from Salem in 1658. Edward Harnett, jr., probably their son, a tailor, removed from Salem in 1658; married Eunice, daughter of Jonathan Porter of Huntington, L. I., and had two children baptized in Salem: 1. Jonathan, Nov. 17, 1650; 2. Eunice, Sept. 3, 1654.

²Joseph Young was a mariner and married and lived in Salem as late as 1649.

³Daniel Baxter was a seaman, and "propounded" himself to become an inhabitant at a town meeting, July 16, 1638; was in Salem as late as 1653; wife Elizabeth; children: 1. Elizabeth, born Sept. —, 1644; probably married John Rogers Oct. 29, 1674; 2. Susanna, born Sept. —, 1646; married Isaac Hyde July 12, 1665; 3. Rebecca, born Jan. —, 1648-9; 4. Priscilla, born June —, 1652; married Benjamin Wilkins June 3, 1677.

⁴Thomas Fryer was a fisherman, and removed to Gloucester before 1642.

A week later (eleventh), the town granted to Lieutenant Davenport two acres of meadow, lying on the west side of Butt brook, not far from the place that the way goeth over to Lynn; to John Boren thirty acres of land; and to Thomas Payne forty acres.

A week later (eighteenth), John Best¹ was admitted an inhabitant and he requested accommodation of land; William Davis² was admitted an inhabitant and granted ten acres of planting ground near Mr. Downing's farm. The town granted to Ensign Reed a hill adjoining to his farm with the brook, the trees to be for the maintenance of the fence from the mill to the river that parts Mr. Endecott's farm and the ten-acre lots.

A week later (twenty-fifth), Esdras Read³ was received as an inhabitant, and the town granted to Edmond Marshall three acres of ground near the ten-acre lot of Ananias Concline.

Esdras Read

The next day (twenty-sixth), at a general town meeting, it was agreed that dry cattle should be "put out to the farms round about and that none shall go with the milch cows in the common, this year"; that every man "provide for their own calves this year"; that the seven men provide and agree for the keeping of the milch kine; who are to be paid by the owners of the cattle.

At this meeting, Mr. Hathorne, John Woodbury and Jeffry Massy were chosen deputies; Mr. Bishop was granted one hundred and fifty acres of land, forty of which were to be meadow; Henry Bartholmew was granted fifty acres, five of which were to be meadow; and William Cattlebury⁴ was received as inhabitant and granted a ten-acre lot.

ENLARGING THE MEETING HOUSE.

In 1638, the meeting house became insufficient to accommodate within it the number of people who attended the religious services, and the last day of that year the town "Agreed that there should forthwith an addition to the meeting house be builded and that there should be a rate made and levied for the

¹John Best was a currier; came in the Hercules in 1635, from Sandwich, having lived in the parish of St. George, in the City of Canterbury.

²William Davis probably removed to Boston; and died in 1655.

³Esdras Reade lived in the Wenham part of Salem; commissioner; removed to Chelmsford in 1655; wife Alice; children: 1. Bethiah, born about 1637; 2. Obadiah, born about 1639.

⁴William Cattlebury was a yeoman; married Beatrice —; died June 1, 1663; she married, secondly, Francis Plumer of Newbury Nov. 29, 1665; children: 1. Rebecca, born about 1636; married Benjamin Woodrow in 1659; John; living in 1663; 3. Ruth; married Thomas Small March 15, 1663-4.

payment thereof, the seven men to see it effected and to pay for it." It was decided to enlarge the meeting house, by lengthening it twenty-five feet. The galleries were continued from the old part of the building, and new stairs led to them. In the new part was built a chimney, with a base twelve feet long, the top extending four feet above the top of the building, and catted, that is, several small timbers, standing upon the top of the chimney met together at the upper end, probably for creating a draft through the interstices thus made. The back of it was made of brick or stone. The fireplace, which was constructed in the base of the chimney must have been about ten and a half feet in length, as the bier stood in it, at least in the season when a fire was not needed. This provision for the heating of the meeting house was very extraordinary, and shows that comfort was to be secured, if possible, unlike most if not all the congregations of those times. The addition was lighted by two windows of glass on each side and two on the end. The new part was covered with one and one-half inch plank, with one inch board upon that to meet close, and underpinned. The walls were daubed. The cost of the addition was sixty-three pounds; and the builder was John Pickering. The following is a copy of the agreement with him for its construction:—¹

The agreem^t betweene the towne & John Pickeringe the 4th day of the 12th moneth 1638.

ffirst hee is to build a meeting howse of 25 foote longe, the breadth of the old buildinge wth a gallerie answerable to the former; One Catted Chimney of 12 foote longe & 4 foote in height aboue the top of the buildinge. The back whereof is to be of brick or ftone. This building is to haue fix sufficient windowes. 2 on each side & 2 at the end. & a pre of ftaires to ascend the galleries futeable to the former. This building is to be couered wth inch & halfe planck & inch board vpon that to meete close: And all this to be sufficientlie finished wth daubinge & glasse & vnderpinninge wth ftone or brick wth cariage & all things necessary by the said John Pickeringe: In confideration whereof The said John Pickering is to haue 63^{lb} in money to be paid at 3 paym^{ts}. The first payment 21^{lb} at the beginninge of the worke. The 2^d paym^t 21^{lb} when the frame is reared. The 3^d paym^t is 2^{lb} w^{ch} is to be paid at the finishing of it. And it is agreed That if it be found by indifferent men that the said John Pickeringe hath deferued 3^{lb} more Then the towne is to pay it him If it be found the said John hath deferued 3^{lb} leffe hee is to abate it: And the said John Pickeringe

¹Of the first payment under this contract, twenty pounds was borrowed of John Humphrey and six pounds was paid by Thomas Gardner. July 8, 1639, four pounds and five shillings, besides the first two payments, was paid. When the remainder was paid the records do not disclose.

A fac similie reproduction of this contract is in Essex Institute Historical Collections, volume 27, at page 183.

dorth Couennt to finifh it by the 15th day of the 4th moneth next enfuinge the date hereof.

In witnes whereof both pties haue subscribed heerevnto.

JOHN PICKERING

JO: ENDECOTT
JO WOODBERY
WILL HATHORNE
LAWRENCE LEACH
ROGER CONANT.

The town agreed with Nathaniel Porter, Nov. 12, 1638, to sweep the meeting house and ring the bell for fifty shillings per annum. Mr. Porter had the care of the meeting house in 1639; and John Horne also had it for a part of the year. Together they were paid six pounds and five shillings that year. Henry Birdsail¹

Henry Birdsail

was the sexton beginning Jan. 1, 1644, at the same salary paid to Nathaniel Porter, namely, three pounds and fifteen shillings.

For ringing the bell for funerals he had three pence. Before 1645, Edward Burcham became the sexton at the same pay. In 1651, Benjamin Felton was chosen to succeed him at the same salary. Thomas Oliver was chosen in 1655-6, and the town voted that the bellringer should dig graves, his pay to be twelve pence for digging each grave. He resigned his position in 1661; and Henry West was engaged. The town then voted to pay five pounds for the service thereafter, with the addition of the shilling for digging graves, except from the middle of December to the middle of February, he should have what he should agree to with the interested parties, or they could get whom they could to perform that service. West was there as late as 1667; the selectmen chose Thomas Maule April 18, 1672, and his salary was fixed at six pounds.

After being in use more than a score of years, the old bell was removed, and a new one was bought for eighteen pounds, in 1657, and it was raised and hung at an expense of five pounds.

¹Henry Birdsail was made a freeman May 2, 1638; lived in Salem in 1639 and 1649; and died in 1651.

CHAPTER V.

DEPARTURE OF HUGH PETER.



APRIL 15, 1639, Francis Bushnell¹ was admitted into the town as an inhabitant; John Bachelor and Thomas Weeks² were admitted as inhabitants and they requested accommodation in land; Joseph Kedgerer (Ketcherill) desired accommodation; Mr. Allerton wished accommodation near his son-in-law at Marblehead; Mr. Walton desired a grant of three acres of land at Marblehead to build upon; John Abby was granted five acres near Mr. Throgmorton's³ hoghouse; Robert Baker was granted ten acres westward of Mr. Throgmorton's hoghouse; and Mr. Fisk and Mr. Fogg were granted for this year the grass of the salt marsh at the side of the old planters' fields.

Two days later, the town granted to Lawrence Southwick half an acre of ground adjoining his other half acre, and Obadiah Hulme a spot of ground to build upon. At the same time, the seven men agreed with Austen Calum and William Browne to keep the goats this season for thirty-two pounds. Augustine Calem was goat keeper in 1640, also. "The goates are to be driven out an hower after the sun is up & brought in to the pen neere the pownd an hower afore sun settinge." The pound was

¹Francis Bushnell was born in 1609, being brother of John Bushnell, who were sons of Francis (who died in 1646) and Rebecca Bushnell; carpenter; removed to Guilford, Conn., and thence to Norwalk, Conn.; married Mary —; died Dec. 4, 1681; children: 1. Elizabeth; married William Johnson in 1651; 2. Sarah; married Joseph Ingram of Saybrook; 3. John, born in 1632; died in 1686; 4. —; married Jonathan Smith of Glastonbury, Conn.; 5. Samuel; 6. Hannah; 7. Martha.

²Thomas Weeks (Wickes), turner, was in Charlestown in 1636; wife Alice; children: 1. Bethiah, baptized Feb. 27, 1641-2; married John Archer; 2. Hannah, baptized Jan. 5, 1644-5; married John Pickman Aug. 27, 1667.

³John Throckmorton had a daughter Patience who married John Coggeshall Dec. —, 1655, and had a son John, who was of Providence, R. I.

about where the western gateway to Washington Square is, having been removed from Town House Square to this site, where it existed as late as 1663.

At the session of the general court, March 13, 1638-9, among those present were John Endecott and John Winthrop, jr., and deputies, William Hawthorne, John Woodbury and Jeffery Massey. At this court, John Endecott and John Winthrop, jr., were ordered to administer the oath of freedom to Emanuel Downing at Salem.

At the same court, the committee to settle the bounds between Salem and Lynn, one of whom was John Woodbury, reported, and it was "ordered, that the bounds betwixt Salem and Linn shall begin at the cliffe by the sea where the water runs, as the way lyeth from Linn to Marble Head, and run upon a straight line to the long pond, by the ould path that goeth to Linn, at the south end thereof next to Linn, and the whole pond to be in Salem bounds; and from that pond to run upon a straight line to the iland in Mr. Humfreys pond, and from that iland to run upon a straight line to 6 great pine trees marked, called by those 6 men that layd out the bounds, the 6 Mens Bounds; and from those trees to run upon a straight line unto another little pine tree marked, by the side of a little hill beyond the trees, to run upon the same line, so farr as our bounds shall reach, into the countrey."

This is presumed to be the present line between Salem and Swampscott and Lynn and between Peabody and Lynn and Lynnfield. Where the line was soon became a question, especially as it cut into the territory of Salem, after grants of land had been made, between Lynn Street, now in Peabody, and Ipswich River, and trouble about those grants arose. However, March 22, 1657-8, the selectmen requested John Gardner, William Flint and Henry Skerry to perambulate the line from the sea to the great pond by the road towards Lynn; and Thomas Putnam, Joseph Pope and John Putnam from the pond to the seven men's bounds and so on, with Lynn men, April 15th. April 7, 1662, the selectmen appointed Major Hathorne, Mr. Curwin, William Flint and John Pickering to run the line from the sea to the long pond, and Thomas Putnam, Thomas Flint, Nathaniel Putnam and Henry Bartholmew from the pond to the seven men's bounds. Jan. 18, 1663, the selectmen appointed Captain Curwen, Lieutenant Putnam, William Flint and Henry Bartholmew to meet with some men from Lynn and perfect the bounds between the two towns from the sea to the pond by the way to Lynn. May 16, 1666, the selectmen appointed Henry Bartholmew, Samuel Gardner and William Flint to meet with



SEVEN MEN'S BOUNDS.

Lynn men the next second day of the next week to run the line and settle the bounds; but the line was not determined at that time, and the same committee, together with Capt. George Corwin, was ordered, by the selectmen, Dec. 19, 1667, to meet with Lynn men before the first of March and settle the line. April 19, 1669, the selectmen appointed John Corwine, John Pickering, Bartholmew Gedney, Henry Bartholmew, William Flint and Samuel Gardner "to meat our neibours of Lyne to goe in pembulacon in the bounds betweene them and us as also to setle the bounds or what concerneth the setlinge of the bounds there wh have been or at present is in diference." April 24, 1673, by appointment of the selectmen the line which had been settled was perambulated by Lynn men and Bartholomew Gedney, John Pickering, Jonathan Corwin, Hilliard Verin, jr., John Price and Thomas Gardner. In their return, the line is described as running from the middle of Mr. Blanco's house to the noted spring and so to the tree at the farther end of the long pond, and they state that they renewed the bounds every twenty rods by adding to the heaps of stones which had been formerly made. The rest of the line, from this pond to Ipswich River, was still unsettled April 10, 1675, when the selectmen appointed Captain Curwine, Samuel Gardner, Captain Gardner, Lieutenant Putnam and Philip Cromwell "to settle the line between us and Lynn from the country highway at ye upper end of ye Great pond from the bound tree there upon a direct line to a tree in the middle of the island in Mr. Humphry's Pond and from thence to

the seven men's bounds and so to the Great River." To run this line, the expense at the ordinary of Arthur Hewes was fifteen shillings and five pence.

The final agreement, which fixed the line permanently described this northwesterly part of it as running from "the upper End of the longe ponde, to the iland in Mr. Humphrey's ponde and from thence to the seven men's bounds; and from the seven men's bounds to a pine tree marked with six marks upon a Hill Northerlye from the said bounds and from thence to a small White Oake by the Side of Ipswich Riuer; about three or four score pole above the Saw mill against John Phelps his house the particuler bounds between the abovesaid head bounds are about twentye pole distant Each from other and are either a parcell of stones and a stake in the middle of them, or stones layde upon a Rock, or a stake driven downe and the Earth digged up aboute it." This was done April 18, 1679, and the committee for Salem consisted of Samuel Gardner, sr., John Price, Bartholmew Gedney, John Higginson, John Pickering and John Hathorne.

The general court appointed April 4th as a day of "humiliation, to seek the face of God, and reconciliation with him by our Lord Jesus Christ, in all the churches. Novelties, oppression, athism, excess, superfluity, idleness, contempt of authority, and troubles in other parts to be remembered."

By order of the same court, no town should send thereafter more than two deputies thereto; and that Salem should have two barrels of gunpowder for the supply of the militia here, and each town must see that there is a good supply of powder on hand.

At a town meeting, May 15, 1639, John Pickering requested "a farm at the south end of the long pond going to Lynn"; and was granted "fifty acres of land beyond the West pond lying next to Lynn bounds," Aug. 8, 1639. At the meeting held May 15, Thomas Smith was granted eighty acres of land; Lawrence Leach's two sons seventy acres of land, of which seven acres were to be meadow, they relinquishing their former grants of twenty and thirty acres; Thomas Gardner a bank of upland near Strongwater brook, to his marsh, paying five shillings per acre as Goodman Lord had it; and William Hathorne about three acres of rocky ground, lying by his marsh, for five shillings an acre. Ezekiel Knight also desired accommodation of land.

At the general court, May 22, 1639, there were present John Endecott and John Winthrop, jr., and deputies William Trask and William Hawthorne from Salem, and the first two named were chosen assistants.

At the same court, retailers of wine were ordered not to allow it to be drank upon the premises; and Mr. Peter was desired to write to Holland for five hundred pounds worth of saltpetre and forty pounds worth of match.

June 6, 1639, the general court appointed Emmanuel Downing and William Hawthorne of Salem to assist the magistrates in the Salem court; and it was ordered that one of the deputies in each town should post a note on the meeting house door, for creditors of the colony to demand their debts of the constable within six weeks thereafter. Mr. Hugh Peters was granted five hundred acres of land, John Endecott, Esq., three hundred acres, Mr. William Hawthorne two hundred acres and Capt. William Trask two hundred acres, in regard of much service, and to Lt. Richard Davenport one hundred acres. Mr. Endecott, Mr. Downing and Mr. Hawthorne were ordered "to dispose of the house which Mr. Peters bought as they can, and return the money for the college."

There was "a very great drouth all over the country, both east and west, there being but little or no rain" from April 26 to June 10, 1639, so that corn began to wither, and the people feared that the crop would be entirely lost. The general court conferred with the elders, and agreed upon June 16th as "a day of humiliation in all our churches for the want of rain, and help of brethren in distress." The very day after the fast was appointed there was a good shower, and within a week after the day of the fast was past, there was so much rain the corn revived and gave hope of a plentiful harvest.

Governor Winthrop was in Salem June 25, 1639, when he and Col. John Endecott, Lt.-col. John Winthrop, jr., and John Humphrey, Esq., assisted by Mr. William Hawthorne and two from Lynn presided over the quarterly court. It was a busy jury session. There were ten civil cases and a number of criminal and other matters. Hope, an Indian living with Hugh Peter, was sentenced to be whipped for running away and being drunk. The general court, July 30, 1640, censured her for running away and other misdemeanors, and ordered her to be whipped in Boston and at Marblehead.

July 25, 1639, the town granted to Thomas Pickton¹ a ten-acre lot; to Nathaniel Pitman about twenty acres, lying next to widow Dix's land on

Thom: Pitton

¹Thomas Pickton (Picden, Pigden); planter; lived on Cape Ann Side, which was incorporated as Beverly in 1667; married Ann — as early as

the south side of Forest River; and to William Hathorne fifty acres of plowed land near or adjoining to his farm. At this meeting of the town, Henry Silsby¹, Mr. Sharp's man, George Dill², Samuel Edson³, Thomas Davenish⁴, Nicholas

Henry Silsby

Samuel Edson *Patrick*

Patch, John Lovett⁵, Edmond Patch⁶ and John White⁷ were received as inhabitants; and George

Dill and Samuel Edson were each granted a half acre house lot, Thomas Davenish ten acres of planting ground, Nicholas Patch⁸

1641; died in the autumn of 1677; she died, his widow, Dec. 25, 1863, aged about eighty-four.

¹Henry Silsby lived in Ipswich in 1647, and in Lynn in 1658; married, first, Dorothy —; she died Sept. 27, 1676; married, second, Grace Easton Nov. 18, 1680; he died in 1700; children: 1. Henry; 2. John; 3. Ephraim; 4. Samuel; 5. Hannah; married Thomas Loughton; 6. —; married — Marsh; 7. —; married — Collins.

²George Dill was fined forty shillings for "drunkenes, & to stand att the meeting hous doar next Lecture day, wth a Clefte stick upon his Tong, & a pap[er] vpon his hatt subscribed for gross p^rmeditated Lyinge." He was of Watertown in 1671.

³Samuel Edson was living in Salem in 1655; removed to Bridgewater; deacon; representative; married Susanna —; died July 9, 1692, aged eighty; she died Feb. 20, 1699-1700; children: 1. Samuel; married Susanna Byram; 2. Joseph; 3. Josiah; 4. Susanna; married Rev. James Keith; 5. Elizabeth; married Richard Phillips of Weymouth; 6. Mary; married Nicholas Byram in 1676; 7. Sarah; married John Dean of Taunton Nov. 7, 1663; 8. Bethiah; married Ezra Dean Dec. 17, 1678.

⁴Thomas Davenish was living in Salem in 1643. He had baptized in Salem daughters Mary, July 13, 1641, and Bethiah, Nov. 30, 1643.

⁵JOHN LOVETT¹ born about 1610; servant of Daniel Rea; cooper; lived at Mackerel Cove in 1641; wife Mary; died Nov. 5, 1686; children: 1. John,² born about 1637; 2. Joseph,² baptized Sept. 8, 1650; lived in Beverly; married Elizabeth Solart of Wenham; had children; 3. Mary,² baptized Sept. 8, 1650; 4. Simon,² baptized Sept. 8, 1650; 5. Bethiah,² baptized June 13, 1652; 6. Abigail, baptized March —, 1655; died May 27, 1659.

JOHN LOVETT²; husbandman; lived in Beverly; married Bethiah Rootes; died Sept. 10, 1727, aged ninety-one; children: 1. Simon,³ born about 1659; lived in Beverly; married Agnes Swetland Oct. 10, 1682; died Feb. 2, 1744; had children; 2. John,³ born about 1665; lived in Beverly; married Mary Pride March 5, 1694-5; died April —, 1750; had children; 3. Susanna,³ baptized May 31, 1668; 4. Josiah,³ baptized April 25, 1669; 5. Thomas,³ born Sept. 25, 1671; 6. Samuel,³ baptized April 25, 1675; 7. Benjamin,³ born in 1678; 8. Bethiah,³ baptized June 4, 1682.

⁶Edmond Patch, brother of Nicholas Patch, lived in the Wenham part of Salem, and removed to Ipswich about 1660; husbandman; died in Ipswich Nov. 10, 1680; child: 1. Abraham, baptized in Salem Aug. 5, 1649; married Eunice Fraile March 13, 1670; died in 1674; had children.

⁷John White was a slaughterer; and had a wife Elizabeth in 1696.

⁸NICHOLAS PATCH¹, brother of Edmond Patch, lived at Mackerel Cove, in the Beverly part of Salem, at the south side of Bald Hill, in a small

forty acres of land near Mackerel Cove and John White sixty acres near Mr. Smith's farm.

A memorandum of the general court, made Sept. 6, 1638, reads "To remember to barke the second month for the tanning of diverse hides to come." This is the earliest reference to tanning here; and in observance of the note, as soon as the sap began to run in April and May certain kinds of trees were felled and stripped of their bark for this purpose. Oct. 7, 1640, the general court ordered that hides and skins of animals, whether secured by casualty or slaughter, should be preserved and dried, and tanned and dressed. Thomas Eaborne¹ was a tanner in 1641, and may have been the first tanner in the town. He was living in Salem, and was called an aged man in 1642. He died in the spring of 1643. Philemon Dickinson², a tanner, appeared in Salem Feb. 11, 1638-9, and requested some land. He was granted twenty acres. July 25th following, the town granted to him four pole of land near Richard Hutchinson's house, for the purpose of making tan pits therein and "to dresse goates skines & hides." He was only to use this land for his trade. The site of this tannery was probably on Beaver brook, near Whipple's bridge, on Maple Street, in Danvers, as Richard Hutchinson's house stood in the middle of Maple Street about two hundred feet westerly of the bridge, and near the junction of Vineyard and Maple streets.

Aug. 8, 1639, the town granted to William Fisk one hundred acres of upland and ten acres of meadow; and eleven days later to Ananias Concline one acre of land near his dwelling house;

house on the westerly side of Standley Street; died in November, 1673; children: 1. *John*²; 2. *Thomas*² born in 1638.

JOHN PATCH²; lived in Beverly; married Elizabeth Brackenbury; died in 1694; she died, his widow, Jan. 15, 1715-6, aged eighty-four; children: 1. John,³ baptized Dec. 1, 1667; 2. Richard,³ baptized Dec. 1, 1667; yeoman; lived in Beverly; married Maria Goldsmith Feb. 8, 1672-3; had children; 3. Elizabeth,³ baptized Dec. 1, 1667; married Jonathan Boiles Nov. 15, 1674; 4. Nicholas,³ baptized July 12, 1668; 5. Sarah,³ baptized July 12, 1668; 6. Benjamin,³ baptized Sept. 4, 1670. SERG. THOMAS PATCH²; lived in Beverly and Wenham; married Mary Lovett; died Feb. 19, 1721-2; she died Sept. 26, 1723; children: 1. Sarah,³ born Dec. 8, 1666; 2. William,³ baptized July 19, 1668; 3. Thomas,³ baptized July 19, 1668; 4. Mary,³ born Feb. 3, 1669-70; 5. Thomas,³ born July 19, 1674; 6. James,³ born March 31, 1678; 7. Stephen,³ born April 12, 1680.

¹Salem Quarterly Court Records, volume I, page 34.

²Philemon Dickinson came with Benjamin Cooper of Brampton, Suffolk-shire, England, as a servant, having embarked May 10, 1637, in the *Mary Ann* of Yarmouth; married Mary Payne; removed to Southold, L. I., about 1650; died in 1672, probably in New York; children: 1. Mary, baptized March 20, 1642-3; 2. Thomas, baptized March 10, 1644-5; 3. Elizabeth, baptized — 12, 1646; 4. Peter, baptized July 9, 1648.

to Edmond Giles eight poles of ground, lying in the common over against his ten-acre lot, "to build him a howse there,"; and to Mr. Peters the marsh lying over against his now dwelling house, "on the other side of the water," containing an acre and a half¹.

In the general court, held at Boston, Sept. 3, 1639, John Kempe, for immoral practices with three young girls, was censured to be severely whipped at Roxbury and Salem and committed as a slave to Lieutenant Davenport. On the ninth, the court passed an order prohibiting the drinking of healths, as it was a useless ceremony and productive of drunkenness, quarrels and bloodshed. Wearing of lace and similar superfluities having become excessive, nourishing pride and exhausting estates, was prohibited, and no person could thereafter sell or buy the same, no tailor could put them in or on garments, nor any one could engage in making them, except for transportation. Neither could garments be made with short sleeves, unless they should be worn with linen or some equivalent, to cover the arms from the sleeves to the wrists. Neither could immoderately great sleeves be made, as also great breeches, knots of ribbon, broad shoulder bands, rails, silk laces, double ruffs, cuffs, etc. The court declared its wish to proceed against church members for breaches of these orders until the churches had a chance to correct the abuses among themselves.

At this sitting of the court, the system of publication of the banns or notices of intended marriages was originated by an order that they should be published three times at the time of some public lecture or town meeting, in each town where the parties live; and in the towns where no lectures are, the notice of such intention was ordered to be in writing and put upon a post, set up by such town, standing in public view and used for such purposes only, and remain there, so as to be easily read, for fourteen days. So the act of "posting" notices apparently arose from the fact that they must be put upon a post specially erected for the purpose. It was also ordered that the evidence and decisions of the courts should be in writing "to be kept to posterity." Also, records of wills, administrations and inventories, all houses and lands, and the days of marriage, birth and death of every person within the colony. These orders of the colony were all made for the benefit of posterity; and they became increasingly appreciable as the generations have passed. The fathers prepared for us the great mass of documents which have accumulated under such beneficent provisions. The thou-

¹A large portion of this lot of marsh is now included in Dodge Street.

sands of ancient wills, deeds and inventories are preserved with great care. The evidence used in the courts was written, and thousands of original depositions of inestimable value, which principally show the times and environment under which the early settlers lived, are on file in the office of the clerk of courts. The ultra democratic idea is manifest in the order that the birth, marriage and death of every person within the colony shall be recorded. Rich and poor, learned and ignorant, regardless of race or quality, were made equal under such laws.

On the same day, the court granted to Emmanuel Downing six hundred acres of land; and "The house at Salem which was belonging to the country is left to Salem for £100."

On the same day, in the general court, Marmaduke Peirce was accused of suspicion of murder; but the proof not being clear, the matter was referred to the next court of assistants, Dec. 3, 1639, when the jury, being in doubt as to the cause of the death of the deceased, found the defendant not guilty, and he was released. Winthrop called him Marmaduke Perry of Salem, and said that he was arraigned for the death of his apprentice. He said that the "boy was ill disposed, and his master gave him unreasonable correction, and used him ill in his diet." The boy received a bruise on his head, which upon dissection after his death appeared to be a fracture of the skull. The boy had said that his master had given him the wound with his meat yard and a broom staff, and to another that his hurt came with the fall of a bough from a tree.

Sept. 16, 1639, the town received as an inhabitant John Mousar, who desired the grant of some land to plant, and also received as an inhabitant Mathew Nixon¹, who was a fisherman and about twenty-three years of age.

At the general court, Nov. 5, 1639, it was ordered that all persons who were disarmed, remaining amongst us, carrying themselves peacefully, shall have their arms restored to them.²

At this time, there was a scarcity of fit places of entertainment of people upon occasion of great assemblies and on the arrival of ships with passengers, and the general court ordered, Nov. 5, 1639, that at such times any person may entertain and lodge and board such people. It was also ordered that each

¹Matthew Nixon lived in what is now Webb Street, on the north side of Allen Street; and married Elizabeth, daughter of Henry Harwood's wife Elizabeth, in or before 1640. She died in or before 1671; and he was living in 1680.

²See volume I, page 447.

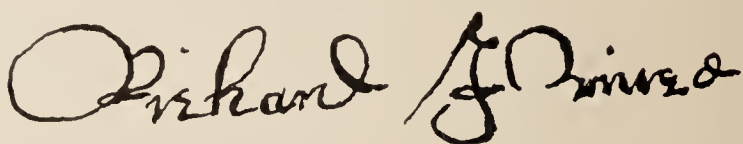
Elizabeth Nixon

town should have liberty to choose a fit man to sell wine, subject to license from the general court; and also those persons who conduct common ordinaries or inns should provide stables and hay for horses and enclosures for pasturing.¹

At this court, all main highways were ordered to be re-located forthwith by men from adjoining towns, where they may be most convenient, notwithstanding any mans propriety, or any corn ground, so as it occasion not the pulling down of any man's house, or laying open any garden, or orchard; and in common grounds, or where the soil is wet or mirey, they should lay out the ways wider, as six, eight, or ten rods, or more, in common grounds.

At the same court, it was further ordered that each town should appoint or provide a house to which lost goods, whose owner is unknown, should be brought, and the person appointed to receive them was ordered to deliver a note of them to the marshall, who should cause them to be proclaimed in Boston, that the owner may claim them. In Salem, Ralph Fogg was appointed.

Nov. 18, 1639, the town received Richard Prince² as an inhabitant; a grant of five acres of land to plant was requested by Robert Fuller; Mr. Fiske desired an addition of fifty acres to his farm; widow King accommodation of land; and Thomas Weeks, a grant of a ten-acre lot here or twenty acres at the village; John Shipley was granted "wood for firing and fencing in the highway that shalbe layd out adjoyning to his 20 acre lott"; and Mathew Nicks, fisherman, was granted five acres of land "by the hogstyes in the



¹See page 184 for the Ship Tavern pasture.

²DEA. RICHARD PRINCE¹; born about 1614; tailor; lived at 13 Daniels Street; married Mary —; died July —, 1675; children: 1. John,² baptized Feb. 20, 1641-2; died, unmarried, before 1675; 2. Joseph,² baptized Sept. 10, 1643; died Nov. —, 1677; probably unmarried; 3. Mary,² baptized April 26, 1648; married Stephen Daniell; 4. Samuel,² baptized May 18, 1651; 5. Richard,² baptized March 18, 1655; 6. Jonathan,² baptized March 15, 1657.

SAMUEL PRINCE²; tailor; married Susanna —; both died in August, 1703; children: 1. Susanna,³ baptized June 14, 1685; 2. Mary,³ baptized Oct. 31, 1686; removed to Boston; 3. Robert,³ baptized April —, 1692; 4. William,³ baptized April —, 1692; 5. Samuel,³ baptized June —, 1694; 6. John,³ baptized Feb. 19, 1698. RICHARD PRINCE²; shoemaker; married Sarah Rix Dec. 25, 1677; died Sept. —, 1702; children: 1. Richard,³ born Jan. 21, 1678-9; 2. Joseph,³ born Dec. 28, 1689; cooper; sailed from Boston to Surinam and died there early in 1703; 3. John,³ born Nov. 15, 1682; living in May, 1703. JONATHAN PRINCE²; married Mary —; died about Nov. —, 1685; child: 1. Jonathan,³ born in 1685; blacksmith; lived in Ipswich; married Hannah Rogers of Ipswich; had children.

forrest next to Ezekiell Knights ten acre Lott." At this meeting, was the first appearance of Robert Fuller.¹

Nov. 20, 1639, the town granted to Richard Bishop about an acre and a half of land by his other five acres, adjoining Austin Killam's lot; widow Moore requested the grant of a farm and Richard Moore half-an-acre on the Neck; James Standish was granted forty acres of land near Jeffry Creeke; John Pickworth was granted three or four acres of meadow to the land formerly granted to him; Charles Glover² was granted an acre of ground for a house lot near Mr. Ruck's, provided the ways are left broad and also provided that he resign up his houselot to the town; Thomas Buxton and William Broock were admitted as inhabitants; John Batcheler was granted twenty acres of ground near that which was formerly granted to Mr. Bishop ("Truslar"); and Joshua Holgrave was granted forty acres.

Thursday, Nov. 28, 1639, was observed as Thanksgiving Day, "through the churches," according to the appointment of the general court.

Dec. 3, 1639, the general court fined the town of Salem for not keeping constant watch during the preceding summer, ten shillings.

Dec. 9, 1639, the town granted to Henry Bartholmew one hundred acres of land, of which ten acres should be meadow; to James Molton eighty acres, of which eight acres were to be meadow; and to Lawrence Leach ten acres of meadow. William Geare³ requested to become an inhabitant and be granted accom-

DEA. RICHARD PRINCE³; mariner and cordwainer; married Mary West Nov. 12, 1702; she died about 1750; he died about 1753; children: 1. Sarah,⁴ baptized Jan. 2, 1703-4; married John Mascoll; 2. Joseph,⁴ baptized Sept. 2, 1705; married (?) Hannah Silsbee (published June 29, 1729); 3. Richard,⁴ baptized April 11, 1708; joiner; married widow Sarah Glover Feb. 3, 1750-1; 4. John,⁴ baptized Feb. 24, 1711-2; blacksmith; lived in Marblehead (?); married Hannah Frost Jan. 23, 1734-5; 5. Elizabeth,⁴ baptized Dec. 2, 1716; unmarried in 1753.

¹Robert Fuller, bricklayer, removed to Rehoboth about 1650, and returned about 1678; married, first, Sarah —, who was buried at Rehoboth Oct. 14, 1676; married, second, Margaret, widow of Christopher Waller about 1678; she died in January, 1700; he died May 10, 1706. Mr. Fuller had sons Jonathan and Benjamin.

²Charles Glover arrived at Boston Sept. 16, 1632; having come on the Lion; shipwright; removed to Gloucester about 1646; married, first, Elizabeth —; she died March 6, 1647-8; married, second, widow Esther Saunders Feb. 12, 1649-50; children: 1. Elizabeth, baptized May 13, 1640; 2. Mary, baptized April 24, 1642.

³William Geare lived in the Wenham part of Salem; married Tryphena —; died Oct. 17, 1672; she lived in Wenham, his widow, in 1676; children: 1. Ephraim; died Oct. 15, 1658 (?); 2. Samuel, baptized March 14, 1641; 3. Mary, baptized May 14, 1643; 4. John, baptized June 23, 1644; and probably Deborah and Tryphena.

modation of land; and Joseph Boys¹ made requests for similar accommodations.

Two days later, at a general town meeting, there was a voluntary town contribution toward the maintenance of the ministry, to be paid quarterly, of which the deacons had charge. The town also granted to John Mowser four acres of land near the old cowhouses at the head of South River.

Dec. 23, 1639, Robert Gutch² was received by the town as an inhabitant, although he was granted land here Jan. 1, 1637-8.

¹JOSEPH BOYCE,¹ born about 1609, lived in that part of Salem which is now Peabody; tanner; Quaker; married Ellenor —; died in the winter of 1694-5; children: 1. Mary²; married Josiah Southwick; 2. Esther,² baptized Feb. 21, 1640-1; married Daniel Southwick; 3. Elizabeth,² baptized March 6, 1641-2; married — Hanson; 4. *Joseph*,² baptized March 31, 1644-5; 5. Benjamin,² baptized May 16, 1647; probably died before 1684.

JOSEPH BOYCE²; tanner; lived on his father's homestead; married Sarah Meachum Feb. 4, 1667-8; died between 1709 and 1722; she survived him; children: 1. Sarah,³ born Dec. 4, 1668; 2. *Joseph*,³ born about 1672; 3. *Benjamin*³; 4. *Jonathan*³; 5. *David*³; 6. Esther³; married Ezekiel Goldthwaite.

JOSEPH BOYCE³; tanner and miller; lived on his father's homestead; married Rebecca (Trask), widow of Samuel Potter about 1695; died in 1723; she married, third, Benjamin Very; children: 1. Mary,⁴ born Feb. 15, 1695-6; 2. Rebecca,⁴ born March 31, 1697; probably died young; 3. Joseph,⁴ born Dec. 29, 1699; tanner, sadler, mariner and innholder; removed to Bakeman's Precinct, Dutchess County, N. Y., about 1754; married Content Lindsey; 4. Abigail⁴; married John Richards; 5. *John*⁴; 6. Samuel,⁴ born about 1711; lived in Danvers; laborer; married Eunice Goodale Oct. 15, 1740; 7. Nicholas,⁴ born about 1714; living in 1730. BENJAMIN BOYCE³; fuller and cordwainer; removed to Mendon in 1725; married, first, Mary Allen of Lynn Oct. 20, 1699; she died; married, second, Susanna — before 1709; she was his wife in 1725; children: 1. Mary,⁴ born April 10, 1701; married Nathan Gaskill; 2. Isaac,⁴ born Oct. 15, 1704; 3. Sarah,⁴ born Jan. 10, 1705-6. JONATHAN BOYCE³; yeoman and stone cutter; lived in the Danvers part of Salem; married, first, Patience Gaskill May 28, 1708; second, Abigail — before 1723; she was his wife in 1758; he died in 1767; children: 1. Ebenezer⁴; yeoman and millstone maker; lived in Danvers; married Rebecca —; died in 1784; had children; 2. Jonathan⁴; husbandman; lived in Danvers; died in 1803; had children; 3. Patience⁴; married Samuel Osborne; 4. Lydia⁴; married — Dwoifiell. DAVID BOYCE³; husbandman; lived in Lynn until 1735, when he removed to the Danvers part of Salem; married, first, Anna Alley (published March 29, 1712); second, Sarah (Lindsey), widow of — Smith (published Jan. 29, 1728-9); she was his wife in 1756; he lived in Danvers in 1761; child: 1. David⁴; husbandman; lived in Lynn and removed to Salem in 1745; married Catherine (Daland), widow of Robert Neal Sept. 20, 1744; she was his wife in 1770.

JOHN BOYCE⁴; tanner and mariner; married Elizabeth Osborne Jan. 18, 1727-8; children: 1. John⁵; cordwainer; lived in Lynn in 1754; probably married Mary Howard in Lynn Dec. 12, 1750; 2. William⁵; potter; lived in Dighton in 1754; 3. Elizabeth⁵; spinster; lived in Smithfield, R. I., unmarried, in 1754.

²Robert Gutch came from Wincanton, England, about 1637. His sister came with him aboard Mr. Stratton's ship. Hugh Jones came

He lived on the easterly side of Central Street, near Essex Street. The town also granted to Richard Ingersoll twenty acres in the great meadow; to John Fairfield¹ eighty acres of land for a farm, of which ten acres were meadow; to Richard Prince thirty acres of land, of which four acres were to be meadow; to Richard Leech four acres of land, lying next to John Leech's ten-acre lot; to Robert Adams three and a quarter acres near to John Cooke; to William Barbar² two acres to plant in, probably in Marblehead; to Abraham Whiteare two acres of land to plant in and a quarter of an acre for a houselot, probably in Marblehead; to John Fisk, as an addition to his former grant, thirty acres of ground, of which four acres were to be meadow; to Joseph Batchelor and Thomas Browning twenty acres of land near his former grant and two acres of meadow; to John Endecott the swamp that runneth on the line of his farm, next to Goodman Chickerings and of the other side to the land that is laid out in small lots, sometime Mr. Batter's; to William Geere twenty acres of land; to Allyn Convers³ forty acres of land, four of which were meadow; to John Woodbury, John Balch and Mr. Conant five acres of meadow each; to Lawrence Leech fifteen acres more of meadow; and to William Stephens thirty acres of land on the forest side, if he stay at Marblehead, and fifty acres in Salem if he should remove thither. Mr. Stephens did not afterward live in the town of Salem, but, in 1642, removed to Gloucester, where he remained during the remainder of his life. He was a famous ship builder on both sides of the Atlantic, being widely known for his honesty, skill and faithfulness.

as his servant, removed to the East, beyond Casco, about 1657; married Lydia Holgrave (?); children: 1. John, baptized Oct. 3, 1641; 2. Patience, baptized May 28, 1643; 3. Lydia, baptized April 6, 1645; 4. Magdalen, baptized Jan. 7, 1646-7; 5. Elizabeth, baptized Nov. 19, 1648; 6. Deborah, baptized May 16, 1652; 7. Sara, baptized June 4, 1654.

¹John Fairfield was of Charlestown in 1638; married Elizabeth ———; died in 1647; she married, second, Peter Palfrey; had "nephew" Mathew Edwards; children: 1. Walter, born in 1633; lived in Wenham; wife Sarah; she died Dec. 18, 1710; he died July 20, 1723, aged ninety-one; had children; 2. John, baptized June 28, 1641; lived in Ipswich; married Sarah Geare March 26, 1666; died in 1672; she married, secondly, Daniel Killam April 13, 1673; had children; 3. Benjamin, born about 1646; died Sept. 14, 1668.

²William Barber lived in Marblehead and had a wife in 1652.

³Allen Convers married Elizabeth ———; removed to Woburn in 1643; died April 19, 1679; she died three days later; children: 1. Zachary, born Oct. 11, 1642; 2. Elizabeth, born March 7, 1645; 3. Sarah, born July 11, 1647; 4. Joseph, born May 31, 1649; 5. Mary, born Sept. 26, 1651; 6. Theophilus, born Sept. 21, 1652; 7. Samuel, born Sept. 22, 1653; 8. Mary, born Nov. 26, 1655; 9. Hannah, born March 13, 1660.

Charles Turner¹ and John Marston² were in Salem as early as 1639.

At the quarterly court in Salem, Dec. 31, 1639, Abram Whiteire and John Legg (both of Marblehead) were bound for the good behavior of their wives; and Robert Scott was bound to good behavior. There were two civil cases against Micha Iver for slander, one for calling George Dill "drunken slave, and that he would mark him for an old rogue," and for saying that Thomas Tuck was drunk. Thomas Sams was sentenced to sit in the stocks one hour for speaking to the maid servant of Emmanuel Downing "without her master's or mistress' consent," for coming unseasonably on Lord's day

John Marston

¹Feb. 1, 1641-2, in the local court, for scurrilous speeches and tipping, Charles Turner was fined, ordered to be whipped and to stand in the meeting house with a paper on his head written "a false accuser." The town granted to him, March 27, 1643, a small piece of ground "over against Tuck's," for him to set a house on. He died before December 27th following, leaving his widow Rachel.

²JOHN MARSTON¹ came from Ormsby, Norfolkshire, England, says Savage, and was born in 1615; carpenter; wife Alice, 1641-1673; he died Dec. 19, 1681; children: 1. *John*,² born Aug. 29, 1641; 2. Ephraim,² born Oct. 30, 1643; living in 1677; 3. *Manasseh*,² baptized Sept. 7, 1645; 4. Sarah,² baptized March 19, 1648-9; married Samuel Pickworth Nov. 3, 1667; 5. *Benjamin*,² baptized March 9, 1651-2; 6. Hannah,² baptized April 17, 1653; probably died young; 7. Thomas,² baptized Feb. 11, 1654-5; died young; 8. Elizabeth,² baptized Aug. 30, 1657; died young; 9. Abigail,² born Feb. 19, 1658-9; living in 1682; 10. Mary,² born March 23, 1661; died young.

DEA. JOHN MARSTON²; house carpenter; married, first, Mary Chichester Sept. 5, 1664; she died May 25, 1686; he married, second, Mary Turner Sept. 15, 1686; they were both living in 1725; children: 1. John,³ born July 26, 1666; died Aug. —, 1666; 2. *John*,³ born Sept. 2, 1667; 3. Mary,³ born Jan. 14, 1669-70; married Stephen Daniel Jan. 1, 1692-3; 4. James,³ born Nov. 28, 1672; 5. Sarah,³ born Oct. 8, 1675; 6. Manasseh,³ born Dec. 25, 1677; married Mary Henfield April 10, 1701; she was his wife in 1722, after he "was conveyed to Pennsylvania"; 7. Ruth,³ baptized March 14, 1697; probably married Benjamin Phippen Nov. 1, 1715. CAPT. MANASSEH MARSTON²; anchor smith and master mariner; married Mercy Pearse Aug. 23, 1667; died in the winter of 1703-4; she survived him; children: 1. Mercy,³ born June 23, 1669; died Sept. 11, 1669; 2. Benjamin,³ born July 30, 1670; of Barnstable, Mass., clothier, in 1729; 3. Samuel,³ born Dec. 20, 1674; died Feb. —, 1674-5; 4. Samuel,³ born March 17, 1675; died July 21, 1676; 5. Marsy,³ born Aug. 7, 1677; 6. Mehitabel,³ born May 14, 1682; 7. Lydia,³ born Jan. 7, 1684; married Christopher Babbage Dec. 6, 1705; 8. Susanna,³ born April 29, 1687. BENJAMIN MARSTON²; merchant; married, first, Abigail Veren Nov. 25, 167—; she was his wife in 1692; married, second, Patience —; he died in Ireland in the spring of 1720; she died, his widow, May 22, 1731; children: 1. Benjamin,³ baptized May 27, 1677; died young; 2. Abigail,³ born Aug. 28, 1679; married George Cabot of Boston; 3. Joseph,³ baptized Aug. —, 1681; 4. *Benjamin*,³ born Feb. 24, 1696-7; 5. *John*,³ born Sept. 15, 1699; 6. Elizabeth,³ born June 9, 1701; unmarried in 1728.

and in nights, and for being "contracted" without the consent of her master or mistress. Thomas Tuck and Micha Ivers¹ were to stand at the meeting house door with papers upon their hats inscribed "for lying," and without cleft sticks on their tongues.

"If any of the town shall know any person that shall live out of a particular calling shall inform the grandjury that they may proceed against them."²

DEPARTURE OF HUGH PETER

As soon as Rev. Hugh Peter reached New England, he went from place to place to infuse interest in the fisheries and raised a considerable sum of money here. He wrote to England to raise as much more. Winthrop called him "a man of a very public spirit & singular activity for all occasions."

May 15, 1636, in a sermon Mr. Peter preached at Boston he requested the church to take order for the employment of people especially women and children, in the winter time; for he

JOHN MARSTON³; married Susanna —; and she was his widow in 1725; children: 1. Sarah⁴; married Daniel Cheever Dec. 6, 1722; 2. Margaret⁴; married John Chapel July 18, 1726, in Marblehead. COL. BENJAMIN MARSTON³; judge; married, first, Mehitable Gibbs, daughter of Rev. Henry Gibbs of Watertown; she died Aug. 21, 1727, aged twenty-one; married, second, Elizabeth Winslow of Marshfield Nov. 20, 1729; he died at Manchester May 22, 1754; and his widow, "Madam Marston," died Sept. 20, 1761; children: 1. Benjamin⁴ born Sept. 22, 1730; probably married Sarah Swett in Marblehead Nov. 13, 1755; 2. Elizabeth⁴ born March 4, 1731-2; married William Watson of Plymouth Sept. 22, 1756; 3. Patience⁴ born Jan. 2, 1733-4; married Elhanah Watson of Plymouth Nov. 7, 1754, in Manchester; 4. Sarah⁴ born March 19, 1735; 5. Penelope⁴ baptized July 1, 1739; died young; 6. John⁴ baptized in Marblehead May 29, 1740; died April 25, 1761; 7. Penelope⁴ baptized Aug. 1, 1742; 8. Lucy⁴ baptized in Marblehead Sept. 9, 1744; died young; 9. Lucy⁴ born in Manchester Feb. 4, 1748; 10. Winslow⁴ born Oct. 3, 1749, in Manchester; died Sept. 6, 1755. JOHN MARSTON³; married Mary (Mercy) Flint Feb. 1, 1727-8; they were living in 1747; children: 1. John⁴ baptized Aug. 15, 1742; married Miriam —; died in Marblehead Feb. 8, 1821; she died there April 24, 1821; 2. Benjamin⁴ baptized Aug. 15, 1742; 3. Joseph⁴ baptized Aug. 15, 1742; 4. Zachariah⁴ baptized Aug. 15, 1742; married Elizabeth Henderson May 23, 1754; 5. Thomas⁴ baptized Nov. 22, 1747; married Elizabeth Luscomb June 18, 1764; 6. Jeffs⁴ baptized Nov. 22, 1747.

JEFFS (Jephah) MARSTON⁴; married Sarah Blaney July 20, 1769, in Marblehead; she died there, his widow, Sept. 30, 1821; children: 1. Mercy⁵ baptized Feb. 4, 1770; in Marblehead; died young; 2. Mercy⁵ baptized Oct. 13, 1771, in Marblehead; 3. Sarah⁵ baptized Dec. 5, 1773; 4. Jeffs⁵ baptized Dec. 10, 1775; 5. —, ⁵baptized Dec. 7, 1777; 6. Bethiah⁵ baptized Aug. 6, 1780, in Salem; 7. Ruth⁵ baptized Aug. 13, 1782, in Marblehead.

¹Micha Ivers placed, as security, his lot in the cove near Mr. Holgrave's, by Dixies, also one-half of an acre of land upon the Neck toward Winter Harbor that he bought of George Dill.

²Salem quarterly court records (Waste book), Jan. 1, 1639.

feared that idleness would be the ruin both of church and commonwealth.¹

Mrs. Peter died in 1637; and he married, secondly, Mrs. Deliverance Sheffield in 1639. He was somewhat troubled in his courtship of Mrs. Sheffield, being doubtful of her desire for the marriage to take place. He was not and had not been well for a long time, and this probably caused him to become pessimistic. He wrote, in 1636: "God's hand hath bin and is upon mee, more and more in the weakness of my body, which declynes dayly"; and, in 1638, "My head is not well, nor any part at present for I cannot get sleepe." Mr. Endecott wrote from Salem to Governor Winthrop that "Mr. Peters' illness onely detain'd mee for he hath bene very ill. But I hope the worst is past though hee be as sick in his thoughts as ever."

By appointment of the general court, a fast was held in the several churches, Thursday, April 12, 1638, as a day of humiliation "to intreat the help of God in the weighty matters which are in hand, and to divert any evil plots² which may be intended, and to prepare the way of friends which wee hope may be upon coming to us."

On the evening of the day of the fast, Mr. Peter received a letter from Mrs. Sheffield which seemed to substantiate his foreboding of the lessening of her affection for him. The next day, John Endecott wrote to Governor Winthrop as follows:—

I cannot but acquaint you with my thoughts concerning Mr. Peter, since hee receaued a letter from Mrs. Sheffield, which was yesterday in the eveninge after the fast; shee seeming in her letter to abate of her affections towards him, and dislikinge to come to Salem vppon such terms as hee had written. I finde that shee begins now to play her parte, and if I mistake not, you will see him as greatly in loue with her (if shee will hold a little) as euer shee was with him; but hee conceals it what hee can as yett. The begininge of the next weeke you will heare further from him.³

Mr. Peter wrote to Governor Winthrop on the same day as Mr. Endecott, as follows:—

To the noble Gouvernour in Boston;

Hon. Sir,—I much thanke you for yours, and together am sorry for the sickness of our frends. I am still troublesome to you. I haue

¹Winthrop's Journal.

²This fast was held "for diuerse deliverance from the threatening of a general governor for the colonies and the consequent dissolution of their charter privileges and the loss of all their religious liberty."

³Massachusetts Historical Society's Collections, 4th series, volume VII, page 157.

sent Mrs D. Sh. letter which putts me to new trouble, for though she takes liberty upon my Cossen Downing's speeches, yet (Good Sir) let mee not bee a fool in Israel. I had many good answers to yesterday's worke and amongst the rest her letter; which (if her owne) doth argue more wisdom than I thought shee had. You haue often sayd I could not leaue her; what to do is very considerable. Could I with comfort and credit desist, this seemes best; could I goe on, and content my selfe, that were good; my request is, that this beares my hart's halfe may well observe what is best. For though I now seeme free agayne yet the depth I know not. Had shee come ouer with mee I thinke I had bin quieter. This shee may know, that I haue sought God earnestly, for the next weeke, I shall bee riper:

I doubt shee gaynes most by such writings; and shee deserues most where shee is further of. My very hart is with you and I am

Yours euer

H: PETER

If you shall amongst you advise mee to write to hir I shall forthwith, our towne lookes vpon mee as contracted and so I haue sayd my selfe. What wonder the change would make I know not.

Later, Mr. Peter wrote again to Governor Winthrop that "I know not well whither Mrs. Sh. haue set mee at liberty or not; my conclusion is, that if you find I cannot make an honorable retreat then I shall desire to advance . . . Once more for Mrs. Sh. I had from Mr. Hibbens and others, her fellow passengers, sad discouragement, where they saw her in her trim." So she came to New England, to Boston, where she was admitted to the church March 10, 1638-9. She married Mr. Peter before the year was out; and, Jan. 2, 1639-40, she was dismissed from the church in Boston to the church in Salem.

In a letter to Hugh Peter, dated Jan. 3, 1638-9, Thomas Lechford of Boston, the lawyer, wrote: "Worthy Mr. Peters. My service remembered to you. these are to let you (as a friend in the Lord, upon whom my heart much did and doth depend for counsel and ayde,) understand some of my affairs; wherein I presume upon—and your wisdom and gracious disposition which I have ever observed in you since I was your auditor and hung upon your Ministry at the Graves or Sepulchres."¹

Emmanuel Downing wrote to Governor Winthrop, in 1638, that "My Cosen P. is constant to his dayly charge, soe that all his friends are resolved to leave him to his owne way, yet blessed be God his preaching is verie profitable and comfortable to all."

¹Lechford's Note Book, page 29.

The physical and mental condition of Mr. Peter became such that Mr. John Fiske assisted him in the ministry for a considerable time. He became so much more incapacitated that a colleague was secured and regularly installed. This was Rev. Edward Norris,¹ who had been a teacher and minister in Gloucestershire, England, and had come to America the year before. He had come to Salem to assist Mr. Peter in the work of the church. He had joined the

Edw: Norris

church here in December; the town granted to him one hundred acres of land and sixteen acres of meadow Jan. 21, 1639-40; and with great ceremony he was in-

¹REV. EDWARD NORRIS¹ lived on the northeasterly corner of Essex and Turner streets until the autumn of 1649, when he removed to the Gerrish house opposite the city hall; died Dec. 23, 1659; child: *Edward*.²

EDWARD NORRIS²; schoolmaster; lived in his father's house; married Dorothy —; died in 1684; children: 1. Elizabeth³; married, first, Joseph Glover; second, Samuel Moulton of Rehoboth; 2. *Edward*,³ baptized Aug. 18, 1657.

EDWARD NORRIS³; joiner; married Mary Symonds Dec. 3, 1685; died Dec. —, 1700; she was his widow in 1713, and married, secondly — Starr; children: 1. Mary,⁴ born April 14, 1687; married James Mackmallin; 2. *Edward*,⁴ baptized July 6, 1690; 3. Elizabeth,⁴ baptized April —, 1692; married Jonathan Williams; 4. *James*,⁴ baptized Feb. —, 1694-5; 5. John, baptized April 10, 1698; currier; lived in Fairfield, Conn., in 1759; married Rebecca Mackentire Oct. 1, 1719; 6. Abiel,⁴ baptized Feb. 2, 1700-1; married Richard Buckminster of Boston.

EDWARD NORRIS⁴; chairmaker and turner; married Remember White Dec. 30, 1715; died July 19, 1759; children: 1. *Edward*,⁵ born Jan. 4, 1716; 2. Sarah,⁵ baptized Nov. 16, 1718; 3. Thomas,⁵ baptized Dec. 4, 1720; 4. John,⁵ baptized Jan. 21, 1724-5; 5. James,⁵ baptized Oct. 30, 1726. JAMES NORRIS⁴; married, first, Joanna Field Jan. 20, 1718-9; second, widow Lydia Begoe May 9, 1728; he died before 1747; she married, third, Benjamin Bickford Oct. 2, 1750; children: 1. Joanna,⁵ born Oct. 16, 1719; 2. Mary,⁵ baptized Oct. 15, 1721; 3. James,⁵ baptized June 7, 1724; 4. James,⁵ baptized Dec. 26, 1725; 5. Sarah,⁵ baptized Nov. 29, 1730; 6. Elizabeth,⁵ baptized Sept. 15, 1734; married John Archer; 7. James,⁵ baptized Jan. 29, 1737-8; living in 1752; 8. Henry,⁵ baptized Feb. 17, 1739-40; living in 1756.

EDWARD NORRIS⁵; baker; married, first, Mary Twiss Aug. 5, 1739; second, Elizabeth (West) Neal Nov. 16, 1743; he died Sept. —, 1769; she died Nov. 9, 1796; children: 1. *Edward*,⁶ born April 11, 1745; 2. *Elizabeth*,⁶; married Walter Price Bartlett; 3. John,⁶ born in 1751; state senator; married Mary Herbert Feb. 22, 1778; died Dec. 22, 1808; she died March '21, 1811; no children; 4. Judith,⁶ born Oct. 28, 1753; married James King.

EDWARD NORRIS⁶; schoolmaster and merchant; postmaster and town clerk; married Sarah Lee; died Oct. 25, 1803; she died March 7, 1830, his widow; children: 1. *Edward*,⁷ born May 20, 1776; 2. John,⁷ born April 12, 1780; captain; distiller; married Esther Lang May 27, 1804; she died Feb. 3, 1867; he died Sept. 15, 1869; no children; 3. *George*,⁷ born Nov. 21, 1782; 4. *Henry Lee*,⁷ born March 8, 1786; 5. *Jeremiah*,⁷ born Nov. 30, 1793.

CAPT. EDWARD NORRIS⁷; mariner; removed to New York, where he died in 1829; married, first, Ann Churchill King Dec. 9, 1804; she died Nov. 16, 1812; second, Judith King March 13, 1814; she died March 14,



PLAN OF NORRIS GRANT.

stalled March 18, 1639-40. Governor Winthrop wrote, in his Journal, under that date: "Mr. Norris was ordained teacher of the church in Salem, there being present near all the elders of the other churches and much people besides." He was distinguished for his learning and talents, good judgment and toleration, and Winthrop wrote that he was grave and judicious.

1855; child: 1. John,⁸ born in July, 1811; died May 12, 1812, aged ten months. GEORGE NORRIS⁷; lived in Salem, Hamilton and Chelsea; living in 1869; children: 1. George,⁸ born about 1814; 2. Sarah Ann,⁸ born about 1816. HENRY LEE NORRIS⁷; mariner; married Elizabeth Holman Nov. 25, 1810; died May 17, 1819; she married, second, Benjamin K. Churchill of Bristol, R. I., March 3, 1822; she died Oct. 8, 1851; children: 1. Charles⁸ (twin), born Sept. 22, 1813; died May 30, 1814; 2. Henry Lee⁸ (twin), born Sept. 22, 1813; 3. Elizabeth Holman,⁸ born Nov. 20, 1818; married William H. Jackson of Boston May 12, 1846. JEREMIAH NORRIS⁷; mariner; married Dolly Safford Aug. 20, 1824; sailed from Baltimore in a vessel that was never heard from; child: 1. Charles Henry⁸.

GEORGE NORRIS⁸; lived in Salem and Hamilton; married Hannah M. Call (published Aug. 1, 1833); child: 1. George Henry,⁹ born about November, 1836; died May —, 1838. HENRY LEE NORRIS⁸; lived in New York in 1837; married Sarah K. Churchill Nov. 2, 1837; died before 1891; children: 1. Clara C.⁹, born in Salem Aug. 10, 1838; 2. Eliza H.⁹; married — Russell of Oyster Bay, L. I.; 3. Henry L.⁹; lived at Edinburgh, Scotland, in 1869, and in West Hoboken, N. Y., in 1891; 4. Ada L.⁹; lived in Princeton, N. J., unmarried, in 1891; 5. William M.⁹; lived in Princeton in 1891. CHARLES HENRY NORRIS⁸; tailor; married, first, Caroline M. Coffin Nov. 11, 1847; second, Emma Frances Marsh; died Aug. 31, 1902; children: 1. Caroline Agnes,⁹ born Aug. 13, 1848; married William R. Colby; 2. Helen M.⁹, born Sept. 5, 1850; died July 4, 1922, unmarried; 3. Charles S.⁹, born Oct. 23, 1852; 4. —⁹ (son), born July 5, 1856; died July 6, 1856; 5. —⁹ (daughter), born Jan. 5, 1861; died Jan. 26, 1861; 6. William S.⁹, born April 30, 1863; living in Salem in 1922.

CHARLES S. NORRIS⁹; clothier; lived in Newton in 1902; married Lizzie Eddy Aug. 14, 1876; died before 1922; child: 1. Vivian May,¹⁰ born March 23, 1877, in Salem; married Lawrence Parker of Warren, Mass.

Mr. Peter's only child, Elizabeth, was born in Salem and baptized Oct. 1, 1640. About this time, Mrs. Peter became mentally disordered, and during the remaining twenty years of his life he was deprived of the enjoyment of her society. He wrote, in that year, that "Deepe melancholy is getting fast vpon mee agayne and tethers mee at home"; and, again, in the same year, "Am also at present fallen into a sore fit of my old hypochondriacal melancholy through cold and care."

Mr. Peter was sent by Governor Winthrop and the general court and the church of Salem to Dover to settle a matter of church ex-communication and a general broil. He went on foot each way, and on his return, with two or three others, he was lost in the woods between Portsmouth and Haverhill. They wandered about two days and a night, without food or fire in the snow and wet.¹

"Upon the great liberty which the king had left the parliament to in England," friends there advised the colonists to solicit favors from that government. The popular feeling was against any such request being made as it was thought best to be independent. The court of assistants considered that benefits might be derived thereby; and Mr. Peter, pastor of the church of Salem, Thomas Weld, pastor of the church of Roxbury, and William Hibbins, pastor of the church of Boston, were desired to go upon this mission. Mr. Winthrop wrote: "For this end the governor and near all the rest of the magistrates and some of the elders wrote a letter to the church of Salem acquainting them with our intentions, and desiring them to spare their pastor for that service. The governor also moved the church of Roxbury for Mr. Welde, whom, after some time of consideration, they freely yielded. But when it was propounded to the church of Salem, Mr. Endecott, being a member thereof, and having formerly opposed it, did now again the like in the church. . . . Mr. Humfrey discovered his intentions the more by falling foul upon Mr. Endecott in the open assembly at Salem for opposing this motion, and with that bitterness as gave great offence, and was like to have grown to a professed breach between them, but being both godly, and hearkening to seasonable counsel, they were soon reconciled, upon a free and public acknowledgment of such failings as had passed. But the church, not willing to let their pastor go, nor yet to give a plain denial to the magistrate's request, wrote an answer by way of excuse, tendering some reasons of their unsatisfiedness about his going, &c. The

¹Massachusetts Historical Society's Collections, 3d series, volume III, page 106; Winthrop's Journal, volume II, page 29.

agitation of this business was soon about the country, whereby we perceived there would be sinister interpretations made of it, and . . . we gave it over for that season."¹

The general reformation in England caused many men to stay there, and the emigration to New England was very slight, and so were the exportations. The general court deemed it expedient "to send some chosen men into England to congratulate the happy success there, and to satisfy our creditors of the true cause why we could not make so current payment now as in former years we had done, and to be ready to make use of any opportunity God should offer for the good of the country here, as also to give any advice . . . for the settling the right form of church discipline there." The same men were appointed that were selected the year before. As no ship was ready to sail to England, these men, together with John Humphrey, John Winthrop, jr., and Thomas Lechford, the lawyer, sailed August 3d for Newfoundland, intending to proceed from there with the fishing fleet.²

"This act of the court did not satisfy all the elders, and many others disliked it, supposing that it would be conceived we had sent them on begging; and the church of Salem was unwillingly drawn to give leave to their pastor to go, for the court was not minded to use their power in taking an officer from the church without their consent, but in the end they and the other churches submitted to the desire of the court."³

They arrived at Newfoundland just two weeks from the date of sailing³, and from there sailed to England.

In 1642, Mr. Peter was chaplain to the forces for the reduction of Ireland, in the expedition commanded by Lord Forbes.

July 5, 1643, he attended Mr. Chaloner (in Waller's plot) in prison and at his execution.

In the same year, he was sent by parliament to Holland, to borrow money for the Protestant sufferers in Ireland and raised thirty thousand pounds.

Jan. 4, 1644, he attended Sir John Hotham at his execution; and on the scaffold received public thanks from Sir John for his excellent instructions and assistance.

March 12, 1644, in answer to a speech of Archbishop Laud, at the beginning of his trial, Mr. Peter said that he, himself, had been instrumental, through divine aid, in bringing one hundred

¹Winthrop's Journal, Boston, 1825, volume II, page 25.

²Winthrop's Journal, Boston, 1825, volume II, page 31.

³Winthrop's Journal, Boston, 1825, volume II, page 32.

and twenty from papistry, who witnessed a good profession, as true Protestants and sincere Christians.

Mr. Peter accompanied the Earl of Warwick, upon his expedition for the relief of Lyme, during May and June, 1644; and June 6, 1645, he was chaplain to the regiments in charge of the baggage wagons and artillery.

When Archbishop Laud was in prison he charged Peter with conspiring to send him overseas, and begged that he might not be banished, pleading his age and infirmities. This had been an idea of Peter to save the archbishop from death.

At the siege of Bridgewater, Peter exhorted the commander of the forlorn hope, who were to begin the storm, and enthused them with courage in the very field of action. In parliament, he related the history of the siege; and the members gave him one hundred pounds for his unwearied services. Later, he was again called into parliament to give them an account of the siege of Bristol; and, also, at another time, an account of the taking of Winchester Castle.

In September, 1645, "Mr. Peter Preached in the Market Place at Torrington, and convinced many of their Errors in adhering to the King's Party."

Jan. 23, 1646, Mr. Peter came from the army to parliament and narrated to them the storming and taking of Dartmouth. He was chaplain in the campaign of 1645-6; and his eloquence inspired the soldiers with devotion.

He repeatedly mentioned his intention of returning to America, exclaiming, "Ah, sweet New England!" Mrs. Peter, being somewhat mentally improved, visited Salem in the autumn of 1646. The next spring Mr. Peter wrote to Governor Winthrop, and said that his health was much impaired.

In June, 1647, Mr. Peter went to the king at Newmarket, and had an extended conversation with him. The king told Peter that he had often heard of him, but did not believe he had that solidity in him he found by his conversation, and that he would have further conference with him at another time. Mr. Peter asked him to hear him preach, but His Majesty refused.

In June, 1648, he was before Pembroke with Cromwell, as the latter was preparing to carry the castle. The Scottish Duke of Hamilton bade Peter adieu and embraced him before the former's execution, in March, 1649. In the following summer, Peter was chaplain to the parliamentary forces sent against the rebels in Ireland.

Oct. 12, 1649, Rev. John Eliot, the Apostle to the Indians, wrote to Mr. Peter as follows: "The Lord hath greatly delighted to improve you, and eminently your talent is increased to

ten talents for our Lord and Master's honour and use, and doubt not but your crowne shall be answerable. You are indeed much envyed, evil spoken of, smitten with the tongue. No matter. Be not troubled at what men say, when they speak evill of you, seeing you cannot but see, yea, all men know it, God dealeth well by you, the Lord doth improve, accept, succeed you. I cannot wish you in New England so long as you are of such great use and service in the Old; not because I love you not, but because I love you and the cause of God, which you do *totis viribus* pursue and prosper in."

The following are copies of two letters¹ written to New England on business, being probably the last of his correspondence hither:—

My Deare ffreinde

3 . I : 54.

I had yo^{rs} & truely doe love you hearti^{ly}, though I have beene sometimes troubled at my business having noe Return's & you Selling my house for .20^{lb} & lending out my book^{es} & thing's & sending home nothing to mee but onely what Spencer Sent & a rose of a Colt & three Sheepe &c. though I am noe way angry wit^h you for I love you heartily, but greate Paiment's have gone forth you write, & truely I Knew noe Debt's but Such as m^r Paine made vpon mee; my minde is that m^r John Winthrop might bee spoke with about what I have, to whome I Assigned it long-since Vpon some condicons though I Profess nothing but want Of Health I thincke could deteine mee from New England, such is my Love to the place & lovely it will yet bee. I pray doe but for mee as I would doe for you: m^r Downing owed mee. 180^{lb} noe bo^{dy} would Seize the house hee made over to mee & now hee is here wish her to make haste after him; Salute yo^r good wife Pay yo^r Selfe what chardge I Put you to & Love.

yo^{rs}

HU: PETERS.

[Superscribed:]

ffor my good ffriende m^r Gott Deacon at Salem now at Wenham

Deare S^r

I feare you are angry because you doe not hear from mee nor I from you. I have b^y m^r Gott ordered you what I have in New England ward. I ever Loved you & yo^{rs} & am truely Sensible of all yo^r cares nothing Vnder heaven hath more troubled mee than that you had not my Company into New England with you; I have sent you by this bearer a Loade Stone which I Pray Keepe for mee if I come, if not it is yo^{rs}. O that I were my old malady the Spleene & never had heart or time to Attend any cure that now I give my life gone & shall out-

¹Suffolk Registry of Deeds, volume 8, page 11.

live my parts I feare, my hear^t is with my god & desire after him. in
whome I am

yo^{rs} Ever.

HUGH PETER'S.

30th of April: 54.

[Superscribed:]

To John Winthrop Junio^r Esq^r these wth a token in a paper

Mr. Peter was honest, but injudicious. At the death of Cromwell, he preached a funeral sermon, the text being "My servant Moses is dead"; and in the funeral procession he walked among the chaplains of Whitehall. He subsequently ignored public affairs; and became very unpopular, his effigy with that of Cromwell being carried through the streets.

He was ordered to be arrested, June 7, 1660, and his arrest occurred on Sunday, Aug. 31, 1660, in Kent Street. He was at once committed to the Tower of London. At the trial, which took place October 10th, Sir Edward Turner, the prosecuting attorney, in his opening to the jury, stated that Mr. Peter was a principal actor in the sad tragedy of the King's death, and a chief conspirator with Cromwell. Mr. Peter was charged with urging people against the king, and to overthrow the monarchy. He was also accused of leading troops of Cromwell's army against the king's forces, which was undoubtedly true.

While in the Tower, he wrote "A Dying Fathers Last Legacy to an Only Child: or, Mr. Hugh Peter's Advice to His Daughter"¹; and it was given to her before his death. This little volume contains many religious and personal instructions, a larger number of plain truths concerning Christianity, several references to his family and his own personal experiences, and the following poem, containing his

WISHES.

*I Wish your Lamp and Vessel full of Oyl,
Like the Wise Virgins, (which all Fools neglect)
And the Rich Pearl, for which the Merchants toyl,
Yea, how to purchase are so circumspect:
I wish you that White Stone, with the New Name,
Which none can Read but who possess the fame.*

¹This was printed for G. Calvert and T. Brewster, London, in 1660, and sold at the Black-Spread Eagle and at the Three Bibles, at the West-End of Paul's. A photographic copy of the title-page (exact size) of the first American edition is given on the opposite page. Thirty-five of his letters are printed in the Winthrop Papers in the Massachusetts Historical Society's Collections; and a list of his writings is given in the exhaustive sketch of



TITLE PAGE

*I wish you neither Poverty, nor Riches,
But Godliness, so gainful, with content;
No Painted Pomp, nor Glory that bewitches;
A blameless Life is the best Monument:
And such a Soul that soars above the Skie,
Well pleas'd to live, but better pleas'd to die.*

Hugh Peter by Mrs. Eleanor Bradley Peters, in the Historical Collections of the Essex Institute, volume 38, pages 133 and 134.

*I wish you such a Heart as Mary had,
Minding the Main, open'd as Lydia's was:
A Hand like Dorcas, who the Naked clad;
Feet like Joanna's, posting to Christ apace,
And above all, to live your self to see
Married to Him, who must your Saviour be:*

He went forth to execution composed in spirit and cheerful, saying, "I thank God now I can die, I can look Death in the face and not be afraid." The third day after their trial, Oct. 16, 1660, Peter and the solicitor John Coke, who had been one of the prosecutors of the late king, were dragged on sleds (or hurdles) from Newgate to the place of their execution at Charing-Cross. Mr. Peter beheld the horrible execution and mutilation of Coke. Then the hangman came to Peter, his hands besmeared with blood, and rubbing his hands together asked, "Come, how do you like this, Mr. Peters, how do you like this work?" Peter replied, "I am not, I thank God, terrified at it, you may do your worst." When he went to his execution, he saw a friendly man, and passed him a piece of gold and desired him to go to his daughter's lodging and deliver to her the piece of gold and tell her that his heart was full of comfort; that he was ready to die; and not to weep for him. He addressed the sheriff, and was then hanged and cut down alive. After much mutilation, his body was opened and the bowels removed and burned. Then the head was severed with a blow, the body was cut into four parts for exhibition in as many places, usually the four principal cities of the kingdom, and the head was set upon London bridge.

Mrs. Peter lived in London in 1677, and had been supported after Mr. Peter's death by Mr. Cockquaine and his church.

CHAPTER VI.

THE FIRST SCHOOL.



REV. JOHN FISK assisted Rev. Hugh Peter in his church services and taught school here from 1637 to 1639. The school was probably conducted in a room in Mr. Fisk's house, and the scholars were only the boys whose parents paid their tuition.

Edward Norris, the young son of Rev. Edward Norris, was chosen by the town, in January, 1639-40, to teach school.

Edw. Norris.

He was not paid by the town, but relied upon his patrons for tuition, as Mr. Fisk had done. The town

apparently built him a small schoolhouse upon a lot of land measuring about thirty by twenty-five feet, on the easterly side of Higginson Place about half way of the First Church building, on the land of the town which was a portion of the original lot of William Lord.

March 30, 1641, the Salem court ordered Goodman Auger to call a general town meeting the second day of the week to see about a free school; but no record shows that such a meeting was held nor that a free school was established at that time.

The school was made partially free by the vote of the town, Sept. 30, 1644, which provided that thereafter those able to do so should pay for their children to attend the school, and those who were unable to pay could attend without paying, the town paying the tuition. The following is a copy of the vote:—

Ordered that a note be published one the next Lecture day that such as have children to be kept at schoole would bring in their names & what they will give for one whole yeare & Also That if any poore body hath children or a childe to be put to schoole & not able to pay for their schooling that the Town will pay it by a rate.

Mr. Norris continued his school for many years, teaching without pay the poor children with the well-to-do, whose parents paid.

Apparently, the town had built a small town house just westerly of the meeting house; and the selectmen voted, May 17, 1655, to prepare the town house for the school and watch. This was not done, probably, as on the thirteenth of the next March the selectmen voted to repair the schoolhouse. March 19, 1667-8, upon the request of Mr. Norris, the town voted to allow him three pounds to build a chimney in the schoolhouse and five pounds for "his encouragement for teaching of children for the year ensuing." The schoolhouse disappeared the next year, and this service of Mr. Norris ended, except for some occasional teaching. The town sold the land where the schoolhouse had stood to John Corwin for five pounds, which was paid Jan. 19, 1670-1.

April 5, 1670, the town voted that the selectmen hire a grammar schoolmaster; and, July 5th, Daniel Epes, jr.,¹ of Ipswich was engaged for twenty pounds a year, residents were to pay at the rate of one-third and strangers two-thirds of the salary. Mr. Epes was son of Hon. Daniel and Martha (Reade)

Daniell Epes
¹DANIEL EPES¹ married, first, Martha Boardman of Cambridge April 17, 1672; she died Feb. 9, 1691-2; married, second, Hannah, widow of Francis Wainwright of Ipswich in 1693; died Nov. 23, 1722; children: 1. Martha,² born Aug. 10, 1673; died young; 2. Martha,² born March 8, 1676-7; married Rev. Peter Dallee of Boston April 1, 1714; 3. Mary,² born Feb. 19, 1677-8; died young; 4. Daniel,² born Oct. 28, 1679; 5. Samuel,² born Jan. 4, 1681; master-mariner; lived in Salem in 1741; 6. Elizabeth,² born March 19, 1684-5; married Capt. Edward Eveleth of Ipswich April 7, 1715; 7. Mary,² born Aug. 31, 1686; married John Capen of Topsfield (published Jan. 20, 1709-10); 8. Ruth,² born July 22, 1688; died, unmarried, in Danvers Jan. 11, 1767; 9. Margaret,² born March 31, 1691; married William Mackey.

COL. DANIEL EPES²; yeoman; married Hannah Hicks of Boston May 24, 1705; she was his wife in 1748; he died March 10, 1764; children: 1. Daniel,³ born Nov. 8, 1710, in Boston; 2. Francis,³ born Jan. 20, 1712-3, in Boston; 3. Elizabeth,³ baptized in Salem Feb. 21, 1714-5; probably died in Danvers July 6, 1801; 4. Samuel,³ baptized June 9, 1717; died Jan. 1, 1748; 5. John,³ baptized Oct. 23, 1720; married Mary Collins Nov. 9, 1751; 6. Mary,³ baptized Dec. 16, 1722; married John Proctor; 7. Joseph,³ baptized May 9, 1725; died young; 8. William,³ baptized June 11, 1727; 9. Joseph,³ baptized Aug. 31, 1729; died in Danvers Oct. —, 1758, aged twenty-nine.

CAPT. DANIEL EPES³; married Hannah Prescott Dec. 29, 1737; died in Danvers Jan. 28, 1773; she died about 1775; children: 1. Daniel,⁴ baptized April 29, 1739; married Abigail Frost Oct. 20, 1765; she died March —, 1825; 2. Francis,⁴ baptized Oct. 19, 1740; lived in Danvers; married Mary Frost of Kittery; had children; 3. Elizabeth,⁴ baptized May 1, 1743; married Joseph Proctor of Gloucester; 4. Hannah,⁴ baptized March —,

Epes of Ipswich, where he was born March 24, 1648-9, and he graduated at Harvard College in 1669.

Mr. Epes taught the school two years, and then went out of town. March 25, 1671, the town ordered that the selectmen should provide a house for Mr. Epes to keep school in. In 1671, Daniel Andrew taught school, in his own house, and was paid by the town. This was probably while repairs were being made upon the schoolhouse "that now is," one pound and eighteen shillings being paid for the "mending." Edward Norris again taught the grammar school from 1672 to 1675 inclusive for ten pounds annually. In the winter of 1674-5, he kept school in his own house.

When it was decided that the meeting house should be taken down, the town voted, Aug. 17, 1672, "that the old meeting house be reserv'd for The Towne use, to build a skoole house & watch house." The next spring, April 21, 1673, the town chose a committee "to Agree with a Carpenter or Carpenters to build a house for the towne which may Serve for a Schoole house & watch house and towne house of the timber of the old meeting-house acording as the timber will bear." This was accordingly done, and of the old timbers a town, school and watch house was constructed in the middle of Washington Street, in front of the Masonic Temple.

The town house was two stories in height, the school room being on the first floor, with a chimney, and, of course, a fireplace. Thus, the school room was warmed in cold weather.

When the new school room was ready for use, "some suitable person" was sought to keep the grammar school, and Daniel Epes was seen. He expressed himself very willing to serve the town as a grammar schoolmaster, provided he might have suitable maintenance; and, April 7, 1677, he was engaged to again

1744-5; married Peter Clark of Braintree; 5. Samuel,⁴ baptized March 1, 1746-7; major; lived in Danvers; married Mary Frost; died in Salem, when he was a bellows maker, Dec. 21, 1803, aged fifty-six; she died Feb. 9, 1829; had children; 6. Mercy⁴; 7. Mary⁴; married Isaac Lewis of Fracestown, N. H., Oct. 18, 1774; 8. Benjamin,⁴ baptized April 29, 1752, in Danvers; lived in Lyndeboro, N. H.; married Mary Proctor Oct. 19, 1793; she died in Danvers Jan. 22, 1820; 9. Sarah,⁴ baptized Oct. 6, 1754, in Danvers; 10. William,⁴ baptized March 29, 1761, in Danvers; 11. Joseph,⁴ baptized March 27, 1763, in Danvers; died Jan. —, 1776, in Danvers. WILLIAM EPES³; esquire; "late of Chesterfield, Va.," in 1750; married Abigail Pickman April 5, 1750; died Oct. 1, 1765; she married, secondly, Dr. Sylvester Gardiner of Boston April 30, 1772; children: 1. Abigail,⁴ baptized Nov. 25, 1750; married Richard Routh; 2. William,⁴ baptized Aug. 3, 1755; 3. Judith,⁴ baptized July 24, 1757; 4. William Isham,⁴ baptized Sept. 28, 1760; died at Southampton, England, Oct. 3, 1823, aged sixty-three; 5. Love Rawlins,⁴ born June 8, 1762.

become the schoolmaster of the town. The town voted to lease the islands belonging to the town for his maintenance, etc., and in the following January the Beverly ferry rent, and the next month the Marblehead ferry rent was added to the income for this purpose. A written agreement was made with him by the selectmen, June 28, 1677, as follows:—

Agreed wth M^r Daniell: Epps In behalf of y^e towne, to pforme y^e place of a Gramm^r Schoolemaster to y^e towne Soe Long as itt shall please God to Graunt him Life, health, and ability, To Learn & Instruct all Such Schollers as shall bee Sent to him, from any person or psons In y^e towne, In y^e English, Latten & Greek tongue Soe as to fitt them for y^e Vniuersity, If desired & they are Capeable: alsoe to Vse his best Endeau^r to teach them good maners, & Instruct them In y^e principles of Christian religion In Consideration of y^e p^rmises, hee y^e s^d Epps shall receiue from Euery pson, y^t Sends his Child or Children to Schoole, y^e Sum of twenty shillings In money p year for Each Childe & w^t y^t falls Short of Sixty pounds p anum In money, y^e Selectmen Ingage y^e towne shall make up: & In Case hee shall haue more Schollers, then to make up y^e aboues^d Sum of Sixty pounds, shall take y^e same to himself, as alsoe y^e benefitt, of all such as shall bee sent from other townes, hee shall alsoe haue y^e priuillidge, of Comonidge as formerly to all Inhabitants admitted, & bee freed from all rates, Trayning watchings, & wardings, as hath been Customary for those of y^e Like occupation: In wittness thereunto y^e s^d Epps hath sett his hand

DANIEL EPPS JUN

Mr. Epes now settled down permanently. His salary was fixed at sixty pounds annually. In 1682, he was still teaching here. He purchased of Edmond Batter the southwest corner of the governor's field, now the northern corner of Washington and Church streets, April 18, 1679¹; and built thereon a large dwelling house. In 1699, he laid out Church Street. This was at first called Epes lane. In this house he lived until his death, Nov. 23, 1722, having devised it to his wife Hannah for her life and at her decease to his son Samuel. Captain Epes conveyed it to Rev. John Sparhawk of Salem, for five hundred and fifty pounds, Aug. 3, 1737²; and Mr. Sparhawk, for eight hundred pounds, conveyed the house and land to Timothy Orne of Salem, merchant, July 18, 1746.³ Oct. 14, 1747, Mr. Orne conveyed it to his son Timothy, a merchant,⁴ who lived here several years. After his removal, the house was occupied by Thomas Somerville, a Scotsman, who conducted therein an inn known as the

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 6, leaf 58.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 73 leaf 185.

³Essex Registry of Deeds, book 88, leaf 151.

⁴Essex Registry of Deeds, book 98, leaf 52.



DANIEL EPES HOUSE

“Sign of the Indian King.” Mr. Somerville removed in the winter of 1767-8. Mr. Orne had died the preceding summer, having devised the house and land to his son Samuel. The estate was then valued at three hundred pounds. The above cut of this house represents it as it appeared during Samuel’s ownership. He died in 1785, when it was valued at four hundred and fifty pounds, and was in the possession of Capt. Jonathan Webb, who was conducting a tavern here. From the heirs of Samuel Orne, the title passed to Deborah Saltmarsh of Salem, single-woman, May 20, 1789¹. She subsequently married Capt. Zadock Buffinton, who, in 1792, by remodeling the house, destroyed every vestige of its original architecture and raised it another story. Captain Buffinton conducted the “Ship Tavern” here for many years, being succeeded by others, and died in 1799, when the buildings and land were valued at six thousand dollars. Mrs. Buffinton died in 1815, leaving the estate to her stepson Jonathan Buffinton of Boston, merchant. Jonathan Buffinton, for five thousand dollars, conveyed the place, then known as Buffinton’s Tavern, stables, barn and land to Gilbert Newhall of Salem, horse-letter, May 14, 1822.² Mr. Newhall lived here, and carried on his stable business in the rear of his residence. He died Oct. 15, 1863, and his heirs, for twelve thousand dollars, conveyed

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 150, leaf 76.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 229, leaf 271.

the estate to Willard L. Bowdoin of Salem, dentist, Aug. 31, 1866;¹ and Mr. Bowdoin conveyed it to John H. Goldsmith of Salem April 29, 1869.² Mr. Goldsmith conveyed it to Daniel C. Manning of Salem May 18, 1870;³ and Mr. Manning sold it to Charles S. Buffum July 31, 1871⁴. Mr. Buffum, about 1885, removed the house to the rear of its original site, and used it for a stable. The original part of the east end, being then exposed, showed in the gable very ancient Dutchlike carved ornaments, painted red.

There was very little in the way of apparatus or other helps in the early schools. A considerable portion of the time of the teacher was doubtless occupied in the making and mending of the quill pens. The New England Primer was here, as well as the horn-book. The latter was a piece of thin board the size of a small page, on which was pasted printed alphabets and some simple words or sentences, and arabic numerals. The name came from the fact that originally, the face was covered with thin transparent sheepskin, to keep the reading matter from being too much soiled in the hands of a child. It was held upright in one hand, by a projecting middle portion of the board at its lower end. The horn-book was for beginners.

When little children first are brought to schoole,
A horne-booke is a necessary toole.⁵

A hundred and fifty years ago, arithmetic exercises were written in a blank book, by the schoolmaster for the scholars to copy, learn the rules and work out the problems. In the inventory of the estate of Theodore Price of Salem, who died in 1671, is mentioned "a written book of mathamatix," which was probably something of this sort.

The grade of a grammar school, so called, of the seventeenth century was classical as well as fundamental

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 709, leaf 268.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 797, leaf 181.

³Essex Registry of Deeds, book 830, leaf 88.

⁴Essex Registry of Deeds, book 771, leaf 101.

⁵Pasquil's Night Cap, 1612.

CHAPTER VII.

FEDERATION OF THE COLONIES.



AN. 21, 1639-40, the town granted to Jacob Barney, William Dodge and Richard Brackenbury five acres of meadow apiece; John Browne, Edmond Tomson and widow Felton thirty acres apiece; William Woodbury ten acres of upland and five of meadow; Joshua Verin forty acres; widow Bryan two acres of meadow; Jeffry Massy twenty acres of upland and five acres of meadow; Joseph Dalibar¹ and widow Scarlet twenty acres of land each; Esdras Reed ten acres as an addition to his former grant of ten acres; Richard Lambert twenty acres of land between Jeffry Easty and Henry Swan; and Roger Conant, son of Roger Conant, "being the first borne Child in Salem," twenty acres. Mr. Ruck² requested the grant

Joseph Daliver

¹Joseph Daliver lived in Marblehead.

²THOMAS RUCK¹ was of Charlestown in 1638; lived in Salem on the western side of Mill Street, near Norman Street, in 1645; lived in Boston in 1648 and 1660; haberdasher in 1648, and draper in 1651; married Elizabeth —; died in or before 1670; she survived him; children: 1. *John*,² born about 1627; 2. Stephen,² baptized April 17, 1642; 3. Thomas²; died in England about 1652.

JOHN RUCK²; merchant and vintner; married, first, Hannah Spooner about 1650; she died Jan. 29, 1660-1; married, second, Sarah Flint Sept. 17, 1661; she died May 4, 1672; married, third, Elizabeth (Price), widow of John Croade Dec. 26, 1672; he died in the autumn of 1697; she was his widow in 1711; children: 1. Elizabeth,³ born Feb. 7, 1651-2; married John Osborne Oct. 5, 1670; 2. Hannah,³ born March 17, 1653-4; married Benjamin Gerrish; 3. John,³ born April 1, 1655; died April 10, 1655; 4. Sarah,³ born Aug. 12, 1656 (married — Burroughs?); 5. John,³ born Aug. 30, 1657; died in 1705; 6. Thomas,³ born Oct. 23, 1658; 7. Damaris³; died, unmarried, April 24, 1702; 8. Abigail,³ born Oct. 28, 1662; 9. Mary,³ born Aug. 30, 1665; married William Smith; 10. Bethiah,³ born April 8, 1668; died, unmarried, in 1697; 11. Rebecca,³ born Sept. —, 1671; married John Appleton April 1, 1689; 12. Ruth,³ born Oct. 20, 1673; died, unmarried, in 1705; 13. James,³ born May 20, 1675; 14. Samuel,³ born July 24, 1676.

of a farm. Mr. Gerford desired fifty acres to be added to the fifty already granted to him; John Luvet, Daniel Ray's servant, requested accommodation; and Mr. Friend wished some meadow to be added to his farm.

William Bacon¹ came to Salem from Dublin, Ireland, this year.

March 30, 1640, the town appointed Lawrence Southwick and William Woodbury to keep the milk cattle, certain heifers, etc., from April 6th to November 15th, for thirty-six pounds. The cattle were to be brought "into the pen near to Mr. Downing's pale," and from there to be taken to the pasture by the herdsmen when the sun was half an hour high in the morning, and be returned into the pen when the sun was half an hour high at night.

THOMAS RUCK³; merchant; married Damaris Buffum; died July 5, 1704; children: 1. Hannah,⁴ born Jan. 20, 1693; married George Dean June 11, 1713; 2. John,⁴ born June 20, 1696; 3. Thomas,⁴ born Oct. 15, 1698; living in 1704; 4. Damaris,⁴ born Oct. 8, 1701; living in 1704. DEA. JAMES RUCK³; shipwright; married Martha Gedney Nov. 6, 1712; she died Feb. 20, 1749; he died June 16, 1772; children: 1. Mary,⁴ born Sept. 6, 1717; married Nathaniel King; 2. Martha,⁴ baptized Feb. 3, 1722-3. SAMUEL RUCK³; shipwright; married, first, Elizabeth Tawley June 30, 1699; she died in 1711; married, second, Sarah Cheever of Marblehead Dec. 10, 1713; they were living in Salem in 1751; children: 1. ———,⁴ born May 28, 1700; died May 28, 1700; 2. Elizabeth,⁴ born July 22, 1701; married John Daniels of Boston Aug. 5, 1725; 3. Ruth,⁴ born Jan. 25, 1703-4; 4. Samuel,⁴ born Oct. 7, 1705; 5. Abigail,⁴ born Jan. 11, 1706-7; lived in Salem, unmarried, in 1730; 6. John,⁴ born Feb. 24, 1716-7.

JOHN RUCK⁴; blacksmith; married Esther Johnson (published Nov. 20, 1717); died about 1740; she died Nov. 14, 1743; children: 1. Abigail⁵; married Philemon Sander Oct. 3, 1745; 2. Esther⁵; married Green Morrill Dec. 20, 1744; 3. Hannah⁵; lived in Boston, unmarried, in 1747; 4. Ruth⁵; living in 1744. SAMUEL RUCK⁴; shipwright; married Bethiah Bickford Nov. 13, 1729; died in 1769; she survived him; children: 1. Elizabeth⁵, baptized Oct. 18, 1730; 2. Ruth⁵, baptized Dec. 12, 1731; 3. Bethiah⁵, baptized Oct. 21, 1733; married Matthew Wharfe Oct. 6, 1754; 4. John⁵, baptized April 9, 1738; 5. Rebecca⁵, baptized March 2, 1739-40; married John Bickford; 6. Abigail⁵, baptized Jan. 17, 1741-2; 7. Sarah⁵, baptized Feb. 12, 1743-4; 8. William⁵, baptized Aug. 23, 1747; 9. Elizabeth⁵, baptized June 16, 1751.

¹ William Bacon married Rebecca, daughter of Thomas Potter, mayor of Coventry, Warwickshire, England. She had come to Salem in 1639, with Thomas Lovell. Mr. Bacon died in 1653; and she died in 1655. They had one child, Isaac, baptized in Salem Sept. 12, 1641; mariner; sold the homestead here in 1665 and left town. Mrs. Bacon, in her will, mentions her sister Judith, apparently in England, and cousins, Anne Potter, unmarried, Richard Cherlcroft and George Bedell. Mr. Bacon lived in a little house, which stood near the fulling mill, on the south side of Walnut, near Wallis Street, in what is now Peabody. He left a considerable estate, having a mare, a yoke of oxen, five cows, a pair of steers, heifer, three calves, nine sheep and seven swine, and much grain on hand, brass, iron and pewter vessels, plate, books, maps and pictures.

Henry Cooke and Edward Ingram were appointed to keep the swine for six shillings for each animal. As these men walked through the town on their way to the pasture in the morning, they blew their horn and the owners of the swine brought them out to the drove, which was thus constantly increased in numbers. The swine were returned at sunset. The keepers were responsible for any swine that were lost, but for those which were killed by wild beasts they were excused if they brought home a part of the flesh as evidence.¹

March 30, 1640, the town granted to John Beaumont² five acres of planting ground, and to John Lovett five acres of ground which was part of the land exchanged by Jeffry Massy and Richard Brackenbury near Mackerel Cove.

To overcome the lack of water which furnished power to the grist mill, which Capt. William Trask built and was running in the rear of the present Universalist Church in Peabody, he changed the site. March 30, 1640, the town authorized him to set up a tide mill on the same stream, "provided hee make passage for a Shallope from halfe flood to full sea." To enable him to get the water from Strongwater brook, and also a higher flow of the tide, he built a dam in the rear of his residence and there erected another mill.³

Captain Trask died in May, 1666, having devised the mill to his sons John and William. William died in 1691, having devised his half interest to his sons William and John, who released their portions to their uncle John. John Trask continued to grind corn here until 1712 when he built a new mill farther down the stream, where Grove Street crosses the river. As soon as the new mill was operated, complaints came into the local court against Captain Trask. He was admonished to be more careful about grinding and tolls. A condition of the grant of liberty to establish a mill at that place was that he would make a passage for a shallop by the mill; but he had not done so when the court ordered him to do so, June 29, 1641. December 27th, he was before the court for neglect in securing scales and weights hung up in the mill. Jan. 25, 1641-2, he was sentenced for keep-

¹In this record is enterlined these words: "The place is in a yard — Mr. Brownes neer to Mr Pestors howse."

²John Beaumont died in or before 1647, leaving a son John, then under eighteen years of age. His widow probably married, secondly, John Tucker, as the boy is called John Tucker's son-in-law.

³See depositions of Benjamin Balch and John Massey, April 10, 1706, and Robert Pease and Elizabeth Buxton, Feb. 25, 1706-7 (Essex Registry of Deeds, book 20, leaf 12); Thomas Lovell, March 27, 1707 (Essex Registry of Deeds, book 20, leaf 13); and John King and Samuel Golthrite, April 27, 1708 (Essex Registry of Deeds, book 20, leaves 124 and 125).

ing an insufficient miller. He agreed to discharge Peter Simes,¹ the man complained of, but did not do so, and the next month the court fined him for his laxity. At this time, he was fined also for want of a toll dish, over toll, bad grinding and want of beam and scales hung up.

The quarterly court held in Salem March 31, 1640, was a busy session, both civilly and criminally. "Francis Nurse a youth for stealing of victualls & for suspicion of breaking a house," was presented.

Dec. 23, 1639, the town granted to Arthur Sandin² of Marblehead two acres of land to plant. He lived on the western corner of Front and Merritt streets. March 31, 1640, he was allowed by the Salem court to keep an ordinary at Marblehead; and he continued to conduct a tavern there until his death, which occurred in the autumn of 1666. He sold wine, beer, strong water and provisions. He had a brew house, and made the beer he sold.

May 13, 1640, the general court declared that there existed an absolute necessity for the increase of the manufacture of linen cloth, etc., and ordered an "inquiry what seed is in every town, what men and women are skilfull in the braking, spinning, weaving, what means for the providing of wheels, and to consider with those skilful in that manufacture what course may be taken to raise the materials and produce the manufacture, and what course may be taken for teaching the boys and girls in all towns the spinning of the yarn"; and also the same inquiry in regard to "the spinning and weaving of the cotton wool." September 14th following, the town ordered that "our Brother Gedney and our brother Balch and our brother Fogg do enquire about fustean spinsters." October 7th, the general court voted to give a bounty of twenty-five per cent. of the value for making linen, woolen and cotton cloth; but withdrew the bounty the next June because public funds could not be spared for that purpose. The court advised the colonists to gather the wild hemp, which might serve for making of cloth until cotton could be had. September 30, 1641, the town granted to Samuel Cornhill an acre of land for the sowing of hemp.

At the general court, May 13, 1640, it was provided that in each town horses, mares, cows, oxen, goats and hogs should be valued by a committee therein. John Woodberry, Jeffry Massey and Thomas Lathrop were appointed the committee for Salem.

¹Peter Simes "alias Ford" was here as late as 1649. His wife would not come over.

²Arthur Sandin (Sands, Sandy) married Margaret —, who survived him. His daughter Mary married Nicholas Merritt.

The court in Salem, June 2, 1640, was a busy session. Richard Gell, an apprentice boy of Mr. Yongs, was sentenced, for burglary on the Lord's day and stealing, to be "severli whipped tomorrow being Lecture day and to set an hour before the Lecture with a paper written and set upon his head for breaking a house, stealing, etc., on the Lord's day'." Gell was subsequently a servant of Francis Felmingham, and Feb. 20, 1643-4, he was ordered by the Salem court to be severely whipped for breaking into the house of Mr. Keaser on the Lord's day and stealing two parcels of tobacco, etc.

Bethiah Cartwright lived in Salem in 1640. She made her will May 2d of that year, and it was proved June 30th following. In it she gave a few articles to her sister Elizabeth Capon of Walderswick, Suffolkshire, England. She probably had no relatives in this country.

Richard Cook lived in Marblehead in 1640 and as late as 1646, and perhaps removed to Boston. He was born about 1610, and had a wife in 1644. He was afterwards connected with large business interests. In a suit at law, in 1663, John Winthrop testified that Cook could not attend court as he had a dangerous infirmity "by reason of a very large tumor risen upon him in a difficult place."

July 15, 1640, the town granted to Joseph Boys ten acres of land to be laid out at Cape Ann Side. Mr. William Vassal and John Harbert requested a grant of a farm to each; Miles Ward¹ requested a grant of two or three acres of land at Stage

¹MILES WARD¹ came from Erith, Kentshire, England. He had a brother in England in 1650, when his father had recently died there. He married Margaret —; and died in Virginia March 3, 1649-50. She married, secondly, Thomas Rix in 1650. Children: 1. *Joshua*², baptized April 25, 1641; 2. John², baptized Dec. 26, 1641; 3. Lydia², baptized Jan. 31, 1646-7; married Robert Glanfield; 4. Martha², born March 11, 1649-50; married Pasca Foote.

JOSHUA WARD²; mariner; married Hannah Flint Jan. 18, 1668-9; died in the summer of 1680; she married secondly, Eleazer Keysor; children: 1. Joshua³, born Jan. 16, 1669-70; died in the autumn of 1680, by a cart wheel going over him, breaking his arm and shoulder and bruising his body; 2. Hannah³, born Jan. 2, 1671-2; married Eleazer Moses; 3. Miles³, born March 11, 1673-4; 4. Mary³; married Adoniram Collins; 5. Margaret³; married John Pickman of Marblehead.

MILES WARD³; joiner and chairmaker; married, first, Sarah Massey Sept. 16, 1697; she died Nov. 20, 1728; married, second, Sarah Ropes (published Jan. 23, 1737); he died Aug. 29, 1764, aged ninety; she died Feb. 7, 1768; children: 1. *Joshua*⁴, born Aug. 15, 1699; 2. John⁴, born Nov. 27, 1701; died Sept. 4, 1703; 3. Miles⁴, born April 18, 1704; 4. John⁴, born July 7, 1707; 5. Ebenezer⁴, born April 10, 1710.

DEA. JOSHUA WARD⁴; tanner; married, first, Sarah Trevett of Marblehead Sept. 17, 1722; she was his wife in 1741; married, second, Lydia (Burrill), widow of John Hawkes of Marblehead Jan. 21, 1745-6; she

Point; John Bushnell desired some land; and Thomas Smith desired twelve acres of upland adjoining his meadow.

died April 25, 1772; married, third, Ruth Woodward of Gloucester June 2, 1773; he died Dec. 29, 1779; she died June 5, 1787; children: 1. Joshua⁵, born March 13, 1723; married Susanna Shores; lost at sea in 1746; she married, secondly, Capt. William Masury May 2, 1750; 2. Daniel⁵, born Oct. 25, 1725; drowned at sea in 1746; 3. John⁵, born June 21, 1729; 4. Sarah⁵, born Aug. 16, 1733; died July 18, 1737; 5. Martha⁵, born May 29, 1735; died Nov. 27, 1736; 6. Martha⁵, born June 14, 1737; married William Webster Nov. 21, 1754; 7. Richard⁵, born April 5, 1741; 8. Burrill⁵, born Aug. 29, 1747; died Feb. 28, 1748. MILES WARD⁴; joiner; married, first, Elizabeth Webb Jan. 3 1727-8; she died April 13, 1737; married, second, Hannah (Derby), widow of Benjamin Hathorne Oct. 10, 1737; died June —, 1792; she was his widow in 1796; children: 1. Sarah⁵, born Oct. 19, 1728; died Aug. 10, 1729; 2. Elizabeth⁵, born Feb. 7, 1729-30; died April 11, 1737; 3. Abigail⁵, born April 16, 1731; died May 22, 1731; 4. Abigail⁵, born March 17, 1732-3; married, first, Samuel Griffin of Portsmouth, N. H. (published Dec. 7, 1752); second, John Bass of Portsmouth; 5. Miles⁵, born July 25, 1733; 6. Sarah⁵, born March 1, 1734; married John Ives; 7. Ann⁵, born March 22, 1735; died May 1, 1737; 8. Ebenezer⁵, born April 12, 1737; died April 13, 1737; 9. Elizabeth⁵, born July 29, 1738; married William Pool of Danvers Oct. 10, 1761; 10. Samuel⁵, born April 30, 1740; 11. Mehitable⁵, born March 18, 1741-2; died Oct. 24, 1755; 12. Anne⁵, born May 11, 1744; married, first, Jonathan Mansfield; second, Joseph Henfield; 13. Nathaniel⁵, born July 29, 1746; H. C., 1765; librarian of Harvard College; died at Cambridge Oct. 12, 1768; 14. Lucretia⁵, born Aug. 26, 1748; married Dr. Joseph Osgood June 14, 1770; 15. Mary⁵, born Sept. 30, 1750; died Sept. 30, 1755; 16. Joshua⁵, born Oct. 25, 1752. JOHN WARD⁴; peruke maker; married, first, Hannah Higginson Sept. 26, 1734; she was his wife in 1742; married, second, Martha Batter Sept. 14, 1758; he died, and she died at the almshouse Oct. 12, 1788; children: 1. Hannah⁵, born Dec. 21, 1735; married Samuel Webb Nov. 9, 1758; 2. Mary⁵, born Aug. 9, 1737; died May 27, 1740; 3. John⁵, born Jan. 10, 1738; 4. Nathaniel⁵, born Jan. 29, 1739-40; living in 1755; 5. Andrew⁵, born Oct. 6, 1742. EBENEZER WARD⁴; joiner and cabinet maker; married Rachel Pickman Oct. 23, 1735; she died Jan. 7, 1789; he died March 3, 1791; children: 1. William⁵, born Aug. 9, 1736; 2. Ebenezer⁵, born May 26, 1738; 3. Benjamin⁵, born Sept. 18, 1739; deacon; captain; married, first, Elizabeth Babbidge Nov. 15, 1770; second, Mary (Farmer) Carleton May 24, 1781; died June 11, 1812; she died Dec. 29, 1816; 4. Sarah⁵, born July 19, 1741; died Oct. 17, 1745; 5. Caleb⁵, born Jan. 12, 1743; lost at sea Jan. 3, 1764; 6. Miles⁵, born July 12, 1744; 7. Rachel⁵, born Jan. 10, 1746; married Edward Lang; 8. Abigail⁵, born June 14, 1748; married William Hathorne; 9. Elizabeth⁵, born June 13, 1754; died April 1, 1774; 10. Sarah⁵, born in 1755; died in infancy.

JOHN WARD⁵; yeoman and leather dresser; married Abigail Phippen; they lived in Marblehead in 1758; he was living in Salem in 1765; children: 1. Joshua⁶, born about 1750; 2. Josiah⁶; mariner; died Aug. —, 1798. RICHARD WARD⁵; merchant; married Mehitable Curwen Nov. 8, 1764; she died April 4, 1813; he died Nov. 4, 1824; children: 1. George Curwen⁶, born Aug. 18, 1765; lived in Sanbornton, N. H.; married Abigail Elkins in 1786; died March 11, 1801; had children; 2. Samuel Curwen⁶, born June 29, 1767; 3. Sarah⁶, born Aug. 1, 1769; married James Cushing Dec. 1, 1793; 4. Mehitable⁶, born Sept. 9, 1771; died, unmarried March 28, 1807; 5. Elizabeth⁶, born July 3, 1774; died, unmarried, Dec. 22, 1834; 6. Richard⁶, born Oct. 31, 1776; 7. Martha⁶, born Jan. 21, 1779; married Charles Adams of Brookfield May 21, 1807; 8. Daniel⁶, born March 21, 1782; died, un-

At a quarter court in Boston, Sept. 1, 1640, Mr. Endecott being present, "Jonathan Hatch was censured to bee severely

married, Feb. 15, 1913. MILES WARD⁵; merchant; married Experience Goodell; died Aug. 10, 1796; she died Nov. —, 1796; children: 1. Elizabeth⁶, baptized April 23, 1758; 2. Miles⁶, baptized July 1, 1759; died May 18, 1785; 3. Nathan⁶, baptized Jan. 25, 1761; married Jane Walker at Wilmington, N. C.; died there Oct. —, 1790; 4. Elizabeth⁶, baptized March 20, 1763; 5. Joshua⁶, baptized Nov. 18, 1764; merchant in 1798; 6. Abigail⁶, baptized Sept. 7, 1766; 7. Mary⁶, baptized Sept. 7, 1766; 8. Mary⁶, baptized Sept. 18, 1768; 9. Hannah⁶, baptized Jan. 20, 1771; married Jonathan Neal May 29, 1791; 10. Anna⁶, baptized Nov. 15, 1772; 11. Nathaniel⁶, baptized Aug. 28, 1774; died at Wilmington, N. C., Aug. 6, 1792; 12. Elizabeth⁶, baptized Feb. 12, 1775; 13. Oliver⁶, baptized Nov. 9, 1777. SAMUEL WARD⁵; distiller; naval officer; married Priscilla Hodges Jan. 2, 1768; died July 31, 1812; she died June 2, 1822; children: 1. Nathaniel⁶, born Oct. 6, 1768; married Sarah Trask of Danvers Dec. 12, 1799; died Aug. —, 1809; had children: 2. Samuel⁶, born July 15, 1770; died Sept. 6, 1770; 3. Samuel⁶, born in 1771; died in 1773; 4. George⁶, born Aug. 14, 1773; 5. Samuel⁶, born Dec. 10, 1775; drowned on passage from West Indies Nov. 4, 1793; 6. Priscilla⁶, born July 23, 1777; married Johnson Briggs; 7. Mary⁶, born Dec. 27, 1779; married Joseph R. Chandler of Boston March 29, 1815; 8. Gamaliel Hodges⁶, born Jan. 24, 1782; 9. Stephen⁶, born Dec. 5, 1783; trader; married Abigail Foster Jan. 8, 1807; 10. Jonathan⁶, born Oct. 8, 1785; sadler; married, first, Ruth Bott Feb. 22, 1811; she died March 2, 1817; married, second, widow Eliza (Campbell) Ward of Boston (published March 15, 1828); died Jan. 24, 1851; no issue; 11. Sophia⁶, born June 25, 1787; married Benjamin Crombie; 12. John⁶, born Sept. 18, 1788; 13. Henry⁶, born July 31, 1791; lieutenant in United States Navy; married Eliza Campbell (see above); died at Manchester July 9, 1825; 14. Harriet⁶, born Feb. 25, 1793; 15. Sarah P.⁶, born April 5, 1795; married Ira Eaton April 20, 1813. JOSHUA WARD⁵; merchant; married, first, Sarah Lander; she died April 15, 1809; married, second, widow Susan Magee of Boston (published March 31, 1810) he died at Charlestown Sept. 14, 1825; she survived him; children: 1. Sarah⁶, born in 1775 (baptied Sept. 26, 1778); died, unmarried, Dec. 25, 1796; 2. Joshua⁶, born May 11, 1776; 3. Mehitable⁶, born April 19, 1778; died May 27, 1797; 4. Elizabeth⁶, born April 19, 1780; married Nathaniel Appleton; 5. Edward⁶, born in 1782; died at the age of three months. JOHN WARD⁵; joiner and cabinet maker; married, first Bethiah Archer June 4, 1761; she was his wife in 1778; married, second, widow (Lufkin) Emmerton Oct. 24, 1784; he died Dec. 1, 1789; she died May 29, 1802; children: 1. John⁶; died in infancy; 2. John⁶, born Dec. 14, 1766; 3. Nathaniel⁶, born Feb. 18, 1768; married, first, Lydia Harding; she died June 5, 1800; married, second, Mrs. — Crediford; had children; 4. Andrew⁶, born Dec. 29, 1769; 5. Jonathan⁶, born about 1770; died in the West Indies Oct. 20, 1791; 6. Israel⁶, born April 1, 1776; 7. Hannah⁶, born in 1777; died Dec. 31, 1795; 8. Sarah⁶, born April 7, 1780; married John Plantin Sept. 23, 1804. ANDREW WARD⁵; cooper; married Sarah Henfield May 21, 1773; died Jan. 16, 1816; she died Dec. —, 1817; children: 1. Andrew⁶, born Feb. 28, 1774; 2. Nathaniel⁶, born June 16, 1776; kept the lighthouse on Baker's Island; married Mary Cutler Aug. 18, 1799; was drowned, while returning with provisions, March 30, 1825; she survived him; son James lived in Lynn; 3. Jonathan⁶, born June 22, 1778; 4. John⁶, born July 20, 1781; married Lucy How; died Oct. —, 1821; 5. Samuel⁶, born Dec. 28, 1787; representative; esquire; died April 27, 1842; left widow; 6. Sarah⁶; married Aaron Tufts Oct. 24, 1813; 7. Edmund⁶, born Sept. 17, 1790; died Sept. 14, 1791; 8. Lydia Henfield⁶, born Nov. 16, 1798;

whipped, & for the psent is comited for a slave to Lieft Davenport."

married, first William Seagel Sept. 7, 1823; second, Moses Smith. CAPT. WILLIAM WARD⁵; married Ruth Putnam May 17, 1761; died Oct. 9, 1767; married, second, Mary Masury April 19, 1768; both drowned near Black Rock June 17, 1773; children: 1. *William*⁶, born Dec. 28, 1761; 2. *Ruth*⁶, baptized Sept. 18, 1763; died May 25, 1770; 3. *Caleb*⁶, baptized Dec. 29, 1765; died May 28, 1770. CAPT. EBENEZER WARD⁵; mariner; married Mehitable Buttolph Aug. 10, 1758; died Oct. 26, 1773; she survived him; children: 1. *Ebenezer Buttolph*⁶, born May 6, 1759; 2. *Mehitable*⁶, born April 30, 1762; married Henry Carwick March 25, 1786; 3. *Sarah*⁶, born Dec. 10, 1764; married Nathaniel Knight Oct. 26, 1784; 4. *Rachel*⁶; married Daniel Farrington of Springfield, Vt., Jan. 21, 1791; 5. *Mary*⁶, born April 17, 1770; married William Farrington June 23, 1805; 6. *Content*⁶, born Sept. 2, 1773; married Samuel Skerry Sept. 8, 1798; 7. *William*⁶; mariner in 1792; living in Salem in 1812. MILES WARD⁵; glazier, shoreman and merchant; married Hannah Chipman of Beverly June 28, 1772; died Oct. 23, 1796; she died, his widow, April 25, 1829; children: 1. *Joseph Chipman*⁶, baptized Sept. 26, 1773; 2. *Elizabeth*⁶, born in 1775; married Richard Gardner July 29, 1797.

JOSHUA WARD⁶; married Elizabeth Whitworth Jan. 25, 1780; she died in Athens, Ga., Jan. 1, 1837; children: 1. *Betsey*⁷, baptized after June, 1781; died, unmarried, in 1835; 2. *Abigail*⁷; died in 1817, unmarried; 3. *Ann*⁷; married — Johnson; 4. *Malthus Augustus*⁷, born in Haverhill in 1782; 5. *Sarah*⁷; married John Punchard; 6. *Mary Ann*⁷; died in 1803, aged fifteen months. SAMUEL CURWEN WARD⁶; trader; esquire; married, first, Jane Ropes Oct. 31, 1790; she died Jan. 18, 1803; married, second, Malvina Tabitha Glover Dec. 17, 1807; he died Nov. 26, 1817; she survived him; children: 1. *Samuel Curwin*⁷, born Dec. 10, 1791; died Sept. 12, 1795; 2. *George Atkinson*⁷, born March 29, 1793; 3. *Samuel Curwen*⁷, born Nov. 26, 1795; his name was changed to Samuel Curwen in 1802; see page 38 for his descendants; 4. *Charles*⁷, born July 10, 1797; merchant; living in 1855; 5. *Jane Sparhawk*⁷, born Dec. 19, 1802; of New York City, unmarried, in 1825; 6. *Elizabeth Wetmore*⁷, born Oct. 13, 1808; teacher; unmarried in 1855; 7. *Malvina Glover*⁷, born Aug. 27, 1809; died Sept. 15, 1809; 8. *William Raymond Lee*⁷, born Aug. 6, 1811; 9. *Henry Orne*⁷, born Dec. 31, 1816; lived in Morris, Ill.; married Janet Buchanan Nov. 3, 1847, at Kendall, Ill.; had children. RICHARD WARD⁶; mariner and merchant; married Lydia Robinson April 14, 1805; died at New Orleans, La., Dec. 14, 1822; she survived him in 1840; children: 1. *Lydia Robinson*⁷, born Dec. 31, 1805; of Bridgeport, Conn., in 1829; 2. *Richard Melville*⁷, born Sept. 8, 1807; died Oct. 19, 1835, unmarried; 3. *Sarah Curwen*⁷, born June 8, 1811; living in 1825; 4. *Ann Elizabeth*⁷, born Nov. 2, 1814; died Aug. 26, 1817; 5. *James Robinsen*⁷, born Aug. 21, 1816; died June 5, 1824; 6. *Ann Elizabeth*⁷, born Oct. 2, 1818; married James Jenkins July 2, 1845, in Bridgeport. GEORGE WARD⁶; of Salem, trader, in 1800; of Gloucester, innkeeper, in 1810 and 1817; married Alicia Burrill Oct. 25, 1797; she died Sept. 15, 1825; children: 1. *Laura Alicia*⁷, born April 26, 1798; married William H. Foster April 6, 1822; 2. *Charles Burrill*⁷, born Sept. 8, 1800; 3. *Amelia Henrietta*⁷, born May 2, 1803; unmarried in 1851; 4. *Samuel Linsey*⁷, born March 30, 1805; 5. *George Washington*⁷, born Aug. 13, 1807; 6. *William Wallace*⁷, born Sept. 12, 1809; 7. *Mary Ann Bassett*⁷, born April 14, 1812; unmarried in 1851; 8. *Ellen Sophia*⁷, born Nov. 14, 1814; married, first, William Henry Allen (published Jan. 6, 1839); second, Gardner Leonard Chandler; she was living in 1851; 9. *Amanda Malvina*⁷, born Nov. 9, 1819; married — Henville before 1851. CAPT. GAMALIEL HODGES

The session of the quarterly court at Salem, Sept. 29, 1640, was the busiest since the court was established. There were

WARD⁶; mariner; married Priscilla Lambert Townsend Aug. 16, 1808; died March —, 1836; children: 1. Priscilla L.⁷, born April 1, 1809; married Joseph Rowell April 3, 1832; 2. *Frederick Gamaliel*⁷, born April 23, 1811; 3. Mary Townsend,⁷ born March 17, 1813; married Stephen Burchmore June 3, 1835. STEPHEN WARD⁶; merchant; married Abigail Foster Jan. 8, 1807; child: 1. John Dodge⁷, born in 1818; died Jan. 16, 1822, aged three years. JOSHUA WARD⁵, merchant; married Susanna Holyoke Aug. 1, 1799; died Sept. 8, 1840; she died Feb. 5, 1860; children: 1. Mary Holyoke⁷, born May 2, 1800; married Dr. Andrew Nichols of Danvers Oct. 3, 1833; 2. Mehitable⁷, born Feb. 14, 1802; unmarried in 1853; 3. Elizabeth Holyoke⁷, born Jan. 14, 1804; died Feb. 15, 1851; 4. Joshua⁷, born April 8, 1806; died June 2, 1808; 5. Joshua Holyoke⁷, born July 8, 1808; H. C., 1829; judge of court of common pleas; died, unmarried, June 5, 1848; 6. Susanna⁷, born July 19, 1813; married Charles Osgood June 19, 1838; 7. Augusta Holyoke⁷, born May 6, 1823; died Dec. 27, 1826. CAPT. JOHN WARD⁶; married Christina Dean Feb. 19, 1796; drowned Dec. 2, 1817; she died Jan. 11, 1850; children: 1. John⁷, born Jan. 7, 1798; trader; married Mary Cowen Feb. 6, 1823; died June 20, 1847; she survived him; no issue; 2. Thomas Dean⁷, born Sept. 16, 1800; died at Matanzas, Cuba, June 4, 1817; 3. Mary P.⁷, born June 20, 1806; married Charles Weston Nov. 26, 1829. ANDREW WARD⁶; shipwright; married Martha Babbidge June 6, 1793; died Dec. 18, 1813; she died April 19, 1821; children: 1. *Andrew*⁷, born Oct. 29, 1793; 2. John⁷, born Jan. 27, 1795; died Nov. 1, 1795; 3. Bethiah⁷, born Aug. 23, 1796; married Thomas W. Taylor Feb. 11, 1823; 4. John⁷, born Dec. 29, 1797; 5. *Israel*⁷, born Jan. 22, 1800; 6. Hannah⁷, born Dec. 4, 1801; married Charles Hobart Dec. 14, 1823; 7. Adeline⁷, born Oct. 5, 1803; married Benjamin Farless March 24, 1828. ISRAEL WARD⁶; barber; married, first, Mary Murray Jan. 9, 1803; she died March 24, 1814; married, second, Sarah Gerrish Aug. 7, 1831; he died June 4, 1849; she was his widow in 1853; children: 1. Israel⁷, born Oct. 3, 1803; tailor; probably married Fanny Wing Feb. 6, 1832; 2. Peter Murray⁷, born June 15, 1805; died at sea Aug. 4, 1824; 3. Jonathan⁷, born June 20, 1808; died May 8, 1809; 4. Jonathan⁷, born Jan. 2, 1814; died Oct. 21, 1814. ANDREW WARD⁶; cordwainer; married Betsey Bowman Nov. 18, 1798; died Dec. 21, 1806; she was his widow in 1812; children: 1. Benjamin⁷, born April 16, 1799; married Betsey F. Atwill of Lynn Oct. 1, 1822; lived in Lynn; had children; 2. Richard B.⁷, born Oct. 11, 180—; died unmarried; 3. Elizabeth⁷, born July 29, 1805; married, first, Nathaniel Burril⁷ of Lynn Oct. 6, 1822; married, second, Ira Sanborn of Lynn July 28, 1841. CAPT. WILLIAM WARD⁶; mariner and merchant; lived in Salem in 1792 and 1811, and removed to Medford as early as 1816; married, first, Martha Proctor Feb. 16, 1785; she died Jan. 17, 1788; married, second, Joanna Chipman Nov. 14, 1790; he died at Medford May 9, 1827; children: 1. Thomas Wren⁷, born Nov. 20, 1786; lived in Boston; married Lydia Gray Nov. 13, 1810; died March 4, 1858; had children; 2. Lucy Ann⁷, baptized April 9, 1797; married (of Boston) Charles Lawrence (published Nov. 12, 1833); 3. William⁷, baptized Jan. 13, 1799; 4. Miles⁷, baptized May 31, 1801; died unmarried; 5. Nancy⁷. CAPT. EBENEZER BUTTOLPH WARD⁶; mariner; married Abigail Waters July 13, 1786; died July 13, 1805; she died Feb. 13, 1831; children: 1. Abigail⁷; died Jan. 26, 1874; unmarried; 2. Ebenezer Buttell⁷, baptized June —, 1793; probably died before 1874; 3. Esther Gilbert⁷, born Dec. 27, 1798; married Nathaniel Very Sept. 9, 1821. JOSEPH CHIPMAN WARD⁶; trader; married Mary Nconon; died June 23, 1832; she was his widow in 1858; children: 1. Miles⁷, born July —,

twenty-two civil cases and several criminal matters. John Cooke, servant of William Clark, was ordered to be severely whipped

1805; died, unmarried, Sept. 6, 1848; 2. Joseph Chipman⁷, born Dec. 12, 1807; died Oct. 4, 1809; 3. Mary Ann⁷, born Dec. 12, 1808; died, unmarried, July 23, 1840; 4. Rachel Pickman⁷, born Oct. 1, 1810; died, unmarried, Sept. 15, 1856 (8?); 5. *Chipman*⁷, born Dec. 31, 1813.

DR. MALTHUS AUGUSTUS WARD⁷; M. D. from Bowdoin College in 1823; physician in Salem, and removed to Athens, Ga., where he was professor of natural history in the University of Georgia; married Eliza Cheever May —, 1829; died at Athens June —, 1863; children: 1. Mary⁸ born March —, 1830; 2. Elizabeth⁸, born May —, 1831; 3. Sarah⁸, born Feb. —, 1834. GEORGE ATKINSON WARD⁷; merchant; settled in New York, and returned to Salem in 1862; married his cousin Mehitable Cushing Oct. 5, 1816; she died in New Brighton, Staten Island, N. Y., Oct. 4, 1862; he died in Salem Sept. 22, 1864; children: 1. George Richard⁸, born July 6, 1817; died, unmarried, Feb. 12, 1861; 2. Sarah Jane⁸, born July 31, 1819; died, unmarried, Aug. 19, 1849; 3. James Cushing⁸, born Aug. 27, 1821; lived in Northampton, Mass., in 1863 and 1875; wife Marguerite D. in 1866; 4. Frank⁸, born Sept. 2, 1824; married Henrietta Zimmerman Oct. 4, 1848; she died July 23 1849; no issue; he was a patient in the Insane Asylum at Utica, N. Y., in 1864. WILLIAM RAYMOND LEE WARD⁷; removed to New York City, where he was living in 1874; married, first, Sophia Langdon of Portsmouth, N. H., Dec. 31, 1839; she died in Salem, Feb. 4, 1855; married, second, Eliza Coffin (Symmes), widow of John Thorne, in New York, Dec. 9, 1856; children: 1. Malvina Glover⁸, born Sept. 16, 1840; died Nov. 16, 1840; 2. John Langdon⁸, born Oct. 25, 1841; living in 1875; 3. Curwen Glover⁸, born Dec. 28, 1844; died Nov. 1, 1846; 4. Raymond Lee⁸, born June 15, 1848; living in 1875; 5. Sophia Langdon⁸, born Feb. 4, 1855; unmarried in 1875. FREDERICK GAMALIEL WARD⁷; mariner; married Elizabeth Colburn Spencer May 9, 1831; children: 1. Frederick Townsend⁸, born Dec. 21, 1831; lieutenant in the French service in the Crimean War; then went to China, as a sailor, about 1859, and rose to the highest rank in the Chinese service; was in the military service in the vicinity of Ning-po, Oct. —, 1862; was shot, died the next day; married Chang Mei, a Chinawoman, who survived him only a year, without issue; 2. Henry Gamaliel⁸, born Aug. 13, 1834; married Georgianna M. Bunker Nov. 10, 1862, in New York; 3. Elizabeth Colburn⁸, born April 21, 1839; 4. Mary Louisa⁸, born June 2, 1841. ANDREW WARD⁷; mariner and merchant; married Abigail Richardson Abbott July 11, 1819; died Aug. 2, 1860; she died March 30, 1877; child: 1. Abby R.⁸; married Rev. George G. Spence of West Wrentham, Mass., April 6, 1847; had a son Andrew, born April 16, 1848, who had his name changed to Andrew Ward; lived in Maine, unmarried. JOHN WARD⁷; married Sarah Patterson Dec. 17, 1822; died at sea, mate of bark Richard, Jan. 23, 1828; she survived him; children: 1. Mary Elizabeth⁸, born Oct. 1, 1824; married Elliott F. Smith; 2. Sarah Adeline⁸, born Aug. 10, 1826. ISRAEL WARD⁷; tailor and merchant in Zanzibar trade; married Hannah Goodhue May 25, 1824; died March 19, 1854; she died July 4, 1881; children: 1. *Andrew W.*⁸; 2. John Andrew⁸, born Sept. 16, 1828; died at Maranham March 13, 1840; 3. William⁸, born July 6, 1833; died Jan. 8, 1855; 4. Israel born Aug. 5, 1836; died Dec. 5, 1857; 5. Mary G.⁸, born June 15, 1830; married, first, Rev. John Winn Underhill; second, Charles D. Lathrop; 6. Martha B.⁸, born Oct. 21, 1838; died Dec. 24, 1851; 7. John A.⁸, born May 1, 1840; died June 4, 1844; 8. *Lawrence Pierson*⁸, born Dec. 21, 1834. CHIPMAN WARD⁷; clerk; married Frances Le Vallois March 31, 1846; died Sept. 4.

and have a shackle put upon his leg for resisting his master's authority, and theft and speeches in court, being advised by John Pearce, Mr. Batter's man. John Bartoll¹ was a witness in court. Robert Adams was ordered to be set by his heels in the stocks for being uncharitable to a poor man in distress, taking his canoe, charging the court with injustice, etc. William Lord for Thomas Burwood and Christopher Berry, who "went for Ould England," moved and the court ordered that John Woodbury and Peter Palfrey measure one-half of an acre of land at Thomas Oliver's new house.

Oct. 7, 1640, the general court appointed John Winthrop, jr., Simon Bradstreet, Emanuel Downing, Mr. Hathorne and Mr. Tyng to "set out" the bounds between Ipswich, Jeffry's Creek and Cape Ann.

On the same day, the general court ordered that unless every grantee of land record his deed, it should not bind any one other than the parties thereto and their heirs, when the grantor remained in possession of the premises, even in the case of a mortgage. Upon being requested to do so, by the grantee, the grantor had to acknowledge the conveyance, and if he should refuse to do so he would be liable to arrest and imprisonment, without bail, until he should submit; and in the meantime the grantee should enter his caution with a brief statement of the deed with the recorder. About 1652, deeds began to be recorded in full. The earliest indexes were either written at the beginning of each volume, or in pamphlets, one for each volume. This practice continued until about 1880, when an index covered a year's records at a time; and about that period the old indexes began to be revised and consolidated by periods, the first being those of 1640 to 1799, the next from 1800 to 1819, etc. In this

1861; she was his widow in 1865; children: 1. Francis Chipman⁸, born Aug. 18, 1846; died Sept. 19, 1853; 2. Mary Frances⁸, born Aug. 15, 1848; living in 1865; 3. Ellie Frances⁸, born Nov. 5, 1850; living in 1865; 4. Annie Victoire⁸, born Nov. 13, 1853; living in 1865; 5. Jane Wallis⁸, born Dec. 17, 1856; died Jan. 4, 1858.

CAPT. ANDREW W. WARD⁸; master-mariner; married Lucy A. —; died Oct. 12, 1865; she survived him; children: 1. Jennie Abbott⁹, born Dec. 21, 1857; married Hon. John Marshall Raymond; 2. Charles William⁹, born March 12, 1859; 3. Frederic Abbott⁹, born July 13, 1860. LAWRENCE PIERSON WARD⁸; married Mary Goodell Nov. 15, 1860; died before 1877; child: 1. Annie Goodhue⁹, born Aug. 13, 1861; living in 1882.

¹JOHN BARTOLL lived in Marblehead; married Parnell —; drowned in March, 1664; she was his widow in 1682, aged about eighty; children: 1. William, born about 1629; mariner; lived in Marblehead; married Mary —; died in 1691; she was his widow in 1703; had children; 2. John, born about 1631; living in 1674; 3. Joan; married Edmond Chapman in 1651; 4. —; married William Lightfoot of Marblehead; 5. Mary, born Feb. 1, 1642-3; unmarried in 1669.

revision, the locus of the premises was given. Emanuel Downing was appointed the first recorder for the district of the Salem quarterly court. He probably kept the records at his house, on Essex Street. This law did not apply to grants of common lands by towns. Thus, the registration of deeds began, and has evolved into the great and important system of the registry of deeds which exists today.

By order of the general court, a road from Rowley to Ipswich and from Ipswich to Salem was laid out by a committee, and ordered to be recorded May 1, 1640. For Salem, the return was signed by William Hawthorne with the consent of Lieutenant Davenport and Ensign Reade. That part of the return which concerned Salem was "by Mr. Hubbard's farm house, and so on upon the east side of Mr. Smith's house, and from thence, by like consent of Salem men, over the old planters meadow, and so to the two ponds usually dry in summer, near which ponds the way doth branch, one whereof is easterly of the said ponds, leading through the old planters field to Salem ferry, according to the marked trees, and the other way is westerly of the ponds, leading to a great creek at a landing place westerly of Mr. Scruggs' house." The way leading from the two ponds southerly is now Dodge and Balch streets and the way leading westerly from the ponds is Conant Street. The landing place was where the last named street crossed Frost-fish River. The two ponds were within the triangle formed by Cabot, Conant and Dodge streets.

Oct. 11, 1640, the town granted to Captain Trask half an acre of land adjoining to the new mill; to William Towne "a little neck of land right over against his house on the other side of the river"; to Mr. Stileman the one-fourth acre of marsh "which Mr. Emery should have had and three quarters more lying in the flaggy marsh at the upper end"; and to John Saunders and Ralph Fogg a quarter of an acre each, "over against their lots as you go to the old mill." It was also ordered at this meeting "that none of the common within the cattle range shall be granted henceforward, to any man for any particular use. And the range of the catt'e at the Forest River head where the fresh water falls in and where the salt water floweth at high water mark shall be a line southward up to Mr. Humfry's farm and from thence to the pond, and so about to Brooksby."

"A pinnace called the Coach, being in her voyage to New Haven (late Quinipiack) between Salem and Cape Cod, sprang a leak, so as in the morning they found her hold half filled with water; whereupon the seamen and passengers betook themselves to their skiff, being a very small one, and the wind then growing very high at S. W. Only one Jackson, a godly man and an experienced seaman, would not leave the vessel before he had

tried the utmost, so getting them in again, and laying the bark upon the contrary side, they fell to getting out the water, which, it pleased God, they overcame, and having a fine fresh gale, they got safe back to Salem." This was recorded by Governor Winthrop under date of Dec. 15, 1640.¹

At the Salem court Dec. 29, 1640, Benjamin Hammon, servant of John Hardy, for saying that "if you see my master you little think what is in him for he is a very hasty man," was found to be a "rash, unsettled and indiscreet young man, ready to run into divers enormities if let free," and was ordered to serve his master a year longer.

Jan. 20, 1640-1, the town granted to Allyn Convers twenty acres of planting ground next to Mr. Endecott's farm, lying by that lot which was Richard Norman's near the head of the river, in exchange of twenty acres formerly granted to him; to Thomas Putnam fifty acres of land and five acres of meadow; and to John Putnam² one hundred acres of land at the head of Mr.

¹Winthrop's Journal, volume II, page 19.

²JOHN PUTNAM⁷, son of Nicholas and Margaret (Goodspeed) Putnam, was baptized at Wingrave, Buckinghamshire, England, Jan. 17, 1579-80; emigrated to America from Aston Abbots, Berkshire, England; yeoman; married Priscilla Gould; died suddenly in Salem Village, where he lived, Dec. 30, 1662; children, baptized at Aston Abbots: 1. Elizabeth², baptized Dec. 20, 1612; admitted to the church in Salem in 1643; 2. Thomas², baptized March 7, 1614-5; 3. John², baptized July 24, 1617; buried at Aston Abbots Nov. 5, 1620; 4. Nathaniel² baptized Oct. 11, 1619; 5. Sarah², baptized March 7, 1622-3; 6. Phebe², baptized July 28, 1624; 7. John², baptized May 27, 1627.

LT. THOMAS PUTNAM²; married, first, Ann Holyoke, at Lynn, Oct. 17, 1643; she died Sept. 1, 1665; married, second, Mary, widow of Nathaniel Veren Nov. 14, 1666; he died May 5, 1686; she died March 16 (17?), 1694-5; children: 1. Ann³, born Aug. 25, 1645; married William Trask; 2. Sarah³, baptized July 23, 1648; 3. Mary³, born Oct. 17, 1649; 4. Thomas³, born March 12, 1652-3; 5. Edward³, born July 4, 1654; 6. Deliverance³, born Sept. 5, 1656; married Jonathan Walcott; 7. Elizabeth³, born Aug. 30, 1659; married Joshua Bayley of Newbury; 8. Prudence³, born Feb. 28, 1661-2; married William Wyman of Woburn; 9. Joseph³, born Sept. 14, 1669. NATHANIEL PUTNAM²; married Elizabeth Hutchinson; she died June 24, 1688; he died July 23, 1700; children: 1. Samuel³, born Feb. 18, 1652-3; 2. Nathaniel³, born April 24, 1655; 3. John³, born Aug. 11, 1662; married George Flint; 6. Benjamin³, born Dec. 24, 1664; 7. Mary³, born Sept. 15, 1668; married John Tufts of Charlestown. CAPT. JOHN JUTNAM²; planter; married Rebecca Prince Sept. 3, 1652; died April 7, 1710; children: 1. Rebecca³, born May 28, 1653; married John Fuller; 2. Sarah³, born Sept. 4, 1654; married John Hutchinson; 3. Priscilla³, born March 4, 1657-8; married Joseph Bailey; 4. Jonathan³, born March 17, 1659-60; 5. James, born Sept. 4, 1661; 6. Hannah³, born Feb. 2, 1663; married Henry Brown; 7. Eleazer³, born in 1665; 8. John³, born July 14, 1667; 9. Susanna³, born Sept. 4, 1670; married Edward Bishop; 10. Ruth³, born Aug. —, 1673.

SERG. THOMAS PUTNAM³; married Ann Carr of Salisbury Nov. 25, 1678; died May 24, 1699; she died June 8, 1699; children: 1. Anna⁴, born

Skelton's farm, between it and the farm of Elias Stileman, the

Oct. 18, 1679; died, unmarried, in 1716; 2. *Thomas*⁴, born Feb. 9, 1680-1; 3. *Elizabeth*⁴, born May 29, 1683; living in 1715; 4. *Ebenezer*⁴, born July 25, 1685; mariner; married Margery Dowse of Charlestown Oct. 16, 1712; 5. *Deliverance*⁴, born Sept. 11, 1687; died Dec. 29, 1712; 6. ———⁴; died Dec. 17, 1689, aged three months; 7. *Timothy*⁴, baptized April 26, 1691; lived in Newbury and Tewksbury; married Eleanor Doare of Newbury Sept. 25, 1718; he died at Tewksbury Nov. 3, 1762; she died there May 5, 1765; had children; 8. *Abigail*⁴, born Oct. 27, 1692; living in 1715; 9. *Sarah*⁴, born Dec. 26, 1693; died Aug. 22, 1694; 10. *Seth*⁴, born May 19, 1765; lived in Billerica, Mass., and Charlestown, N. H.; married Ruth Whipple Sept. 16, 1718; died at Charlestown Nov. 30, 1775; she died there Feb. 1, 1785; had children: 11. *Experience*⁴, baptized Nov. 20, 1698; married David Bailey of Newbury Nov. 11, 1713; 12. *Susanna*⁴, baptized Nov. 20, 1698. *DEA. EDWARD PUTNAM*³; yeoman; married Mary Hale June 14, 1681; died March 10, 1747-8; children: 1. *Edward*⁴, born April 29, 1682; deacon; husbandman; lived in Topsfield and Middleton; married, first, Sarah Miles; second, Priscilla (Bradstreet), widow of Nehemiah Jewett of Rowley Sept. 3, 1735; she died Sept. 6, 1736, in Rowley; he died Oct. 23, 1755; had children; 2. *Holyoke*⁴, born Sept. 28, 1683; killed by Indians at Dunstable July 3, 1706; 3. *Elisha*⁴, born Nov. 3, 1685; deacon; husbandman; lived in Topsfield and Sutton; married, first, Hannah Marble Feb. 10, 1710; second, Susanna Fuller of Topsfield Feb. 15, 1713; died in Sutton June 10, 1745; had children, the youngest of whom was Gen. Rufus Putnam of the Revolution; 4. *Joseph*⁴, born Nov. 1, 1687; 5. *Mary*⁴, born Aug. 14, 1689; married Thomas Flint; 6. *Prudence*⁴, born Jan. 25, 1692; married William Wyman of Woburn Dec. 3, 1719; 7. *Nehemiah*⁴, born Dec. 20, 1693; 8. *Ezra*⁴, born Feb. 28, 1695; yeoman; lived in Topsfield and Middleton; married Elizabeth Fuller March 6, 1719; she died in Middleton Oct. 21, 1747; he died there the next day; had children; 9. *Isaac*⁴, born March 14, 1698; yeoman; lived in Topsfield and Sutton; married Anna Fuller Dec. 20, 1720; died in Sutton in 1757; had children; 10. *Abigail*⁴, baptized May 26, 1700; married Joseph Fuller of Middleton Nov. 11, 1730; lived in Lunenburg. *JOSEPH PUTNAM*³; married Elizabeth Porter April 21, 1690; died in 1724-5; she married, secondly, Capt. Thomas Perley of Boxford May 15, 1727, and died in 1746; children: 1. *Mary*⁴, born Feb. 2, 1690-1; married Bartholomew Putnam; 2. *Elizabeth*⁴, born April 12, 1695; married Jonathan Putnam; 3. *Sarah*⁴, born Sept. 26, 1697; married Eleazer Brown; 4. *William*⁴, born Feb. 8, 1699-1700; 5. *Rachel*⁴, born Aug. 7, 1702; married, first, John Trask; second, John Leach; 6. *Anna*⁴, born April 26, 1705; married Jethro Putnam; 7. *David*⁴, born Oct. 25, 1707; 8. *Eunice*⁴, born April 13, 1710; married Thomas Perley of Boxford Sept. 20, 1731; 9. ———⁴ (son), born April 14, 1713; died April 14, 1713; 10. *Huldah*⁴, born Nov. 29, 1716; married Francis Perley of Boxford July 19, 1734; 11. *Israel*⁴, born Jan. 7, 1717-8; 12. *Mehitable*⁴, born Jan. 13, 1720; married Dr. Richard Dexter of Topsfield March 24, 1741. *SAMUEL PUTNAM*³; married Elizabeth ———; died in 1676; she married, second, Benjamin Collins of Lynn Sept. 5, 1677; children: 1. *Elizabeth*⁴; 2. *Samuel*⁴. *JOHN PUTNAM*³; farmer; married Hannah Cutler Dec. 2, 1678; died Sept. —, 1722; she survived him; children: 1. *Hannah*⁴, born Aug. 22, 1679; died young; 2. *Elizabeth*⁴, born Nov. 26, 1680; married John Phelps of Reading; 3. *Margaret*⁴, born Feb. 20, 1682-3; 4. *Samuel*⁴, born Nov. 5, 1684; 5. *Josiah*⁴, born Oct. 29, 1686; 6. *Joseph*⁴, baptized July 1, 1688; 7. *Mary*⁴, born Sept. 29, 1688; 8. *Susanna*⁴, born April 11, 1690; married Isaac Buxton; 9. *Rebecca*⁴ (twin), born Aug. 16, 1691; unmarried in 1715; 10. *John*⁴ (twin), born Aug. 16, 1691; 11. *Sarah*⁴, born

elder, in exchange for one hundred acres formerly granted to

March 5, 1693; 12. *Joshua*⁴, born in 1695; 13. *Amos*⁴, born Jan. 27, 1697; 14. *Priscilla*⁴, born May 7, 1699. CAPT. BENJAMIN PUTNAM³; married, first, Hannah ———; she died Dec. 21, 1705; married, second, Sarah Holton July 1, 1706; he died about 1715; children: 1. *Josiah*⁴, baptized Oct. 2, 1687; probably died young; 2. *Nathaniel*⁴, born Aug. 25, 1686; 3. *Tarrant*⁴, born April 12, 1688; 4. *Elizabeth*⁴, born Jan. 8, 1690; married Robert Hutchinson; 5. *Benjamin*⁴, born Jan. 8, 1692-3; 6. *Stephen*⁴, born Oct. 27, 1694; 7. *Daniel*⁴, born Nov. 12, 1696; H. C., 1717; clergyman; lived in Reading; married Rebecca Putnam Feb. 25, 1718; died in Reading June 20, 1759; had children; 8. *Israel*⁴, born Aug. 22, 1699; lived in Bedford; married Sarah Bacon of Billerica; died in Bedford Nov. 12, 1760; had children; 9. *Cornelius*⁴, born Sept. 3, 1702; lived in Sutton; married, first, Sarah Hutchinson Nov. 17, 1725; she died in Sutton June 9, 1741; married, second, Elizabeth (Nelson), widow of William Perkins of Sutton Nov. 12, 1741; he died in Sutton in 1761; had children. CAPT. JONATHAN PUTNAM³; farmer; married, first, Elizabeth Whipple; she died Aug. 8, 1682; married, second, Lydia Potter of Ipswich; died March 2, 1739; children: 1. *Samuel*⁴, born in 1682; died Nov. —, 1682, aged fifteen weeks; 2. *Lydia*⁴, born Oct. 4, 1684; married Thomas Flint; 3. *Elizabeth*⁴, born Feb. 2, 1686-7; married John Porter; 4. *Ruth*⁴, born April 7, 1689; died March 26, 1700; 5. *Susanna*⁴, baptized May 25, 1690; 6. *Jonathan*⁴, born May 8, 1691; 7. *Esther*⁴, born Nov. 18, 1693; married Daniel Marble; 8. *Jerusha*⁴, born May 2, 1696; died Nov. 18, 1697; 9. *Jerusha*⁴, baptized Sept. 15, 1700; died Aug. 16, 1716; 10. *David*⁴, baptized Sept. 8, 1706. LT. JAMES PUTNAM³; farmer; married, first, Sarah ———; she died Dec. 25, 1717; married, second, Mary (Read), widow of Daniel Rea March 16, 1719-20; she died Feb. 14, 1726-7; he died April 7, 1727; children: 1. *Sarah*⁴, born Jan. 6, 1686; married Israel Porter; 2. *Bartholomew*⁴, born in 1687; 3. *James*³, born in 1689; 4. *Nathan*⁴, born Oct. 22, 1693; mariner; died, unmarried, in 1723; 5. *Jonathan*⁴; died young; 6. *Archelaus*⁴, baptized July 4, 1697; died at Cambridge, when a student at Harvard College, May 14, 1718; 7. *Elizabeth*⁵, born Aug. 4, 1700; married William Putnam; 8. *Jethro*⁴, baptized May 2, 1703. ELEAZER PUTNAM³; farmer; married, first, Hannah Boardman; second, Elizabeth Rolfe of Newbury Nov. 14, 1711; died Jan. 25, 1732-3; she died Jan. 2, 1752; children: 1. *Hannah*⁴, born Dec. 8, 1693; married Nathan Peabody of Boxford Nov. 29, 1711; 2. *Eleazer*⁴, born Sept. 14, 1695; farmer; lived in Preston, Conn.; married Mrs. Hannah (Williams) Billings of Groton, Conn., Jan. 7, 1730; died Jan. 17, 1741; she died Aug. —, 1780; had children; 3. *Sarah*⁴; 4. *Jeptha*⁴, born Aug. 24, 1699; carpenter; lived in Sutton; married, first, Ruth Fuller March 11, 1728; she died in 1743; married, second, Mrs. Ruth Hayward of Beverly Jan. 8, 1746; had children; 5. *Samuel*⁴, born May 30, 1707; 6. *Henry*⁴, born Aug. 14, 1712; 7. *Apphiah*⁴, born July 8, 1716; married John Porter. JOHN PUTNAM³; married Hannah ———; died in 1736; children: 1. ———⁴ (daughter), baptized Feb. 15, 1691; 2. *Caleb*⁴, born Feb. 14, 1693-4; 3. *Mehitable*⁴, born July 20, 1695; married Joseph Pope; 4. *Miriam*⁴, born Feb. 9, 1697-8; married Stephen Putnam; 5. *Moses*⁴, born May 29, 1700; 6. *Ruth*⁴, born July 13, 1703; married Samuel Flint; 7. *Hannah*⁴, born May 7, 1707; married James Prince.

THOMAS PUTNAM⁴; husbandman; married Elizabeth Whipple of Ipswich April 10, 1705; died about 1757; children: 1. *Thomas*⁵, baptized Aug. 25, 1706; died young; 2. *Phineas*⁵, baptized April 4, 1708; 3. *Matthew*⁵, baptized Feb. 10, 1709-10; 4. *Elizabeth*⁵, baptized July 6, 1712; married Daniel Farrington of Andover; 5. *Ebenezer*⁵, baptized Jan. 17,

him; and if there shall be less than that amount there, it is to be

1713-4; 6. Anna⁵, baptized May 6, 1716; married Daniel Gardner; 7. Thomas⁵, baptized July 27, 1718; 8. Sarah⁵, baptized Nov. 13, 1720; 9. Samuel⁵, baptized Jan. 5, 1723-4; 10. Ruth⁵, baptized Oct. 22, 1727; married, first, Philip Preston; second, Samuel Kimball of Andover. JOSEPH PUTNAM⁴; married Lydia Flint; died in 1773; children: 1. Oliver⁵, baptized Oct. 21, 1722; 2. Joseph⁵, baptized April 26, 1724. WILLIAM PUTNAM⁴; married Elizabeth Putnam Jan. 30, 1723; died May 19, 1729; she married, second, John Putnam; children: 1. Elizabeth⁵, baptized May 15, 1726; married Jonathan Orne; 2. Sarah⁵, baptized Dec. 22, 1728; married Capt. Jonathan Gardner. COL. DAVID PUTNAM⁴; married Rebecca Perley of Boxford Nov. 24, 1728; died in 1768; children: 1. William⁵, baptized March 8, 1729-30; lived in Sterling; married Elizabeth Putnam Nov. 5, 1751; died in 1807; had children; 2. Lucy⁵, baptized April 23, 1732; married Ezra Putnam; 3. Allen⁵, born in 1732; died in 1759; 4. Mehitabel⁵, born in 1734; married Rev. Edward Perkins Sparhawk of Lynnfield; 5. Joseph⁵, born Sept. 23, 1739; lived in Danvers; married Ruth Flint March 26, 1770; died March 9, 1818; had children; 6. Israel⁵, baptized June 20, 1742; lived in Danvers; married, first, Sarah Eppes Feb. 7, 1771; she died Oct. 8, 1784; married, second, Emme, widow of Ezra Prince of Danvers Feb. 22, 1785; he died Feb. 23, 1825; she died July 10, 1831; had children; 7. Eunice⁵, baptized April 28, 1745; died young; 8. David⁵, born in 1747; died in 1766; 9. Eunice⁵, born in 1751; married Nathaniel Richardson; 10. Jesse⁵, born Jan. 8, 1754. MAJ.-GENERAL ISRAEL PUTNAM⁴; an officer of the Revolution; removed to Pomfret, Conn., in 1741; married, first, Hannah Pope July 19, 1739; she died at Brooklyn, Conn., Sept. 6, 1765; married, second, Deborah (Lothrop), widow of John Gardner June 3, 1767; she died at Putnam's headquarters at Fishkill on the Hudson Oct. 14, 1777; he died at Brooklyn May 29, 1790; children (the first was born in Salem Village, the rest in Pomfret): 1. Israel⁵, born Jan. 28, 1739-40; colonel; lived in Pomfret, Conn., and Belpre, Ohio; married Sarah Waldo of Pomfret in 1764; died in Belpre March 7, 1812; had children; 2. David⁵, born March 10, 1742; 3. Hannah⁵, born Aug. 25, 1744; 4. Elizabeth⁵, born March 20, 1747; 5. Mehitabel⁵, born Oct. 21, 1749; 6. Mary⁵, born May 10, 1753; 7. Eunice⁵, born Jan. 10, 1756; 8. Daniel⁵, born Nov. 18, 1759; 9. David⁵, born Oct. 14, 1761; 10. Peter Schuyler⁵, born Dec. 31, 1764. SAMUEL PUTNAM⁴; farmer; removed to Sudbury; married Mary Leach Oct. 19, 1709; died at Sudbury Dec. 30, 1753; children: 1. Samuel⁵, born Feb. 24, 1711-2; 2. John⁵, born Oct. 8, 1715; lived in Framingham; married Sarah Maverick of Sudbury April 25, 1737; died at Oswego, N. Y., in the French and Indian War April —, 1762; had children; 3. Daniel⁵, born Nov. 27, 1717; died in Sudbury; 4. Elizabeth⁵, born Dec. 2, 1719; married ——— Robbins of Bolton; 5. Hannah⁵, born July 7, 1722; 6. Nathan⁵, born June 7, 1725; 7. Mary⁵, born Feb. 13, 1728-9; married ——— Whitcomb of Boston. JOSIAH PUTNAM⁴; yeoman; married Ruth Hutchinson Feb. 19, 1712-3; died July 5, 1766; children: 1. Asa⁵, born July 31, 1714; 2. Enos⁵, born Oct. 6, 1716; married Sarah Goldthwaite May 5, 1744; died in 1780; no children; 3. Josiah⁵, born March 3, 1718-9; 4. Peter⁵, baptized April 5, 1724; 5. Elizabeth⁵, baptized July 4, 1725; married William Putnam of Sterling; 6. Elisha⁵, baptized March 24, 1727-8; 7. Ruth⁵, baptized June 4, 1732; married ——— Russell. JOHN PUTNAM⁴; married, first, Rachel Buxton March 16, 1717; second, Lydia Porter; died Feb. 10, 1764; she died April 22, 1777; children: 1. Lydia⁵, born in 1718; married David Goodale March 2, 1737-8; 2. Israel⁵; living in 1759; 3. John⁵, born in 1720; 4. Amos⁵, born Sept. —, 1722; 5. Edmund⁵, born in 1724; 6. Emma⁵, born in 1727; married James Swinnerton; 7. Phebe⁵, born in 1728; married

made near Lieutenant Davenport's hill.² There was also

Gilbert Tapley; 8. Ede⁵, born in 1733; married John Swinnerton. JOSHUA PUTNAM⁴; married Rachel Goodale Feb. 2, 1721; died in 1739; she died in 1744; children: 1. Hannah⁵, born June 16, 1722; married John Preston; 2. Mary⁵, born June 26, 1727; married Timothy Prince; 3. Rachel⁴, born Dec. 2, 1728; living in 1744. AMOS PUTNAM⁴; yeoman; married Hannah ———; died in 1774; children: 1. Hannah⁵, baptized Oct. 1, 1727; 2. Amos⁵, born in 1729; lived in New Salem; married Lydia Trask of New Salem; died about 1790; she died in Houlton, Me., April 8, 1820; had children; 3. Joshua⁵, born in 1732-3; lived in New Salem; married Eunice Trask; had children; 4. Uzziel⁵, born in 1735; deacon; lived in New Salem; married ——— Ganson; had children; 5. Daniel⁵, born in 1738; deacon; lived in Danvers; married Elizabeth Putnam March 27, 1760; died Nov. 13, 1801; had children; 6. Lydia⁵, baptized June 14, 1741; married, first, Samuel Putnam; second, Timothy Page. DEA. NATHANIEL PUTNAM⁴; yeoman; married Hannah Roberts June 4, 1709; died Oct. 21, 1754; she died about 1763; children: 1. Nathaniel⁵, baptized Oct. 1, 1710; died March 4, 1711; 2. Jacob⁵, born March 9, 1711-2; 3. Nathaniel⁵, born April 4, 1714; died Feb. 11, 1720; 4. Sarah⁵, born June 1, 1716; unmarried in 1763; 5. Archelus⁵, born May 29, 1718; 6. Ephraim⁵, born Feb. 20, 1719-20; deacon; lived in Lyndeborough, N. H.; married Sarah Cram of Reading; she died Oct. 15, 1777; he died Nov. 13, 1777; had children; 7. Hannah⁵, born March 4, 1721-2; married Solomon Hutchinson of Amherst, N. H.; 8. Nathaniel⁵, born May 28, 1724; 9. Mehitabel⁵, born Feb. 26, 1726-7; married Reuben Harriman (Harrington?) of Haverhill, N. H., June 4, 1717; 10. Kezia⁵; married ——— Marble. TARRANT PUTNAM⁴; married Elizabeth Bacon June 8, 1715; died in 1732; she died Aug. 23, 1761; children: 1. Tarrant⁵, born April 3, 1716; deacon; lived in Sutton; married Priscilla Baker of Topsfield Dec. 9, 1742; died Aug. 24, 1794; she died March 16, 1812; had children; 2. Elizabeth⁵, born May 20, 1718; married Samuel Putnam; 3. Solomon⁵, born June 5, 1720; blacksmith; died in 1752; 4. Mary⁵, born April 26, 1724; married Samuel Endicott; 5. Gideon⁵, born May 29, 1726; deacon; joiner and storekeeper; lived in Danvers; married Hannah Browne of Beverly June 4, 1752; died May 17, 1811; she died Nov. 6, 1813; had children; 6. Israel⁵, born Sept. 21, 1730; married Betty Dale June 20, 1754; drowned near Baker's Island Nov. 5, 1756; had a child; 7. Sarah⁵, born April 29, 1733; living in 1752. BENJAMIN PUTNAM⁴; yeoman; married, first, Bethiah Hutchinson June 9, 1715; she died Dec. 9, 1726; married, second, Abigail Hutchinson March 5, 1727-8; he died in 1744; children: 1. ———⁵ (daughter), born Sept. 2, 1716; died Oct. 10, 1716; 2. ———⁵ (daughter), born Oct. 3, 1717; died Oct. 3, 1717; 3. Benjamin⁵, born Oct. 12, 1718; 4. ———⁵ (son), born May 31, 1721; died May 31, 1721; 5. Eunice⁵, born May 21, 1722; married Francis Nurse; 6. ———⁵ (son), born March 10, 1725; died March 10, 1725; 7. ———⁵ (daughter), born Nov. 26, 1726; died Dec. 11, 1726; 8. Abigail⁵, born June 27, 1729. LT. STEPHEN PUTNAM⁴; married Miriam Putnam May 30, 1718; died in 1772; children: 1. Stephen⁵, born March 19, 1718-9; died young; 2. Miriam⁵, born April 9, 1721; married Elisha Flint; 3. Rufus⁵, born Sept. 11, 1723; 4. Timothy⁵, born Jan. 10, 1725-6; married Elizabeth (Nurse), widow of Caleb Putnam in 1755; died in 1756; she married, third, Richard Upham of Reading, and removed to Nova Scotia; had a child; 5. Phineas⁵, born June 10, 1728; lived in Danvers; married Mary Whipple of Andover Aug. 10, 1752; died in 1817; had children; 6. Aaron⁵, born Aug. 30, 1730; farmer and carpenter; lived in Danvers; married Lydia Waters Jan. 4, 1759; died in 1810; she died Jan. 23, 1831; had children; 7. Sarah⁵, born Feb. 21, 1732; married ——— Ingalls; 8.

granted to Mr. Putnam ten acres of Pine meadow if that amount was left ungranted there.

Hannah⁵, born May 13, 1735; unmarried in 1769; 9. Moses⁵, born Sept. 23, 1739; H. C., 1759; school teacher; lived in Boxford from 1766 to 1775, and afterwards in Wilton, N. H.; married Rebecca Kimball of Boxford June 13, 1771; she died Oct. 15, 1797; he died July 25, 1801; had children; 10. Stephen⁵, born Feb. 14, 1741-2; carpenter; lived in Danvers; married, first, Ruth Putnam; second, Susanna Herrick; had children. JONATHAN PUTNAM⁴; married Elizabeth Putnam Feb. 12, 1714-5; died Jan. 17, 1732; she married, second, Benjamin Houlton Nov. 25, 1736; children: 1. Jonathan⁵, born July 13, 1715; 2. David⁵, born Nov. 7, 1717; living in 1732; 3. Elizabeth⁵, born Nov. 28, 1719; died Aug. 8, 1728; 4. Aaron⁵, born Dec. 23, 1721; died Aug. 4, 1728; 5. Nathan⁵, born Dec. 6, 1723; chairmaker; lived in Boston; died in 1748; 6. Mary⁵, born Feb. 19, 1725-6; married William Cleaves of Beverly; 7. Elizabeth⁵, born Nov. 19, 1728; married Joshua Cleaves. DAVID PUTNAM⁴; yeoman; married Anna Houlton; died Feb. 3, 1760; she died Sept. 25, 1763; children: 1. Eunice⁵, baptized March 31, 1750-1; 2. David⁵, born July 15, 1755; lived in Danvers; married Elenor Haskell; died Aug. 12, 1825; had children; 3. Houlton⁵, baptized Aug. 28, 1757; died young. BARTHOLOMEW PUTNAM⁴; mariner; married Mary Putnam July 6, 1710; died at sea May 23, 1723; children: 1. Bartholomew⁵, born March 3, 1711-2; 2. Joseph⁵, born Aug. 1, 1714; chairmaker; lived in Boston; married, first, Sarah Urann Feb. 19, 1735; second, Elizabeth Comeston in 1765; had children; 3. William⁵, born Aug. 1, 1717; chairmaker; lived in Boston; married Ruth Leach Oct. 16, 1740; died in 1749; had children; 4. Mary⁵, born Sept. 19, 1719. JAMES PUTNAM⁴; married Ruth Hathorne; she was living in 1751; he died in 1763; children: 1. Sarah⁵, baptized Dec. 4, 1715; married Jonathan Browne of Newbury; 2. Ebenezer⁵, born in 1717; 3. Archelaus⁵, born in 1721; 4. Abide⁵; died young; 5. Nathan⁵; died without children; 6. James⁵, born in 1726; H. C., 1746; lawyer; lived in Worcester; married, first, Eleanor Sprague Aug. 14, 1750; second, Elizabeth Chandler Sept. 20, 1754; died at St. John, N. B., Oct. 23, 1789; she died May 2, 1798; had children. JETHRO PUTNAM⁴; married Anne Putnam April 14, 1726; died in 1751; she survived him; children: 1. Huldah⁵, baptized April 16, 1727; married Dea. John Flint; 2. Enoch⁵, born Feb. 18, 1731-2; colonel; lived in Danvers; married, first, Hannah Putnam April 12, 1754; she died Dec. 18, 1776; married, second, Elizabeth Stratton of Lincoln March 25, 1778; he died about 1796; had children; 3. Rebecca⁵, baptized Sept. 5, 1736; married Peter Putnam; 4. Nanny⁵, baptized Feb. 18, 1738-9; probably died young. SAMUEL PUTNAM⁴; yeoman; lived in Danvers and Topsfield; married Elizabeth Putnam Dec. 29, 1736; died in Danvers Dec. 14 (15?), 1781; she died May 21, 1784; children: 1. Elizabeth⁵, born in 1738; married Daniel Putnam; 2. Samuel⁵, born June 13, 1741; lived in Danvers; married Lydia Putnam May 5, 1763; died before 1781; she married, secondly, Capt. Timothy Page of New Salem; had children; 3. Martha⁵, born Sept. 9, 1742; married John Endecott; 4. Tarrant⁵, born Feb. 18, 1743-4; H. C., 1763; lived in Danvers; married Sarah Page Nov. 16, 1768; died in 1776; she married, secondly, Capt. Robert Foster; had children; 5. Rufus⁵, born March 31, 1746; died Nov. 21, 1749; 6. Solomon⁵, born Nov. 13, 1748; died Nov. 12, 1749; 7. Rufus⁵, born Oct. 18, 1750; died Sept. 1, 1757; 8. Ruth⁵, born March 28, 1751; 9. Hannah⁵, born March 25, 1753; 10. Mary⁵, born Oct. 24, 1755; 11. Eleazer⁵, born May 4, 1759; 12. Hannah⁵, born Feb. 1, 1762. HENRY PUTNAM⁴; married Hannah —; killed at Lexington April 19, 1775; children: 1. Henry⁵, born in 1737; lived in Danvers; married Sarah Putnam March 8, 1762; had

March 25, 1641, the town granted to Thomas Buxton three acres of ground lying by the rails "on the inside at the end of the

children; 2. Eleazer⁵, born June 5, 1738; yeoman; lived in Medford; married Mary Crosby of Billerica; had children; 3. Elijah⁵, born July 23, 1741; probably H. C., 1766; 4. Roger⁵, born Oct. 10, 1743; yeoman; lived in Medford; had children; 5. John⁵, born Oct. 11, 1745; died in 1763; 6. Billings⁵, born May 11, 1749; lived in Newburyport; married, first, Hannah Wier Allen of Newburyport April 19, 1775; she died Oct. 14, 1798; married, second, Mary Harris Nov. 12, 1810; he died Jan. 28, 1814; had children; 7. Benjamin⁵, born Aug. 26, 1751; physician; married Ann Sophia Malcolm of Washington; died in Savannah, Ga., in 1801; had children. CALEB PUTNAM⁴; farmer; married, first, Silence Dunchell Dec. 7, 1720; second, Elizabeth ———; died in 1757; children: 1. Moses⁵, born Nov. 18, 1721; died Oct 5, 1735; 2. Mehitabel⁵, born Nov. 6, 1723; married Archelaus Putnam; 3. Caleb⁵, born Feb. 10, 1725-6; yeoman; lived in Danvers; married Elizabeth Nurse; died April 17, 1751; she married secondly, Timothy Putnam; and, thirdly, Richard Upham; had children; 4. John⁵, born Dec. 25, 1727; died Aug. 25, 1728; 5. Mary⁵, born Nov. 8, 1729; died March 12, 1734; 6. John⁵, born April 23, 1733; 7. Peter⁵, born July 2, 1735; lived in Danvers; married, first, Lydia Endecott Jan. 27, 1756; second, Rebecca Putnam; died in 1773; had children; 8. Moses⁵, born Aug. 31, 1737; 9. Mary⁵, born July 16, 1739.

DEA. SAMUEL PUTNAM⁵; removed to Lunenburg about 1759; married Sarah Nurse April 4, 1742; died Jan. 2, 1775; she was living in 1777; children: 1. Elizabeth⁶, born Nov. 24, 1744; 2. Thomas⁶, born Nov. 10, 1747; died Dec. 26, 1747; 3. Sarah⁶, born Nov. 10, 1748; died July —, 1787; 4. Anna⁶, born May 8, 1753; 5. Mitchell⁶, born June 13, 1754; 6. Mary⁶, born July 4, 1755; 7. Samuel⁶, born May 4, 1757; 8. Samuel⁶ (twin), born July 30, 1758; 9. Anna⁶ (twin), born July 30, 1758; 10. Elizabeth⁶, born June 1, 1761; 11. Lucy⁶, born Nov. 15, 1764; 12. Clarissa⁶, born Jan. 9, 1768. OLIVER PUTNAM⁵; lived in Danvers; married Hannah Brown Dec. 22, 1743; died about 1790; children: 1. William⁶, born May 27, 1744; lived in Danvers; married Bethiah Putnam Aug. 6, 1766; died in 1800; had children; 2. Mehitabel⁵, baptized Aug. 16, 1747; married Joseph Knight of Middleton in 1794; 3. Oliver⁶, baptized Feb. 4, 1753; 4. Lydia⁶, baptized Dec. 29, 1754; 5. Lucy⁶, baptized Jan. 30, 1763. JOSEPH PUTNAM⁵; lived in Danvers; married Mary Porter Jan. 31, 1745; died in 1781; she died in 1811; children: 1. Lydia⁶, baptized July 27 1746; 2. Sarah⁶, baptized Jan. 29, 1748-9; died young; 3. Joseph⁶, baptized April 21, 1751; lived in Danvers; married Anna Putnam Dec. 2, 1773; she died Sept. 21, 1815; he died in Salem Sept. 25, 1834; had children; 4. Israel⁶, baptized June 24, 1753; 5. Mary⁶, baptized Sept. 14, 1755; 6. Lydia⁶, baptized Feb. 26, 1758; 7. John⁶, baptized Jan. 18, 1761; 8. Betty⁶, baptized Oct. 30, 1763; 9. Mary⁶, baptized Jan. 26, 1767; 10. Porter⁶, baptized March 25, 1770. DEA. ASA PUTNAM⁵; farmer; lived in Danvers; married, first, Sarah Putnam Nov. 30, 1738; she died Sept. 25, 1762; married, second, Mary Walcott Aug. 23, 1764; died in 1795; children: 1. Sarah⁶, born Oct. 22, 1739; married Jeremy Hutchinson; 2. Elisha⁶, born March 16, 1741; lived in Danvers; married Rebecca Brown Oct. 18, 1764; died Feb. 16, 1817; had children; 3. Josiah⁶, baptized March 11, 1743-4; died Oct. 6, 1754; 4. Asa⁶, baptized May 27, 1750; died Oct. 8, 1754; 5. Peter⁶, baptized Feb. 18, 1753; 6. Hannah⁶, born Jan. 9, 1755; 7. Mary⁶, born Aug. 4, 1765; 8. Elizabeth⁶, born Feb. 2, 1767. JOHN PUTNAM⁵; lived in Danvers; married Ruth Swinnerton Feb. 4, 1741; died in 1786; children: 1. Nathan⁶, born Nov. 3, 1742; 2. John⁶, born Dec. 10, 1743; married Abigail Small Oct. 31,

tenn Acre lots in the North Side"; and appointed Roger Mory

1765; had children; 3. Daniel⁶, born April 19, 1748; deacon; representative; lived in Fitchburg; married Rachel Small Dec. 14, 1769; died April 26, 1813; she died Jan. 25, 1819; had children; 4. James⁶, born July 16, 1750; deacon; lived in Danvers; married Eunice Pope Sept. 16, 1773; she died March 6, 1808; he died Aug. 21, 1819; had children; 5. Peter⁶, born Oct. 3, 1751; lived in Danvers; married Eunice Endicott Feb. 27, 1783; died March 29, 1802; she died Dec. 24, 1854, aged ninety-six; had children; 6. Amos⁶, born May 25, 1752. DR. AMOS PUTNAM⁵; physician; lived in Danvers; married, first, Hannah Phillips March 18, 1743; she died Oct. 2, 1758; married, second, Mary Gott of Wenham Aug. 13, 1759; she died Feb. 15, 1803; he died July 26, 1807; children: 1. James Phillips⁶, born April 21, 1745; physician; lived in Danvers; married Mary Herrick of Pomfret, Conn., in 1768; died March 4, 1824; she died Dec. 13, 1840, aged ninety-one; had children; 2. Hannah⁶, born Sept. 18, 1749; married Nathan Putnam; 3. Elizabeth⁶, born March 8, 1753. DEA. EDMUND PUTNAM⁵; farmer and tailor; lived in Topsfield from 1753 to 1758, and returned to Danvers; married Anna Andrews Oct. —, 1745; died in 1810; children: 1. Huldah⁶, born May 18, 1746; married Joseph Woodbury of Beverly May 6, 1766; 2. Andrew⁶, born Jan. 15, 1750-1; married Mary Page of Danvers Sept. 1, 1774; died in New York City in 1785; she married, secondly, Benjamin Kent; had children; 3. Israel³, born Nov. 20, 1754; 4. Sarah⁶, born Dec. 19, 1756; 5. Edmund⁶, born Jan. 15, 1772. JACOB PUTNAM⁶; settled in Wilton, N. H., in 1742; married, first, Susanna Harriman July —, 1735; second, Susanna Styles; she died Jan. 27, 1776; married, third, Patience ———; he died Feb. 10, 1781; children: 1. Sarah⁶, born June 28, 1736; married Jonathan Cram of Wilton; 2. Nathaniel⁶, born April 24, 1738; lived in Wilton; married, first, Mary Eastman of Hampstead, N. H., Dec. 2, 1762; she died Dec. 28, 1777; married, second, Phebe Snow Sept. 17, 1778; he died May 20, 1790; she married, second, Jonas Thayer of Heath Jan. 18, 1795; had children; 3. Philip⁶, born March 4, 1739-40; died young; 4. Stephen⁶, born Sept. 24, 1741; farmer; lived in Temple, N. H., and Rumford, Me.; married Olive Varnum; died in Rumford June 29, 1812; had children; 5. Philip⁶, born March —, 1742-3; 6. Joseph⁶, born Feb. 28, 1744-5; 7. Mehitable⁶, born Dec. 25, 1745; 8. Jacob⁶, born Nov. 15, 1747; 9. Archelaus⁶, born Oct. 15, 1749; 10. Caleb⁶, born March 20, 1751; 11. Elizabeth⁶, born April 15, 1753; 12. Peter⁶, born Jan. 8, 1756. DEA. ARCHELAUS PUTNAM⁵; lived in Danvers; married Mehitable Putnam April 12, 1739; he died in 1756; she married, secondly, Col. Israel Hutchinson; children: 1. ———⁶ (daughter), born Oct. 25, 1739; 2. Archelaus⁶, born Nov. 16, 1740; lived in Danvers; married Abigail Goodrich in 1761; died April 14, 1800; had children; 3. Mehitable⁶, born Nov. 11, 1742; 4. Ephraim⁶, born Sept. 30, 1744; lived in Lyndeborough, N. H.; married Rachel Cram in 1768; died May 11, 1821; she died April 29, 1833; had children; 5. Nathaniel⁶, born May 17, 1746; lived in Danvers; married, first, Mary Ober of Beverly Feb. 11, 1773; she died Jan. 3, 1788; married, second, Ruth Butler Dec. 10, 1788; died Nov. 5, 1800; had children; 6. Mary⁶, born March 13, 1747-8; 7. Jacob⁶, born Nov. 21, 1749; living in 1769; 8. Asahel⁶, born Nov. 21, 1749; 9. Phebe⁶, born Nov. 27, 1751; 10. Caleb⁶, baptized July 22, 1753; 11. Sarah⁶, born Sept. 14, 1755. NATHANIEL PUTNAM⁵; removed to Wilton, N. H., in 1748; married Abigail Wilkins Feb. 6, 1744; died July —, 1763; children: 1. Mary⁶, born July 24, 1744; died unmarried; 2. Sarah⁶, born April 24, 1747; died young; 3. Francis⁶, born Oct. 24, 1748; removed to Cherry Valley, N. Y.; 4. Abigail⁶, born Sept. 24, 1746 (?); married ——— Scripture; 5. Mehitable⁶, born in 1750; 6. Rachel⁶, born April 12, 1751; 7. Miriam⁶, born

and Lawrence Southwick to keep the cows, etc., as last year.

May 16, 1753; 8. Susanna⁶; 9. Sarah⁶, born April 20, 1755; 10. Daniel⁶, born Feb. 27, 1760; 11. Benjamin⁶, born March 9, 1762. DEA. GIDEON PUTNAM⁵; deacon; joiner and storekeeper; lived in Danvers; married Hannah Browne of Beverly June 4, 1752; died May 17, 1811; she died Nov. 6, 1813; children: 1. Hannah⁶, born May 2, 1753; 2. Gideon⁶, born Sept. 19, 1756; 3. Solomon⁶, born May 24, 1759; 4. Anna⁶, born April 12, 1761; 5. Abraham⁶, born Dec. 16, 1762; 6. Jonathan⁶, born Feb. 12, 1765; 7. Elizabeth⁶, born Oct. 27, 1766; 8. Samuel⁶, born May 13, 1768; 9. Elijah⁶, born Feb. 26, 1771; 10. Hannah⁶, born Jan. 29, 1774. SERG. BENJAMIN PUTNAM⁵; lived in Danvers; married Sarah Putnam July 28, 1741; died April 26, 1796; children: 1. Benjamin⁶, born Aug. 29, 1742; died May 26, 1747; 2. Sarah⁶, born May 17, 1745; died Sept. 10, 1766; 3. Bethiah⁶, born Sept. 9, 1748; married William Putnam; 4. Eunice⁶, born July 31, 1751; died Jan. 26, 1755; 5. Ruth⁶, born June 26, 1752; 6. Benjamin⁶, born April 28, 1756. JONATHAN PUTNAM⁵; lived in Danvers; married Sarah Perley of Boxford Nov. 2, 1736; died Dec. —, 1762; children: 1. Jeremiah⁶, born Oct. 31, 1737; captain; served in the French War and Revolution; lived in Danvers; married Rachel Fuller Feb. 3, 1763; died Sept. 16, 1799; had children; 2. Sarah⁶, born March 2, 1738; married Henry Putnam; 3. Jonathan⁶, born Dec. 30, 1740; probably died Nov. —, 1762; 4. Hannah⁶, born Dec. 10, 1742; married ——— Foster; 5. Elizabeth⁶, born Jan. 11, 1744-5; died young; 6. Lydia⁶, born July 15, 1747; married Ebenezer Rea; 7. Nathan⁶, born Sept. 8, 1749; 8. Levi⁶, born Aug. 1, 1751; 9. Perley⁶, born March 17, 1754; 10. Aaron⁶, born Sept. 6, 1756. BARTHOLOMEW PUTNAM⁵; tailor; lived in Salem; married Ruth Gardner Nov. 2, 1734-5; died about 1753; she married, secondly, Capt. Benjamin Goodhue Feb. 24, 1771; children: 1. Mary⁶, baptized Aug. 22, 1736; 2. Bartholomew⁶, born Feb. 2, 1737-8; 3. Ruth⁶, born April 15, 1740; married William Ward; 4. Sarah⁶, born Jan. 17, 1743; married John Elkins; 5. William⁶, born Feb. 25, 1745-6; died young; 6. John⁶, born Dec. 2, 1748; 7. William⁶, born April 7, 1751. DR. EBENEZER PUTNAM⁵; H. C., 1739; physician; married Margaret Scollay Oct. 28, 1764; died Aug. 12, 1788; she died April —, 1808; children: 1. Sarah⁶, born Aug. 30, 1765; married Nathaniel Ropes; 2. Ebenezer⁶, born Sept. 22, 1769. LT. ARCHELAUS PUTNAM⁵; lived in Salem Village; married Ruth Flint Dec. 4, 1740; children: 1. Ebenezer⁶, baptized May 2, 1742; 2. Archelaus⁶, baptized Dec. 9, 1744; physician; lived in Danvers; married Nabby Bishop of Medford Nov. 12, 1786; died in 1810; she died in Medford Dec. 17, 1807; had children; 3. Mary⁶, baptized March 20, 1747-8; 4. James⁶, baptized Aug. 9, 1747; 5. Ebenezer⁶, baptized April 8, 1750; 6. Ruth⁶, baptized Jan. 12, 1751-2; married Francis Perley of Boxford Dec. 13, 1771.

HON. SAMUEL PUTNAM⁶; judge; married Sarah Gool Oct. 28, 1795; children: 1. Samuel⁷, born March 2, 1797; 2. Hannah⁷, born June 21, 1799; 3. Loisa, born Oct. 4, 1801; 4. Mary Ann⁷, born Aug. 20, 1803; 5. Charles Gideon⁷, born Nov. 7, 1805; 6. Elizabeth Cabot⁷, born Nov. 11, 1807; 7. Sarah Gool⁷, born June 1, 1810; 8. John Pickering⁷, baptized Feb. 7, 1813. NATHAN PUTNAM⁶; lived in Danvers; married Hannah Putnam Oct. 23, 1771; she died Nov. 26, 1802; he died April 10, 1823; children: 1. Nathan⁷, born March 18, 1773; 2. Perley⁷, born Sept. 16, 1778; 3. David⁷, born Dec. 23, 1780; 4. Amos⁷, born Feb. 10, 1785; 5. Hannah Phillips⁷, born Nov. 23, 1786; 6. John⁷, born May 20, 1791. CAPT. BARTHOLOMEW PUTNAM⁶; collector of the port; married Sarah Hodges May 13, 1760; died April 17, 1815; she died Oct. 17, 1830; children: 1. Sarah⁷, born Sept. 9, 1762; married, first, Thomas Palfray; second, Stephen Webb Sept. 2, 1784; 2. Elizabeth⁷, born Dec. 7, 1764; married Winthrop

At the Salem court, March 30, 1641, James Smith, jr., again appeared for stealing. Reuben Guppy¹ was first in Salem, in this court, having been complained of for running away to

Gray; 3. Priscilla⁷, born Aug. 21, 1766; married Henry Clark; 4. Ruth⁷, born June 27, 1768; married Michael Webb; 5. Bartholomew⁷, born Sept. 20, 1772; died unmarried; 6. William⁷, born Sept. 10, 1776; died unmarried. EBENEZER PUTNAM⁶; H. C., 1785; merchant; married, first, Sarah Fiske May 22, 1791; she died Jan. 7, 1795; married, second, Elizabeth Fiske Nov. 13, 1796; she died March —, 1808; he died Feb. 25, 1826; children: 1. Ebenezer⁷, born Aug. 27, 1792; died July 5, 1796; 2. Harriet⁷, born Feb. 5, 1794; died Nov. 22, 1794; 3. *Ebenezer*⁷, born Sept. 6, 1797; 4. Ada⁷ (twin), born May 22, 1799; died May 22, 1799; 5. Harriet⁷ (twin), born May 22, 1799; died May 22, 1799; 6. John Fisk⁷, born May 25, 1800; mariner; died July 14, 1881; 7. Charles Fiske⁷, born Oct. 19, 1802; died Dec. 31, 1862; 8. George⁷, born June 10, 1804; druggist; died, unmarried, Dec. 4, 1860; 9. *Edward*⁷, born Jan. 23, 1806; 10. Francis⁷, born Jan. 3, 1808; died March 26, 1878.

COL. PERLEY PUTNAM⁷; city marshall; ship carpenter; married Betsey Preston Nov. 5, 1801; she died Dec. 31, 1850; he died July 4, 1864; children: 1. Eliza⁸, born July 29, 1802; married James B. Goodhue; 2. Mary Ann⁸, born May 17, 1805; died Sept. 2, 1871; 3. Cynthia⁸, born Oct. 5, 1806; died Jan. 14, 1853; 4. Rebecca Cleves⁸, born Aug. 1, 1808; died June 14, 1834; 5. Adaline⁸ (twin), born May 13, 1810; died in infancy; 6. Augusta⁸ (twin), born May 13, 1810; married Charles B. Goodhue; 7. *Perley Zebulon Montgomery Pike*⁸, born Feb. 14, 1813; 8. *John Preston*⁸, born June 19, 1815; 9. Elbridge Gerry⁸, born April 2, 1817; died, unmarried, in Philadelphia, Pa.; 10. Caroline Matilda⁸, born July 2, 1820; married William B. Brown. EBENEZER PUTNAM⁷; H. C., 1815; married Elizabeth Appleton Sept. 25, 1827; died April 3, 1876; she died April 27, 1887; children: 1. Charles Appleton⁸, born June 10, 1828; civil engineer; died May 25, 1899; 2. Elizabeth W. A.⁸, born Jan. 7, 1831; 3. William Henry Appleton⁸, born Feb. 6, 1832; 4. Ellen Maria⁸, born July 28, 1835; married Alfred Stone; 5. *Frederic Ward*⁸, born April 16, 1839. CAPT. EDWARD PUTNAM⁷, master mariner and merchant; married Margaret Sage June 13, 1839; died Nov. 21, 1852; she died in Roxbury Jan. 3, 1892; child: 1. Alice Louise⁸, born April 3, 1840; married William Dorr Boardman of Boston April 3, 1863.

PERLEY ZEBULON MONTGOMERY PIKE PUTNAM⁸; married Mary E. Whitney; lost at sea Sept. 9, 1849; children: 1. Mary Eliza⁹, born May 26, 1841; 2. Perley⁹, born Jan. 20, 1843; 3. Francis Goodhue⁹, born May 12, 1845; 4. Rebecca Augusta⁹, born Sept. 22, 1847; 5. Frances Tuttle⁹, born Sept. 27, 1849. JOHN PRESTON PUTNAM⁸; married Helen M. Alden Jan. 13, 1848; she died June 5, 1852; child: 1. Granville A.⁹, born Aug. 16, 1849; 2. George Granville⁸, born May 19, 1852; journalist; married Hattie W. Kinsman Oct. 9, 1901; she died Aug. 25, 1924. PROF. FREDERIC WARD PUTNAM⁸; ethnologist and naturalist; removed to Cambridge; married, first, Adelaide Martha Edmands of Cambridge June 1, 1864; she died March 10, 1879; married, second, Esther Orne Clarke of Chicago, Ill., April 29, 1882; he died Aug. 14, 1915; children: 1. Eben⁹, born Oct. 10, 1868; genealogist; resides at Wellesley Farms; married Florence Tusker; has children; 2. Alice Edmands⁹; 3. Ethel Appleton Fiske⁹; married John Hart Lewis of Minot, N. D.

¹REUBEN GUPPY¹ was born about 1605; married Eleanor ———; living in 1678; children: 1. Mary², born about 1640; married John Glover; 2. ———² (son); living in 1647; 3. *John*², born Oct. 12, 1648; 4. Reuben², born Jan. 6, 1650-1; living in 1668; 5. Rachel²; married Samuel Phippen.

the eastward from his wife who was about to be confined in childbirth, and for stealing, blasphemy, lying and swearing. The blasphemy probably was based on his statement, as to why he did not attend religious services, that the parings of his nails and a chip were as acceptable to God as the day of thanksgiving. Mathew Jellet (Gillet), a boy apprenticed to George Williams, appeared in court as to the termination of his apprenticeship. In 1646, Gillett was living in Marblehead. The wife of Hugh Browne must have been a virago, as she was in court for breaking her husband's head, threatening that she would kill him, "so that he is weary of his life," throwing stones at him, calling him beast, wishing him hanged and that he might never come home.

In 1641, the town "Granted to Marble head Inhabitants all such lands nere adjoyning to them as have not been formerly granted to other men. And the said lands thus granted to Marble head men are to be disposed of by themselves provided it be done with the consent of one of our seven men appoynted for the afayres of our towne, who shalbe helpfull and ready to joyne with them in the disposing of it, and therefore the town hath chosen Jeffry Massy to be joyned unto them for the present."¹

At the quarter court in Boston June 1, 1641, "Salem is enjoined to amend the short swamp within a month, and the other ways within six months, upon pain of five pounds."

At the general court of elections, June 2, 1641, Richard Bellingham was elected governor by a doubtful election; and he married himself to a young woman, refusing to be published where he dwelt, contrary to the constant practice of the country and an order of the court. The grand jury presented him for breach of the order of court, and in the month of his election the secretary called him to answer. He would not leave the bench to do so, and put the matter off. The "young gentle woman" was "ready to be contracted" to a friend of the governor, who lodged in his house, when on a sudden the governor impressed upon her the strength of his affection, and obtained her for himself.²

JOHN GUPPY²; tailor; married, first, Abigail Kitchen June 3, 1669; probably married, second, Susanna Starkey Jan. 26, 1699-1700; was living in 1715; children: 1. Abigail³, born May 31, 1672; 2. Elizabeth², born Feb. 8, 1674-5; married Nehemiah Wilkins Dec. —, 1708; 3. Rachel³; married Henry Phelps of Reading; 4. Bethiah³; married Thomas Marston April 10, 1723; living in Boston in 1769.

¹Against this record in the margin is written: "Marblehead to lay out their owne lands."

²Winthrop's Journal, Boston, 1852, volume II, page 43.

The quarter courts at Salem were now changed. Henceforth, two were to be held in Salem and two at Ipswich. One was to be held at Ipswich on the last Tuesday of September, and the others as they were then held. The magistrates were ordered to attend each of these courts, and the jurisdiction was general, except in trials for life, limb or banishment, over which the court of assistants had jurisdiction. Also, appeals could be taken to the court of assistants, and in an action of more than one hundred pounds principal concurrent jurisdiction was given to the court of assistants.

June 2, 1641, the general court desired the elders to make a catechism "for the instruction of youth in the grounds of religion."

At the quarterly court at Salem, June 29, 1641, John Kettle, a boy apprenticed to John Lovett of Mackerel Cove, was ordered to be severely whipped "for breaking open John Ward's house and stealing milk (though he had eat milk that same morning) and his wilfull breach of the Sabbath."

Thomas Robbins first appeared in Salem in 1641, at the age of twenty-three;

Thomas Robbins

Walter Price

and Walter Price² had come from England in the spring, having brought with him a servant, named John Watkins, who died within six or seven weeks after landing.

¹Thomas Robbins was born about 1618; carpenter; married, first, Isabel ———, probably a widow, as she had a son in 1657; she died Oct. 9, 1674; married, second, Mary (Gould), widow of Richard Bishop March 11, 1674-5; probably no children; they were both living in 1681. Mr. Robbins had a sister, who married ——— Greene, and had a daughter named Rebecca. The latter married, first, William Pinson Feb. 27, 1675-6; and after his death she married, second, Joseph Bubier of Marblehead Jan. 1, 1696-7.

²CAPT. WALTER PRICE¹, born in 1615; came from Bristol, England, in the spring of 1641; merchant; married Elizabeth ———; she was born about 1616; he mentioned "my brother William Gerrish of Newbury"; died June 5, 1674; she died Nov. 11, 1688; children: 1. Elizabeth², baptized March 13, 1642-3; married, first, John Croade; second, John Ruck; 2. Theodore², baptized Nov. 30, 1643; 3. John², baptized Jan. 18, 1645-6; 4. Hannah², baptized Jan. 30, 1647-8; married Hilliard Verrin; 5. William², baptized March 24, 1650-1; living in 1674; lost at sea before 1700; 6. Samuel², baptized March 12, 1654-5; 7. Walter², baptized March 16, 1656-7; lost at sea before 1700.

THEODORE PRICE²; married Anne Wood Aug. 1, 1667; lost at sea in 1671; she married, secondly, Dudley Bradstreet of Andover Nov. 12, 1673; children: 1. Elizabeth³, born Jan. 19, 1669-70; living in 1674; 2. Anne³,

Sept. 2, 1641, "A day of thanksgiving was kept in all our churches for the good success of the parliament in England."¹

At the general court, Oct. 7, 1641, Mr. Humphrey was given twenty marks at his departure, for his public charges and travel, in his place of sergeant-major; and constables were ordered to do the whipping, unless they could get others to do it.

At the same court, it was ordered that November 4th be "kept a day of public humiliation throughout our jurisdiction, in regard of our wants, and the danger of our native country" (England).

Archibald Thomson of Marblehead, when carrying dung in a canoe to his ground upon the Lord's day, Nov. 7 (?), 1641, in fair weather and still water, the canoe sunk under him in the harbor near the shore and he was never seen afterward.¹

The summer of this year was cold and wet, and much of the corn never ripened.² The winter was very cold, and when the ice and snow melted in the spring most of the bridges and many mills were destroyed or badly injured. "One Warde of Salem, an honest young man, who going to show a traveller the safest passage over the river, as he thought, by the salthouse, fell in, and though he had a pitch fork in his hand, yet was presently carried under the ice by the tide. The traveller fell in with one leg while he went to help the other, but God preserved him. He had about him all the letters from England which were brought in a ship newly arrived at the Isle of Shoals, which sure were the occasion of God's preserving him, more than any goodness of the man." Ward was drowned.

Dec. 3, 1641, the town granted to William Dodge and John Ward twenty acres of land each; to Phineas Fiske twenty acres more at the village near the pond; and to Richard Dodge and Hilliard Verrin forty acres each.

born July 23, 1671; living in 1674. CAPT. JOHN PRICE²; married Sarah Wolcott of Connecticut Jan. —, 1673-4; died Aug. 13, 1691; she died March 25, 1698; children: 1. *Walter*³, born May 17, 1676; 2. John³, baptized Aug. 18, 1678; died in 1679; 3. Hannah³, baptized July 31, 1681; died in 1684 (?), aged three years; 4. Sarah³; died between 1674 and 1691, aged one year.

MAJ. WALTER PRICE³; merchant; married, first, Freestone Turner March 30, 1699; she died June 14, 1714; married, second, Elizabeth Hirst Feb. 24, 1715-6; he died about March —, 1730-1; she died ("old madam") March 6, 175-; children: 1. John⁴, born March 29, 1700; living in 1731; 2. William⁴, born March 22, 1701-2; died Aug. 31, 1702; 3. Sarah⁴, born Feb. 4, 1709-10; married Joseph Bartlett; 4. Elizabeth⁴, born May 9, 1714; married Mitchell Sewall.

¹Winthrop's Journal, volume II, page 42.

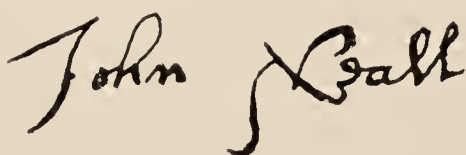
²Winthrop's Journal, volume II, page 43.

³Winthrop's Journal, volume II, page 44.

Deputy-governor Endecott, Mr. Downing and Mr. Hawthorne were authorized, Dec. 10, 1641, to secure nineteen copies of the laws transcribed, and none but the copies subscribed by them should be considered authentic.¹

On the same day, the general court appointed a clerk of the writs in each town, authorized to grant summons and attachments and replevin; and Ralph Fogg² was appointed for Salem. June 14, 1642, clerks of the writs were ordered to record births and deaths of persons in their respective towns; not only current births and deaths, but they were ordered to "do their utmost endeavor to find out who hath been born and who have died since the first founding of their towns, and to record the same," and annually to give a transcript thereof to the recorder of the local court, and all persons having authority to perform the marriage ceremony were ordered to make return to the recorder of the court nearest their residence, and the recorder must record them. All such records were ordered to be made "faithfully and carefully." The next clerk of the writs appointed in Salem were Jeffrey Massey, May 17, 1647; and Hillard Verin was the next appointed, Jan. 16, 1656-7. No others appear on the records in Salem.

In the quarterly court held at Salem Jan. 25, 1641-2, there were sixty-eight civil cases. This shows the litigious disposition of the early settlers. "George the Indean broth^r of Georg Sagamore sent to Boston goale." Samuel Gatchell and William Luckin lived in Marblehead at this time. William Walcott was ordered to be whipped for idleness. John Neale³ of Marble-



head, servant to Mr. William Cok-raine, was ordered to be whipped for burglary. John Goit was admonished for saying "its better to go to hell gate

¹Winthrop's Journal, volume II, page 60.

²Ralph Fogg was born about 1600.

³JOHN NEALE¹; yeoman; made freeman May 18, 1642; married Mary Lawes; died May 12, 1672; she married, secondly, Andrew Mansfield of Salem, and was that latter's wife in 1680; children: 1. John², baptized May 22, 1642; died young; 2. John², baptized March 24, 1643-4; died in infancy; 3. *Jeremiah*², baptized Jan. 18, 1645-6; 4. *John*², baptized Jan. 24, 1647-8; 5. Lydia², baptized April 7, 1650; married Jonathan Hart; 6. Jonathan², baptized Aug. 15, 1652; died young; 7. Mary², born March 14, 1654-5; died July 6, 1658; 8. Jonathan², baptized Sept. 6, 1657; of Salem, cordwainer, 1680-1707; 9. Sarah²; died July 22, 1658; 10. *Joseph*², born March 14, 1659-60.

LT. JEREMIAH NEALE²; housewright; married, first, Sarah Hart June 15, 1668; she died Sept. 28, 1672; married, second, Mary Buffum Sept. 22, 1673; she was his wife in 1682; married, third, Dorothy Lord Oct. 31, 1707; he died about July, 1722; she died between 1733 and 1735; children: 1. John³, born April 16, 1669; lived in Pennsylvania in 1733; living in 1735;

for mercy then to Mr. Endecott for iustice." Captain Trask was sentenced for neglecting training three times.

2. Mary³, born May 11, 1670; unmarried in 1735; 3. Sarah³, born Nov. 1, 1671; married ——— Wilkins; and lived in Boston, his widow, in 1728; 4. *Jeremiah*³, born Sept. 25, 1674; 5. Abigail³; unmarried in 1735; of Boston in 1720 and 1724; 6. Lydia³, died before 1722; 7. *Robert*³; 8. Deborah³, born before 1681; lived in Boston in 1720; unmarried in 1735; married James Hughes; 9. Hannah³, born before 1690; married Charles Hooper; 10. Mercy³; of Boston, unmarried, in 1720 and 1724; died before 1733. JOHN NEALE²; married Anne Nichols before 1673; died Nov. 11, 1679; she married, secondly, William Starling (Sterling) of Haverhill, Mass.; they were afterwards of Lyme, Conn.; children: 1. *John*³, born April 15, 1673; 2. Thomas³, born Feb. 14, 1675-6; fisherman; died about June, 1705; 3. Joseph³, born Feb. 14, 1675-6; fisherman; died about June, 1705; 3. Joseph³, born Dec. 4, 1677; husbandman and mariner; lived in Salem in 1702 and in Scituate in 1705 and 1717; married Hannah Neale; 4. Rebecca³, born Feb. 23, 1679. JOSEPH NEALE²; joiner; removed to Newcastle, Pa., after 1710; married Judith Croade; she died before November, 1689; he died before Jan. 22, 1717-8; children: 1. Judith³, born in 1682; died Feb. 25, 1697-8; 2. Lydia³; married Samuel Ropes; 3. *Joseph*³, born in 1689-90; 4. Hannah³; married Joseph Neale; 5. Mary³; married Anthony Green of Newcastle on the Delaware, Pa.

JEREMIAH NEALE³; housewright; married Elizabeth Small March 29, 1705; died in 1748; children: 1. *Jeremiah*⁴ (twin), baptized June 4, 1710; living in 1748; 2. Lydia⁴ (twin), baptized June 4, 1710; 3. Benjamin⁴, baptized in 1710; 4. John⁴, baptized June 10, 1711; of Burlington, N. J., carpenter, in 1748; 5. Hannah⁴, baptized May 25, 1712; 6. *Jonathan*⁴, baptized June 6, 1714. ROBERT NEALE³; fisherman; married Hannah Elson Nov. 6, 1712; died in 1723; she survived him; children: 1. Mary⁴, baptized June 24, 1716; a cripple; spinster, of Salem, in 1746; 2. Hannah⁴, baptized Feb. 10, 1716-7; married Samuel Robinson; 3. *Robert*⁴, born Aug. 11, 1718; 4. *Benjamin*⁴, born April 21, 1721. JOHN NEALE³; mariner; married Martha Skerry; died before February, 1699-1700; child: 1. Abigail⁴, baptized April 19, 1702; probably married Henry Elkins. JOSEPH NEALE³; cordwainer; married Eunice Pickering Dec. 10, 1724; died in 1732; she married, secondly, William Pickering April 6, 1738; children: 1. Joseph⁴, baptized Nov. 21, 1725; died young; 2. Eunice⁴, baptized May 28, 1727; married Benjamin Bacon; 3. Mary⁴, baptized April 5, 1730; married, first, Capt. John Foster of Manchester July 9, 1752; second, Rev. John Cleveland of Chebacco Parish, Ipswich.

JONATHAN NEALE⁴; husbandman and cordwainer; married widow Mary Marston July 19, 1725; died in July, 1732; she was his widow in 1752; children: 1. *Jonathan*⁵, born about 1726; 2. *David*⁵, born about 1730. ROBERT NEALE⁴; mariner; married Katherine Daland Feb. 5, 1738-9; died in 1742; she married, secondly, David Boyce; children: 1. Katherine⁵ (twin), baptized March 15, 1740-1; 2. Robert⁵ (twin), baptized March 15, 1740-1; married Hannah Beckford in 1763; probably died in 1766; had a son Robert; 3. Hannah⁵, baptized Aug. 29, 1742. BENJAMIN NEALE⁴; cordwainer and mariner; married Lydia Begoe Oct. 4, 1742; died at sea about 1751; she married, secondly, Samuel Luscomb Aug. 20, 1752; children: 1. Lydia⁵, born July 18, 1745; married Gedney King; 2. Robert⁵, born before 1748; married Betsey Lander Aug. 24, 1788; probably drowned at Alexandria in February, 1789.

JONATHAN NEALE⁵; husbandman and carter; married Annis (Anstiss) White; she was his wife in 1774; he fell from a wharf at night, in November, 1790, and was found the next morning dead; children: 1.

At the court, a week later, William Keine of Marblehead was fined three pounds for striking John Bartoll with a stone in his

Hannah⁶, born in 1750; married Joseph Smith May 20, 1776; 2. Lydia⁶, born in 1752; published to Isaac Osborn July 13, 1771; 3. Mary⁶, born in 1754; died, unmarried, May 7, 1827; 4. Jonathan⁶, born in 1756 (baptized Feb. 22, 1756); 5. Sarah⁶, baptized Dec. 4, 1757; married Joseph Gardner; 6. Elizabeth⁶, born in 1758; died, unmarried, in 1770; 7. David⁶, born in 1762 (baptized Aug. 1, 1762); 8. Abial⁶, baptized Oct. 28, 1764; married, first, Frederick Brown Oct. 28, 1794; second, John Fullington, Dec. 5, 1805; 9. Benjamin⁶, baptized April 12, 1767; 10. Joseph⁶, baptized Nov. 11, 1770; died of lockjaw in May, 1789. CAPT. DAVID NEALE⁵; master-mariner; married Hannah Webb June 8, 1752; was knocked overboard by the main boom of his vessel and drowned in 1761; she died, his widow, Feb. 14, 1817, aged eighty-nine; children: 1. David⁶, born Oct. 1, 1752; died Aug. 1, 1754; 2. David⁶, baptized Oct. 6, 1754; died young; 3. David⁶, baptized Nov. 14, 1756; 4. Jonathan⁶, born Jan. 15, 1759-60; 5. Hannah⁶, baptized Feb. 8, 1761; married John Preston.

JONATHAN NEALE⁶; yeoman; married Mary Dowst Jan. 23, 1785; died July —, 1811; she died April 30, 1815; children: 1. Jonathan⁷, born July 22, 1789; 2. Joseph⁷, born Dec. 30, 1815. DAVID NEALE⁶; fisherman; married Mary (Elliott), widow of his brother Benjamin June 5, 1806; died Nov. 28, 1823; she died ——— 13, 1861 children: 1. Benjamin Baldwin⁷, born April 7, 1807; 2. David⁷, born Dec. 7, 1808; lived in Concord, N. H.; married Mary Southwick May 5, 1836; died Sept. 7, 1844; had children; 3. Elizabeth⁷, born Dec. 1, 1810; married Azor Hodgkins May 29, 1833; 4. Margaret J.⁷, born Feb. 2, 1814; married John Lambert July —, 1843. BENJAMIN NEALE⁶; mariner; married Mary Elliott April 25, 1793; died, "late from Calcutta," Aug. 17, 1801; she married, secondly, his brother David; children: 1. Elizabeth⁷, born May 4, 1794; died Nov. 4, 1807; 2. Sarah⁷, born May 8, 1796; married John Marks Nov. 3, 1816; 3. Mary⁷, born July 11, 1798; married John G. Waters; 4. Benjamin⁷, born June 12, 1800; died Dec. 21, 1803. DAVID NEALE⁶; mariner; married Martha Henfield; died about November, 1785; she married, secondly, John Dowst Nov. 26, 1789; child: 1. Hannah⁷, born in 1782; married, first, Asa Kilham Feb. 13, 1803; second, Stephen Richardson Nov. 28, 1813. CAPT. JONATHAN NEALE⁶; commanded a privateer in the Revolution; master-mariner; merchant; married, first, Mehitable Eden Jan. 11, 1784; she died Sept. 29, 1786; married, second, Hannah Ward May 29, 1791; she died Jan. 26, 1814; he died Oct. 9, 1837; children: 1. Mehitable⁷, born Nov. —, 1784; married Amos Choate May 26, 1833; 2. David Augustus⁷, born June 7, 1793; 3. Nathan Ward⁷, born Aug. 27, 1797; H. C., 1816; merchant; president of Asiatic Bank; died, unmarried, Nov. 17, 1850; 4. William Henry⁷, born March 8, 1799; master-mariner; merchant; president of East India Marine Society; married Sarah Ropes (published Nov. 7, 1829); he died Jan. 17, 1851; she died June 14, 1884; no children; 5. Theodore Frederick⁷, born Nov. 3, 1802; died of yellow fever in Havana June 14, 1821.

JONATHAN NEALE⁷; mason; married Eunice Buffum Nov. —, 1811; she died Dec. 24, 1842; he died Sept. 4, 1870; children: 1. Mary⁸, born April 12, 1812; married, first, James Ricker (Ritter) March 6, 1836; second, Josiah Moulton; 2. Eunice⁸, born April 22, 1815; married Asa L. Breed of Lynn Nov. 21, 1837; 3. Jonathan⁸, born May 17, 1817; mason; living in 1869; 4. ———⁸; died in infancy Oct. —, 1819; 5. Sarah Ann⁸, born Feb. 5, 1821; married Andrew Ober of Beverly; 6. Jane⁸, born April 23, 1823; unmarried, of Salem, in 1869; 7. Esther Ann⁸, born April 17, 1825; married Alonzo Lewis in 1847; 8. Robert Buffum⁸, born Oct. 29, 1828; of California in 1869; 9. William⁸, born April 3, 1830; died at sea March —, 1850;

hand and swearing by the blood of God. Marblehead was fined ten shillings for want of a pair of stocks. "William Cantlebury called in question concerning the death of William Stark, servant to Mr. Tho: Read who is gone to England and now was committed unto Mr. William Clark by Mr. Read's order to be with the said Cantlebury. And being now dead." James Hayward was then of Salem.

April 14, 1642, "A general fast was kept for our native country and Ireland and our own occasions."¹

The spring began very early, and the weather was mild, but May and June were wet and cold.¹

May 2, 1642, the town granted to Henry Reignolds² a ten-acre lot near William King's.

Henry Reignolds

10. Henry⁸, born Sept. 26, 1832; of Salem, coach driver, 1855-1864; of Boston in 1869; 11. Louisa⁸, born March 3, 1835; married William C. Cummings in 1856. JOSEPH NEALE⁷; mason; married Hannah C. Hutchinson of Middleton Dec. 31, 1817; died Sept. 4, 1866; she died April 9, 1880; children: 1. Hannah⁸, born Sept. 7, 1818; of Salem, unmarried, in 1856; 2. Elizabeth⁸, born July 21, 1820; of Salem, unmarried, in 1880; 3. Sarah H.⁸, born Sept. 28, 1822; died Dec. 3, 1823; 4. Caroline A.⁸, born May 10, 1824; died, unmarried, Jan. 3, 1881; 5. Joseph W.⁸, born Feb. 7, 1827; lived in Lodi, Cal., from 1866 to 1882; 6. Rufus B.⁸, born March 9, 1829; lived in Lodi, 1856-1882; 7. Charles H.⁸, born Nov. 2, 1831; lived in Lodi, 1868-1882; 8. George L.⁸, born Jan. 8, 1834; carpenter; of Salem in 1866; 9. Mary Ellen⁸, born Nov. 12, 1836; of Salem, unmarried, in 1866; 10. James Monroe⁸, born Oct. 19, 1839; of Salem, mason, in 1864. CAPT. BENJAMIN BALDWIN NEALE⁷; master-mariner; married Martha Southwick of Danvers Nov. 9, 1842; living in Salem in 1851; she died April 13, 1873; child: 1. William Silver⁸, born Aug. 11, 1843. CAPT. DAVID AUGUSTUS NEALE⁷; H. C., 1848; prisoner in Dartmoor prison; master-mariner; merchant; president of Eastern Railroad; married Harriet Charlotte Price of Boston July 26, 1818; died Aug. 5, 1861; she survived him, and was living in 1864; children: 1. Theodore Frederick⁸, born Dec. 18, 1822; died in infancy; 2. Theodore Augustus⁸, born March 23, 1827; 3. Harriet Charlotte⁸, born Feb. 11, 1831; died March 17, 1837; 4. Margaret Maria⁸, born June 15, 1832; living at home in 1864; 5. Harriet Charlotte⁸, born July 8, 1837; married Hon. Robert Samuel Rantoul.

WILLIAM SILVER NEALE⁸; in United States navy in 1864; formerly dealer in gents furnishings, and later vault officer in Merchants National Bank; married Rebecca Chapman Millett Dec. 12, 1871; she died Feb. 24, 1917; he died Dec. 24, 1924; children: 1. Alice H.⁹, born Nov. 18, 1872; died April 24, 1873; 2. George Harding⁹, born Nov. 29, 1873; died Nov. 8, 1874; 3. William Francis⁹, born Feb. 11, 1875; lives in Rochester, N. Y., unmarried. THEODORE AUGUSTUS NEALE⁸; merchant; married Elizabeth Boardman Whittridge May 31, 1849; died Oct. 26, 1881; children: 1. Elizabeth Matingini Whittridge⁹, born March 10, 1850; married Frederick Rand Nourse; 2. Caroline Frothingham⁹, born April 20, 1855; of Beverly, unmarried, in 1881.

¹Winthrop's Journal, volume II, page 62.

²Henry Renolds, tailor, had a wife Sarah in 1642 and 1664. He lived in Salem as late as 1689.

Richard Saltonstall sent a certain book to William Hathorne to be presented to the general court May 18, 1642, because of certain passages in it. The consideration of it was continued from court to court, and finally, Rev. Mr. Norris, "not suspecting the author, handled him somewhat sharply according to the merit of the matter."¹

A ship was built at Salem this summer.²

For the making of gunpowder, the general court ordered, June 14, 1642, that each town should erect a building about twenty or thirty feet long and twenty feet wide, and the militia were to place therein once a year a sufficient quantity of earth, and twice a year or oftener the earth was to be by them stirred and removed from one end of the building to the other, and from the bottom to the top, mixing human and beasts' urine with goat, hen, hog or horse dung that must be brought to it "by the carefull & conscionable members of the comon wealth." More earth was ordered to be added until it was within two feet of the wall plate of the building, and the whole kept dry. Sept. 8, 1642, the general court repealed this order about salt peter, and instead requested the people to make it in poultry houses. Mr. Garford was appointed to look after this matter in Salem.

June 16, 1642, every town was ordered to choose one or two freemen, who should meet at Salem the next March to "consider & agree upon a certain number of the most able & fit men in this iurisdiction to bee put to nomination for magistrates at the next Co't of Elections."

A colonial rate of eight hundred pounds was made by Mr. Batter, John Saunders and eleven others, June 14, 1642. Salem's portion was seventy-five pounds; and was second in amount, Boston paying the highest sum.³

July 12, 1642, the Salem court ordered that Elizabeth Johnson, servant of Joseph Yonge, be severely whipped and fined five pounds for stubbornness to her mistress, answering rudely, and for stopping her ears with her hands when "the word of God" was read.

July 21, 1642, "A general fast was kept by order of the general court and advice of some of the elders. The occasion was principally for the danger we conceived our native country was in, and the foul sins which had broken out among ourselves, &c."⁴

At a town meeting, Aug. 10, 1642, the town granted to Goodman Devenishe "an enlargement to be set out to his land

¹Winthrop's Journal, volume II, page 64.

²Winthrop's Journal, volume II, page 65.

³Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume II, page 13.

⁴Winthrop's Journal, volume II, page 72.

near the mill"; and the seven men granted to Henry Bartholmew one hundred acres of upland and ten acres of meadow a little beyond Mr. Bishop's land; Samuel Edson twenty-five acres of land adjoining Humphrey Woodbury's farm in Mackerel Cove and two acres of meadow "where he can find that thereabout"; and John Scudder¹ half an acre to build a house on and for other uses near his ten-acre lot in King's Cove.

Alexander Field, a cordwainer, appeared in Salem as early as 1642, and lived here as late as 1652.

FEDERATION OF THE COLONIES.

Intimations were received by the people in the colony that the Narragansett Indians had caused many sachems to unite with them in preparing "a general and bloody design of the Indians against all the English in the country," and that the Indians had secured guns and ammunition from "some of the English in the eastern parts." Such Indians as had agreed to be friendly with the settlers, and apparently had now broken their pact, were disarmed; but as nothing tangible could be learned of an uprising, and the Indians appeared faithful, their guns were restored to them. Nevertheless, new evidence sustaining the fears of the settlers was frequently secured, and it was prudent to be watchful. Sept. 8, 1642, the general court, "considering the continuall dangers the inhabitants . . . are in, by plots & conspiracies of the heathen," ordered that upon an alarm in any place the commander of the militia there might call his company together and "set them in offensive & defensive wayes, as there is occasion, against the enemy, according to their best wisdom." The alarm might be given by three discharges of a musket, or a continuous beat of the drum in the night, or firing a beacon, or by a discharge of a cannon in the night; and every trained soldier must respond immediately. Each town was also ordered to prepare a sufficient place of retreat for the women and children. If a settlement was attacked, its defence must be assisted in by the soldiers of an adjacent town, when they learned of it. Watches were to continue from sunset to sunrise, and be set and released by beat of the drum. Four barrels of powder

¹THOMAS SCUDDER¹ married Elizabeth ———; died in June, 1658; she died in 1666; children: 1. John²; 2. Thomas²; mariner in 1688; 3. Henry²; living in 1657; 4. Elizabeth²; married Henry Bartholomew; 5. William².

JOHN SCUDDER²; currier; lived on Royall's Neck, in Salem; sold his house and land there in 1665, and removed to Southold L. I., that year; married Mary King; children: 1. Mary³, baptized June 11, 1648; 2. Hannah³, baptized Aug. 19, 1649; 3. ———³ (daughter), baptized March 18, 1649-50. WILLIAM SCUDDER²; married Penelope ———; was deceased in 1657; child. 1. Thomas³; living in 1657.

were sent to Salem. Nineteen days later, the general court ordered that a discharge of a musket shall be a signal for each sentinel to immediately go to each house in his section and awaken the people by crying "Arm! Arm!" The people must then be obedient to the order of the chief military officer in the town.

The colonies of New Haven and Connecticut were the most menaced apparently, and with Plymouth they sought to form a bond of union for mutual protection. At the sitting of the court above mentioned a committee was appointed to meet the commissioners from those three colonies "about the union, and concerning avoiding any danger of the Indians, and to have power to do herein what they shall find needful for common safety and peace." Apparently no meeting was held that winter and May 10th following the general court appointed Governor Winthrop, Thomas Dudley, Simon Bradstreet, William Tynge, Edward Gibbon and William Hathorne "to treat with our friends of Connecticut New Haven and Plymouth about a confederacy between us." A federation was formed, and called "The United Colonies of New-England." The articles of federation are dated May 19, 1643, and a complete copy is given in Bradford's History of Plymouth, pages 496-504. By these articles they "enter into a firm and perpetual league of friendship and amity, for offence and defence, mutual advice and succor upon all just occasions, both for preserving and propagating the truth of the Gospell, and for their own mutual safty and welfare." In everything concerning the common interest of the four colonies the federation had authority, but the internal affairs of each colony were to be wholly within the jurisdiction of the respective colonies.¹ Their regular meetings were held annually on the first Thursday of September. The governing body consisted of two commissioners from each of the four colonies. May 29, 1644, the general court chose Simon Bradstreet and William Hathorne of Salem as the first commissioners, for one year. Winthrop called William Hathorne the principal man in disputes arising among the commissioners of the United Colonies, though he was "a young man." Several statements made by Winthrop indicate some jealousy of Hathorne, and he wrote that Hathorne was young

¹It is said that the articles of federation of the United States were fashioned upon these articles of federation of 1643. Like the senate of the United States, each of the colonies had two representatives; and these eight commissioners were given power to elect a president from among themselves. The right to declare war was in the federation, and the articles provided for extradition of criminals and for admission of new colonies. It is a document far ahead of its time, and a comparison of it with the Federal constitution shows the genius of its authorship.

and both he and Bradstreet lived too far easterly to hold such positions.¹

The first annual meeting of the commissioners was held the following September at Hartford. The colonial treasury paid their expenses and furnished two men and four horses for their use during these engagements. Occasionally, there was friction between colony and federation; but it continued coexistent with the colonies, and resulted in good.

Sept. 19, 1642, in the midst of these deliberations relative to mutual defence of the colonies from attacks of the Indians, a messenger reached Salem with notice that Indians were about to attack the town. The alarm proved to be false, to the great relief of the people. Three days later, a fast was held on account of danger from the Indians.²

¹Winthrop's Journal, volume II, pages 171 and 174.

²Winthrop's Journal, volume II, pages 84 and 85.

CHAPTER VIII.

THE BRIDGE.



THE first bridge constructed in Salem, and early known as the town bridge, was that over a branch of North River, at Blubber Hollow, so called. Before this time the only way leading out of Salem by land was that in the rear of the high school, crossing Highland Avenue, down Pope's lane, following the railroad, between the river and the ridge to Putnam Street and thence by way of Putnam Street to Boston Street. The original way was not only circuitous, but ledgy and hilly. The laying out of a highway, now Boston Street, from Essex Street, at what was afterwards known as Buffum's corner, to the ancient road at the junction of Boston and Putnam streets, with a bridge over the river would afford a direct way by land out of town; and this was decided upon. A "timber bridge" was accordingly made in 1640, by John Pickering. October 11th of that year, the town ordered "that Philip Verin or any other shall make the fence that leadeth to the bridge of one side from the bridge to the highway that is by Richard Norman's house and that the town will pay him."

No vote of the town was formally taken as to the location of Boston Street between the ancient roads until Nov. 29, 1642, when the town "ordered that the high way by the bridge shalbe laid out through the lotts of goodman Moulton &c not round about."

March 25, 1644, the town agreed with John Pickering to keep the bridge in repair for sixteen years, except the finding of the plank for the new planking of it should be at the expense of the town, but he agreed to mend the planking and set in a plank or two where and when it became necessary at his own charge. Through defect in construction, the bridge soon became dangerous to travelers, and there arose a dispute between Pickering and the town as to which should repair it. Finally, Nov. 10, 1645, the town ordered that if Pickering did not repair the

bridge within ten days, it would take the matter to the local court. The repairs were not made within the time specified and complaint was made to court, which did not sit, however, until the next February. The bridge must be made safe, however, before the sitting of the court, and apparently Pickering agreed to repair it if the town furnished the plank. Samuel Eborne and Henry Skerry went into the common land of the town and sawed two hundred and forty feet of two-inch plank for the bridge, and carried them to "the water side." This recalls the method of producing plank at the time, before saw mills existed here. The log to be sawn was rolled over a hole in the ground, called a saw pit, deep enough for a man to stand under the log. One man stood upon or over the log and held one end of a large splitting saw and the man in the pit held the other end of the saw. In this slow and arduous manner plank and boards were sawn from the log similarly to the old upright saw mills, but worked by manual power. These sawyers were paid by the town for this service twenty-five shillings Jan. 23, 1645-6. When Pickering's presentment was called in court, he was discharged, as the bridge had been repaired.

The town concluded that the bridge required constant oversight and expense to keep it in repair, and that its construction was defective. It was agreed, Feb. 16, 1645-6, "That the timber bridge at the townsend shall be pulled down, or so much of it as shall be needful when the causeway is begun to be made which is upon the last second day of the third month and that the timber of the said bridge shall serve to pile and plank as far as it will go the causeway next to the sea. And it is further agreed that for the better expediting of the work, that all the hands of the town that are fit to work in that kind shall be employed as they are called forth by the overseers. And therefore power is hereby given to such as are hereafter named, to appoint the said persons that are to work and to proportion their wages, according to their work. And it is further agreed that the charges of all shall be borne by a rate of one hundred pounds which is to be rated equally according to men's estates by the raters chosen for rating of the country rates. The men chosen overseers are Emanuel Downing, Esq., Capt. William Hawthorne, Captain Trask, Mr. Sharp, Mr. Henry Bartholomew, Wm. Lord, Mr. Garford, who also have power to distrain by the constables three shillings upon the head of every one that shall fail to come forth at his work after due warning and likewise three shillings for every beast. And the said distresses shall be gathered within ten days after the several neglects."

The town decided that Mr. Pickering had built the old bridge defectively, and that therefore he should pay toward the con-

struction of the new bridge eight pounds and four shillings, for which he gave the town a bull and a cow, which the town could sell unless he paid in some other way.

Oct. 26, 1646, the town agreed "that Thomas Wheeler¹ shall work at the bridge work which he is contented to do, and he is to have two shillings and sixpence a day till the bridge work be

Thomas Wheeler

ended if he work so long.

But the said Thomas Wheeler doth bind himself to work there ten days together if weather will permit and to begin upon the sixth day of this week: and is to be paid in corn or cattle at the merchants' price."

Dec. 10, 1661, the Salem court "ordered that the bridge or causeway at the western end of the town of Salem be sufficiently repaired and a stone wall built against the side at the county's charge.

The bridge and causeway were improved in 1663 by the town, under a vote of Jan. 13, 1662-3, by which the town agreed with William Flint and John Neale to repair the bridge by making "a sufficient wall of stone on the east side of three feet thick at the bottom and twenty inches at the top and the foundation of it to be laid one foot within the ground and in height it is to be as high as the highest bank of the bridge near the sluice and according to the height of the wall they are to fill up the whole bridge level with sand and on the top of it to lay good hard gravel three or four inches thick all over the whole bridge and to cover the wall with good turf of English grass from end to end for the which work being sufficiently performed they are to be paid twenty pounds." The county treasurer paid this twenty pounds to the town. The bridge was not entirely finished in 1666.

At a town meeting, Nov. 29, 1642, John Pickering was granted four poles of ground near his house; Goodman Lawes sixteen poles of marsh by the water next to his ten-acre lot; Lieutenant Davenport and Thomas Lathrop eighty acres of land which was formerly given to Richard Waterman, who deserted it; Alexander Field twenty-five acres of land which was formerly granted to Thomas Lathrop, who resigned it to said Alexander Field in lieu of the former grant of forty acres. The town sold to Henry Skery an acre of land that was Nicholas Draper's for

¹Thomas Wheeler was born about 1605; had wife Mary in 1663; removed to Lynn in 1649; was living there, a miller, April 1, 1653, when he bought the windmill then standing in Salem; and was apparently of Stonington in 1680. Perhaps the two Wheeler children, who were baptized in Salem in 1648, Isaac and Ziporah, were his.

twelve shillings. It was ordered that a highway be laid out through Daniel Ray's lot and he was given the old way before, over in the ten-acre lots in the North field.

John Bulfinch¹
lived in Salem in 1640
and as late as 1643.
He returned to Eng-

John Bulfinch

land, and died at Chatham, in Kent, in 1679. Richard Cooke lived in Marblehead in 1640, at the age of thirty, and as late as 1645². John Hart³ came to Marblehead as early as 1637, and died there in 1655. Robert Elwell⁴ came to Dorchester in 1634 and to Marblehead in 1640. He removed to Gloucester in 1642.

¹John Bulfinch's daughter, widow Katherine Bell, was of Charlestown in 1680. In 1642, there was a Goody Bulfinch here.

²Richard Cooke had a wife in 1644, and lived in Boston in 1650.

³JOHN HART¹ had wives Mary and Florence, and the latter survived him; children: 1. John²; lost at sea in 1673; 2. *Jonathan*²; 3. Elizabeth²; married Edward Flint; 4. Sarah²; married Jeremiah Neale; 5. Deborah²; married Joseph Morgan of Beverly; 6. Florence².

JONATHAN HART²; lived in Salem; married Lydia Neale Nov. —, 1671; they were living in 1682; children: 1. Lydia³, born Jan. 5, 1671-2; married Nehemiah Stone; 2. *Jonathan*³, born April 14, 1673; 3. John³, born June 6, 1675; 4. Sarah³; married Joseph Balch of Beverly.

JONATHAN HART³; seaman; married Sarah Maule Jan. 24, 1705; died in 1720; she died in 1732; children: 1. Lydia⁴, born Sept. 22, 1706; married William Browne Dec. 5, 1727; 2. Peleth⁴, born Sept. 10, 1708; 3. Jonathan⁴, born April 18, 1711; mariner; lived in Beverly; married, first, Rebecca Massy Dec. 20, 1733; second, widow Abigail (Anne) (Baker) Ober of Beverly Nov. 12, 1741; was living in 1744; she died in Beverly Dec. 6, 1768; 4. Sarah⁴, born Aug. 31, 1713; married John Webber of Marblehead Jan. 8, 1733; 5. Margaret⁴, born Oct. 13, 1717; married Clement English.

See volume I, page 449.

⁴ROBERT ELWELL¹; married, first, Joan ———; she died March 31, 1675; married, second, Alice, widow of Robert Leach of Manchester May 29, 1676; he died May 18, 1683; had children, baptized in Salem, as follows: 1. Samuel², born in Dorchester about 1636; married Esther Dutch; lived in Gloucester; died about 1697; she died Sept. 6, 1721; had children; 2. ———², baptized Aug. 28, 1639; died at age of six months; 3. ———², baptized Aug. 28, 1639; 4. *John*², baptized Jan. 23, 1639-40; 5. Isaac², baptized Feb. 27, 1641-2; married Mehitable ———; lived in Gloucester; had children; 6. Josiah²; was dead in 1683; had children; 7. Joseph²; 8. Sara², born April 20, 1651, in Gloucester; 9. Sarah², born May 12, 1652; 10. Thomas², born Nov. 21, 1654; 11. Jacob², born June 18, 1657; 12. Richard², baptized April 11, 1658; 13. Mary².

JOHN ELWELL²; fisherman; removed to Gloucester about 1673; married Jane Durin Oct. 1, 1667; she was living in 1688; he died in captivity among the Indians Feb. —, 1710; children: 1. John³, born Oct. 14, 1668, in Salem; master mariner; lived in Gloucester; married, first, Mary Robinson; second, Mary Joslyn, Jan. 7, 1709; had children; 2. Jane³, born Jan. 23, 1671-2, in Salem; 3. Susanna³ (twin), born April 24, 1678, in Gloucester; 4. Samuel³ (twin), born April 24, 1678; 5. Mary³, born Feb. 9, 1680-1; 6. Christian³, born May 16, 1683; 7. Penelope³, born Aug. 6, 1688.

At the Salem court, Dec. 27, 1642, William Goult, for reproachful and unseemly speeches against the rule of the church was ordered to sit in the stocks an hour and be severely whipped next lecture day. Henry Bulflower, servant to Thomas West, was in court. Some cattle belonged to a brother of Walter Price, "a poore man gone for England & his wife heare." A post with a pillory to it was ordered to be set up by the constables. The punishment afforded by the pillory is very ancient; and at first consisted of putting an iron collar about the neck of a delinquent, the collar or ring being fastened to a post or wall. This was called a jugg¹ from the word meaning the neck. Later, the ring was changed to a hole cut in the plank for the reception of the head and hands of a culprit, as shown by the illustration. The word pillory was given because of the pillar or post.



PILLORY.

Thomas Cole² lived in Salem as early as 1642, was a husbandman and lived on the easterly side of Beckford Street.

¹From the word "jugg" came the expression of jugging a criminal when he is put into jail, the Latin being "juggum".

²THOMAS COLE² married Ann ——— about 1635, probably in England; died in the spring of 1679; she died in the spring of 1680; children: 1. Abraham², born about 1638; 2. John².

ABRAHAM COLE²; tailor; married Sarah Davis June 11, 1670; died in the autumn of 1715; she survived him; children: 1. Samuel³, born May 11, 1671; died June —, 1671; 2. Sarah³, born Aug. 29, 1672; married Benjamin Odell Nov. 20, 1701; 3. Abraham³, born Jan. 6, 1674-5; died young (?); 4. Isaac³, born Aug. 4, 1677; died young (?); 5. Elizabeth³; married Simon Jeffords; 6. Susanna³, baptized Aug. 31, 1684; died young (?); 7. Samuel³, born May 19, 1687; 8. Thomas³, baptized March —, 1690. JOHN COLE²; cooper; removed to Malden about 1677, and then to Lynn about 1684; married, first, Mary Knight May 28, 1667; second, Sarah Alsbee about 1675; died in Lynn Oct. 8, 1703; she died in Bradford, his widow, Jan. 1, 1740-1; children: 1. John³, born May 18, 1668; lived in Lynn and Boxford; married Mary Eaton of Lynn; died in Boxford Feb. 5, 1736-7; she died there Oct. 7, 1746; had children; 2. Thomas³, born Nov. —, 1669; died in 1669; 3. Mary³, born Sept. 1, 1671; living in 1703; 4. Hannah³, born Dec. 12, 1674; living in 1703; 5. Samuel³, born Dec. 27, 1687, in Lynn; lived in Lynn and Boxford; 6. Anna³, born Aug. 5, 1690, in Lynn.

SAMUEL COLE³; corwainer; married Elizabeth Hibber dof Beverly (published April 28, 1711); died in the autumn of 1733; children: 1. Elizabeth⁴, born April 15, 1712; died June 26, 1713; 2. Ruth⁴, born Feb. 10, 1713-4; died young; 3. Abraham⁴, born about 1716; died between 1733 and 1743; 4. Abigail⁴, born about 1718; married Increase Whiston of Andover and Brookfield; 5. Ruth⁴, baptized Oct. 4, 1719; married Thomas Peabody of Boxford and Lunenburg; 6. Samuel⁴, baptized Oct. 9, 1720; blacksmith; lived in Boxford and Methuen; married Mary Peabody of Boxford May 20, 1748; she died in Methuen Nov. 1, 1767; had children;

Jan. 23, 1642-3, the town granted to Esdras Read, brother Bulfinch, old Goodman Scudder, brother Ralph Tompkins, John Kitchen,¹ Theophilus Downing,² ye fisherman, Nicholas Heyward,³ a fisherman, William Bowdiashe and John



7. Jonathan⁴, baptized Oct. 5, 1729; probably died young. THOMAS COLE³; married Mercy Vealy July 10, 1710; died in or before 1760; children: 1. Mercy⁴; baptized May 10, 1719; married, first, Benjamin Lambert (published Oct. 25, 1732); second, Peter Smith Jan. 18, 1756; 2. Thomas⁴, baptized May 10, 1719; 3. Mary⁴, baptized May 10, 1719.

¹JOHN KITCHEN¹, born about 1619; embarked at Weymouth, England, March 20, 1635; cordwainer; married, first, Elizabeth ———; she died; married second, Elizabeth, daughter of Joseph Grafton and widow of John Saunders about 1643 (?); died in the spring of 1676; John Saunders, seaman, was called "son-in-law" to John Kitchen in 1661; children: 1. Hannah², baptized March 12, 1643-4; 2. Elizabeth², baptized March 12, 1643-4; 3. Joseph², baptized April 20, 1645; probably died young; 4. John², baptized June 12, 1646; probably died young; 5. Mary², baptized April 23, 1648; married Timothy Robinson; 6. Abigail²; married John Guppy; 7. Priscilla²; married Nathaniel Hunn of Boston Oct. —, 1672; 8. Robert², baptized April 15, 1655; 9. Benjamin², born Aug. 28, 1660; died Sept. 15, 1660.

LT. ROBERT KITCHEN²; merchant; town clerk; married, first, Mary Boardman of Cambridge; second, Bethiah Weld; died Oct. 28, 1712; children: 1. John³, baptized April —, 1683; lived in London; 2. Elizabeth³, baptized April —, 1683; died before 1712; 3. Mary³, baptized May 27, 1684; married John Turner; 4. Robert³, baptized July 17, 1688; died young; 5. Bethia³, baptized Nov. 10, 1689; married Timothy Lindall; 6. Robert³, baptized June 11, 1699; died Sept. 20, 1716, when a student at Harvard College; 7. Edward³, baptized Aug. 18, 1700.

EDWARD KITCHEN³; merchant; married Freake Walcott in 1730; she died Jan. 17, 1746-7; he died in 1766; children: 1. Mary⁶, born Oct. 2, 1732; died Oct. 28, 1738; 2. Robert⁴, born Oct. 1, 1735; died Dec. 20, 1736.

²Theophilus Downing had wife Ellen, and was living in Salem in 1647.

³NICHOLAS HAYWARD¹ was a husbandman and fisherman; died Feb. 24, 1682-3; children: 1. Nehemiah²; 2. Nathaniel², baptized Nov. 13, 1642.

NEHEMIAH HAYWARD²; married Anna Dixcy; died in the summer of 1665; she married, secondly, ——— Judkins; children: 1. Sarah³, born March 3, 1658-9; 2. Hannah³, born Aug. 1, 1661; married ——— Coit. NATHANIEL HAYWARD³; carpenter; married Elizabeth ———; she was his wife in 1719; he died Dec. 19, 1720; children: 1. Elizabeth³, baptized Aug. 26, 1666; married James Kettle; 2. Abigail³, baptized May 5, 1667; married Joseph Flint; 3. Nathaniel³, baptized May 30, 1669; lived in Beverly; married Hannah ———; had children; 4. Nehemiah³, baptized July 10, 1670; yeoman alias carpenter; lived in Beverly and Hingham; married Bethiah ———; had children; 5. Sarah³, baptized Nov. 19, 1671; married Edward Coburn March 29, 1694; 6. Jonathan³, baptized July 6, 1673; 7. Nicholas³, baptized Oct. 10, 1675; 8. Samuel³, baptized May 26, 1678; 9. Hannah³, baptized May 16, 1682; married ——— Vickery; 10. Stephen³, baptized Aug. 24, 1684; currier and yeoman; lived in Beverly; married Bethiah ———; had children.

JONATHAN HAYWARD³; potter; married Mary ———; she was his wife in 1711; "Abigail, second wife of Jonathan Hayward, died at her father's in Salem Village April 13, 1716;" children: 1. Mary⁴, baptized

Abby ten acres each ("all these 10 acre lots are to be laid out nere to brother Kings lott"). William Bowditch¹ was a young

May 19, 1700; died Jan. 26, 1718-9; 2. Jonathan⁴, baptized Feb. 14, 1702-3; lived in Beverly; had children. NICHOLAS HAYWARD³; lived in Salem Village; yeoman alias tailor; married Jenima Rea; died in the spring of 1748; children: 1. Diadem⁴, born Feb. 19, 1701-2; married Israel Eaton of Reading; 2. *Paul*⁴, born Oct. 25, 1705; 3. Mehitable⁴, born July 9, 1708; married Samuel Hayward of Reading. SAMUEL HAYWARD³; leather dresser and set-work cooper; married Mary Hardy of Beverly June 15, 1699; lived in Reading, 1724-1728; she was his wife in 1728; he died in 1748; children: 1. Mary⁴, born March 16, 1700; married Benjamin Young Jan. 17, 1722-3; 2. Elizabeth⁴, born Oct. 1, 1702; 3. Hannah⁴, born April 29, 1705; married John Chapman; 4. Samuel⁴, baptized Nov. 24, 1706; lived in Reading; married Mehitable Hayward in 1730; weaver; 5. Robert⁴, baptized Feb. 20, 1708-9; lived in Reading; 6. Lydia⁴, baptized Aug. 16, 1713; married William Flint July 25, 1734; 7. Sarah⁴, baptized Feb. 12, 1715-6.

PAUL HAYWARD⁴; yeoman and cordwainer; married Hephzibah ———; children: 1. Israel⁵, baptized June 4, 1727; 2. Daniel⁵, baptized Jan. 12, 1728-9; 3. John⁵, baptized April 25, 1731; died before 1748; 4. Dudley⁵, baptized Aug. 11, 1734; 5. *Archelaus*⁵, baptized Oct. 9, 1737; 6. Daniel⁵, baptized Jan. 16, 1742-3; lived in Beverly; 7. Israel Porter⁵, baptized Dec. 25, 1748.

ARCHELAUS HAYWARD⁵; married Elizabeth ———; children: 1. Hannah⁶, baptized Dec. 9, 1764; 2. Archelaus⁶, baptized Sept. 8, 1765.

¹WILLIAM BOWDITCH¹ is said to have come from Devonshire, England; wife Sarah; children: 1. *William*², born about 1641; 2. Nathaniel², baptized Feb. 12, 1642-3; settled in Newport, R. I., before 1674.

WILLIAM BOWDITCH³; married Sarah ———; died Oct. 12, 1681; child: 1. *William*³, born Aug. —, 1663.

CAPT. WILLIAM BOWDITCH³; master-mariner and merchant; representative; married Mary Gardner Aug. 30, 1688; she died in 1724; he died May 28, 1728; children: 1. Mary⁴, born Aug. 2, 1689; died Oct. 2, 1689; 2. William⁴, born Oct. 31, 1690; died Oct. 12, 1706; 3. Mary⁴, born Dec. 18, 1693; married, first, James Butler of Boston Sept. 8, 1715; second, Capt. Samuel Barton; 4. Sarah⁴, born Jan. 10, 1695-6; married Joseph Hathorne; 5. Thomas⁴, born June 5, 1698; died Nov. 30, 1702; 6. *Joseph*⁴, born Aug. 21, 1700; 7. *Ebenezer*⁴, born April 26, 1703; 8. Eunice⁴, born June 8, 1705; died July 2, 1705; 9. Eunice⁴, born March 22, 1707; married William Hunt; 10. Daniel⁴, born June 19, 1709; mariner; died about 1730; 11. William⁴, born Jan. 18, 1712-3; died Nov. 1, 1715.

CAPT. JOSEPH BOWDITCH⁴; clerk of the courts; esquire; married Elizabeth Hunt June 22, 1725; died Oct. 6, 1780; children: 1. William⁵, baptized Feb. 12, 1726-7; died June 26, 1729; 2. *Joseph*⁵, baptized Nov. 29, 1730; 3. Mary⁵, baptized Dec. 17, 1732; married Capt. Jonathan Orne; 4. Elizabeth⁵; married William Jeffrey; 5. Sarah⁵, baptized Jan. 23, 1736-7; died Oct. 2, 1764; 6. Eunice⁵, baptized May 20, 1739; died June 11, 1765; 7. Daniel⁵, baptized May 2, 1742. CAPT. EBENEZER BOWDITCH⁴; master-mariner and merchant; married Mary Turner Aug. 15, 1728; died Feb. 2, 1768; she died, his widow, May 1, 1785; children: 1. *Ebenezer*⁵, born Sept. 28, 1729; 2. *John*⁵, born April 3, 1732; 3. Thomas⁵, born about 1733; 4. William⁵, born in 1735; died Dec. 29, 1752; 5. *Habakkuk*⁵, baptized March 5, 1737-8; 6. Mary⁵, born about 1741; died April 22, 1757.

CAPT. JOSEPH BOWDITCH⁵; merchant; married Sarah Gardner March 3, 1757; living in 1793; she died Dec. 8, 1797; child: 1. Joseph⁶, baptized Nov. 20, 1757; merchant; died, probably unmarried, in the summer of 1800.

man and the ancestor of the long line of master mariners of that

CAPT. EBENEZER BOWDITCH⁵; married Elizabeth Gilman of Ipswich July 17, 1755; died Aug. 3, 1771; she died, his widow, Feb. 11, 1824, aged ninety-one; children: 1. Elizabeth⁶, baptized May 2, 1756; died young; 2. William⁶, baptized July 9, 1758; died young; 3. Eunice⁶, baptized June 15, 1760; died, unmarried, Dec. 3, 1841; 4. Elizabeth⁶, baptized Sept. 5, 1762; died, unmarried, Nov. 4, 1845; 5. William⁶, baptized Aug. 12, 1764; 6. *Ebenezer*⁶, baptized Nov. 23, 1766; 7. Andrew⁶, baptized June 4, 1769.

CAPT. JOHN BOWDITCH; master-mariner; married Mary Carlton July 12, 1759; died April —, 1793; she died, his widow, Dec. 24, 1805; children: 1. Mary⁶, baptized June 15, 1760; married Lewis Hunt; 2. Hannah⁶, baptized Dec. 13, 1761; married John Ingersoll; 3. *John*⁶, baptized March 4, 1764; 4. Deborah⁶, baptized Oct. 11, 1767; married Thomas Moriarty of Danvers Oct. 31, 1782; 5. *Samuel*⁶, baptized May 7, 1769; 6. *Ebenezer*⁶, born Sept. 22, 1771; 7. Benjamin⁶, born in 1772; died at sea (buried at Martha's Vineyard) Dec. 2, 1794.

CAPT. THOMAS BOWDITCH⁵; mariner; married Sarah Bancroft of Lynn April 21, 1760; she died Feb. 26, 1808; he died July 29, 1808; children: 1. *Thomas*⁶, born in 176—; 2. Daniel⁶, born March 5, 1765; 3. Joseph⁵, born July 5, 1767; drowned Aug. 26, 1774; 4. Sarah⁶, born Sept. 9, 1769; married John Brindley May 12, 1793; Jane⁶, born March 13, 1774; died, unmarried, July —, 1838; 6. *Joseph*⁶, born May 11, 1776; 7. *Ebenezer*⁶, born July 5, 1778; 8. *Richard*⁶, baptized April —, 1783; 9. Elizabeth⁶, baptized April —, 1783; 10. *George*⁶, born April 5, 1783.

CAPT. HABAKKUK BOWDITCH⁵; mariner; married Mary Ingersoll July 23, 1765; she died Dec. 14, 1783; he died July 28, 1798; children: 1. Mary⁶, baptized March 30, 1766; married David Martin; 2. Habakkuk⁶, baptized May 15, 1768; 3. Elizabeth⁶, born May 16, 1771; died Dec. 9, 1791; 4. *Nathaniel*⁶, born March 26, 1773; 5. William⁶ baptized in 1775; died at Trinidad about Jan. 1, 1800, aged twenty-four; 6. Samuel Ingersoll⁶, baptized Sept. 12, 1779; 7. Lois⁶, baptized April 1, 1781; married Joseph Bowditch Sept. 28, 1806; she died July 29, 1809, aged twenty-eight.

CAPT. EBENEZER BOWDITCH⁶; married Mary Appleton July 25, 1797; she died May 16, 1819; he died July 24, 1830; child: 1. *Ebenezer*⁷; suicided at the almshouse Aug. 21, 1825, aged twenty-five. JOHN BOWDITCH⁶; mariner; married Polly Cook March 11, 1791; she died, his widow, April 29, 1844; child: 1. *Mary*⁷, born Feb. 19, 1792; married Michael Pitman Sept. 25, 1814.

SAMUEL BOWDITCH⁶; mariner; married Ann (Nancy) Welman Aug. 15, 1790; perished off the *Texell*, on the brig *Harriette*, March 21, 1791; she married, secondly, William Richardson Nov. 9, 1793; child; 1. Anna (Nancy)⁷, born in 1790; living in 1806.

CAPT. THOMAS BOWDITCH⁶; master-mariner; married Lucy Mansfield Sept. 17, 1786; died on his passage from Calcutta, on the ship *Boston Packet*, of which he was commander, April —, 1807; she died, his widow, Dec. 16, 1831; children: 1. Lucy⁷, baptized July 1, 1787; married Robert Collins Feb. 15, 1807; 2. Betsey Mansfield⁷, baptized Aug. 9, 1789; died Sept. 9, 1790; 3. *Thomas*⁷, baptized Nov. 27, 1791; 4. Sarah⁷, baptized May 26, 1793; 5. Ann Hendfield⁷, baptized Dec. 6, 1795; married William Osborn Sept. 11, 1816; 6. John⁷, baptized Dec. 31, 1797; 7. Mary Pickman⁷, baptized May 14, 1800; married William Archer April 6, 1823; 8. Daniel⁷, baptized July 3, 1802; carpenter.

CAPT. JOSEPH BOWDITCH⁶; master-mariner; married Lucinda M. —; died Aug. 30, 1824; she was his widow in 1837; children: 1. Helen Maria⁷, born about 1813; married Luther Upton Sept. 29, 1836; 2. Sarah Morse⁷, born Jan. —, 1815; living in 1822; 3. Joseph Henry⁷, born Dec. —, 1816; living in 1822; 4. Francis Morse⁷, born Jan —, 1821; mariner; married Rebecca Leavitt July 11, 1855. EBENEZER BOWDITCH⁶; goldsmith; married, first, Rebecca Felt Oct. 21, 1800; she died May —, 1805; married,

name. At the same time there was laid out thirty acres of land

second, May Appleton; died July 23, 1830; children: 1. *William Appleton*⁷, born in 1801; 2. *Rebecca*⁷, baptized April 28, 1805; died, unmarried, June 5, 1856; 3. *Elizabeth Gilman*⁷, baptized Dec. 6, 1828; died, unmarried, March 2, 1895; 4. *Mary Ann*⁷, baptized Dec. 6, 1828; married Ezra Upton of Danvers Sept. 12, 1836. CAPT. RICHARD BOWDITCH⁶; married Sarah Collins May 24, 1807; on the *Dryade*, drowned in the White Sea Sept. —, 1811; she died, his widow, Jan. —, 1832; children: 1. *Lois*⁷, born about 1808; married Francis Cogswell June 26, 1836; 2. *Daniel C.*⁷, born in the spring of 1810; shipwright; married Eliza Green May 21, 1836; died May 13, 1885; she died, his widow, Dec. 9, 1889. GEORGE BOWDITCH⁶; trader and superintendent of hearses; married Sarah Stodder Oct. 11, 1807; died Aug. 24, 1862; she died Feb. 17, 1867; children: 1. *Deborah Marsh*⁷, born Aug. 14, 1808; died Dec. 24, 1822; 2. *Ebed Stodder*⁷, born Oct. 21, 1810; 3. *George*⁷, born June 20, 1812; 4. *Richard*⁷, born April 22, 1814; carpenter; lived in Salem in 1837; 5. *Sarah Bancroft*⁷, born Sept. 15, 1821; married Jacob P. Davis; 6. *Thomas*⁷, born April 5, 1824; spar maker; died Nov. 28, 1846. CAPT. NATHANIEL BOWDITCH⁶; mathematician; removed to Boston in 1823; married, first, Elizabeth Boardman March 25, 1798; she died Oct. 18, 1798; married, second, Mary Ingersoll Oct. 28, 1800; she died April 27, 1834; he died at Boston March 16, 1838; children: 1. *Nathaniel Ingersoll*⁷, born Jan. 17, 1805; of Rochdale, Mass., in 1896; married Elizabeth B. ———; had a daughter; 2. *Jonathan Ingersoll*⁷, baptized Oct. 16, 1806; 3. *Henry Ingersoll*⁷, baptized Oct. 30, 1808; 4. *Mary Ingersoll*⁷, baptized May 19, 1816; 5. *Charles Ingersoll*⁷, born about 1810; died Feb. 22, 1820; 6. *William Ingersoll*⁷, baptized Aug. 15, 1819; 7. *Elizabeth Boardman*⁷, baptized Aug. 24, 1823.

THOMAS BOWDITCH⁷; currier and mariner; married Harriet Mylord Sept. 17, 1815; lived in Chelsea awhile; died Feb. 16, 1841; she died, his widow, Oct. 4, 1876; children: 1. *Elizabeth Mylord*⁸; married John Felt of Wenham Sept. 30, 1847; 2. *Rebecca C.*⁸, born in 1830; died July 2, 1855; 3. *Clara H.*⁸, born about 1837; married William W. P. Walden June 23, 1859. WILLIAM APPLETON BOWDITCH⁷; clerk and trader; married ———; she died before him; he died May 15, 1896; children: 1. *William B.*⁸; of Montrose, Cal., 1895 and 1896; 2. *Caroline M.*⁸; married Warner P. Patch of Gloucester, Mass.; 3. *Eliza A.*⁸; married Josiah Mayo of Beverly. EBED STODDER BOWDITCH⁷; cooper; lived in Gloucester and Salem; married Anstiss Green July 25, 1834; she died Jan. 21, 1892; he died April 4, 1896; child: 1. *George Henry*⁸, born May 12, 1835; lived in Hollis, N. H.; died in Nashua, N. H., unmarried, Feb. 3, 1888. GEORGE BOWDITCH⁷; mason; married Margaret S. Brown July 30, 1843; she died March 19, 1892; he died June 2, 1893; children: 1. *Deborah Marsh*⁸, born in 1844; died June 1, 1847; 2. *Thomas*⁸, born Feb. 26, 1849; 3. *George F.*⁸, born Feb. 14, 1856; died March 26, 1857; 4. *Sarah B.*⁸, born in 1861; died Aug. 6, 1862. RICHARD BOWDITCH⁷; mason; married Prudence S. Pierce of Windsor, Me. (published Jan. 7, 1844); living in 1856; children: 1. *Deborah M.*⁶, born Sept. —, 1847; 2. *Richard F.*⁶, born Aug. 21, 1849; 3. *Eugene*⁸, born July 7, 1855.

THOMAS BOWDITCH⁸; mason; married Annie E. Murphy June 5, 1875; died May 30, 1914; she died Dec. 19, 1917; children: 1. *Elizabeth*⁹, born Dec. 9, 1875; married Charles T. Johnson June 17, 1896; 2. *Bertha M.*⁹, born Dec. 10, 1879; died April 24, 1893; 3. *George Stodder*⁹, born Aug. 27, 1886.

GEORGE STODDER BOWDITCH⁹; assistant-treasurer of the Salem Gas Light Company; married Gertrude A. McDonald June 15, 1910; child: 1. *Gertrude*¹⁰, born July 20, 1918.

to Henry Bullock¹; to Richard Gardiner and John Gardner a

¹HENRY BULLOCK¹, husbandman, came in the Abigail in June, 1635, with his wife Susan, aged forty-two, and children, Henry, aged eight, Mary, six, and Thomas, two. He certified from St. Lawrence Parish, England. He settled in Charlestown, Mass., as early as 1638, and removed to Salem in or before 1649; his wife Susan died about Nov. 2, 1644; married, second, Elizabeth ———; died Dec. 27, 1663; children: 1. Henry², born about 1627; 2. Mary², born about 1629; 3. Thomas², born about 1633; husbandman; living in 1663 and deceased in 1717.

HENRY BULLOCK²; married Alice Flint; died in 1656; she married, secondly, John Pickering and died about 1713; children: 1. Elizabeth³; married Richard Norman Jan. 13, 1674-5; 2. John³, born Aug. —, 1654.

JOHN BULLOCK³; vintner; injured in fighting the Indians, being made a cripple; became an innkeeper and brewer; married Mary Maverick Aug. 3, 1681; died in 1694; she married, secondly, Archibald Ferguson of Marblehead in 1697; children: 1. Elizabeth⁴, born June 22, 1683; 2. John⁴, born April 5, 1686.

JOHN BULLOCK⁴; cordwainer and laborer; married Mary Carlyle July 20, 1710; they were living in 1760; children: 1. John⁵, born April 21, 1711; 2. Elizabeth⁵, baptized Aug. 11, 1717; 3. Mary⁵, baptized Aug. 23, 1719; 4. Hannah⁵, baptized June 25, 1721; 5. Benjamin⁵, born April 28, 1723; died, probably unmarried, in the spring of 1751; 6. Mary⁵, baptized March 14, 1725.

JOHN BULLOCK⁵; cordwainer; married Elizabeth Stileman Oct. 27, 1737; she was living in 1773; he died in 1774; children: 1. Elizabeth⁶, baptized Jan. 23, 1742-3; married Thomas Morse; 2. John⁶, baptized Jan. 23, 1742-3; 3. Mary⁶, baptized Jan. 23, 1742-3; married Joseph Brown; 4. Preserved⁶, baptized Jan. 19, 1745-6; married John MackMillian June 7, 1772; 5. Benjamin⁶, baptized March 6, 1747-8; 6. Nathaniel⁶, baptized March 4, 1749-50; 7. Isaac⁶, baptized April 19, 1752; 8. Samuel⁶, baptized Feb. 16, 1755; lived in Danvers; married Eunice Wyman of Beverly May 20, 1787; had children; 9. Sarah⁶, baptized April 25, 1756; unmarried in 1774; 10. Abigail⁶, baptized May 7, 1758; married Thomas Gass of Salem; 11. Hannah⁶, baptized Sept. —, 1774; married ——— Maybury before 1778.

JOHN BULLOCK⁶; fisherman and mariner; lived in Danvers; married Rosina Barbarina Ulmerin Sept. 20, 1762; he died in 1778; she survived him; children: 1. Samuel⁷, baptized May 29, 1763; mariner; lived in Northport, Me., in 1798; 2. John Woolmore⁷, baptized Oct. 6, 1765; 3. Barbara⁷, born about 1767; married, first, James Goodale of Marblehead Aug. 19, 1787; second, Samuel Tibbets; died in Salem March 20, 1804; 4. Benjamin⁷, baptized Sept. 16, 1770; 5. Nathaniel⁷, baptized Aug. 9, 1772; 6. Isaac⁷, born Dec. 25, 1774, in Salem. 7. Joseph⁷, baptized May 5, 1776; cordwainer; married Betsey Poland of Beverly Oct. 9, 1796; died July 13, 1800; 8. Mary⁷, baptized March 1, 1778; unmarried, of Salem, in 1798. BENJAMIN BULLOCK⁶; master-mariner; lived for a time in 1779 and 1780 in Lyndeboro, N. H.; returned to Salem soon after; married Sarah Skerry March 14, 1771; died in 1794; she died, his widow, Sept. 29, 1818; children: 1. Anna⁷; married Hubbard Haskell of Newburyport April 4, 1796; 2. Francis⁷, born May 19, 1782; 3. Samuel⁷; 4. Elizabeth⁷, born about 1787; died June 25, 1858; 5. Preserved⁷ (twin), baptized April 5, 1789; died April 8, 1862; 6. ———⁷ (twin), baptized April 5, 1789. NATHANIEL BULLOCK⁶; mariner; removed to Lyndeboro, N. H.; married Elizabeth ———; she was his wife in 1786; died in 1800; children: 1. Nathaniel⁷, baptized April 27, 1776; living in 1800; 2. Betsey⁷, baptized April 27, 1776; married Benjamin Gault of Boston; 3. John⁷, baptized March 15, 1778; 4. James⁷, baptized Nov. 5, 1780; 5. James⁷, baptized Aug.

ten-acre lot near Mackerel Cove, next to Mr. Thorndik's plain, to each of them; and to Mr. Emery four or five acres of meadow, if there be so much there, next Lieutenant Dampont's farm. Two days later, the town granted to Goodman Weekes ten acres to lie with the last ten acres mentioned; Edward Beachamp ten acres at Bass River, if it be there; to Thomas Pattin fifteen acres and to John Hathorne fifty acres of land toward the great river. It was ordered that Mr. Gott should have his meadow with the first in the great meadow.

Feb. 13, 1642-3, the town granted to William Clarke sixty acres of land in lieu of that which he lost by the laying out of the Lynn bounds, being within the limits of Lynn. It is to be laid out in that land that lieth south from Mr. Downing's great meadow towards Mr. Johnson's land; also granted to Ryce Edwards¹

John Reeves

and John Reeves² ten acres of ground each near Mr. Blackleech's farm; and to Edmund

25, 1782; 6. Benjamin⁷, baptized July 18, 1784; 7. William⁷, baptized March 1, 1787. ISAAC BULLOCK⁶; mariner and ship owner; married Elizabeth Boyd (published April 20, 1776); she was his wife in 1804; he died Dec. 21, 1826; children: 1. Samuel Stileman⁷, baptized Sept. 27, 1778; 2. Isaac Stileman⁷, born about 1779; grocer; married Sally Clough; died Oct. 14, 1858; she died Dec. 10, 1863; 3. John⁷, born Feb. 4, 1781; mariner; married Elizabeth Cloutman; died Jan. 25, 1854; 4. Elizabeth⁷, born about 1782; died, unmarried, Nov. 16, 1855; 5. Benjamin⁷, born about 1790; died, unmarried, Oct. 28, 1823; 6. George⁷, born Sept. 13, 1795; 7. James Crawford⁷; name changed to Ballard; married Elizabeth C. Archer Aug. 18, 1816.

BENJAMIN BULLOCK⁷; mariner; removed to Sturbridge before 1808; married, first, Abigail Trask of Danvers (published May 24, 1794); she died in Danvers June 6, 1799; married, second, Mary ——— in 1800; children: 1. Hannah⁸, baptized May 13, 1798; 2. Abigail⁸, baptized Jan. 8, 1804; 3. Benjamin⁸, baptized Jan. 8, 1804; 4. William⁸, baptized Jan. 8, 1804; 5. Hasket Ulmer⁸, baptized May 5, 1805; 6. Mary Ann⁸, baptized Dec. 21, 1806; 7. Horatio⁸, baptized May 14, 1809. ISAAC BULLOCK⁷; lived in Danvers; married Martha Trask of Danvers April 11, 1799; died July 15, 1800; she died at Salem Aug. 11, 1866; child: 1. Isaac⁸, born April 13, 1800; lived in Salem in 1866.

¹Rice Edwards, born about 1615, came from Watertown. The name of his wife was probably Elnor, and born about 1620. They lived in the Wenham part of Salem until 1652, when they sold their house and ten-acre lot of land, and removed into that part of Salem which was incorporated as Beverly in 1668. They were living in 1680. Children: 1. Abraham, baptized in Salem Aug. 19, 1638; 2. John, baptized in Salem June 6, 1639; lived in Beverly; married Mary Solart May 21, 1666; had children; 3. Joseph, baptized in Salem May 22, 1642; 4. Joshua, baptized in Salem June 18, 1643; 5. Mary; married John Leach.

²JOHN REEVES¹ came from London to Boston, in the Christian, says Savage, in 1635, at the age of nineteen; planter in Salem in 1642, living on the southeastern corner of Essex and Flint streets; his wife was named Jane in 1640, and Elizabeth in 1658 and 1661; he died in the autumn of

Grover two little parcels of fresh meadow, containing about two and a half acres, near Beaver Pond, by Hugh Laskin's meadow. It was ordered that the twenty acres granted to Allyn Convers in exchange of twenty acres granted to him elsewhere shall be laid out by the town to Mr. Endecott.

Five days later, the selectmen granted to John Cook about three-quarters of an acre of land, lying before his door at his ten-acre lot in the North field, reserving to the town two pole in breadth through the land for a cart way to and from the town of Salem, being the highway through the North field; and to Thomas Gardner and Obadiah Holmes near three-quarters of an acre lying within the "Rayles" near the gate that leads to and from the old mill, near their lots.

1681; children: 1. Elizabeth²; married Richard Richards; 2. William², born about 1648; 3. Mary²; married Ephraim Kempton; 4. Freeborn², born July 10, 1658; living in 1676; 5. Benjamin², born Dec. 30, 1661.

WILLIAM REEVES²; butcher and slaughterer (also, mason?); married Elizabeth Collins March 14, 1669-70; died Feb. —, 1717-8; she survived him; children: 1. William³; 2. John³, born July 12, 1673; 3. Cockerel³; 4. Elizabeth³; unmarried in 1718; 5. Freeborn³.

WILLIAM REEVES³; fisherman; lived in Marblehead and Salem; married, first, Mary Carder Dec. 19, 1706; second, Sarah Fountain Dec. 23, 1714; died Oct. —, 1737; she married, second, George Cummings Feb. 5, 1745; children: 1. John⁴, born Feb. 24, 1708; 2. Mary⁴, born Sept. 24, 1711; 3. Benjamin⁴, baptized June 21, 1713; married Sarah Bartoll Oct. 11, 1736; living in 1737; 4. William⁴, baptized Nov. 8, 1719; 5. Sarah², baptized Sept. 9, 1722; married Jonathan Felt. COCKEREL REEVES³; heel alias lastmaker; married, first, Judith —; second, Elizabeth Robinson July 17, 1723; died in the winter of 1756-7; she was his widow in 1762; children: 1. Samuel⁴, baptized Jan. 2, 1708-9; 2. William⁴, baptized Dec. 24, 1710; heelmaker; married Mary Pickering Jan. 16, 1734; died Oct. 2, 1796; 3. Susanna⁴, baptized March 22, 1712-3; married Joseph Clough; 4. Elizabeth⁴, born Oct. 20, 1715; married Gabriel Holman; 5. Nathaniel⁴, baptized Nov. 2, 1718; housewright; married Mercy Dudley (published Jan. 29, 1740); living in Salem in 1757; 6. Jacob⁴, baptized Aug. 7, 1720; heelmaker; lived in Roxbury as late as 1772, and in Sudbury, innholder, in that year; married Abigail Furgeson of Marblehead (published Dec. 17, 1743); she was his wife in 1772; 7. Judith⁴, baptized Nov. 11, 1772; probably died before 1757; 8. Mary⁴, baptized July 12, 1724; married Richard Palmer; 9. John⁴, baptized Feb. 6, 1725-6; probably died before 1757; 10. Benjamin⁴, baptized Feb. 28, 1730-1. FREEBORN REEVES³; married Margaret Felton Nov. 22, 1715; died in or before 1732; child: 1. Freeborn⁴, born about 1717; husbandman; living in 1739.

WILLIAM REEVES⁴; married Margaret Peele Oct. 17, 1754; children: 1. —⁵, born in 1755; died Oct. 21, 1756; 2. —⁵, born in 1757; died May 21, 1759. SAMUEL REEVES⁴; heelmaker; removed to Medford before 1756; married Elizabeth Millet (published July 29, 1732); she was living in 1757; he was living in 1771; children: 1. Elizabeth⁵, baptized Aug. 26, 1733; 2. Judith⁵, baptized April 13, 1735. BENJAMIN REEVES⁴; heelmaker; married Hannah Smith of Marblehead Jan. 10, 1754; died Nov. 15, 1759; she was his widow in 1770; children: 1. —⁵, born in the summer of 1756; died Sept. 30, 1757; 2. Hannah⁵, born about 1758; married Joseph Bishop.

A week later the town granted to old George Wright a quarter of an acre or more of land to be laid out by Jeffry Massy and Mr. Gardner upon the common near Edmond Giles' lot; to Mr. Batter half-an-acre or near an acre of land, that he might have his line straight; and to brother John Gedney that quarter of an acre of ground formerly granted to George Wright.

At the court in Salem, Feb. 28, 1642-3, John Holgrave was admonished for perjury and affirming untruths before the church in Salem.

Lady Deborah Moody, wife of Sir Henry Moody, lived at Town House Square¹ and belonged to the Salem church. Late in 1642, she was before the local court, charged with belief in anabaptism, or refusing to baptize infants. Winthrop called her "a wise and anciently religious woman."² She was dealt with by many of the elders and others during the winter, and was admonished by the court. She still persisted in her belief; and to avoid further trouble, she removed to the Dutch against the advice of her friends. Many others who believed as she did also removed thither. Subsequently, the church excommunicated her. Dec. 15, 1642, William Bound and his wife were presented for holding baptism of infants not to be an ordinance of God. Being in a way of conviction before the elders, the complaint was dismissed. July 1, 1646, Michael Shafflin was presented for withdrawing from baptism; and, August 4th, the wife of William Bowditch was admonished for offensively withdrawing from infant baptism.

Philip Cromwell first appears in Salem in the winter of 1642-3, and was here two or three years before probably. He was a slaughterer, and had his butcher shop near his house, which stood where the Naumkeag Block now stands, 209 Essex Street. He was born about 1613; and came here alone, leaving his wife in England.³

Philip Cromwell

¹Her house at Salem was unroofed in the great northeast gale, Nov. 4, 1646.

²Winthrop's Journal, volume III, page 123.

³Philip Cromwell was ordered by the local court to return to his wife or bring her to America, but she did not desire to come, being comfortably situated where she was. This was in 1647. He married, second, however, Dorothy, widow of Allen Keniston in 1649. She was several years older than he; and she died Sept. 28, 1673. He married, third, Mary, widow of Robert Lemon Nov. 17, 1674; and she died Nov. 4, 1683. He married, fourth, Margaret ———. He died March 30, 1693; and she was his widow in 1699. Child: 1. John, born about 1635; slaughterer; married Hannah Barney; died Sept. 30, 1700, without issue; she was his widow in 1712.

Francis Nurse¹ appeared in Salem about 1640, when he was a boy, aged nineteen, and lived here the rest of his life.

Philip Cromwell had a younger brother, Thomas Cromwell, who came from England in Mr. Stratton's ship about 1652 and lived in Salem. A John Cromwell, probably his nephew, came with him. Thomas Cromwell was a tailor and had a shop; married Ann ———; and died in or before 1690, when she was his widow. Children: 1. Jane; married Jonathan Pickering; 2. Anne; married, first, Benjamin Ager; second, David Phippen.

¹FRANCIS NURSE¹ was born about 1621; tray maker and yeoman; married Rebecca Towne; she was executed as a witch July 19, 1692; he died Nov. 22, 1695; children: 1. Rebecca²; married Thomas Preston; 2. Sarah²; married Michael Bowden; 3. John²; 4. Samuel²; 5. Mary²; married John Tarbell; 6. Elizabeth²; married William Russell; 7. Francis²; born Feb. 3, 1660-1; of Reading in 1697; 8. Benjamin², born Jan. 26, 1665.

JOHN NURSE²; yeoman; married, first, Elizabeth Smith Nov. 1, 1672; she died Oct. 22, 1673; married, second, Elizabeth Very Aug. 17, 1677; he died about the first of December, 1719; she was his widow in 1723; children: 1. John³, born Oct. 12, 1673; of Framingham in 1719; 2. Elizabeth³, born March 18, 1677-8; married ——— Douty; 3. Samuel³, born Aug. 20, 1679; mariner and yeoman; wife Elizabeth in 1699; had daughter Deborah, and died before 1719; 4. Sarah³, born Nov. 10, 1680; married Peter Twist Dec. 20, 1699; 5. Jonathan³, born May 3, 1682; husbandman; married Martha Twist (published March 13, 1713-14); living in 1743; 6. Joseph³, born Sept. 20, 1683; 7. Benjamin³, born Feb. 20, 1685-6; 8. Hannah³, born June 22, 1687; married John Very. SAMUEL NURSE²; husbandman; married Mary Smith April 5, 1677; she was his wife in 1715; he died about January, 1719-20; children: 1. Samuel³, born Jan. 7, 1677-8; 2. Margaret³, born Feb. 24, 1679-80; died, unmarried, Dec. 5, 1700; 3. George³, born July 29, 1682; 4. Mary³, born May 25, 1685; married William Daggett; 5. Rebecca³, born Sept. 15, 1688; married Jonathan Kenney; 6. Ebenezer³, born Aug. 5, 1693. BENJAMIN NURSE²; husbandman; married Tomasin Smith Feb. 21, 1688; she was living in 1695 and he in 1731; child: 1. Margaret³, born — 12, 1691(?); living in 1715.

BENJAMIN NURSE³; husbandman; married Sarah Boston of Lynn (published Sept. 4, 1714); they were living in 1736; children: 1. Benjamin⁴, born in 1720; 2. Sarah⁴, baptized Dec. 24, 1727; 3. John⁴, baptized Dec. 24, 1727; lived in Danvers, mariner, in 1754; married Elizabeth ———; 4. Phebe⁴, baptized Dec. 24, 1727; 5. Joseph⁴, baptized Dec. 24, 1727; distiller; lived in Boston in the latter part of his life; died in or before 1791; 6. Elizabeth⁴, baptized May 12, 1728; 7. Nathaniel⁴, baptized July 6, 1729; cordwainer and tanner; married Mary Best Nov. 7, 1754; they were living in 1778; 8. James⁴, baptized April 16, 1732; 9. Daniel⁴, baptized May 26, 1734. SAMUEL NURSE³; married Dorothy Faulkner Nov. 25, 1708; died April —, 1740; she survived him; children: 1. Abigail⁴, born May 23, 1710; living in 1740; 2. Rebecca⁴, born June 23, 1712; died Sept. 23, 1734; 3. Samuel⁴, born April 25, 1715; yeoman; lived in Bolton; married Elizabeth Kellogg of Hadley (published Dec. 29, 1739); 4. Francis⁴, born June 6, 1717; 5. Eunice⁴, born Aug. 27, 1718; living in 1740; 6. Phebe⁴, born June 8, 1721; died Nov. 23, 1729. GEORGE NURSE³; yeoman; removed to Lynn in 1710; married Lydia Hutchinson in 1709; died March 1, 1759; she died, his widow, April 3, 1764; children: 1. Elizabeth⁴, born July 8, 1710; married Jonathan Twiss; 2. Mary⁴, born April 5, 1712; married, first, Nathaniel Walden; second, John Twiss; 3. George⁴, born June 30, 1715; 4. Abigail⁴, born Sept. 7, 1724; married Adam Johnson Jan. 13, 1745-6; 5. Lydia⁴, born Aug. 13, 1728; married Joseph Aborn July 2, 1747. EBENEZER NURSE³; husbandman; lived in Danvers; married, first, Elizabeth Mitchel

In the general court, May 10, 1643, the colony was divided into four counties, Middlesex, Norfolk, Essex and Suffolk.

Jan. 4, 1721-2; second, widow Amee Cross Jan. 9, 1751-2; died Dec. 30, 1765; she died Aug. 10, 1771; children: 1. Sarah⁴, born Nov. 14, 1722; living in 1762; 2. Martha⁴, born Nov. 11, 1724; living in 1762; 3. Elizabeth⁴, born Sept. 15, 1726; living in 1762; 4. *Ebeneszer*⁴, born Sept. 2, 1728; 5. Caleb⁴, born July 11, 1732; died Oct. 7, 1732; 6. Eli⁴, born Nov. 1, 1733; died Feb. 4, 1733-4; 7. Mary⁴, born Aug. 5, 1735; living in 1762; 8. Caleb⁴, baptized May 20, 1739.

BENJAMIN NOURSE⁴; chair bottom maker, saddler, shoreman and sexton; married, first, Elizabeth ——— before 1774; she died June 29, 1787; married, second, widow Abigail Cumbs Oct. 8, 1791; he died Jan. 17, 1798; she died, his widow, March 1, 1814; children: 1. *Benjamin*⁵; 2. *Samuel*⁵; 3. Elizabeth⁵, baptized Oct. 12, 1766; unmarried in 1789; 4. Sally⁵; died June 15, 1787, aged eighteen; 5. John⁵ (?); printer; died in Boston Jan. 1, 1790, aged twenty-eight; 6. Joseph⁵ (?); distiller; lived in Salem in 1789. FRANCIS NURSE⁴; husbandman; lived in Danvers; married, first, Eunice Putnam March 19, 1739-40; she died Aug. 21, 1766; married, second, Hannah Endicott Sept. 10, 1769; he died in the spring of 1780; children: 1. Samuel⁵, born Dec. 28, 1741; died Sept. 1, 1766; 2. Peter⁵, born March 25, 1743-4; living in 1780; 3. Philip⁵, born July 10, 1748; lived in Danvers; married, first, Sarah Putnam Sept. 22, 1772; she died July 22, 1786; married, second, Anna Stearns of Lunenburg in 1787; had children; 4. Eunice⁵, born May 2, 1752; living in 1780; 5. Benjamin⁵, born April 5, 1755; 6. Phebe⁵, born Sept. 21, 1757; 7. Jacob⁵, born May 11, 1760; 8. Abigail⁵, born Jan. 13, 1762; 9. Ede⁵, born May 17, 1765; 10. Allen⁵, born July 30, 1771. GEORGE NOURSE⁶; lived in Lynnfield; married Hannah Wallis (published Sept. 6, 1747); she died in Lynn Oct. 15, 1765; he died in Lynnfield Aug. 21, 1799; children: 1. Aaron⁵, born Sept. —, 1754, in Danvers; cordwainer; lived in Danvers, Reading, Salem and Lynnfield; married Rebecca Ashton of Danvers April 4, 1787; killed by a fall from a load of hay July 6, 1818; she died in Lynnfield April 25, 1837; 2. Elijah⁵, born about 1758; 3. George⁵, born in 1760. EBENEZER NURSE⁴; lived in Danvers; husbandman; married Hannah Rea Nov. 29, 1750; died April 23, 1787; she died March 9, 1823; children: 1. Hannah⁵, born July 1, 1753; 2. Ely⁵, born Dec. 31, 1755; 3. Eli⁵, baptized July 3, 1757; 4. Samuel⁵, born Dec. 25, 1757; 5. Michel⁵, born Nov. 14, 1759; 6. Roger⁵, born Nov. 3, 1761; 7. Rufus⁵, born Jan. 3, 1764; 8. Deborah⁵, born Dec. 28, 1766; 9. Aaron⁵, born Dec. 19, 1768; 10. Ebenezer⁵, born Aug. 8, 1772.

BENJAMIN NOURSE⁵; baker; married Margaret Welcome (published April 16, 1744); living in 1796; she died, his widow, Nov. 7, 1815; children: 1. Margaret⁶, born about 1784; died Sept. 1, 1811; 2. Edward⁶, born in 1785; died Oct. 28, 1786; 3. John⁶, born about 1788; died July 16, 1791; aged three years; 4. John⁶, baptized June 5, 1791. SAMUEL NOURSE⁵; husbandman and shoemaker; married Abigail Coombs; died Nov. 25, 1806; she died, his widow, April 19, 1843; children: 1. Sally⁶, born Dec. 1, 1790; married Thaddeus Willington Sept. 2, 1810; 2. Abigail⁶, born in 1797; died, unmarried, March 2, 1877. AARON NOURSE⁵; cordwainer; lived in Danvers; married Sarah Holt Dec. 25, 1791; she died July 1, 1839; he died Dec. 2, 1847; children: 1. *Ebeneszer*⁶, born Aug. 18, 1792; 2. Debby⁶, born July 8, 1794; 3. Sally⁶, born Feb. 27, 1797; 4. Amos⁶, born April 1, 1800; 5. William⁶, born June 30, 1802; killed by a steamboat at New York Oct. 6, 1835; 6. George⁶, born March 17, 1805; 7. Rea⁶, born May 30, 1807; 8. Howes⁶, born Sept. 13, 1810; 9. Aaron⁶, born April 21, 1813.

EBENEZER NOURSE⁶; fruit dealer; married Abigail Day (published Jan. 13, 1815); she died Feb. 27, 1858; he died Sept. 26, 1869; children: 1. Jane⁷,



Scale: 1 inch = 5 miles.

ESSEX COUNTY IN 1643.

Essex County was made up of eight towns. The accompanying map shows the territory of each town.¹ Salem was made the shire town of Essex County by vote of the general court Nov. 13, 1644; and it has occupied that position ever since.

Dec. 4, 1643, the town appointed a committee to find a room and set up a forge for William Place, the gunsmith.

At the meeting of the seven men, Dec. 11, 1643. John Hardy desired a ten-acre lot about Bass River for his son Joseph, and he was granted ten acres near Mr. Alford's farm, adjoining the old planters' farms. John Jarrett² was received as an inhabitant, and the next month was granted a ten acre lot, formerly Esdras Reed's adjoining Ryall Side, which was returned to the town April 15, 1644. Two acres of meadow formerly granted to Samuel Edson was ordered to be laid out in the pine meadow near Mr. Kenniston's farm. There was granted to Thomas Moore five acres of land on Darby's side; and Samuel Corney was ordered to have the five acres of land formerly granted to him laid out on Darby's fort side. John Kitchen was granted about an acre of land near Edward Gaskill's ten-acre lot at the Great Cove. Mark Lothrop was received as an inhabitant, and he requested some ground near his kinsman Thomas Lothrop; and the latter desired some meadow. Roger Haskell was granted six acres in the great meadow.

Zaccheus Curtis¹ appeared in Salem as early as 1643; removed to Reading about 1655; went to Gloucester in 1658; and returned to Salem the next year. From Salem he removed to

born in 1815; died, unmarried, Oct. 22, 1897; 2. Mary G.⁷, born about 1822; died, unmarried, in Danvers Sept. 15, 1846; 3. Dorcas C.⁷, born April 7, 1824; died, unmarried, Feb. 10, 1912; 4. Lucy H.⁷, born Oct. 28, 1829; died, unmarried, Dec. 31, 1912; 5. William⁷, born May 25, 1832; fruit dealer; died, unmarried, May 2, 1897. AARON NOURSE⁶; married Harriet Matilda Kimball Aug. 26, 1840; she died June 29, 1899; he died Aug. 2, 1902; children: 1. Elizabeth Prince⁷, born Nov. 11, 1842; died, unmarried, Sept. 10, 1920; 2. Catherine Elizabeth Ellison⁷, born March 4, 1847; 3. Cynthia B.⁷, born June 28, 1850; married William P. Upham Dec. 1, 1880; 4. *Henry Prince*⁷, born Feb. 22, 1862.

HENRY PRINCE NOURSE⁷; letter carrier; married Edith H. Scott Dec. 28, 1900; children: 1. Dorothy K.⁸, born June 1, 1901; 2. Harriet S.⁸, born Jan. 8, 1903; 3. Elizabeth F. P.⁸, born Jan. 1, 1905; 4. Harrie K.⁸, born March 11, 1908; died May 23, 1908; 5. Vesta S.⁸, born Jan. 3, 1911; 6. ———⁸ (twin), born April 27, 1917; died April 28, 1917; 7. ———⁸ (twin), born April 27, 1917; died May 3, 1917.

¹That part of Lynn which was set off to Reading is not included in the map. The towns between Merrimac and Piscataqua rivers constituted Norfolk County.

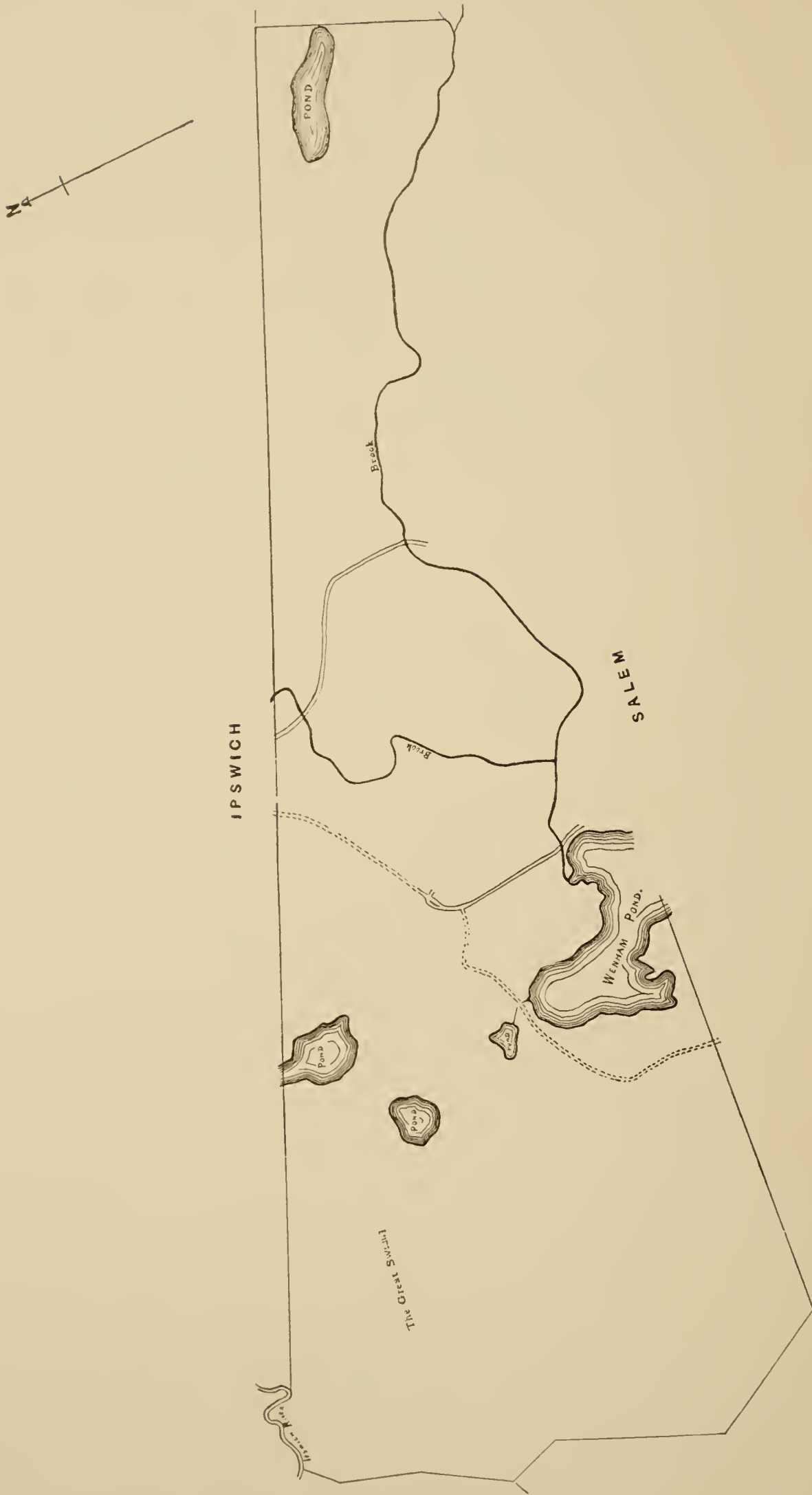
²He probably came from Rowley, and returned after a few months.

¹Zaccheus Curtis; planter; married Joanna ———; died in 1682; she survived him; children: 1. John; lived in Boxford and Topsfield; married Mary Look Dec. 4, 1672; died in the spring of 1718; she died in Topsfield Aug. 23, 1745, aged ninety-seven; had children; 2. Zaccheus; lived in Box-

Rowley Village (Boxford) in 1663. Savage says that he came from Downton, Wiltshire, England, in the *James*, sailing from Southampton in 1635. He was born about 1619. He brought his wife and children to Salem, and from thence went to Boxford.

From this time on, the town grew very slowly from English immigration, as the war was on, and ships were stopped leaving English ports. Not more than one or two new inhabitants a year were admitted by vote of the town.

ford; married, first, Mary Blake of Boxford Dec. 4, 1673; second, Abigail Stiles; died in the summer of 1712; had children; 3. Sarah; married James Scales of Rowley Nov. 7, 1677; 4. Mary, born in Gloucester May 12, 1659; married, first, John Herd; second, Jonathan Look Nov. 19, 1678; 5. Abigail; probably married James Mackcarwithe; 6. Ephraim; married Elizabeth Kilburn of Rowley; had children. See Records and Files of the Essex County Quarterly Courts, volume II, pages 131-134, for an interesting statement of Zaccheus Curtis' connection with Gloucester.



WENHAM.

CHAPTER IX.

WENHAM.



NEW locations were constantly sought by the people, not only for farms, but for villages. Wenham Lake, the tracts of meadow on Longham brook and Miles River and the plain but fertile land lying northerly of them, now the center of Wenham, were most attractive. The first large grant of land in that section was of two hundred acres made by the town of Salem to Francis Felmingham Jan. 15, 1637-8. This grant occupied the northerly side of Main Street, from the Hamilton town line to the meeting house, and bounded northeasterly by the Hamilton line to Pleasant Pond. But he never lived upon it. The next grant was of two hundred acres made by the town to Samuel Smith April 23, 1638. This grant was along the southeasterly side of Main Street. Upon this tract of land, Mr. Smith built a house, in which he lived until his decease in the late autumn of 1642. Before the town of Wenham was set off, the town of Salem granted to Richard Rayment one hundred acres of upland and ten acres of meadow, within the bounds of Wenham, on Pleasant Pond and the great swamp, the meadow being in the great meadow.

Upon appointment made by the town, the seven men met about establishing a village in that section Oct. 29, 1638. Apparently, the seven men decided that this was a matter for the whole town to act upon and at a general town meeting, Dec. 31, 1638, it was "Agreed and voted that there should be a Village graunted to Mr Phillips & his company vppon such conditions as the 7 men appointed for the town affaires should agree on."

This Mr. Phillips was Rev. John Phillips, rector of the parish church of Wrentham, Suffolkshire, England. He began his service at Wrentham in 1609, and continued therein until he was removed in 1638. He turned his attention to New England, where relatives and friends were living in Salem. His wife's

brother's widow, Mrs. Joanna Ames, had gone to Salem the year before. This was the widow of Dr. William Ames, who was born in Ipswich in 1576, and who entered Christ College in 1613. Doctor Ames preached in Holland, being rector of St. Mary's for a number of years, and intimate with Rev. John Robinson, the Pilgrim pastor, whose extreme views were greatly modified through this friendship. In 1622, Doctor Ames was appointed Professor of Divinity at the University of Franeker, in Holland. When he left this position, he found that he could not secure a living in England because he was a Nonconformist; and early in 1633 he became one of the ministers of the English Congregational Church in Rotterdam, in conjunction with Rev. Hugh Peter, who had been its pastor since 1623. Doctor Ames was there but a few months, dying Nov. 14th of the same year, at the age of fifty-six. His ability and fame as an instructor was so great that many came from Hungary, Poland and Russia to be educated under him; and his writings were held in the highest esteem. It was he who wrote "Puritanismus Anglicanus." Hugh Peter said of him: "Learned Amesius breathed his last into my bosom, who left his professorship in Friesland to live with me, became one of my Church's Independency, at Rotterdam. He was my colleague and chosen brother to the Church, where I was an unworthy pastor."

The second wife of Doctor Ames was Joanne Fletcher, by whom he had two sons and a daughter. They were kindly and bountifully relieved by the magistrates of Rotterdam. Soon after her husband's death, she left Holland and went to Yarmouth. Deciding to go to America, May 10, 1637, she was examined and given permission to sail to Salem to inhabit there. She was then fifty years of age, and her children were Ruth, aged eighteen, William, born about 1624, the eldest, and John, the youngest boy. Ruth married Edmund Angier of Cambridge, and became the mother of Rev. Samuel Angier; William¹ graduated at Harvard College in 1645, became a clergyman and returned to England to assist his uncle, Rev. John Phillips, in the ministry at Wrentham; and John probably lived with his brother in Wrentham. November 15th, after her arrival in Salem, the general court gave her forty pounds for her relief, calling her "the widow of Doctor Ames, of famous memory, who is deceased."

Thomas Paine of Wrentham, weaver, aged fifty, and his wife and six children were licensed to go to Salem¹ on the same day as Mrs. Ames. His wife Elizabeth, aged fifty-three, and

¹Rev. William Ames, jr., married, first, Susanna ———, who died Jan. 4, 1651-2; and, second, Elizabeth Wales Jan. 26, 1652-3. She died Feb. 19, 1682-3; and he died July 21, 1689, aged sixty-five.

their six children, Thomas, John, Marey, Elizabeth, Dorothy and Sarah. On the same day, also, John Thurston of Wrentham, carpenter, aged thirty, was licensed to go to Salem to live with his wife and children. Mrs.

Margaret Thurston was thirty-two years of age, and their children were Thom-

John Thurston

as and John. The widow of Benjamin Smith, a farmer of Northhall, in Wrentham, married, secondly, Henry Chickering, who after her death went to New England.

Rev. Mr. Phillips was deprived of his position as rector of the church in Wrentham Aug. 8, 1638, and he immediately left his homeland for Salem. His arrival was not unexpected. He was twice invited to become the pastor of the church in Dedham, but declined it each time, and remained in Salem.

"Mr. Phillips & company" undoubtedly consisted of Hugh Stacy, John Thurston, Thomas West, widow of Thomas Paine, Austin Kellham, Nicholas Pacy, Philemon Dickenson, Joseph Yongs, Henry Chickering, John Yongs, Mrs. Ames, William Browne, a shopkeeper, and himself.

At the general court Nov. 5, 1639, "Whereas the inhabitants of Salem have agreed to plant a village neare the ryver w^{ch} runs to Ipswich, it is ordered, that all the land neare their bounds, between Salem & the said ryver, not belonging to any other towne, or person, by any former grant, shall belong to the said village."

Jan. 21, 1639-40, the seven men of Salem received Mr. Phillips as an inhabitant and granted him and William Browne eighty acres of land apiece; to Mrs. Ames forty acres; to Henry Chickering and John Yongs fifty acres each; to Austin Killham, Nicholas Pacy, Philemon Dickenson and Joseph Yongs, thirty acres apiece; and to Hugh Stacy,² John Thurston,³ Thomas West⁴ and widow Paine twenty acres apiece. These grants were made upon condition that the grantees remain in this plantation and use the premises.

Mr. Phillips received a third invitation from the church at Dedham, and this time he accepted, Nov. 1, 1640, and removed thither. Henry Chickering went with him. Mr. Chickering owned the Nurse farm at Salem Village, and lived there in 1639,

¹See volume I, page 444.

²Hugh Stacy lived in Marblehead; children: 1. John, baptized Oct. 9, 1642; 2. Deborah, baptized Oct. 22, 1643; 3. John, baptized March 29, 1646; lived in Marblehead; married Agnes ———; died March 23, 1705; she died June 19, 1715; had children.

³John Thurston went to Newbury before 1641.

⁴Thomas West came in the Mary and John in 1634, and lived in Salem in 1644.

although he did not obtain a deed of it until he had removed to Dedham in 1641. It had been granted to Townsend Bishop, who conveyed it to Mr. Chickering Oct. 1, 1641; and Mr. Chickering conveyed it to Gov. John Endecott Oct. 4, 1648.¹ Mrs. Ames removed to Cambridge, where she died Dec. 21, 1644.

Mr. Phillips remained in Dedham only a short time; and Oct. 26, 1641, he and his wife sailed for England, experiencing a long and disastrous voyage. The next year he resumed his pastorate in Wrentham. In 1643, he was appointed one of the Assembly of Divines at Westminster. He was growing old and infirm, and his nephew, William Ames, was appointed as his colleague. Mr. Phillips died Sept. 2, 1660, aged about seventy-five.

Mr. Phillips married Elizabeth, sister of Doctor Ames, Jan. 6, 1611-2, at Wrentham. Doctor Ames had helped him in his studies, and influenced him in Puritanism.

Rev. Hugh Peter had friendly correspondence with Mr. Phillips, and the following is one of his letters:—

Dearly beloved Sir,

I have received yrs., and thanke you hartely for that you write concerning Mr. Ward; truly he hath done not well, making many suffer through his melancholly fitts; I pray wish him to come away; we haue a place or two (as I write) looke [ing] for good men, and this cuntry cannot supply [them].

Mr. Burgesse is answered, but how the bookes will come into men's hands is a question. Dr. Ames wilbe here settled the next moneth, and we shall desire both to see you. The Lord our God make us useful each to other, and both to the churches of God.

Good Sir, let us learne howe thinges goe with you the next visitation. We suppose things doe . . . The Lord in mercy doe you good in all things, in whome I am,

Yrs.,

HU. PETER

Rotterdam, 23 of June, 1633.

[Addressed:]

To the Reverend, my very worthy friend, Mr. Phillips, at Wrentham. these, &c., &c. Leave this letter with Abraham Wheeler's wyfe.

Mr. Phillips was a man of good learning, sound doctrine, consistent life and laborious useulness, "a very profitable and useful preacher," and obnoxious to Matthew Wren,² by whom he "was chased out of Old into New England for his Nonconformity." He came back, nevertheless.

¹See volume I, pages 289 and 334, for grant and plan of the farm.

²Bishop Wren was uncle of Sir Christopher Wren, England's famous architect.

Dec. 3, 1641, the selectmen granted to Phineas Fiske twenty acres of land "more at the village nere the pond."

Before his final departure for England, Rev. Hugh Peter went to Wenham Lake and standing upon a conical mound¹ on its shore about half-way between the highway and the point of land projecting into the lake, preached to the people who assembled there, from the text: John III: 23, "In Enon, near to Salim, for there was much water there." This little hillock was subsequently known as "Peter's pulpit," and it was leveled about 1850, for the site of the new ice-houses of Addison Gage & Company.

Aug. 24, 1639, the Salem church considered the matter of establishing three villages, at Danvers, Wenham and Manchester. The subject was brought up for discussion several times in subsequent church meetings.

Nov. 29, 1642, the town granted to Richard Pettingall² a ten acre lot at Enon, to Henry Haggett³, the cow keeper at Enon, a ten-acre lot there, and to George Ingersoll twenty acres to be laid out near his other land at Enon. Pettingall and Haggett lived there for some years. Jan. 23, 1642-3, the town granted to William Sawyer twenty acres of land and two acres of meadow, all at Enon. Two days later, the town granted to John Small ten acres of land at Enon on the west side of the great pond, to Robert Tuke five acres of land at the great pond, to Henry Reignolds and John Boorne five acres each at the great pond, and to William Allin, Robert Allin, Thomas West and Michael Sallowes ten acres each at the great pond. It was also ordered that Jeffry Massy should have at the great pond his twenty acres formerly granted.

Feb. 15, 1642-3, the town granted to Richard Prince, Hugh Stacy and Christopher Yonges a ten-acre lot each at Enon, providing they shall go to reside there within twelve months, to John White six acres of meadow there and to John Abby ten acres of land there, in exchange for ten acres near Bass River. Five days later, the selectmen granted to Thomas Skelling⁴ fifteen acres of

¹The town seal of Wenham preserves a view of this mound.

²Richard Pettingall married Joanna Ingersoll; lived in Wenham until he removed to Newbury, about 1650; children: 1. Richard, baptized in Salem Feb. 9, 1644-5; 2. Nathaniel, born Sept. 21, 1654, in Newbury; 3. ———, born Nov. 15, 1657; 4. ——— (son), born Jan. 16, 1659.

³Henry Haggett was born about 1594; married Ann ———; lived in Wenham; died Jan. 24, 1677-8; she survived him; children, living in 1676: 1. Henry; 2. Moses; 3. Mary; 4. Deliverance; 5. Hannah.

⁴Thomas Skelling probably lived here only a short time removing to Gloucester. His wife Deborah was born about 1623. They had two children: 1. Deborah, born Aug. 22, 1640; 2. Thomas, born Nov. —, 1643. A Thomas Skillin died at Salem Dec. 30, 1676, leaving a widow named Mary.

land at Enon. July 8, 1643, the town granted to Christopher Hersome¹ ten acres of land at Enon.

In preparation for the establishment of a village at Enon, the dividing line between Ipswich and Salem was determined by a committee of eight, four being appointed by each town. The representatives from Salem were Joseph Yongs, Roger Conant, Jeffry Massye and John Balch. The committee met and wrote their report March 27, 1643. This was allowed and recorded by the general court at its session May 10, 1643. The following is a copy of the agreement as thus recorded:—

The 27th of the First Month, 1643.

At a meeting by us whose names are underwritten, chosen by the towns of Salem & Ipswich, & haveing full power either towne to agree & determine of the bounds between the said townes, do in the behalfe of each towne agree & determine the same as followeth: Imprimis, wee conceive that the meeting houses of the two townes stand from each other north north east haulfe a point easterly, & south south west haulfe a point westerly; whether it bee exactly so or no, wee are fully agreed that the line betwixt the two townes shall run as followeth, vi:: From the bound tree near John Fairfeilds house west north west halfe a point northerly, & east South east haulfe a point southerly, as the trees are marked both wayes from the said bound tree.

WILLI: HUBBERD,
JOHN TUTTELL,
JOSEPH YONGS,
ROGER CONANT,
JEFFRY MASSYE,
JOHN BALCH,
THOM: HOWLETT,
JOHN GAGE.

Sept. 7, 1643, the general court established the town of Wenham by the following laconic vote: “ordered that Enon shallbee called Wennam. Wennam is granted to bee a towne, & hath liberty to send a deputy.”

The History of Wenham states that a little meeting house was erected in 1641, but a church was not organized until Oct. 10, 1644. John Fiske removed thither from Salem, and was its pastor until his removal to Chelmsford in 1655. An attempt to form a church early in 1644 did not succeed. In his Journal² Governor Winthrop wrote: “At Wenham there was a public assembly for gathering a church, but the magistrates and elders present, finding upon trial, that the persons appointed were not fit for foundation stones, they advised them not to pro-

¹Christopher Hersome lived in Wenham, and soon died. Widow Mary Hersome died there in 1646.

²Winthrop's Journal, volume II, page 177.

ceed, which they obeyed." Edward Johnson, in his Wonder-Working Providence of Sions Saviour¹, wrote, in 1654, as follows: Salem "was helpful to this her little sister, nourishing her up in her own bosom, till she came of age, being beneficial to her besides, in giving her a good portion of Land; . . . is very well watered, . . . the people live altogether upon husbandry . . . yet are they no great company, they were some good space of time there before they gathered into a Church-body, the godly and reverend Mr. John Fisk went thither with them, at first setting down as a planter among them, yet withal he became helpful in preaching the Word unto them when they were but a few in number, they afterward called him to the office of a Pastor."

The earliest town records of Wenham are practically lost. As far as town officers are concerned, William Fiske is the only one known at first. He was the first town clerk and constable. He also conducted the ordinary or public house. Joseph Batchelder was the first representative to the general court.

In preparation for the township, Samuel Smith and John Fiske, on whose land the first meeting house was probably built, each gave ten acres of their land to the new town that it might be divided into house lots, on which the new settlers could build and live, constituting a little hamlet, the center of which was where the public buildings now stand. The land was divided apparently into two-acre lots. The first of the town records is devoted to this. It reads as follows:—

The 2 day of ye first month 1642.

There is giuen vnto Wenham Twenty acres of ground being laid out of eyther side of y^e meeting house. Ten acres giuen by M^r Smith out of his fearme & laid out by him begining wth the bounds at y^e vpper end of Phinehas Fiske Lott & soe to y^e swampe; & the other Ten acres giuen by M^r John ffiske being laid out Joyneing to it on y^e other s^d of y^e meeting house:

It is ordered & Agreed vpon at this o^r meetinge y^t such as haue any ground graunted of that w^{ch} is giuen to y^e Towne w^{ch} lyes about y^e meetinge house, such shall Come & liue vpon it themselues, & if not to lay it downe to y^e plantation, & if any shall build vpon it &c. & after remoue themselues & make sale of the same it is ordered that the Plantation shall haue the first pfare & giue there Answere in a short time before they make sale of it to any other.

12 Day of y^e 3^{mo}: 1643.

There is graunted Two Acres of Ground by y^e Meeting house to M^r Hubbard for y^e easem^t of his family vpon y^e Conditions specified in y^e former Order. . . .

¹Wonder-Working Providence of Sions Saviour, page 189.

4 Day of y^e 10^{mo}: 1643.

Esdras Read is graunted Two Acres by y^e m^eeting house, according to y^e fformer ordered specifed

The 23 Day of y^e 4^{mo}: 1644

Richard Goldsmith haue two Acres Graunted by the meeting house to dispose of w^{ch} way he please.

Christopher Yongs haue Two acres graunted by y^e meeting house according to y^e order made y^e 2 day of y^e 1^{mo}: 1642.

The division line between Salem and Wenham was not agreed upon until 1667. At first the natural division was where no one lived, and that is, it ran through the woods west of the pond and east of it through meadow land. The agreement made in 1667 as follows:—

A true Record of an agrement of a boundary betwene Salem & wenham the 29 Imo. 1667.

we whose names are here underwritten being met together to agree of bounds betwene Salem & wenham Eastward from ye great pond doe determine as followeth yt ye brook which Cumeth out of ye great pond shall be ye bounds betweene ye towns aforesaid untill it meeteth with that brook which cometh from longham & so taking ye brook for the bounds to the eastward sid of richard Dodges farme Leaving out the medow to Salem & exempting them from all rates & dues & demands to wenham & from thence by ye edge of ye meadow called longham¹ to ye uper end of sd medow at turnup swamp: to ye east end of the pond, our neibours who have medow in longham buting upon our comon shall have trees to fence their medow & liberty for carting.

CHARLES GOTT
RICHARD KEMBALL
THOMAS FFISK

mark
WILLIAM X DIXSIE
SAMUELL CORNING
JOHN RAYMENT
HUMPHREY WOODBERRY
IOHN WEST w his mark
IOHN PATCH 2 his mark

Some years after Beverly was set off from Salem, the line between Beverly and Wenham was settled practically as it is now. Wenham's territory thus became considerably larger than it was at first.

¹The first reference, in 1656, to Longham is that of a place called long ham. It is possible that the name arose from the original shape of the territory of the town of Wenham, which was that of an elongated ham. In this agreement it is not applied to the brook, but to "ye meadow called longham." As ham means a village or town in the Saxon language, long ham applies, certainly, to a town of this great length, but very narrow.

CHAPTER X.

MONSIEUR CHARLES DE LA TOUR.



At a meeting of the seven men, Jan. 8, 1643-4, there was granted to Thomas Goldsmith¹ all the waste land between the water side and his ten-acre lot on the north side, reserving the way; and to John Simonds all the waste land between the lots of Hugh Laskine and Stukly Wesket and the water side, excepting the highway. There were also granted to William Lord four acres of land, "as now laid out," near the swamp in the South field, adjoining to the three acres Mr. Friend bought of Richard Graves; to Michael Sallows a ten-acre lot in the place formerly John Abys; and to Thomas Gardner a parcel of land to set a house upon near the old mill on the ten-acre lot side. Francis Johnson was given authority to exchange six or seven acres of his farm upon the plains, and provided that there should be a convenient cart way to the farm. At this meeting, Joseph, son of George Harris, deceased, was apprenticed to John Thorndike and George Harris, aged about eight years, to Thomas Goldsmith.

At their meeting, February 5th, it was ordered that the lots that are laid out next to Goodman Leech's, at the great hill, as namely, Jacob Barney's and Richard Ingersoll's, should all determine with a straight line, at the top of the hill at the marked tree where Laurence Leech's lot ends. There was also granted to Ralph Fogg the swamp next to William Lord's ground, and to John Endecott the land at the head of the river between Mr. Read's and Mr. Endecott's farm, excepting the salt marsh granted to Mr. Read, and being the land which was granted to Richard Norman and others, whose proprieties Mr. Endecott had bought. It was ordered that Margaret Page be sent to the jail in Boston as a lazy, idle and loitering person, where she might be set at

¹Thomas Goldsmith lived in Southampton, L. I., from 1641 to 1673, except in 1644, when he was in Salem for a short while.

work for her living; but she did not go to jail, as soon after Thomas Browning agreed to keep her at work, the town to pay him fifty shillings a year. In the winter of 1646-7, Goodwife Oliver agreed to keep her for the same price, and the next September the seven men concluded to send her to England in Mr. Willoughby's ship, or in the ship that sails next after his. This was done, probably, as she is not again mentioned in the records of the town or county.

At the general town meeting, held Feb. 26, 1643-4, the country's eleven muskets, which had been sent to Salem were distributed as follows: one to Lieutenant Davenport, one to Thomas Lathrop, seven to John Holgrave and two to John Endecott. There were four and a half barrels of powder in the hands of several men in the town in the winter of 1651-2, and to Captain Hathorne the town ordered to be transferred three barrels of it, and five hundred pounds of lead and seventy-five pounds of match.

March 4, 1643-4, the seven men made various grants of land,—to Michael Shaflin about three or four poles of ground before the door of his dwelling house, towards the swamp; to John Moore about a quarter of an acre of marsh near Darby's fort; to Henry Harwood about three quarters of an acre of land, being a little neck at the end of his ten-acre lot; to Daniel

Daniel Rumball

Rumball¹ eighty acres of land; to Henry Batholomew eight or ten acres of land, next to Joseph

Boys' lot, near the Bass River head; and to Richard Gardner twenty acres of land at Jeffrey's Creek. There was granted to Robert Fuller twenty acres of land at Jeffry's Creek, if he dwell there, otherwise to desert the land. He probably went away without coming into its possession. Jeffry Massy and Peter Palfry were ordered to view the ground which Richard Hollingworth desires to set a workhouse on.

At the session of the general court, March 7, -643-4, Emanuel Downing and William Hathorn were present as deputies from Salem. Marblehead had leave granted to fortify itself, by a breastwork or otherwise, and have two guns delivered unto them, with convenient ammunition suitable thereto. "In regard of the defect of freemen at Marblehead, it is ordered that the inhabi-

¹Daniel Rumball, born about 1600, was a blacksmith, and his homestead occupied the northern end of the square between Elm and Walnut streets, on the southern side of Essex Street, now included in Hawthorne Boulevard. He married Sarah, widow of Samuel Smith in 1643, and she was his wife in 1675. His daughter Alice (by a former wife) married William Curtis. Mr. Rumball died in or soon after 1682, when he was upwards of eighty years of age.

tants of Salem shall have liberty to comend some honest and able man, though hee be not a freeman, and the deputy governor shall have power (if hee thinke him fit) to give him the oath for constable of that place, to continue till this court shall take further order." Accordingly the town of Salem chose David Curwithin¹ constable for Marblehead, and he was sworn.

David Curwithin

The first pound keeper in Salem named in the records was Theophilus Downing, who was chosen by the town March 25, 1644, and he was allowed two pennies each for impounding hogs, goats and great cattle. In 1646, Robert Adams held this office. The second pound in Salem was on the western side of the Common, opposite Brown Street. The pound of the North field, which was there as early as 1660, was on the westerly side of North Central Street, opposite Gardner Street, in Peabody, and is still there.

The thatched roofs of houses were so liable to catch fire, that, March 25, 1644, the town ordered that every inhabitant in the town should procure a ladder for his house. In 1677, this order had become greatly neglected, and the selectmen renewed it and declared that a sufficient ladder should be procured for each house by the householder within a month. On the same day Sept. 8, 1677, the selectmen ordered that Bartholomew Gedney be appointed to get a hatch made for the meeting house. This was another provision on account of fires, probably, as it might be easier to reach the roof, in cases of fire, from the inside than from the outside of the building.

At a meeting of the committee of militia, commissioners and selectmen of Salem, Aug. 13, 1679, "Whereas by sad experience the want of suitable persons (before appointed) to manage matters in case of fire, in other places hath been exceeding prejudicial, it is therefore ordered and we do hereby appoint and empower the selectmen of the town for the time being, also Mr. Bartholmew Gedney and Mr. Samuel Gardner, sr., to manage and act in all matters therein; and all or any of them as occasion shall be have hereby full power to require suitable assistance when any fires may break out; and to give direction what shall be done, either for blowing up of houses or pulling them down or whatsoever else according to their best discretion may be necessary."

¹David Corwithey, sr., lived in Salem until 1663, when he removed to Boston, where he was living in 1665. He lived in the autumn of 1649 in a small house, at 20 Derby Street, belonging to Joseph Younges, and, September 24th, Mr. Younges deeded the property to him (Essex Registry of Deeds, book 1, leaf 6, book 2, leaf 64). His daughter Mary married William Chichester, who, in 1658, left the country.

On the same day, the selectmen also ordered that there should be provided, upon the town's account, so many hooks and instruments as may be necessary in case of fire; and William Browne, sr., William Browne, jr., and Edmond Batter were desired to provide for the use of the town two or three dozen of cedar buckets which may be in readiness for use in case of fire until leather buckets may be procured.

March 25, 1644, the town made several changes in the surveyors of fences in some of the fields.¹ Thomas West and Thomas Goldsmith were chosen in the room of Jeffry Massy and Henry Skerry; Samuel Archer and William Allen were appointed in the mill field; and John Burroughs in the field where George Williams "is," in the place of Thomas Weeks. April 7, 1645, the town appointed John Gedney and Thomas Watson overseers of the fences in Mr. Norris' field; Henry Skerry and John Borne in the two fields next to Jeffry Massy; Mr. Curwin and Jeffry Massy in the field next to the meeting house; and Richard Prince and Thomas Edwards of the field where Richard Prince dwells.²

¹See volume I, page 240.

²Jan. 26, 1645-6, the town voted that the seven men should survey the fences. The selectmen performed this duty until May 7, 1656, when they renewed appointments of surveyors: Philip Cromwell and Edmond Batter for North neck and South field; and William Flint and Henry Skerry for the town. April 23, 1657, William Flint and Richard Adams for South field; Thomas Gardner and John Porter for North field; Mr. Batter and John Nayle in the town from William Browne's to the bridge; and Thomas Roots and Daniel Rumball from Mr. Browne's to the Neck and the ferry. March 22, 1657-8, Robert Hascall, John Rayment and Joseph Harris for Cape Ann Side; and the general field from Bass River to Mackerel Cove, Rial Side and elsewhere on Cape Ann Side; Richard Bishop and John Neale from William Browne's to the bridge; Jeffry Massy and Daniel Rumball from William Browne's to Mordechai Crevat's; Samuel Archard and Richard Adams for South field; and Thomas Gardner and Samuel Ebourne for North neck, the glasshouse fences and the lots from Thomas Gouldthwaite's to Michael Shafflin's. April 4, 1659, Joseph Roots and Thomas Pigden for Cape Ann Side; Thomas Gardner and Joseph Boyse for North neck and the glasshouse field; John Pickering and Thomas Barnes for South neck; Philip Veren and Thomas Robins for the town from the bridge to William Browne's orchard; and Thomas Roots and Francis Skerry from the orchard downwards to the ferry and Crevet's. March 14, 1659-60, Ensign Dixie, Peter Wolfe and Zachariah Herrick for Cape Ann Side; Henry Cook and Samuel Ebourne for North neck and about the glasshouse and Thomas Gouldthwaite's field and up to Michael Shafflin's; Nathaniel Pickman and John Neale for South field; Sergeant Hale and Richard Bishop for the town from William Browne's to the bridge; and John Williams, cooper, and Francis Nurse for the other part of the town. April 22, 1661, Nathaniel Felton and John Pease for North neck, glasshouse field, etc.; Mr. Price and Richard Adams for South field; Jeffery Massy and Henry Skerry for the town; and Ensign Dixie and Benjamin Balch for Cape Ann Side. April 7, 1662, Nathaniel Felton and Anthony Buxton for North field and glasshouse field; William

April 1, 1644, the town gave George Emery permission to fence in the highway, leaving a "stile gate" to the water between

Flint and John Pickering for South field; Samuel Archard and Thomas Roots for the Neck from the bridge; and Joseph Rootes and John Raiment for Cape Ann Side. March 24, 1662-3, William Flint and Henry Bartholmew for South field; Thomas Rix and John Massey from the bridge to the lower end of the Neck; Lt. Dixey and Humphrey Woodburie on Cape Ann Side; and Anthony Buxton and Samuel Eburne for North field and to Captain Trask's. March 21, 1663-4, Henry Skerry and Thomas Rootes from the bridge to the end of the Neck; William Flint and Richard Adams for South field; Nathaniel Felton and John Southwick for the North field and from Michael Shafflin's to Captain Trask's; and Osmund Trask and John Patch on Cape Ann Side. April 5, 1665, Philip Cromwell and John Ruck for South field; William Flint and Daniel Rumble for North field and beyond the bridge; Mr. Batters for Bass River; and Roger Haskell and Joseph Harris. March 6, 1665-6, William Flint and Daniel Rumble for South field; John Massy and Henry Skerry, jr., to the bridge; Nathaniel Felton and Samuel Ebern, sr., for North field; Robert Hibburd and John Lovett, jr., for Cape Ann Side; and Richard Leech at the Farms. March 22, 1666-7, George Kezar and Richard Prince for South field; Thomas Roots and William Curtis for the town; Thomas Picton and John Grover for Cape Ann Side; John Burton and Isaac Cook for North field and glasshouse field and about there; and Nathaniel Putnam for the Farms. March 20, 1667-8, William Flint and John Keiney for South field; John Pease and John Tomkins for North field, glasshouse field and thereabouts; John Ruck and Samuel Williams for the town; and John Blacke, jr., and Lot Conant for Cape Ann Side. March 19, 1668-9, William Flint and John Pickering for South field and from the meeting up to the bridge or causeway; Nathaniel Felton and Samuel Ebourne, sr., from the bridge upwards, glasshouse, North neck and thereabouts; and John Williams, cooper, and Samuel Archard from the meeting downwards to Mordechai Crevet's. March 14, 1669-70, John Reeves and Edward Flint for South field and from the meeting house upward to the causeway near John Norton's; Samuel Gaskill and Hugh Jones about North neck and from the causeway to the glasshouse, etc.; and Thomas Roots and John Massy from the meeting house to Mordechai's at the lower end of the town. March 6, 1670-1, Henry Skerry, jr., and Jeremy Neal from the meeting house to the lower end of the town; William Flint and John Marston, jr., from the meeting house to Strongwater brook; William Trask and Isaac Cooke for North field; and John Pickering and Nicholas Maning for South field. March 18, 1671-2, Edmond Batter and Philip Cromwell for South field; Samuel Gardner and Thomas Roots in the town from the meeting house to the lower end of the town; William Lake and Edward Flint from the meeting house to Strongwater brook; and Serg. Nathaniel Felton and Hugh Jones for North field and Strongwater brook to Samuel Ebourne's and upwards. April 3, 1673, John Massy and Jeremiah Neale for South field; George Keisour and Nicholas Maninge for North field; Josiah Southwick and Samuel Gaskill for the glasshouse field and thereabouts; and Francis Skerry and Stephen Hasket from the causeway to the end of the town to Mordechai Crevet's. Jan. 20, 1673-4, John Pickering and Samuel Gardner, jr., for North field; Jos. Buffum and Thomas Robins for South field; Daniel Southwick and Joseph Boyce, jr., for the glasshouse field and thereabouts; and Philip Cromwell and Thomas Roots from the town bridge to Mordechai Crefford's neck. March 15, 1674-5, Nathaniel Felton and Anthony Buxton for North field; Edward

the lots of Robert Goodale and John Borne. On the twenty-

Flint and Joshua Buffum for South field; John Loomis and Samuel Gaskin for the glasshouse and thereabouts; and Thomas Gardner and William Curtice from the town bridge to Mordykoy's neck. April 15, 1676, Ens. John Pickering and Thomas Flint, jr., for South field; Marshall Scerry and John Pease, sr., for North field; Joseph Boyce, jr., and Daniel Southwick without the North neck; and Richard Sibley and Edmund Bridges from the town bridge by Goodman Meacham's to the lower end of the town. March 16, 1676-7, Samuel Gardner, sr., and Jeremiah Neal for North field; John Horn, jr., Caleb Buffum and Joseph Prince for South field; Thomas Robbins and John Simpson from Trask's about North neck; Joseph Horn and John Massey from the bridge to the lower end of the town. April 19, 1678, James Simonds and John Pease, sr., for North field; James Poland and John Holmes for South field; John Traske and Joseph Boyce, jr., without the bridge; and John Williams, cooper, and Christopher Bavage for the town within the bridge. March 17, 1678-9, Eleazer Gedney and Isaac Cooke for North field; Edward Flint and John Marston, jr., for South field; William Trask and John Loomis without the bridge; and John Rogers and Jeremiah Rogers within the bridge. April 10, 1679, John Bullock and John Marston, jr., for South field. March 18, 1679-80, Eleazer Gedney and William Trask for North field; Richard Croad and Peter Chevers within the bridge in the town; Samuel Gaskin and Daniel Southwick without the bridge; and Philip Cromwell, John Pickering and Lt. Jeremiah Neale for South field. March 9, 1680-1, Lt. John Pickering, Manases Marston and Benjamin Gerrish for South field; Robert Fuller and William Trask for North field; John Williams, cooper, and John Cook for the town; Samuel Aburne, jr., and Thomas Tiley for glasshouse and without the bridge. March 27, 1682, Lt. John Pickering, Joseph Hardy and Thomas Maul for South field; Christopher Babidge and John Marston for the town; and William Osborne and John Bleven for glasshouse. March 19, 1682-3, Lt. Pickering. Joseph Hardy and Benjamin Browne for South field; Joshua Buffum, Hugh Jones and John Wallers (Watters?) for North field; Jeremiah Mecham, sr., Joshua Buffum, William Curtice and John Robinson for the town, glasshouse field and without the bridge. March 11, 1683-4, John Ruck, Lt. Pickering and Robert Kitchin for South field; Lt. Felton, John Tomkins, Caleb Buffum and Peter Chevers for North field; Edward Flint, Caleb Buffum, John Williams and Peter Chevers for the town; and Eleazer Geoyls and John King for glasshouse and without the bridge. March 17, 1684-5, Isaac Cook, William Osborne, William Pinson and George Lockiar for North field; John Hoams and John Pickering, jr., for South field; Samuel Gaskin, sr., and George Lockiar for glasshouse and thereabouts. April 10, 1686, Caleb Buffum, Joshua Buffum, Thomas Maule and Peter Chevers for North field; John Crumwell and John Marston for South field; Henry Skerry, Edward Flint, Joseph Neale and Christopher Babage for the town within the bridge; and Josiah Southwick and Samuel Ebborn for the glasshouse field and thereabouts. April 11, 1687, the same persons the proprietors chose for North field and South field; John Marcy, Thomas Ives, Thomas Flint and John Simson for the town within the bridge; and William Traske and George Locker for glasshouse field and thereabouts. April 23, 1688, Isaac Foote and Caleb Buffum for North field; Lt. John Pickren and Samuel Archer for South field; Ens. John Clyford and John Crumwell for the town within the bridge; and John Traske and Samuel Gaskin for glasshouse field and without the bridge. March 25, 1689, Caleb Buffum, John Addams and William Pinson for the town within the bridge; Eleazer

ninth of the month, ¹Guido Bayly¹ was granted "so much of the swamp that lies along by his lot over at Cape Anne's Side as he can rid within three years next ensuing"; and ordered that Henry Bartholomew, Thomas Lothrop, William Dixy and George Emery should lay out the places where fences are to be made on Cape Ann Side. June 13th, the town voted that the South field should be fenced.

William Hathorne was the first speaker of the general court, being first elected in May, 1644. He also filled the position in 1646, 1648, 1650, 1657 and 1660. He was a distinguished man in Boston as well as in Salem, and Winthrop apparently became a little jealous of him.

May 29, 1644, the general court ordered that William Hathorne be released from "the ordinary trainings of eight times a year under Captain Traske, in regard of many country occasions in which he is imployed."

In the general court, June 16, 1644, "In consideration of the great default and neglect of the inhabitants of Marble Head, in not exercising themselves in martial discipline,—It is ordered, that the inhabitants of Marble Head shall make choice of some one of them who shall exercise the rest, that they may not be to seek when special occasions call for their assistance."

John Porter,² born about 1595, probably came from Dorsetshire, England, and settled in Hingham, Mass., about 1635. He bought the Skelton grant of land in Salem, now including Danversport, May 10, 1643, and



Giles and George Lockiar for glasshouse field and thereabouts; and the men chosen by the proprietors of the North field and South field for those fields.

¹Guydo Bayley was a gardener and lived on Bass River Side, now Beverly, until 1652, when he removed to Bridgewater, where he became a yeoman; married, first, Elizabeth ———; second, Ruth ———; died in 1700; she was his widow in 1703; children: 1. Elizabeth, born July 27, 1642; 2. Joseph, born Nov. 6, 1644; 3. Guido; died in 1687 or 1688; 4. Mary; married, first, ——— Randall; second, Isaac Leonard; 5. Ruth; married Ebenezer Hill in 1684; 6. Elizabeth; married James Harris in 1692-3.

²JOHN PORTER¹; yeoman; wife Mary; died Sept. 6, 1676; she died Feb. 6, 1683-4; children: 1. John², born about 1618; mariner; died, unmarried, March 16, 1683-4; 2. Samuel²; lived in Wenham; mariner; married Hannah Dodge; died in 1660; she married, secondly, Thomas Woodbury Dec. 2, 1661; had children; 3. Joseph², baptized in Hingham Sept. 9, 1638; 4. Benjamin², baptized in Hingham Nov. —, 1639; yeoman; died, unmarried, Jan. 7, 1722-3; 5. Israel², baptized in Hingham Feb. 12, 1643-4; 6. Mary², baptized in Salem Oct. 12, 1645; married Thomas Gardner; 7. Jonathan², baptized in Salem March 12, 1647-8; died young; 8. Sarah², baptized in Salem June 3, 1649; married Daniel Andrews.

moved to Salem the next spring. He purchased the Sharp, Downing and other grants, and became the largest land holder in

JOSEPH PORTER²; yeoman; married Anne Hathorn Jan. 27, 1664-5; she died about 1712; he died Dec. 12, 1714; children: 1. Joseph³, born Oct. 23, 1665; died young; 2. Ann³, born Sept. 5, 1667; married Samuel Wallis of Ipswich July 7, 1696; 3. Samuel³, born Aug. 4, 1669; 4. Nathaniel³, born March 8, 1670-1; lived in Topsfield; farmer and tanner; married Eleanor Dorman of Topsfield Dec. 16, 1701; she died Jan. 5, 1752; he died March 8, 1758; had children; 5. Mary³, born Dec. 18, 1672; married William Dodge of Beverly Dec. 12, 1689; 6. William³, born Aug. 30, 1674; lived in Topsfield and Norton; married Phebe Dorman Dec. 25, 1706; died in Norton May 7, 1732; she died in Braintree June 21, 1736; had children; 7. Eliezer³ (twin), born May 23, 1676; died young; 8. Abigail³ (twin), born May 23, 1676; married Samuel Symonds of Boxford June 8, 1698; 9. Hephzibah³, born April 11, 1678; married Joseph Andrews of Boxford June 7, 1711; 10. Joseph³, born April —, 1681; 11. Ruth³, baptized Sept. —, 1682; married Jesse Dorman Nov. 26, 1707; 12. Mehitable³, baptized Sept. —, 1682; married Thomas Cummings of Boxford March 20, 1705-6. CAPT. ISRAEL PORTER²; yeoman; had the homestead; married Elizabeth Hathorne Nov. 20, 1672; died Nov. —, 1706; she survived him; children: 1. Elizabeth³, born Oct. 2, 1673; married Joseph Putnam; 2. Sarah³, born Aug. 24, 1675; married Abel Gardner; 3. John³, born Sept. 24, 1677; mariner; married Elizabeth Fisk July 11, 1706, in Boston; lived in Boston; died in 1715; she survived him; 4. Ginger³, born Dec. 8, 1679; married Samuel Leach Sept. 25, 1699; 5. Mary³, born Sept. 22, 1681; died June 28, 1682; 6. Israel³, born April 4, 1683; 7. Benjamin³, born Sept. 4, 1685; died Aug. 22, 1691; 8. Anna³, born June 17, 1687; 9. William³, born Feb. 12, 1688-9; 10. Benjamin³, born May 17, 1693.

SAMUEL PORTER³; lived in the Danvers part of Salem; husbandman; married Love Howe; died before June 25, 1750; she died in 1762; children: 1. Samuel⁴; yeoman; living in 1738; 2. Eleazer⁴; 3. Lydia⁴; married John Putnam. JOSEPH PORTER³; yeoman; married Mary Bayley May 3, 1709; died Dec. 8, 1714; she married, secondly, George Bixby Aug. 6, 1718; children: 1. Joseph⁴, baptized Aug. 13, 1710; 2. Priscilla⁴, baptized May 25, 1712; married Thomas Flint of Falmouth Dec. 7, 1732; 3. Mary⁴, baptized May 29, 1715; married Jonathan Prince Aug. 24, 1732. ISRAEL PORTER³; mariner and yeoman; married Sarah Putnam Sept. 12, 1706; died in 1729; she died in 1743; children: 1. Ginger⁴, baptized Aug. 17, 1707; married Elisha Hutchinson; 2. Sarah⁴, baptized Feb. 10, 1709-10; died young; 3. John⁴, baptized March 12, 1712-3; yeoman; died, unmarried, in 1742; 4. Israel⁴, baptized June 25, 1716; 5. Elizabeth⁴, baptized April 26, 1719; married John Andrews; 6. Anna⁴, baptized Sept. 16, 1722; married — Faxon; 7. Mary⁴, baptized April 24, 1726; married Joseph Putnam. WILLIAM PORTER³; yeoman; married, first, Edith Herrick Feb. 1, 1708-9; removed to Beverly; she died in Beverly March 13, 1723-4; married, second, Mary (Batchelder), widow of John Kettle of Beverly Dec. 8, 1725; probably removed to Woburn; she was his wife in 1750; died in 1755; children: 1. Israel⁴, baptized Aug. 20, 1710; married Abigail Batchelder of Beverly in 1741; lived in Wenham; probably died in Beverly in 1744; 2. William⁴, baptized June 21, 1713; 3. Benjamin⁴, baptized June 19, 1715; lived in Beverly and Danvers; married, first, Hannah Giles April 27, 1737; she died in 1750; married, second, Anna —; 4. Joseph⁴; tailor; lived in Beverly and Bedford; married Bethiah Batchelder April 21, 1741; 5. Anna⁴; 6. Josiah⁴; married Sarah Waterman; had children; 7. Jonathan⁴, baptized Nov. 4, 1733; 8. Edith⁴, baptized Nov. 4, 1733; 9. Nathan⁴, baptized Oct. 3,

Salem. In 1647, upon the southern end of the Sharp grant, on Danvers River, near Bay View Avenue, he built a house in

1736; 10. George⁴, baptized Aug. 13, 1738; 11. Ginger⁴, baptized Oct. 4, 1741; 12. Mary⁴, baptized Feb. 5, 1745. BENJAMIN PORTER³; husbandman; married Hannah Endecott April 3, 1712; died in 1727; children: 1. John⁴, born about 1713; 2. Hannah⁴, born in 1715; married Joseph Fowle; 3. Benjamin⁴, born about 1717; 4. Samuel⁴, born about 1721; lived in Salem; yeoman; 5. Bartholomew⁴, born about 1726; lived in Salem; yeoman and tailor.

ELEAZER PORTER⁴; yeoman; lived in the Danvers part of Salem; married, first, Mary ———; second, Abigail Waters; she was his wife in 1741; he died in 1756; children: 1. David⁵, baptized May 9, 1731; 2. Asa⁵, baptized Jan. 26, 1734-5; died in 1757; 3. Mary⁵, baptized Aug. 22, 1736; married Tarrant Putnam; 4. Abigail⁵, baptized Dec. 17, 1738; 5. Samuel⁵, baptized Jan. 30, 1742-3; H. C., 1763; lawyer; lived in Ipswich and Salem; loyalist; died in London, unmarried, in 1798. JOSEPH PORTER⁴; lived in Salem Village; yeoman; married Mary Dorman of Topsfield May 25, 1738; died Feb. —, 1746-7; she married, secondly, Joseph Perkins of Topsfield March 9, 1749; children: 1. Elizabeth⁵, baptized May 14, 1732; died young; 2. Joseph⁵, baptized March 16, 1734-5; died young; 3. Lydia, baptized July 17, 1737; 4. Mary⁵, born Feb. 28, 1738-9; died April 24, 1739; 5. Joseph⁵, born April 4, 1740; lived in Danvers; revolutionary soldier; married, first, Sarah Putnam; she died Sept. 10, 1766; married, second, Elizabeth Herrick in 1767; died Feb. 12, 1805; 6. Amos⁵, baptized Nov. 29, 1741; 7. Mary⁵, baptized April 6, 1746. ISRAEL PORTER⁴; yeoman; lived in the Danvers part of Salem; married Mary Batchelder of Wenham Dec. 28, 1737; died in 1746; she married, secondly, Jonathan Kettle Aug. 27, 1747; child: 1. Sarah⁵, born Aug. 26, 1739; married Samuel Williams. WILLIAM PORTER⁴; yeoman; married Lydia Batchelder July 5, 1733; lived in Salem and Beverly and removed to Wenham about 1760; she was his wife in 1750; children: 1. Ebenezer⁵, baptized in Beverly Oct. 8, 1738; 2. Asa⁵, baptized in Beverly July 13, 1740; married Mary Batchelder of Salem April 14, 1768; 3. Lydia⁵, baptized in Beverly Dec. 26, 1742; 4. Anna⁵, baptized in Beverly Jan. 12, 1746; 5. Elizabeth⁵, baptized in Salem Village June 12, 1748; 6. William⁵, baptized in Salem Village April 21, 1751; lived in Wenham; married Hannah Munroe of Lexington in 1774; had children; 7. Jonathan⁵ baptized in Beverly Oct. 14, 1753; 8. Asahel⁵. JOHN PORTER⁴; innholder and yeoman; lived in Danvers; married Apphia Putnam (published Oct. 27, 1733); died in 1759; she married, secondly, Asa Perley of Boxford Aug. 12, 1762; children: 1. Elizabeth⁵, baptized Oct. 12, 1735; married Asa Leach of Beverly; 2. John⁵, baptized June 13, 1736; lived in Danvers; married Hannah ———; died in 1774; had children; 3. Benjamin⁵, baptized Oct. 22, 1738; potter; lived in Danvers; removed to Wiscasset, Me., in 1790; married Eunice Osborne; died in Wiscasset in 1805; had children; 4. Abigail⁵, baptized March 22, 1740-1; 5. Ezra⁵, baptized July 1, 1744; lived in Danvers; married Mehitable ———; died in 1766; 6. Nathan⁵; cooper and mariner; married Lydia Goodridge March 23, 1773; soldier of the Revolution; 7. Anna⁵; married Eliphalet Perley of Boxford Aug. 12, 1762; 8. Apphia⁵, baptized Oct. 20, 1754; 9. Mary⁴, baptized May 30, 1756. BENJAMIN PORTER⁴; potter and yeoman; lived in Danvers; married, first, Eunice Nurse Dec. 13, 1739; second, Abigail Osborn April 21, 1778; died June 10, 1784; she died Feb. 14, 1817; children: 1. Benjamin⁵, born Oct. 28, 1740; 2. Hannah⁵, born March 29, 1742; 3. Eunice⁵, born Sept. 22, 1744; married Nathaniel Webb; 4. Israel⁵, born Oct. 3, 1746; married Huldah Smith; 5. Francis⁵, born Sept. 22, 1748; lived



JOHN PORTER HOUSE

which he afterwards resided. It faced the south, and was two stories high, with a leanto. The front door was midway of the house, and on either side, in both stories, were large rooms, each having two windows in front. There was a window over the front door, in the upper hall. The chimney was immense, and furnished large fireplaces in each of the front rooms, upstairs and down. The kitchen fireplace was also great. There was a door in each end of the house, and on the eastern end a small entry. Each gable contained a small window, which admitted light to the attic, and each room in the main part of the house had a window at the ends of the house. The kitchen also had a window at each end of the leanto. The walls of the front and ends of the house were lined with brick to its full height. The well was located near the northeastern corner of the house. The above picture of this ancient house was drawn from memory by Mrs. Mary H. Dodge of Washington, D. C., soon after it was burned.

John Porter lived here until his death, Sept. 6, 1676; and in his will gave the house to his son Israel, who lived in it until his

in Danvers; married Martha Gott of Wenham April 12, 1772; 6. Sarah⁵, born Aug. 11, 1752; married John Page; 7. James⁵, born Jan. 13, 1755; 8. Peter⁵, born May 9, 1757; 9. Huldah⁵, born March 20, 1759; 10. Allen⁵, born May 13, 1761; 11. Phebe⁵, born March 10, 1763.

death, in November, 1706. In the will of Israel Porter, he devised it to his son Benjamin, who died in December, 1726. In his will, Benjamin Porter gave it to his sons John and Benjamin, and John released his interest in the premises to his brother Benjamin April 8, 1741. Benjamin Porter lived in the house until his death, June 10, 1794; and about two years afterward his family conveyed the house and land to Caleb Oakes of Danvers. Mr. Oakes fell from his barn window Sept. 19, 1831, and died in an hour or two. He left three children, and by mesne conveyances the estate passed to Alfred Trask of Danvers July 6, 1849, and while it was owned by Mr. Trask it was destroyed by fire Sept. 19, 1865.

At a town meeting, July 7, 1644, it was "Ordered that twoe be appointed euery Lords day to walke forth in the time of Gods worshippe, to take notice of such as either lye about the meeting howse without attending to the word or ordinances, or that lye at home or in the fields, without giuing good account thereof, and to take the names of such psons to present them to the Magistrate, whereby they may be accordinglie pceeded against. The names of such as are ordered to doe this seruice are for the first day Mr. Stileman Phillip Verin Junior 2d day Philip Verin Senior Helier Verin 3. Mr. Batter Joshua Verin 4th Mr Johnson Mr. Clark 5th Mr. Downing Robert Molton Senr 6th Robert Molton Junior Richard Ingersoll 7. John Ingersoll Richard Pettingall 8 William Haynes Richard Hutchinson 9 John Putnam John Hathorne 10 Townsend Bishop Daniel Ray 11 John Porter Jacob Barney Then to begin with goodman Porter next the meeting howse & so to goe through the towne, accordinge to the order of the watch. And the first 2 to giue the next 2 warning of it & so from tyme to tyme."

On the same day, the town agreed with John Barber and Francis Perry to make the wood work, and two months later with Thomas Tuck to make the iron work of the gun carriages.

Henry True¹ first appeared in Salem this year; and Giles Corey, Antram's boy, first appears in Salem court records, as a witness in the court, July 11, 1644, against Obadiah Govis, servant of Thomas Trusler, who was ordered to be severely whipped for the com-

Henry True

¹Henry True lived in Salem as late as 1649; was dead in 1659; wife Israel (daughter of John Pike?); she was living in Salisbury in 1659; children, born in Salem: 1. John, baptized July 13, 1645; 2. Henry, baptized March 8, 1646-7; married Jane Bradbury March —, 1668; 3. Lydia, baptized Feb. 4, 1649; 4. Joseph, baptized Feb. 8, 1652; lived in Salisbury; married Ruth Whittier April 20, 1675; 5. Benjamin, baptized Feb. 19, 1654; 6. Jemima, baptized April 27, 1657.

mission of several misdemeanors.¹ James Thomas, servant to Daniel Ray was also ordered to be severely whipped for stubbornness and disobedience to his master.

On the same day, the wife of Thomas Trusler, was fined twenty marks for saying that their teacher taught the people lies, and that Mr. Norrice and Mr. Endecott were the foundation of their church and they were unfaithful.

At a town meeting, Sept. 30, 1644, it was agreed that Richard Temple, the tailor, Henry Harwood, widow Moore, the midwife, and John Jackson should have, each of them, so much of the wet marsh or swamp as lies before their ground according as it butts upon it. It was also agreed that William Robinson should have about a quarter of an acre of ground that lies before his house, which was then being built, down to the mill brook, a little above the bridge that "leads to the way to Mr. Gardner's new building." At the same meeting, it was ordered that the highway from Francis Lawes' ten-acre lot be laid out most conveniently for him. It was also ordered that Rev. Mr. Norris be sufficiently supplied with wood, according to the custom; and that Thomas Gardner should set up a fence from the end of the bridge, called Mr. Read's, down to the fence at the mill.

Thomas Abree lived in Salem from 1644 to 1647, and Edward Nicholson² was living in Marblehead as early as 1644.

Jan. 13, 1644-5, the seven men granted to Thomas Tuck four or five poles of ground. Thomas Edwards desired a farm, and a few weeks later he was granted sixty acres of land near Mr. Ruck's farm, "beyond Goodman Putnam's."

John Bartlett of Marblehead was presented to the Salem court, July 9, 1645, for stealing ropes, iron bolts and blocks from Richard Hollinworth, and for defaming certain of his women neighbors. He went to Newbury immediately afterward, apparently.

Richard Andrews of London with other merchants had a trading agreement with various men at New Plymouth, to which Isaac Allerton was a party, for some fifteen years. The business

¹July 3, 1646, Govis was ordered by the court, for purloining corn of his master, to make double restitution and serve him eight weeks longer. July 6, 1647, he was presented for taking tobacco abroad contrary to order. Nov. 15, 1648, for stealing wood of John Bridgman and for unclean speeches and practices, he was sent to the Boston jail for further trial in Boston. No more is heard of him.

²Edward Nicholson died in the autumn of 1660, and his widow married, secondly, ——— Brown before 1673. Mr. Nicholson's children were: 1. Christopher; living in 1661; 2. Joseph, born about 1641; living in 1673; 3. Samuel; living in 1674; 4. John; living in 1665; 5. Thomas, born about 1654; living in 1669; 6. Elizabeth.

yielded no profit for several reasons. In 1642, it was discontinued, and Mr. Andrews agreed to settle for five hundred pounds and some items amounting to five hundred and forty-four pounds in all. This was to be collected for him by Governor Winthrop of the Massachusetts Bay Colony; and Mr. Andrews gave the money to the Bay Colony. It was payable one-third at once, and the residue in four annual instalments. Sept. 8, 1642, the general court thanked Mr. Andrews and his London associates "for their kindness." Oct. 13, 1642, the general court chose a committee of three to go to New Plymouth to settle Mr. Andrews' claims; and they returned with certain bonds, notes, etc. A committee was appointed to distribute this money as it was received. Only about one-half was collected, and this was divided among the towns in the colony. Nov. 13, 1644, ten pounds or two cows were allowed to Salem. The following March, the seven men voted "that Robert Cotta should have the first five pound given by Mr. Andrews of London to be laid out in a cow or heifer, and this was so disposed of with the consent of the elders of Salem." Oct. 29, 1645, at a meeting of the elders and townsmen, "they considered that the poorest man or at least he that most was in want was John Batchelor and therefore they have disposed of the second cow unto him." No more is heard of this fund; and probably no more money was collected.

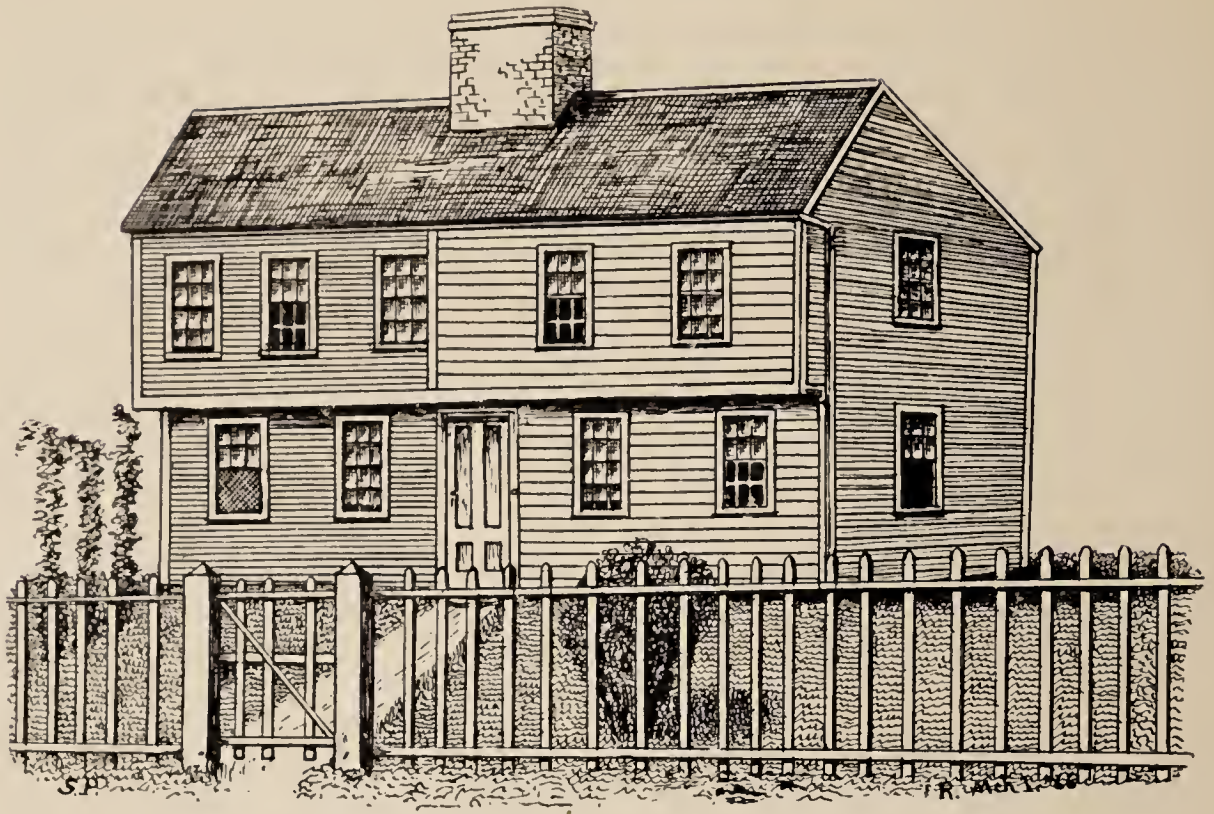
July 3, 1645, "By order of the general court, upon advice with the elders, a general fast was kept. The occasions were the miseries of England, and our own differences in the general court, and also for the great drought. In this latter the Lord prevented our prayers in sending us rain soon after, and before the day of humiliation came."¹

Sheep were scarce in Salem in the first settlement; and in the records of a town meeting, Sept. 22, 1645, it is stated that "divers have underwritten for sheep at forty a head."

At the same meeting, Thomas Lothrop and John Neale were appointed to procure wood for "our teacher"; and John Kitchen and Thomas Spooner "for our elder Mr. Sharpe."

Oct. 1, 1645, the general court authorized Richard Saltonstall, Esq., Mr. Simon Bradstreet, Mr. Samuel Symonds, Mr. Richard Dumer, Mr. William Hubberd, Capt. William Hathorne and Mr. William Paine, as a free company of adventurers, for twenty years, to establish a trading house, which was to be not less than fifty miles from any English plantation, and any man was allowed to join the company within twelve months if he was of this jurisdiction. No one was allowed to set up another trading house within twenty miles of theirs.

¹Winthrop's Journal, volume II, page 215.



TOWNSEND BISHOP HOUSE

Richard Curtis¹ first appeared in Salem in 1645; and remained here for many years.

On the westerly side of Broad Street, just beyond the southerly end of Flint Street, formerly stood a house, which was built by Townsend Bishop in 1645. He conveyed it to Ralph Fogg March 11, 1645-6, and it later belonged to Richard Adams, a mason. In 1679, he conveyed it to Lt. John Pickering, who died possessed of the estate in 1694. Mr. Pickering had devised it in his will to his sons Benjamin and William; and they divided the house, Benjamin having the western part, with the northern leanto, and William the eastern. The family of Benjamin Pickering possessed his part of the house until 1830, when, by sale, it went out of the name; and Captain William's family retained their part until 1804, when that portion also passed out of the name. Through mesne conveyances, Benjamin's (western) portion became the property of William Looney in 1858, and William's (eastern) part became owned by John Looney in 1864. When these Looneys owned it the house was destroyed by fire between two and three o'clock on the

¹Richard Curtis had wife Sarah ———; children: 1. Caleb, born Sept. 24, 1646; probably died young; 2. Caleb, baptized April 21, 1650; 3. Sarah, baptized April 21, 1650; 4. Samuel, born April 1, 1651; 5. Sara, born Feb. 14, 1652-3; 6. Sara, born March 19, 1654-5; 7. Hannah, born Sept. 16, 1656; "Anna" married Richard Friend April 19, 1677; 8. John, born Feb. 2, 1658-9; died July 28, 1659; 9. John, born June 4, 1660; died Sept. 4, 1660; 10. Mary, born Feb. 11, 1662.

afternoon of Sept. 16, 1865. William Looney and his son-in-law Coakley were then living in his part, and the other half was occupied by the widow Wood and a Mr. Redmond and family. The engraving of this ancient house on the opposite page is copied from a drawing made March 1, 1866, by John Robinson, representing it as it appeared just before the fire.

Sergeant-major-general Endecott, William Hathorne and others of Salem and Lynn, "out of ye care for ye safety of ye publick weale, by ye advancement of ye military art and exercise of armes," petitioned the general court for the right to form a military company. May 14, 1645, the request was granted; and "Sergent-major General John Endecott, Capt. Robert Bridges, Mr. William Hathorne, Mr. William Clarke, Ensign William Dixie, Sergeánt Thomas Lathrop, and such others as they shall from time to time take into their company, shall be called the Military Company of Salem and Lynn." They were given authority to choose their under officers, manage their affairs and train in Salem or Lynn as often as they chose.

The general court further pursued the matter of military defence for Salem. "Whereas the town of Salem, lying so open to the sea, is in great danger of sudden attempts by a foreign enemy, and therefore great care is to be had in these dangerous times," the general court ordered, Oct. 1, 1645, that the chief military officer of the band there should inhabit in or near the harbor," and "considering that Captain Trask, who hath been many years their chief officer, dwells so remote from that part of the town as he cannot be helpful upon any such sudden occasion, doth hereby discharge him of that office, with all due acknowledgement of his faithfulness and former good service to the country, and do hereby appoint Mr. William Hathorne to be captain of the said military company or trained band of the said town, to exercise the office, and continue therein, until some other shall be duly chosen and confirmed in the said office, according to the order of this Court; and William Clarke to be his lieutenant during the said time." The deputies of Salem had placed Captain Trask and Major Hathorne in nomination. They had also nominated Thomas Lothrop and Peter Wolfe for lieutenant. Ens. William Dixie was again chosen ensign.

The seven men ordered, Nov. 3, 1645, that all the ordnance should be mounted.

At the same time, the seven men ordered that a bill of four pounds be paid to Henry Bartholomew for the drums which Mr. Endecott bought for the town. June 13, 1644, the town voted that the annual salary of the drummer should be seven pounds. Nov. 10, 1645, the seven men agreed "that Joseph the drummer

shall have ten shillings a day for the training days." Josiah Rootes of Salem was the drummer that winter; and also in 1656-7, when he was paid forty shillings for beating the drum to the train band. In 1666, he was called drum major.

The seven men granted, Nov. 3, 1645, to John Lovet two acres of marsh ground lying near to the old planters meadow near Wenham common; and, a week later, they ordered "that there shall be layd out 4 bushells of wheate for 8 bushells of coales to good: ffranklin."

At a town meeting, Dec. 15, 1645, it was "ordered and agreed that the non-members of this congregation shall be rated for the helping and the supporting of some of the public ordinances in the church: as namely the preaching of the word."

MONSIEUR CHARLES DE LA TOUR.

When England ceded to France the title to Acadia, in 1632, Razilly was given charge of the province. He appointed Monsieur Charles de la Tour his lieutenant for the territory lying easterly of St. Croix River, and Monsieur D'Aulnay for that part next westerly of that river, the emperor claiming to Penobscot River. Razilly died in 1635, and each of his said assistants claimed the authority of the deceased over all Acadia. The purpose of this claim was the profits of the trade in furs with the Indians, and each had a fort and trading post, D'Aulnay on the Penobscot River and La Tour on the St. John River. There were continual conflicts between these rival claimants.

Capt. Isaac Allerton and others set up a trading wigwam at what is now Machias, and left five men in charge of it. In October, La Tour routed them, and being resisted killed two of the men and carried away the others. About the middle of the following January, Captain Allerton went to Port Royal, in his pinnace, to relieve the prisoners, as it had been agreed.

In November, 1641, La Tour sent a messenger to Boston, proposing free trade and asking assistance against D'Aulnay, but the messenger produced no evidence of his authority. The next October, La Tour vainly sent his assistant with fourteen men in a shallop to Boston, again requesting aid against D'Aulnay. The next June (1643), La Tour went to Boston from Rochelle with one hundred and forty persons by water, and again expressed his wish for aid in raising a blockade of his fort by his enemy. He was informed that this was a matter for the federated colonies, but the general court decided that the governor of the Massachusetts Bay Colony could consent that La Tour might hire vessels and men here for that purpose. The result was that, July 1st, La Tour sailed with four ships and a pinnace,

carrying sixteen cannon and seventy men, whom he had hired for his expedition. When the ships were discovered by D'Aulnay, he set sail with his two ships and a pinnace to Port Royal, where he ran his vessels aground, and began fortifying himself on land. With about thirty men, La Tour landed and marched to D'Aulnay's fortified mill, which they attacked. The mill was burned. The troops returned to the ships, and sailed to La Tour's fort. Eventually, the Massachusetts soldiers returned safely, but, Winthrop wrote that "the report of their actions was offensive and grievous to us."

Just before March 23, 1643-4, La Tour came to Salem to request of Governor Endecott further aid. A meeting was agreed upon to be held in Boston, but, as few attended, another was agreed to be convened at Salem the next week. The aid requested was refused, and the governor and council passed an order, commending strict neutrality. Governor Endecott was personally greatly opposed to rendering the aid.

The Massachusetts commissioners of the Confederacy reported to the confederacy the doings of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, and in October, 1644, an embassy from D'Aulnay to the confederacy arrived at Salem. After an extended and full discussion of the relations of the parties, a provisional treaty of peace and free trade was concluded, and, in 1646, all matters in dispute were amicably settled. Soon afterward, D'Aulnay died, and La Tour married his widow, thereby healing all breaches between the contending factions.

In 1645, the records of the Salem court mention the presence of the "French frigate in Salem Harbor."

CHAPTER XI.

MANCHESTER.

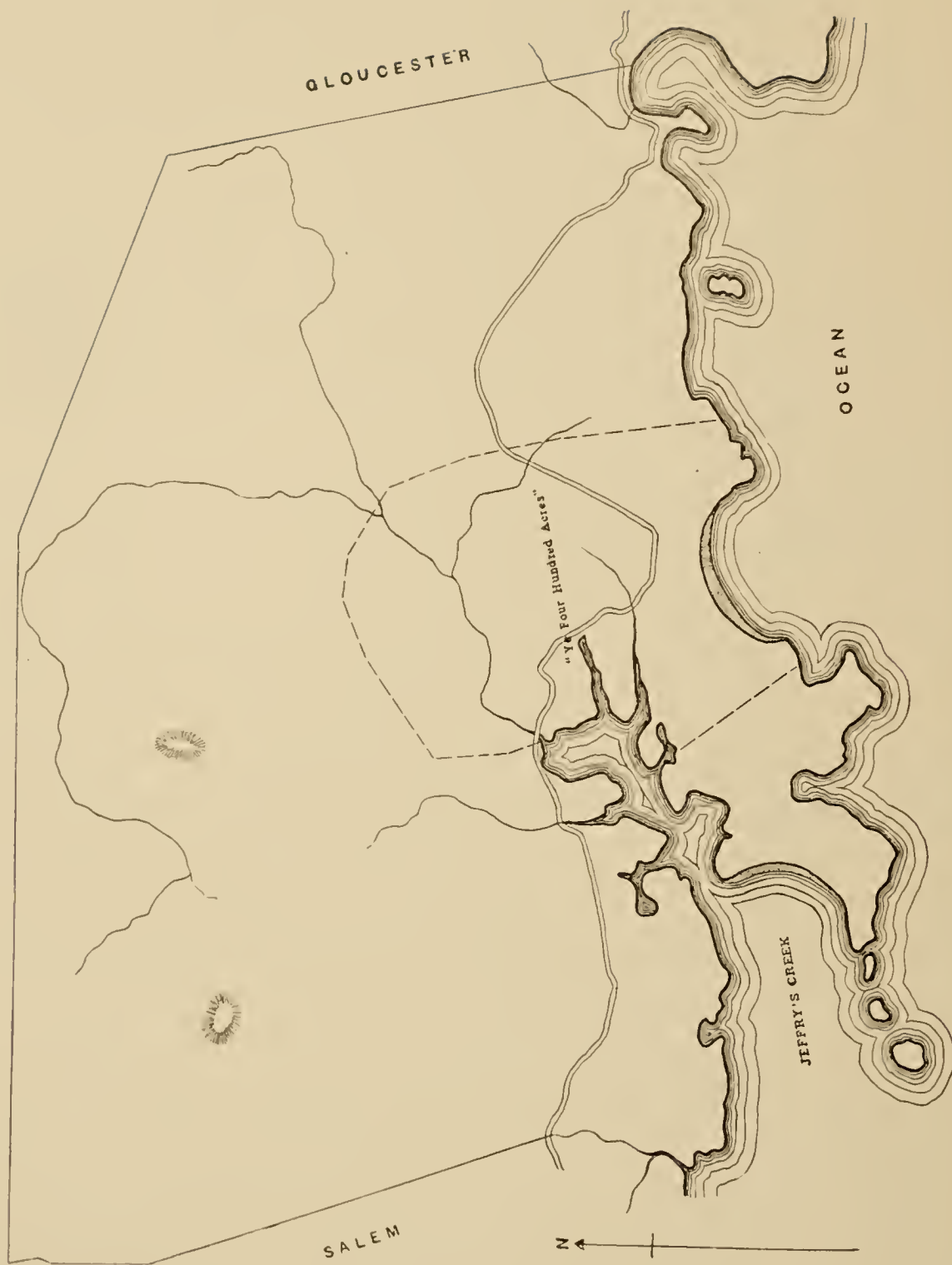


RANTS of land were early made within the territory of what is now the town of Manchester. This section was called after the name of the inlet from the sea, Jeffries Creek, which was afterwards known as the harbor of Manchester. William Jeffries is supposed to have been associated with this neighborhood, hence the name. He was born at Chuddington Manor, Sussexshire, England, and received the degree of Bachelor of Arts at Cambridge in 1606 and of Master of Arts in 1610. He was apparently in Ipswich awhile, and went to Weymouth in 1654. He was governor of Rhode Island, where he died, in Newport, Jan. 2, 1675, and his tombstone is still standing there.

About 1637, there was granted to the widow of Thomas Moore ten acres of land at Jeffries Creek; and at the same place to Samuel Archer sixty acres, William Allen fifty acres, John Sibley fifty, George Williams forty, John More forty, John Black thirty, Sergeant Wolfe fifty and Sergeant Dixie fifty acres. These lots were laid out together soon after Feb. 20, 1636-7. This tract of land was known as the Four Hundred Acres. Some of these grantees did not settle at that place, and others built houses on portions of this tract. The final division of the four hundred acres did not occur until 1711. The village grew up where it is now. This common holding of the territory probably explains the scarcity of real estate transfers in Manchester on record during the first half-century of the existence of the town. That part of the town known as the Four Hundred Acres is outlined on the accompanying map by dashes, and lay almost wholly easterly of the creek, including Singing beach.

To the south lay the broad ocean, but in every other direction the primeval forest, rough and ledgy, and dark and dreaded, extended, practically pathless, for miles.

IPSWICH.



MANCHESTER.

Jan. 27, 1636-7, the town "ordered that Richard Brakenbury, Tho: Laythrop & Richard Huchenson are to view what Inlande their is betwixt Jeffereys Creeke & Makerell Cove, 4 or ffyve miles."

Aug. 28, 1637, John Pickworth, William Bennett and John Galley requested grants of land at Jeffries Creek; and, Nov. 8, 1637, the town granted to them and John Norman twenty-five acres each at that place.

Nov. 26, 1638, the town granted to Samuel Archer a neck of land of about twenty acres, "lying out against the sea neere vnto Jeffry Creeke Iland," and eight acres of meadow in Kettle Island Cove.

Jan. 27, 1638-9, Sergeant Dixy desired some hay ground about Jeffry's Creek.

Feb. 4, 1638-9, the town granted to Robert Allyn twenty-five acres of land, lying between the land of William Bennett and Samuel Archer at Jeffries Creek.

July 25, 1639, the town granted to Benjamin Parmiter ten acres, Nov. 20, 1639, to James Standish forty, and, Jan. 21, 1639-40, to Benjamin Parminter ten acres, all at Jeffry's Creek.

In the spring of 1640, the owners of land at Jeffries Creek determined to settle there; and seventeen of them petitioned the general court for authority to establish a village there. The following is a copy of the petition:—

We whose names are subscribed belonging to the Church & Town of Salem (being straitened in our accommodations soe that wee are not able to comfortably to subsist: haveing advised and taken Councell about our p^resent estate & condition it being Judged fitt & free liberty being granted us to remove, and noe place being soe convenyent for our easy removall as Jefferyes Creek lying soe neere us & most of us having some small quantity of ground allotted to us there also Doe therefore Joyntly & humbly request the Hon^{bl} Court to give us power to erect a village there & to allow us such inlargment thereabouts: as is not granted to any other plantation. Thus Leaving our request to y^r wisdom & consideration with our pray^rs for a blessing from heaven on y^r psons & proceedings wee rest y^r Humble petitioners

WILLIAM WALTON
JOHN BLACK
WM. ALLEN
SAM^l ARCHER
GEO NORTON
WM. DIXY
JOHN SIBLY
JAMES STANDISH

JOHN PICKWORTH
JOHN GALLY
BEN: PARMTER
ROBERT ALLEN
EDMOND GROVER
PASCO FOOT
WM. BENETT
JOHN NORMAN

JOHN FREIND

1640
14th 3^{mo}

This petition was presented to the session of the court which convened the day before the date of the petition, and the record of the action taken upon it is as follows:—

The petition of the inhabitants of Salem for some of their church to have Jeffryes Creeke, & land to erect a village there, for M^r Willi: Walton, John Blacke, Willi: Allen, Sam: Orchard, Geo: Norton &c, comp^a; what land & inlargment may bee convenient, & is not granted to any other plantation, is granted them; & it is referred to M^r John Winthroe, Iunior, & M^r Symon Bradstreete, to settle the bounds of the said village.

The general court then appointed Mr. Hauthorne, Mr. Holyoke and Mathew Boyse “to view and settle the bounds of Ipswich, Cape Ann and Jeffries Creek.”

March 4, 1643-4, the seven men granted to Richard Gardner at Jefferies Creek twenty acres of land; and to Robert Fuller twenty acres of land there, “if he dwell there, otherwise to desert the land.”

April 1, 1644, John Webster asked the seven men to grant to him accommodation at the Creek.

The only act of incorporation of the town of Manchester is this, that, at the request of the inhabitants of Jeffry's Creek, the general court “ordered, that Jeffryes Creek shalbe henceforward called Manchester.” This was ordered at the session of the general court which convened June 18, 1645.

Winthrop, in his Journal, says, under the date of July 9, 1645: “The village at Jeffries Creek was named Manchester, and the people there (not being in a church state) had procured Mr. Smith (sometimes pastor of the church of Plymouth) to preach to them.” This was Rev. Ralph Smith, who began his service here in 1642. He came to Salem in 1629, and at this time from Plymouth, where he had been preaching since 1636. He was son of Rev. Ralph and Catheran (Mathewson) Smith, baptized in the parish of Gainford, Durham, England, April 5, 1589, and graduated at Christ College, Cambridge, in 1614. He finished his labors in Manchester after 1647; then lived with his son-in-law in Ipswich until about 1659; was at York, Me., in 1660; and died in Boston March 1, 1660-1.¹ Religious meetings were held in the houses of the people until 1656, when a meeting house, eighteen feet long, was erected near the landing place.

The early records of Manchester are not in existence, and so almost nothing can be learned of the earliest conditions there in the public and private life of the settlers. Even early land records are few. William Allen, a carpenter, appears to

¹See volume I, pages 112, 113 and others.

have been the most prominent of the men of the town, having lived there since about 1640.

The settlement of Manchester called for better means of traveling thither. The old path to Cape Ann was very poor indeed, probably nothing had been done to it. The first spot which was sought to be improved was at the creek at Mackerel Cove. Salem was presented to the local court because there was no sufficient bridge there; and the town was ordered to make one. At a town meeting, Oct. 26, 1646, probably to meet the necessities of the Manchester settlers, the town of Salem ordered that a way between the ferry at Salem and the head of Jeffry's Creek should be laid out forthwith, by William Woodbury, Richard Brackenbury, Ensign Dixy, Mr. Conant, Lieutenant Lothrop and Lawrence Leach. and that it be such a way as men may travel on horseback and drive cattle; and if such a way may not be found then to take speedy course to set up a foot bridge at Mackerel Cove. William Dixy certified that the committee of Salem, appointed to lay out a way toward Manchester, had done so, and made it sufficient, Dec. 30, 1646.¹

¹Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, volume II, page 108.

CHAPTER XII.

SHIP TAVERN.



WILLIAM WHEELER was of Salem early in 1646 for a short time;¹ and Adam Westgate took up his abode here the same year. Mr. Westgate was a master-mariner, sailing along the coast.² Thomas Avery was here earlier than these residents, and apparently removed to Topsfield in 1657.

Erasmus James lived in Marblehead on the southerly side of Washington Street about where Hawkes Street is now located. His wife Jane earned a reputation which was unenviable. As early as 1639, she was accused of taking things from the house of Anthony Thatcher, who was engaged in missionary work among the fishermen at Marblehead, and she and her husband were bound for her good behavior.

Both Mr. and Mrs. James were witnesses against John Bartoll for making some statements derogatory to the reputation of Moses Maverick in 1645, and Bartoll stated that he could prove Mrs. James to be "a common liar; a thief and a false foresworn woman."

The next year, William Barber and Mrs. James were in the house of Thomas Bowen, who testified that Barber said to Mrs. James, upon her speaking to him, "get out of doors you

¹Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts in Essex County, volume 1, page 92.

²CAPT. ADAM WESTGATE¹ lived in Marblehead as late as 1680; wife Mary; she was living in 1676, and was probably dead in 1685; children: 1. Robert², born July 1, 1647; of Salem in 1665; 2. ———² (son), born April 15, 1650; 3. Thomas², born Feb. 12, 1653-4; probably died young; 4. Joseph², born April 30, 1657; died June 19, 1659; 5. Mary², born Feb. 14, 1659-60; died Aug. 28, 1662; 6. Benjamin², born July 26, 1662; died Aug. 12, 1662; 7. John², baptized April 20, 1663; of Salem in 1680; had wife Elizabeth in 1690; mariner; 8. Thomas², baptized April 20, 1663.

THOMAS WESTGATE²; of Salem in 1680; living in 1685; child: 1. Thomas³, baptized May —, 1689.

filthy old baud or else I will cuttle your hyde, you old filthy baggage";¹ and Barber took a fire brand, but did not throw it at her. Bowen also testified that Barber carried away a shoulder of mutton which Mrs. James should have had, giving her a push, and saying that he could eat a shoulder of mutton as well as she. At the next term of the Salem court she sued Barber for slander.

In 1650, Mr. and Mrs. James brought suit against Peter Pitford for calling her a witch; and a verdict for fifty shillings damages, was recovered. Henry Pease of Marblehead testified that he heard Peter Pitford of Marblehead say that Goodwife James was a witch and that he saw her in a boat at sea in the likeness of a cat, also that his garden fruits did not prosper as long as he lived near that woman, and that he called her Jezebel. Henry Trevett of Marblehead also testified. The next year, Mr. James sued John Gatchell for saying that Mrs. James was an old witch, and that she was seen going in a boat on the water towards Boston when she was in her own yard at home: and the plaintiff again won his case.

Mr. James died in the spring of 1660, and his wife survived him. Her reputation did not improve with her widowhood; and, in 1667, when she was about sixty-five years old, she brought suit against her neighbor Richard Rowland, for saying that she came in at a hole in the window in Rowland's house, took him by the throat, and almost choked him as he lay in his bed, and for calling her an old hag. Capt. James Smith testified that he, Samuel Aborne, sr., and Richard Rowland were in bed together when suddenly Rowland screeched, started up and said that he was almost choked by the old hag, Goody James, who, Rowland said, had come in through a hole in the window and had him fast by the throat. Captain Smith said that he saw nothing, although the room was very bright with the light of the moon. Aborn also testified; and John Furbush stated that he had often heard Rowland and his wife call Mrs. James Jezebel and devil. She again won her case. About three years later, death ended her troubles, she having lived alone in a house which was built for her.²

Rev. Edward Norris, pastor of the church in Salem, expected to preach the election sermon to the general court in 1645, but failed to do so; he preached it to the court the next year.³

The seven men granted to Daniel Baxter, in March, 1646, a small parcel of salt marsh lying at the end of his ten-acre lot in

¹This is a corruption of the old French word *bargasse*, meaning a worthless woman.

²See volume I, page 449.

³Winthrop's Journal, volume I, pages 218 and 219.

South field, and a little salt marsh lying before Mr. Gott's and Mr. Button's land near the mouth of Forest River; to Robert Gutch a small parcel of salt marsh lying at the end of his ten-acre lot in the South field; and to John Robinson about three quarters of an acre of salt marsh lying at the head of Clay brook.

April 8, 1646, the town "ordered that the way which was formerly used to be gone through near the end of Mr. Read's farm, that the gate shall be set there and the way run as it did before."

A week later, the town granted to John Borne leave to sell beer; and the next month, by the general court, he was "allowed to set up a cookes shop at Salem, so that he sell no beare above a penny a quart."

April 20, 1646, the seven men granted to William Dodge about an acre of ground that lies between Hugh Laskin's lot and his; and also it was ordered "That the little strip of ground that is between Ryall's Side, and the ten-acre lot of John Batchelor and John Marston and before the lot of John Scudder, where he dwelleth, shall be given" to those three men.

John Mascoll¹ came to Salem about this time, and remained here.

May 6, 1646, the general court appointed Governor Endecott major-general and a commissioner of the United Colonies.

¹JOHN MASCOLL¹ was a servant to Mr. Goog in 1643; married Ellen (Eleanor) Long March —, 1649; living in 1704; children: 1. *John*², born Dec. 25, 1650; 2. *Stephen*², born Feb. 15, 1652-3; living in 1671; 3. *Mehitabel*², born May 15, 1655; married Peter Fountain; 4. *Thomas*², born Aug. 14, 1657; 5. *James*², born March 16, 1661-2; *Nicholas*², born April 14, 1664.

JOHN MASCOLL²; gunsmith and locksmith; married Hester Babbidge Oct. 6, 1674; (wife Bethiah in 1710-1); living in 1720; dead in 1741; children: 1. *John*³, born Aug. 5, 1675; 2. *Stephen*³, born May 21, 1677; lived in Marblehead; married Mary Frettee of Marblehead Oct. 4, 1705; 3. *Christopher*³, baptized July 14, 1678; 4. *Joseph*³, baptized Aug. —, 1685; 5. *James*³, baptized Nov. 18, 1683; 6. *Nicholas*³, baptized Oct. —, 1685; 7. *Sarah*³, born April 20, 1687; married Isaac Willaims; 8. *David*³, baptized July 14, 1689; 9. *Jonathan*³, baptized Jan. —, 1690-1; 10. *Mehitable*³, born Jan. 16, 1694-5; died before 1720; 11. *Benjamin*³, born Aug. 15, 1699. THOMAS MARSTON; mariner; married Mary Swasey; died in the mid-winter of 1721-2; children: 1. *Thomas*³, baptized Nov. 18, 1683; died young; 2. *Stephen*³, born Aug. 10, 1684; died before 1722; 3. *Mary*³, baptized April —, 1687; married, first, William Beckett; second, Daniel Webb; 4. *Preserved*³, baptized Nov. 9, 1690; 5. *Thomas*³, baptized April —, 1692; 6. *Ruth*³, baptized March —, 1695; 7. *James*³, baptized July 11, 1697; 8. *Joseph*³, baptized Oct. 20, 1700; 9. *John*³, baptized June 13, 1703; fisherman and mariner; married, first, Sarah Prince (published Aug. 2, 1729); second, Hannah Prince Oct. 26, 1739; both living in 1771.

JOHN MASCOLL³; cordwainer; married Elizabeth Bachellor May 14, 1701; died June 1, 1702; she married, secondly, Alexander Lovell of Ipswich Oct. 28, 1703; child: 1. *Hester*⁴, born March 25, 1701-2. JAMES MASCOLL³; mariner; married Patience Barton Nov. 7, 1721; she married, secondly,

At this session of the general court, the following petition of the inhabitants of Marblehead was presented to the court:—

To ye General Court the humble petition of ye Inhabitants of Marblehead

Whereas there come yeerly into o^r plantation many fishermen yt are strangers, & haue formerly don vs very much damage in ye confuming of o^r fire-wood, stage-timber & flakestuffe; we could not but expresse ye fence we haue heerof, & to yt end for the preventing of ye like detriment; we entered an action agf^t ye m^rs of ye voyages the last Court at Salem whose desire was yt before any farther proceedings they might speake wth ye Marchants y^r owners who haue manifested theyr willingnes to giue vs satisfisfaction for y^e wrong y^t heerein we suytayne, yet loath to bring vp any customes for future times. Our desire & humble request therfore is that this Honoured Court would be pleased to establish some order wherby from henceforth we may be enabled to releiue o^rf: in cafes of this nature.

your humble petitioners

WILLIAM WALTON
MOSES MAVERICKE
FRANCIS JOHNSON
DAVID CARWETHEN
JOHN BARTOLL
JOHN PATCH FEN:
JOHN LYON
ARTHUR SANDIN
JOHN I H HART
W^m W M BARBER
WILLM W CHARLES
ABREHAM WHITEHEARE
JOHN PEACH IUR
JOHN LEGG
WALSINGHAM W CHILSON
THOMAS SAM¹

Upon y^e petition of Marblehead men, y^e Co^rt thinke fit to declare, y^t howsoev^r it hath bene allowed custome for forraigne fishermen to make use of such harbo^rs & grounds in this country as have not bene inhabited by Englishmen, & to take timber & wood at their pleasures for all occasions, yet in these parts w^{ch} are now possessed, & y^e lands disposed in ppriety to sev^rall townes & psons, & by his ma^{ties} grant,

Joseph Flint (published Oct. 30, 1731); child: 1. James⁴; tailor. JOSEPH MASCOLL³; shipwright; married Ruth Purchase Dec. 31, 1724; died July —, 1773; she died in 1785; children: 1. Thomas⁴; 2. Stephen⁴; 3. Mary⁴; married William Tapley; 4. Mercy⁴; married Thomas Stevens; 5. Joseph⁴; died before 1773; had children.

CAPT. STEPHEN MASCOLL⁴; mariner; married Hannah Dean Aug. 16, 1764; died in 1784; she survived him; children: 1. Hannah⁵, born in 1768; married Jesse Kenny Jan. 20, 1793; 2. Mary⁵, born in 1770; 3. Stephen⁵, born in 1773; married Anna Thorndike of Beverly April 17, 1800; 4. Sarah⁵, born in 1777; married George Sinclair Nov. 17, 1799.

¹Massachusetts Archives, volume 60, leaf 35.

und^r y^e great seale of England, it is not now lawfull for any person, eithe^r fishermen or other, eith^r forreyner or of this country, to enter upon y^e lands so appropriated to any town or pson, or to take any woode or timber in any such places w^hout y^e licence of such towne or pprieto^r; & if any pson shall trespas herein, y^e towne or pprietor so iniured may take their remedy by action, or may pserve their goods or other interest by opposing lawfull force against such uniust violence; pvided, y^t it shalbe lawfull for such fishermen as shalbe implied by any inhabitants of this jurisdiction in ye sev^rall seasons of y^e yeare to make use of o^r harbo^rs, & such lands as are neere adioyning for y^e drying of their fish, or other needful occasions, as also to take such timber for firewood as they shall have necessary use of, for their fishing seasons, where it may be spared, so as they make due satisfaction for y^e same to such towne or prietor.”¹

Nov. 2, 1646, the town “Ordered that if Mr. Endecott doe agree with Mr. Allen and Mr. Dunster for the mortar piece which is mounted upon the carriage that the town will see the same satisfied.”

Feb. 2, 1646-7, the town agreed that Captain Hawthorn, Mr. Corwine and William Lord should “take care for fitting up of the carriages for the great guns, and to speak with Francis Pery and Thomas Tuck about finishing of it.” It was agreed that for the gathering in of the town’s powder, being dispersed in the hands of certain men, Sergeant Porter and John Hardy were to go to Mr. Fogg for half a barrel, Samuel Archer was to go to Mr. Johnson and Edmond Batter to Captain Trask for a barrel, and Captain Hawthorn was to provide a barrel for Capt. Thomas Read.

Nov. 2, 1646, the town granted to Zacheus Curtis about an acre of land near the house he bought of Joshua Verin at Brooksby.

The seven men, Dec. 28, 1646, granted to Edward Bishop² forty acres of land lying near the farms at Bass River head

Edward Bishop:

near Nicholas Howard’s lot, and to Humphrey Woodbury half an acre of meadow, lying beyond Mackerel Cove, and

adjoining his meadow, which was granted to him.

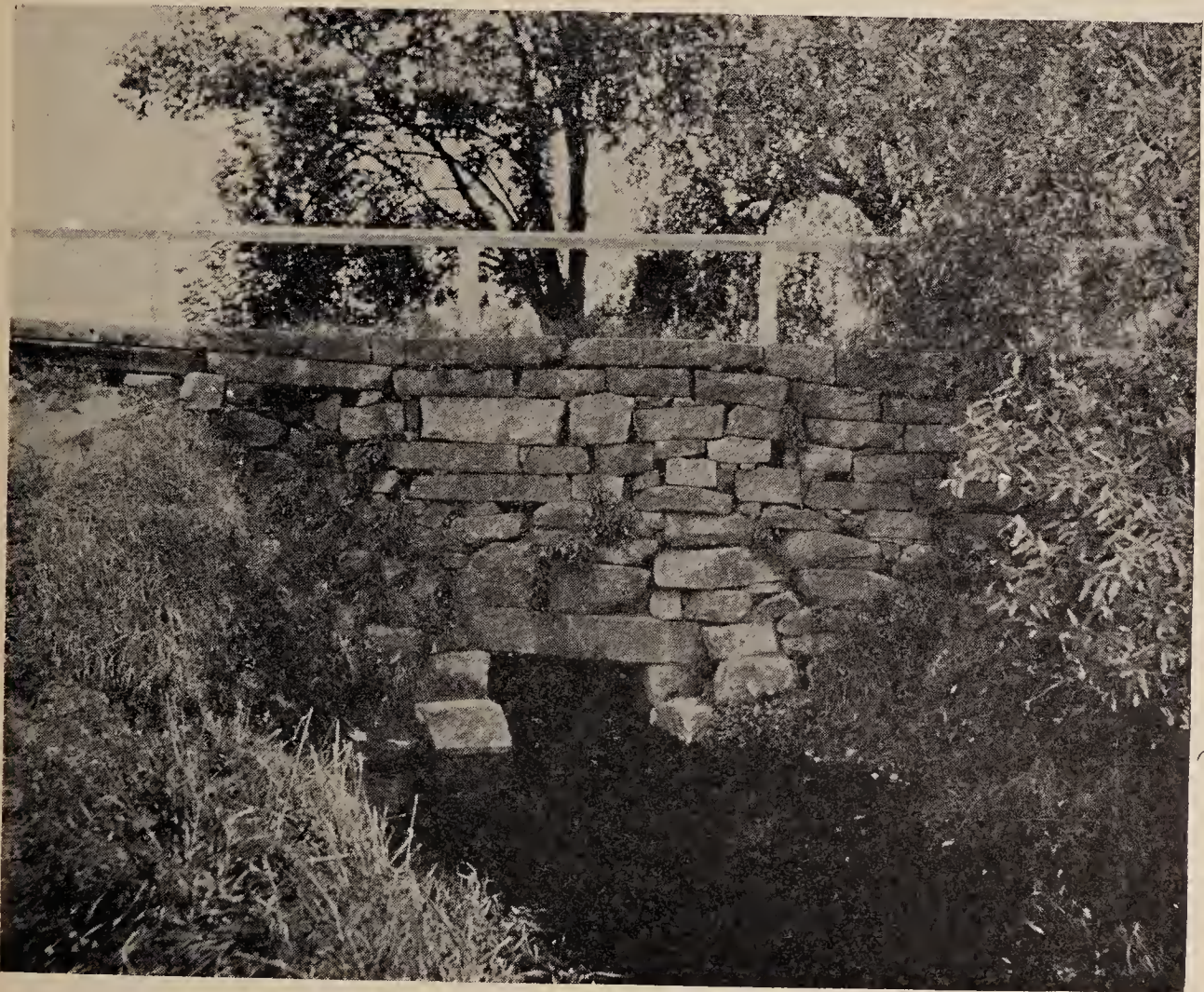
Feb. 23, 1646-7, the seven men agreed that “two black staves of six foot long or thereabout be provided for the constables, and Edmond Batter to speak to Francis Perry to have

¹Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume II, page 147.

²Edward Bishop lived in what is now Beverly, on the northerly side of Conant Street, westerly of the main entrance to the Cherry Hill farm, as early as 1639. He was at first a husbandman and later a sawyer. He married, first, Hannah — before 1646; she was his wife in 1653;

them made." The staffs were not made, probably, as the next July the town was complained of for want of such a staff.

On the seventeenth of that month, the seven men granted to Robert Cotta that part of land and salt water marsh which lies before his lot and which he possessed, but he had nothing to



CABOT STREET BRIDGE.

do with that part of his lot he sold to Jeffery Eastye nor the salt water marsh before it. John Bailey¹ requested a parcel of land in the South field, near William Giggles' lot.

married, second, Bridget, widow of Thomas Oliver before 1680; she was executed as a witch June 10, 1692; married, third, Elizabeth Cash March 9, 1692-3; he died before 1715; children: 1. Hannah, baptized April 12, 1646; married William Rayment of Beverly; 2. Edward, baptized April 23, 1648; husbandman; lived here until 1703, when he removed to Rehoboth, where he was an innkeeper and yeoman; married Sarah Wild of Topsfield; died in Rehoboth in May, 1711; had children; 3. Mary, baptized Oct. 12, 1651; married Robert Coburn of Beverly; removed to Chelmsford.

¹John Bailey left his wife in England and was living in Salem as early as 1644, in the part which was incorporated as Marblehead in 1649. In 1651, he was ordered by the local court to get his wife here or go to her. The last that was heard of him was when Mr. Maverick and Mr. Batter testified in court to his attempt to get her to come here. She de-

At the same time, in the room of Ralph Fogg, whom they conceived unfit for that service, the seven men appointed William Auger to "take notice" of vital records in his stead.

At the same time, the selectmen appointed Samuel Archer marshall of the Salem court, and the appointment was confirmed by the court April 7, 1649. He continued in that office until June 26, 1666, when he was fined for being "disguised in drink"; and Henry Skerry was appointed at that time, his pay being four pounds per annum as Archer's salary had been. Mr. Skerry held the office until after 1682.



BUTTS BRIDGE.

In the early summer of 1647, "A barn at Salem was set on fire with lightning, and all the corn and hay consumed suddenly. It fell upon the thatch in the breadth of a sheet, in the view of people."¹

The town was presented for two insufficient bridges near the houses of John Balch and William Dodge, and the seven men, May 17, 1647, chose these men to make the bridges sufficient

sired him not to hasten his coming to her as she had a comfortable estate to live upon and maintain herself.

¹Winthrop's Journal, volume II, page 310.

and finished within one month. The engraving of the Cabot Street bridge, near Herrick Street, in Beverly, was made from a photograph taken in 1924. Extensive fillings from time to time have raised the road to its present height. Sergeant Porter and Mr. Kennyston were chosen to see to the finishing of Strongwater bridge, the Butts bridge and a bridge at the great pond within one month. Butts bridge, over Butts brook, on Washington Street, in South Peabody, has changed but little probably since early days. The view of it given here is from a photograph taken in 1924.

"William Clarke,¹ dwelling between Lynn and Ipswich, hath liberty to entertain passengers and cattle."² This was in the summer of 1641. He removed to what was subsequently known as The Ship Tavern, on Essex Street, in the town of Salem, before April 7, 1645, when the town chose him to keep the ordinary in Salem, and, Nov. 4, 1646, the general court appointed him to keep the house of common entertainment here. He died seven months later.

The latter house of Mr. Clark, in 1647, was of considerable size, and he had a large estate. His house included, on the ground floor, a hall, parlor and kitchen, and upstairs a chamber over the hall, a great chamber over the parlor and a chamber over the kitchen and a partly furnished garret. He had an abundance of household furnishings and supplies, among the latter being fifteen hundred weight of tobacco, about seven hundred pounds of sugar and corn and wheat. There was a long table, round table and two others, six table cloths, a court "cubbard" and a sempiternum "cubbard cloth" with silk fringe. There were stools, seven of which were jointed and three were of leather, a bench, five forms, one being short, and three leather chairs. There were four bedsteads, one being half-headed, one jointed and one low, five featherbeds, two flock, one canvas flock and a straw bed; curtains and valances, bolsters, pillows, blankets, two dozen sheets, among them Holland sheets with seaming lace. On the floors were mats and rugs, and five carpets, two of which were Turkey carpets; a great cushion wrought with worsted, five "cubbard cushions," one of which was of damask and another of needle work; seven and a half dozen napkins, among them being Holland, diaper and flax napkins; and a dozen towels. Among the customary smaller things were silver

¹William Clark lived in Salem as early as 1637; married, first, ———; and, second, Katherine ———; died in 1646; she married, secondly, John Gedney, sr.; children: 1. ——— (son by his first wife); 2. ——— (son by his second wife); 3. Bethiah, baptized Aug. 26, 1638; 4. Susanna, baptized March —, 1643; married, first John Gedney, jr.; second, Deliverance Parkman; 5. Deborah, baptized Aug. 6, 1645.

²Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 332.

spoons and some pieces of plate, twenty pewter platters and a great pewter pot, flagon, three dozen plates, beer cups and wine cups, two pewter lamps, four candlesticks, China dishes, brass and copper pots and kettles, shovel, tongs, andirons, peel and jack.

Mr. Clark's widow, Katherine Clark, was licensed to succeed him, with liberty to draw wine, paying a license fee of ten pounds annually, and to provide "a fit man that is godly to manage the business," and the Salem court approved of Robert Gutch as such a man.¹ This house was the inn which was afterwards known for a century as The Ship Tavern. It stood on the northerly side of Essex Street, opposite Central Street. Mrs. Clark married John Gedney, sr., who had been an innkeeper in Salem, and Mr. Gedney conducted the house, drew wine and retailed strongwater until his death in 1688. Associated with this tavern was a pasture, containing twelve acres and being nearly a square, and lying on the southeasterly side of Bridge Street. Its western corner was opposite Lemon Street, the northern corner at Arbella Street and the southern was nearly down to the northern corner of the Common. This was called the "Ship Tavern pasture," and was used as its name implies.²

The children of Mr. Clark had died, apparently, except Susannah. The tavern continued to be owned by the Gedney family, but it had been let. In 1698, when the estate was conveyed to Deliverance Parkman, it was occupied by Francis Ellis. Mr. Parkman died Nov. 15, 1715, and the title descended to his daughter Mehitable, who married Rev. George Curwen. In 1740, the tavern was under lease to Mrs. Margaret Pratt. Samuel Curwen, son of Mrs. Mehitable Curwen, became its sole owner, and, June 11, 1745, he conveyed it to John Turner of Salem, who took down the ancient hostelry three years later, and Mrs. Pratt, who had been here since 1730, returned to her house on the northeasterly corner of Essex and Washington streets, where she continued the innkeeping business.

Sept. 30, 1647, the town granted to Sergeant Porter two hundred acres of pasture land near Mr. Bishop's farm.

July 6, 1647, "Nicholas Patch, sr., and William Woodbery & Company, inhabitants of Mackerell Cove," petitioned the Salem court for exemption from watching. The request was referred to the general court, who, Oct. 27, 1647, freed them from

¹Sept. 7, 1651, Robert Gutch was licensed by the Ipswich court to keep an ordinary in Salem; but he does not appear to have opened a public house.

²See The Essex Antiquarian, volume IX, page 75, for plan of this pasture.

being called to watch at Salem, except that the petitioners should be liable to watch there by direction of the constable and the injunction of military officers in times of danger.

May 15, 1646, the general court ordered the convention of a synod of the churches to be held at Cambridge September first following, to establish the right form of church government and discipline, by agreement of the churches and consent of the civil authority, and October twenty-seventh, while the synod was in session, the general court desired Mr. Norris of Salem and six other ministers to prepare a brief form of doctrinal belief and present it at the next sitting of the synod. Mr. Norris was named first on this list of clergymen, and the stenographer of the synod was John Higginson, son of Rev. Francis Higginson, and afterward pastor of the Salem church, who was, at this time, living in Connecticut.

The present system of perambulation of the bounds between towns was established by the general court Nov. 11, 1647. Once in three years, three or more persons of each town, appointed by the selectmen, should together go to the bounds and renew the marks, by each adding a stone to the heap of stones, which should mark it, or renew a trench, six feet long and two feet wide, which was also a mark in low lands, the most ancient town being the one to give notice of the time and place of meeting, in March or April, to perform this service. The law of perambulation of town lines is practically the same today, but the bounds are now permanent monuments.

Thomas Bowen¹ lived in Marblehead as early as 1642; and in the Salem court, Feb. 29, 1647-8, he was fined for sailing from Gloucester Harbor on the Lord's day, when the people were going to the morning exercises, having hay in his boat.

At a meeting of the seven men, Feb. 3, 1647-8, Edward Wilson² requested a quarter of an acre of land in the neck near his house; and Benjamin Pauly³ was chosen to keep the town herd of cows. On the twenty-eighth, the town granted to Thomas Wheeler two parcels of meadow of about eight acres, lying near the grist mill by Mr. Humphrey's farm, one called noman's meadow; and, also, to John Hathorne a parcel of meadow adjoining to that of Jacob Barney, a parcel of meadow adjoining Mr.

¹Thomas Bowen was a planter and fisherman. He was born about 1625; and lived in Marblehead as late as 1674. His wife was named Elizabeth, 1646-1674.

²Edward Wilson probably lived in Salem as early as 1641, being a young man; ship carpenter; called son-in-law in will of Michael Sallows in 1646; and removed to Fairfield, Conn., about 1655. He was living in Fairfield in 1679.

³Benjamin Pawley lived in Salem until 1658.

Bartholomew's, and a parcel lying on the great river, all three lots containing about five acres.

Edward Wharton came to Salem in or before 1648, and when in England he brought to America with him his sister's son, John Windett, a youth, whom he took as his own. Mr. Wharton was a glazier, and lived next the meeting house on Essex Street. He never married, and died March 3, 1677-8,



HORSE BRIDGE.

leaving brother George Wharton, who lived in the Tower of London, and another own brother there, and a half-brother in Virginia and half-sister, Mrs. Windett, in England. He became a great merchant, having in stock at his decease a large amount of cloth and clothing, house furnishings, implements, etc. Of furs, and he had skins of fox, raccoon, wolf, bear, otter, woodchuck, martin, sable, musquash, beaver and moose. Thus passed away one of the leading business men of his time, having won success in spite of religious persecution and opposition.

William Dowdridge of Marblehead and others were presented for rolling a cask in a house on the Lord's day, in the time of public service, and acquitted by the Salem court March 1, 1647-8, as it was necessary work. He had just removed from Gloucester to Marblehead.

Sept. 26, 1648, the court fined Robert Prince, Henry Keny¹ and John Bond for throwing down a great gun.

On the same day the town of Salem was presented to the Ipswich court for want of a sufficient horse bridge over "a brook or swamp about a mile beyond the great pond which joins upon Wenham, lying in the way from the pond to Lin." This was horse bridge, so called as early as 1660, over the source of Bass River, on Conant Street, in North Beverly. This bridge was made sufficient soon after. The view of this bridge on the opposite page indicates that it has changed but little since that early date. This illustration is from a photograph taken in 1924.

John Scott was of Salem, 1647-1649, and probably as late as 1657, being first a servant of Lawrence Southwick. John Bridgman lived in Salem as early as 1647, and died in 1655. He had one child, a daughter, in 1655.

¹HENRY KENNEY¹, born about 1624, was a planter in Salem as early as 1648; lived in what is now Danvers, the site of his house being included within the location of the Boston and Newburyport turnpike, about midway between Preston and Nichols streets; the house was destroyed by fire in the summer of 1696; was a soldier under Major Sedgwick about 1654, at the taking of St. John from the French; married Ann ———; she was his wife in 1680; he died between 1705 and 1710; children: 1. *John*², born Jan. —, 1651-2; 2. *Thomas*², born June 11, 1655; 3. *Hannah*², born March 2, 1657; 4. *Mary*², born May —, 1659; living in 1680; 5. *Sarah*², born Aug. 20, 1661; 6. *Elizabeth*², born Dec. —, 1662; 7. *Lydia*², born April —, 1666; 8. *Henry*², born May 1, 1669.

JOHN KENNEY²; removed to Newbury after 1691, and was living there in 1710; married Elizabeth Looke June 17, 1675; children: 1. *John*³, born March 25, 1676; died young; 2. *Elizabeth*³, born Feb. 6, 1677; 3. *John*³, born Aug. 15, 1689; 4. *Samuel*³, born Oct. 26, 1691; lived in Newbury; married, first, Mary Moores Feb. 29, 1711-2; she died in 174-(?); married, second, widow Lydia Davis Dec. 7, 1749; had children. THOMAS KENNEY²; husbandman; married Elizabeth Knight May 23, 1677; died in 1691; she survived him; children: 1. *Thomas*³, born June 27, 1678; 2. *Joseph*³, born Sept. 7, 1680; living in 1696; 3. *Daniel*³, born July 23, 1682; 4. *Jonathan*³, born May 27, 1686. HENRY KENNEY²; yeoman; lived on his father's homestead as late as 1716; removed to Sutton in 1725; married Priscilla Lewis May 14, 1691; wife Priscilla in 1711; wife Mary, 1716-1725; he was living in Sutton in 1727; children: 1. *Jemima*³, born Feb. 14, 1692; published to John Blackmer of Providence Dec. 9, 1709; 2. *Priscilla*³, born Oct. 9, 1696; 3. *Dinah*³, born Dec. 9, 1698; 4. *Mary*³, born April 5, 1701; married William Fiske of Andover Dec. 3, 1723; 5. *Anne*³, baptized Sept. 16, 1705; married John Bishop of Pembroke Aug. 2, 1726; 6. *Esther*³, baptized Sept. 16, 1705; 7. *Mehitable*³, baptized Feb. 23, 1706-7; married Jonathan Dunnel of Lynn Aug. 21, 1727; 8. *Theophilus*³, baptized June 18, 1710.

March 20, 1647-8, the town gave Robert Cole liberty to yearly mow the grass upon the highway between Henry Herrick's rock and the west end of Lawrence Leech's lot, provided he does not hinder passing through the way.

June 24, 1648, the town granted the request of Thomas Scudder to exchange a plot of ground near his "now" dwelling house.

Aug. 21, 1648, the seven men granted to George Corwin a farm of two hundred and fifty acres of land and twenty-five acres of meadow; to John Pigkett¹ a parcel of land near Daniel Ray's farm, formerly granted to Lieutenant Lothrop, who surrendered it to the town; and to Francis Perry about an acre of meadow lying near and on the left hand side of the great pond towards Lynn. October ninth, they granted to Lt. Thomas Lothrop about an acre of upland lying within his meadow. November twentieth, the town voted that, whereas the way laid between Goodman Ray's and Goodman Porter's upon the hill is "now" made through Goodman Porter's land, it was ordered that Goodman Porter should have the other way as his own land to enclose and improve to his best advantage.

JOHN KENNEY³; husbandman; married Mary ———; they were living in 1737; children: 1. ———⁴ (son), baptized April 27, 1706; 2. Benjamin⁴, baptized Nov. 28, 1708; 3. Benjamin⁴, born Oct. —, 1709; tailor; lived in Salem in 1737; 4. John⁴, born June 12, 1710; 5. Bartholomew⁴, born March 24, 1711-2; 6. Elisha⁴, born Feb. 21, 1711; 7. Josiah⁴, born Feb. —, 1711; married Mary Case of Topsfield July 3, 1734; 8. David⁴, born March 12, 1714-5. THOMAS KENNEY³; weaver and yeoman; married Martha Cox Nov. 10, 1701; they were living in 1716; children: 1. Jeremiah⁴, baptized Sept. 6, 1702; 2. James⁴, baptized March 5, 1704; 3. Stephen⁴, baptized July 15, 1705; 4. Aaron⁴, baptized Feb. 23, 1706-7; 5. Amos⁴, baptized Oct. 10, 1708; 6. Moses⁴, baptized June 18, 1710; 7. Martha⁴, baptized March 9, 1711-2; 8. Lois⁴, baptized March —, 1712; 9. Kezia³, baptized March 6, 1714. DANIEL KENNEY³; married Mary Richards Jan. 10, 1704-5; children: 1. Daniel⁴, born Oct. 19, 1705; 2. Isaac⁴, baptized Oct. 19, 1707; lived in Middleton; married Lydia Richardson Aug. 28, 1734; had children: 3. Jacob⁴, baptized Dec. 18, 1709; 4. Israel⁴, baptized Oct. 5, 1712; 5. Mary⁴, baptized April 24, 1715; married Israel Averill June 11, 1735; 6. Ruth⁴, baptized June 30, 1717; married Samuel Buntin Jan. 11, 1739; 7. Eunice⁴, baptized Feb. 14, 1719-20; married Joseph Fuller Feb. 17, 1741; 8. David⁴, baptized July 29, 1722; lived in Middleton; married Priscilla Wilkins May 21, 1750; had children; 9. Jonathan⁴, baptized Jan. 15, 1726-7. JONATHAN KENNEY³; married Rebecca Nurse Dec. 21, 1709; children: 1. Jonathan⁴, baptized June 8, 1712; 2. Rebecca⁴, baptized Sept. 20, 1714; 3. Thomas⁴, baptized Sept. 2, 1716; 4. Nathan⁴, baptized March 2, 1717-8; 5. Samuel⁴, baptized June 12, 1720.

¹John Pickett lived at the northerly corner of Hale and Bisson streets, in Beverly, until about 1660, when he removed to Stratford, Conn.; children: 1. John, baptized Nov. 19, 1648; 2. James, baptized Nov. 19, 1648; 3. Sarah, baptized Nov. 19, 1648; 4. Thomas, baptized Nov. 19, 1648; 5. Rebecca, baptized June 30, 1650; 6. Daniel, baptized Jan. 25, 1651-2; 7. Jacob, baptized Sept. 3, 1654.

Jeffry Massy was chosen by the town, clerk of the market, being the first one, Dec. 19, 1648. Clerks of the market regulated prices when provisions or produce were offered for public sale.¹

In the Salem court, Feb. 21, 1648-9, William Goodwin, servant of John Hathorne, presented for robbing the orchard of Major-general Endecott and stealing many apples, a petticoat and other things, including money, from Thomas Putnam, jr., for lying and rebellious carriage towards his master and dame and robbing his dame's desk, was ordered to pay twenty shillings to the major-general for the apples, twenty shillings for two lies and be admonished for his actions toward his master.

Elias Stileman continued to keep an ordinary as late as 1660, and to sell beer and provisions in 1649, strongwater in 1656, and wine in 1660.

At the same sitting of the court, Richard Hollingworth was admonished for much sleeping in time of public ordinances, and frequent absence therefrom on Lord's day afternoons. He pleaded in defence illness and bodily infirmity.

At the same time, the town of Salem was presented for want of a pound.

John Friend, being desirous of erecting a tide grist mill on the westerly side of Bass River and southerly side of what is now Elliot Street, probably suggested the removal of the landing place of the ferry from the head of Bass River to Draper's point. This met public approval, and a lane was proposed to be laid out as a means of going to it. March 12, 1648-9, the town ordered that the highway be brought from Edmond Grover's through Jonathan Porter's and Mr. Garford's ground to Draper's point, if the general court should consent thereto. The general court voted, May 4, 1649: "The petition of Salem, for removal of the highway and landing place, from the head of Bass River to Draper's Point, is granted." The way laid out to the new

¹The list of clerks of the market who succeeded Jeffry Massy is as follows: Thomas Spooner was chosen March 13, 1655-6; Thomas Goldthwaite, Feb. 24, 1656-7; Serg. Thomas Hale, March 22, 1657-8; John Ruck, April 4, 1695; Samuel Corning, March 14, 1659-60; Francis Skerry, April 22, 1661; William Dodge, April 7, 1662; Nathaniel Putnam, Nov. 9, 1663; William Lake, June 17, 1665; Stephen Haskett, March 22, 1666-7; Elezeur Gidney, March 20, 1667-8; Mr. Ashby, March 19, 1668-9; Anthony Ashby, Oct. 7, 1669; Bartholomew Gedney, March 27, 1671; Philip Cromwell, March 18, 1671-2; Thomas Ives, Jan. 20, 1673-4; Samuel Beadle, May 3, 1678; John Cromwell, March 27, 1679; David Phipeny, July 23, 1680; John Lander, April 11, 1681; Nathaniel Silsbey, April 7, 1682; Samuel Phipeny, April 9, 1683; John Rogers, March 31, 1684; Nathaniel Silsbey, March 9, 1684-5; Symon Willard, March 19, 1685-6; Jeremiah Rogers, April 11, 1687.

ferry landing is now called Beckford Street. This landing place was used as a general landing place as late as 1758,¹ but as a ferry terminal only until after 1665. It was changed to the point nearest to Salem about four hundred feet easterly from the present Beverly terminal of the Beverly bridge. The landing on the Salem side was three or four rods easterly of the present Salem terminal of the bridge. The ferry house is marked on the plan



FERRY LANDING AT DRAPER'S POINT.

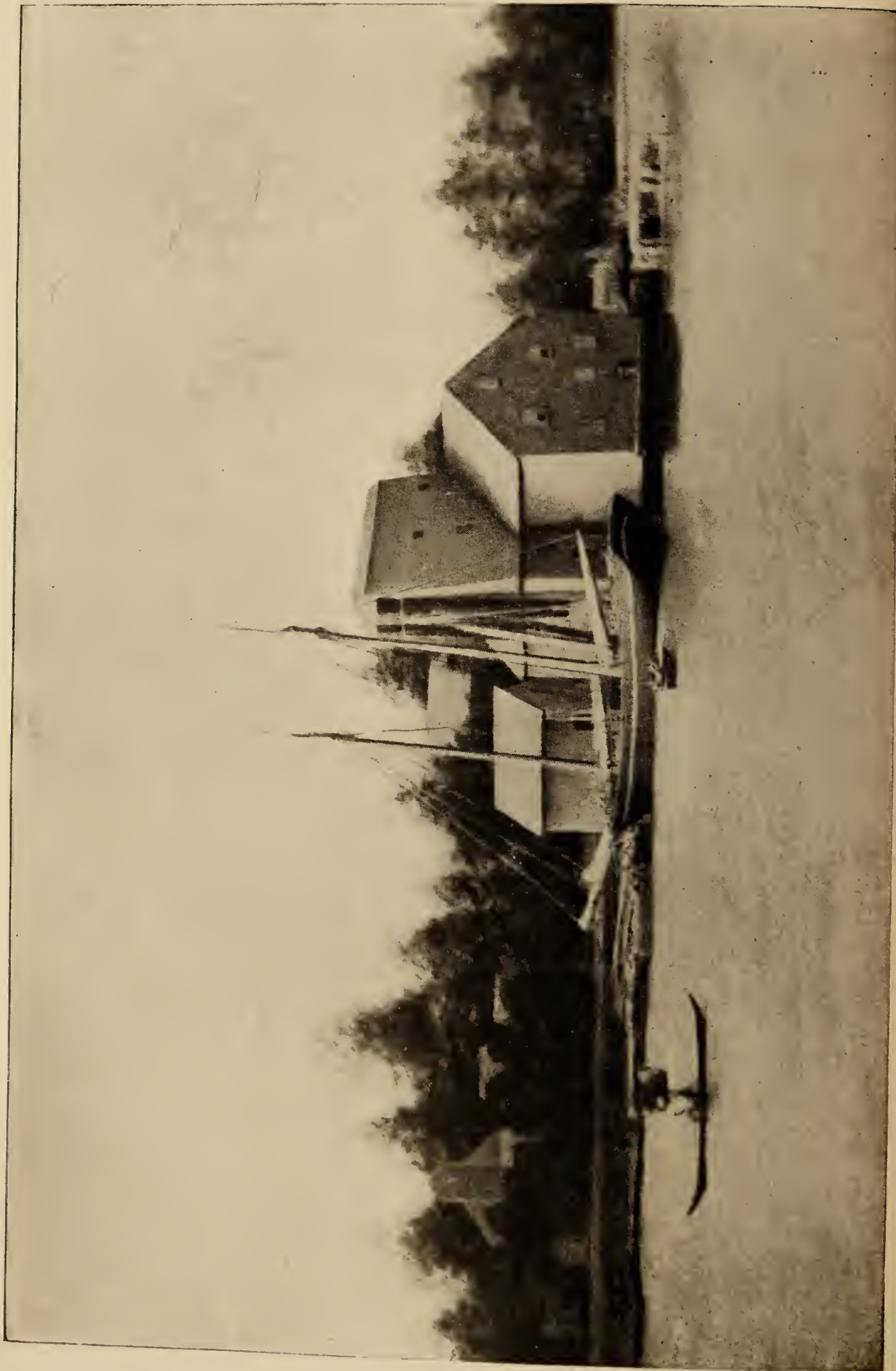
made in 1677 and shown on page 16. The ferry was continued between these two points until the bridge was constructed, in 1788.

In 1638, the town had granted to Richard Stackhouse a ten-acre lot of land, on which he built a house, on the northerly side of what is now Cabot Street, where the southerly end of Rantoul Street connects with it. June 6, 1653, the town ordered that Richard Stackhouse for the relief of his family should have the benefit of the keeping of the ferry towards Ipswich, he providing a sufficient boat and men to attend it and to enter on it the last day of June. Mr. Stackhouse's daughter Ruth Haskins, then a widow, succeeded him, and was conducting the ferry in 1717.

The grist mill which was erected by Mr. Friend at what is now the Elliott Street bridge was reached by a way called the mill lane, which ran from Cabot Street about three hundred feet

¹Beverly Town Records, volume V, page 110.





FRIEND'S CRISP MILL.

on the way to the ferry (now Beckford Street), then turned to the right and then to the left to the river at a point opposite the mill. Some of the buildings of the United Shoe Machinery Company are located within the ancient mill pond.

John Friend died in 1655, and his son Samuel Friend, of Manchester, sold the mill to Lawrence Leach of Salem, but the deed was not passed until after 1662. The mill was appraised at forty pounds, of which only thirty pounds had been paid. This balance, Mr. Leach's son John paid, and, thereupon, Sept. 7, 1665, he received a deed of it.¹ John Leach lived here and was the miller until he conveyed the property to John Dodge, jr., of Beverly, husbandman, Sept. 2, 1669.² Mr. Dodge conveyed to his son-in-law, Ebenezer Woodbury of Salem, miller, "the grist mills alias corn mills, Oct. 12, 1702."³ Mr. Woodbury was running the mills in 1708, and died possessed of the property in 1714. Upon the division of his real estate, in 1758, to his eldest son Ebenezer was assigned "Two old Grist mills situate in Bass River in Beverly." The mills continued to be owned in the Woodbury family until July 17, 1797, when Israel Woodbury conveyed them to Thomas Davis, jr., of Beverly, the sale having been made by auction.⁴ Mr. Davis died July 17, 1840; and the heirs conveyed the mills to Aaron Dodge of Beverly, miller, April 28, 1848.⁵ The mills continued to be run until the decease of Mr. Dodge, Feb. 3, 1886. The daguerreotype from which this illustration of the ancient mill was made was taken about 1855. The schooner is the *Island City*, sailing from Harwich, and bringing corn to the mill from New York.

March 13, 1648-9, the selectmen granted to John Hardy liberty to make a dam to drown his salt meadow, at the head of Forest River in the place where the old bridge was, for seven years. They, also, granted to Henry Bartholomew that part that was beside his ten acres in the meadow.

Jan. 29, 1648-9, the seven men granted to Ralph Tompkins a small piece of meadow lying near Major-General Endecott's "last grant" in a corner by a small brook and a great swamp.

John Rowden,⁶ planter, appeared in Salem in 1648, and had, in 1661, an apprentice, Daniel Poole, who was born in 1655.

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 5, leaf 110.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 3, leaf 69.

³Essex Registry of Deeds, book 16, leaf 146.

⁴Essex Registry of Deeds, book 162, leaf 210.

⁵Essex Registry of Deeds, book 400, leaves 141 and 142.

⁶John Rowden was born about 1611; married, first, Mary —; second, the widow of Richard Hammond, who was killed by the Indians, in 1676, with Captain Lake at the Kennebec. He had a son in 1674; and died in the late autumn of 1683.

Robert Mountegue and Richard Haynes¹ lived here in 1648 and 1649; and the latter resided on Cape Ann Side when Beverly became a town.

April 25, 1649, the selectmen ordered that George, Thomas, Samuel and Joseph Gardner should survey and measure from the meeting house to a parcel of meadow upon the great river westerly from Salem. On the same day, a committee was chosen to lay out a way over Mr. Read's land, as Goodman Canterbury had enclosed the old way which caused men to go far about to get to their lots.

The seven men of Salem, May 30, 1649, granted to Goodman Giggles, Joshua Grafton, Goodman Jakson and others (who had eleven hundred acres of upland) fifty acres of meadow to be divided between them, lying part between Moulton's brook and Ipswich River, and the other part on the south side of the river between Mr. Norris and Mr. Corwyn's farms; to Goodman Sowthwick four acres of meadow near Mr. Corwin's farm, whereof two acres are in recompence of his meadow, spoiled in digging turf for the new bridge; to Thomas Gardiner, jr., George Gardiner and Hilliard Verryn four acres of meadow to each of them at the seven men's bounds, and forty acres of upland apiece, the Gardiners' to be laid out near their meadow, and Verrin's to be in lieu of forty acres formerly granted to him; to George Gardiner four acres of meadow on the north side of Ipswich River, near above Mr. Corwyn's upland on the south side; to Thomas Gardiner two acres in the same place; to Samuel and Joseph Gardiner four acres of meadow apiece; to Joseph Pope four acres of meadow in the same place; to John Burton, Thomas Roots and Nathaniel Felton three acres of meadow apiece near Mr. Corwyn's meadow; to Thomas Scudder, sr., six acres of meadow in the same meadow; to Mrs. Felton and Christopher Waller² four acres of meadow in the same place; to John Reeves three acres of meadow and twenty acres of upland toward Mr. Corwyn's farm; to John Conclyne, Ananias Conclyne and Thomas Scudder four acres apiece in the same meadow; to Philemon Dickenson two acres of meadow in the same place; to Mr. Price ten acres of meadow and one hundred acres of upland near Mr. Corwyn's farm; and to Sergeant Porter ten acres of meadow by the great river. Nearly all of these grants were of land lying on Ipswich River, on the line between Danvers and Peabody.

¹Richard Haynes was associated with William Haynes in Salem in 1648, and they may have been brothers. Richard Haynes was a husbandman, and died Dec. 16, 1681.

²Christopher Waller was a tray maker; lived where the Salem jail is now located; married Margaret Felton; died in 1676; she married, secondly, Robert Fuller.

In the Salem court, June 28, 1649, Giles Corey¹ was fined for stealing wheat, powder, soap, flax, tobacco, bacon, pork, butter and knives from Mr. Curwin and Thomas Anthrom.

The selectmen, Aug. 31, 1649, granted to Mr. Gardner about an acre of meadow lying on the north side of and adjoining his farm; to Francis Skerie "a little spot of ground betweene the sea and his field which was formerly Goodels"; and to John Marston two little spots of marsh lying against Mr. Scruggs by goodie King's land.

Sept. 11, 1649, the Salem court fined Robert Sallowes² and Robert Starr, for fighting, twenty shillings each. These were young men, having just come of age. Starr was a mariner, and sailed on a coaster until 1679, when he was "murdered by the hands of ye Barberious heathens."

Oct. 13, 1649, the selectmen granted to Richard Stileman the meadow of which Mr. Verin had the cutting of the grass, but if he should remove the meadow should return to the town; to Mr. Herbert and Goodman Robinson fifty acres apiece; to Goodman Bullock and Goodman Buffum forty acres each; and to Goodman Bowdish thirty acres, and to each of these five men five acres of meadow, near Goodman Moulton's farm; and to Mr. Gedney the land and meadow which was taken from Mr. Clark's farm by the men of Lynn.

Oct. 19, 1649, the general court ordered that on the last Wednesday of April following there should be a meeting of the deputies of the several towns in this jurisdiction, at Salem, to consult about and prepare elections, and what else they think may tend to the welfare of the country at the next general court.

Nov. 19, 1649, James Thomas was granted twenty acres of planting ground; John Ingersoll forty acres of land to plant; John Bridgman³ thirty acres of land; Thomas Smith and Thomas

¹Giles Corey was born about 1619; married, first, Margaret ———; second, Mary Brite April 11, 1673; third, Martha ———; pressed to death Sept. 19, 1692; wife Martha was hung as a witch Sept. 22, 1692; children: 1. Deliverance, born in Salem Aug. 5, 1658; married Henry Crosby June 5, 1683; 2. Margaret; married William Cleaves of Beverly; 3. Elizabeth; married John Moulton of Salem. Mr. Corey lived in what is now Peabody about ten rods westerly of the West Peabody Junction railroad station, adjoining the southerly side of the location of the Salem and Lowell railroad. Caleb Moore stated that when he was in Virginia with his father, the latter bought Mary, Cory's second wife, out of a London ship.

²John Black married, secondly, Freeborn, widow (not daughter) of Robert Sallows, July 29, 1664. She was probably daughter of Peter Wolfe. See volume I, pages 278 and 294.

³John Bridgeman was in Salem as early as 1647; and died in the autumn of 1655. He had an early child, Mary, who was baptized Sept. 8, 1650, and who married Samuel Smith April 8, 1673.

Watson thirty acres of meadow and upland each; Elias Mason,¹ John Robinson and John Kitchen forty acres of meadow and upland each; Thomas Pigden two acres of meadow near Wenham line; and Francis Perrie thirty acres of upland with the thirty acres formerly granted, in all sixty acres near the meadows granted to Mr. Gardner's sons, and also the overplus of the twelve acres of meadow granted to the Gardners near the line of Salem.

Elias Mason

Nov. 26, 1649, the selectmen granted to George Williams about a quarter of an acre of ground lying between his meadow and Francis Skerry's land; to Nathaniel Putnam fifty acres of land lying beyond Elias Stileman's farm, and adjoining Mr. Thorndike and Captain Hathorne's farms; to Giles Gorey twenty acres of land; and to Thomas James forty acres of land and meadow; and it was agreed that the two hundred acres of upland, which was taken from Mr. Downing's farm by the great meadow towards Wenham should be granted to him again for his pains in transcribing the books of the town's records to be kept for posterity, making his grant again five hundred acres.

Dec. 3, 1649, the selectmen granted to Richard Greaves forty acres of land; to Thomas Antrum thirty acres of land in addition to twenty acres formerly granted; to Zacheus Curtes all that meadow that lieth above Mr. Clarke's meadow, on the south side of Mr. Humphry's farm and on the north of Mr. Clarke's plain that lieth next to Dog Pond; and to Peter Palfrey five acres of meadow in Wenham meadow.

Two weeks later, the selectmen granted to Henry Trew forty acres of land; and to Mr. Bacon one acre of the swamp lying in the north neck, adjoining Edmond Gyles ten-acre lot on the south side of Mr. Bacon's lot which he purchased from Captain Trask; to Ensign Dixey and James Standish that highway which lieth on the south side of James Standish lot, to be divided between them; to Ensign Dixey, in recompence for his way, a little spot of land or elbow that lieth on the northwest side of the lot which was Mr. Bartholmew's, and a small piece of swamp that lieth from the highway that is the outlet to Guido Baylie's bound, and twenty acres of land next to Nicholas Patch's farm; to Thomas Cole forty acres of land and four acres of meadow; to Goodman Pickerin as much land as he lost by the running of the Lynn

¹Elias Mason lived at about 371 Essex Street as early as 1644; married, first, Jane ———; she died Nov. 9, 1661; married, second, Elizabeth ———, who survived him; died in the spring of 1688; children: 1. Sara, baptized May 23, 1647; married John Robinson; 2. Mary, baptized May 23, 1647; married George Cox; 3. Hannah, baptized Jan. 14, 1648-9; unmarried in 1698. 4. Martha, baptized May 18, 1651; 5. Elias, baptized May 29, 1653.

line, to be laid out adjoining the rest of his land ; to Philip Cromwell one hundred acres of land and ten acres of meadow ; to Robert Prince forty acres beyond the river ; to Francis Skerie sixty acres of land, including what was formerly given him ; and to Henry Skerie forty acres of land, including what was formerly given him ; and it was ordered "that mr Gidney shall take in the highway adioyning to the ground he bought of mr Emerie and to leaue a way through the midst of the next field and a way to the watering place."

CHAPTER XIII.

MARBLEHEAD.



FROM the earliest settlement of Marblehead, that territory and the people who lived there seem to have been in some degree and manner independent of Salem. The colonial tax was sometimes assessed upon the residents of that part of Salem as though Marblehead was a town by itself.

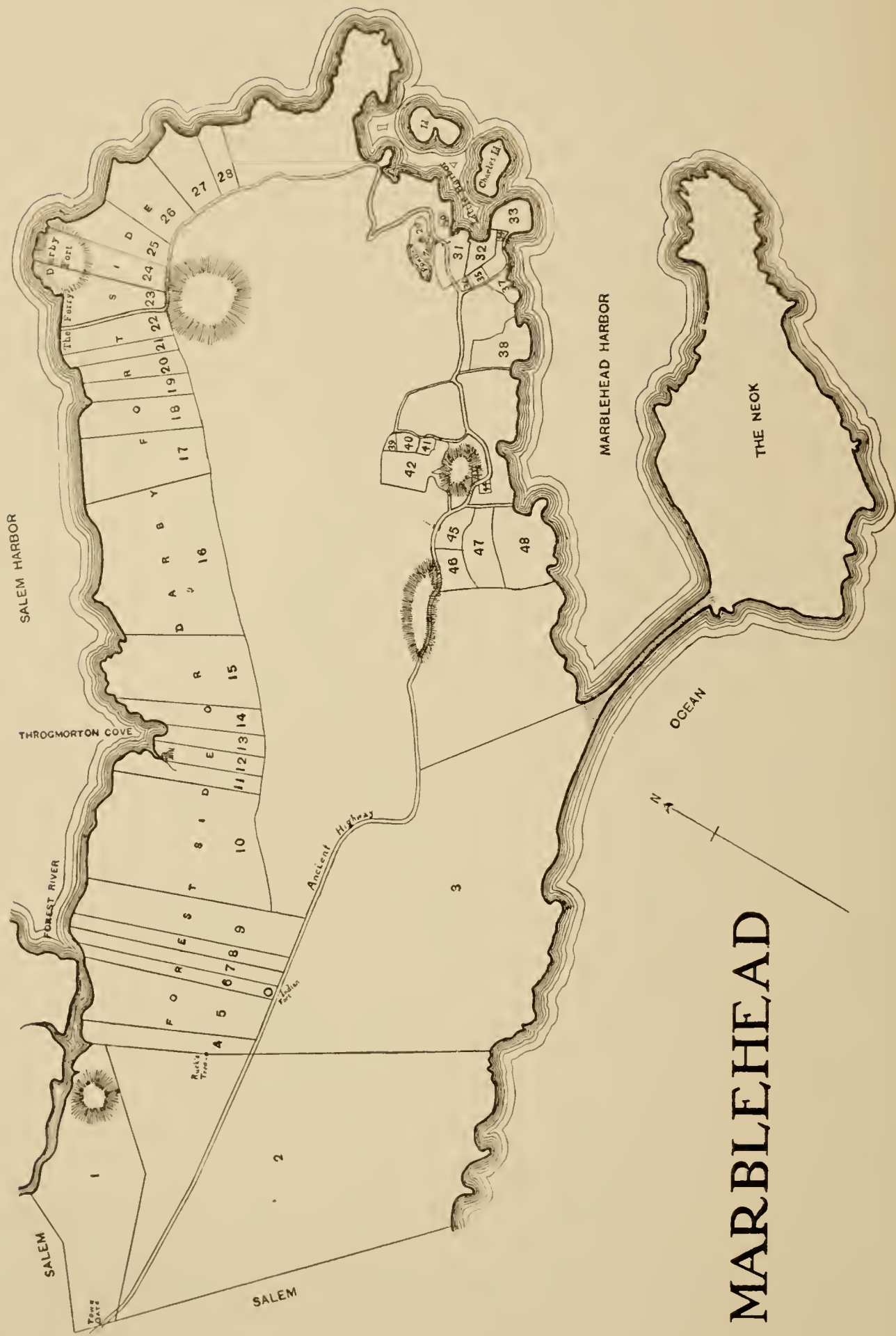
At a general town meeting in Salem, March 12, 1648-9, it was "ordered that Marble Head, with the allowance of the general court, shall be a town, and the bounds to be the utmost extent of the land which was Mr. Humphrey's farm and sold to Marble Head, and so all the neck to the sea, reserving the disposing of the ferry and appointing of the ferry man to Salem."

May 2, 1649, the general court, "Upon the petition of the inhabitants of Marble Head, for them to be a town of themselves; Salem having granted them to be a town of themselves, and appointed them the bounds of their towne, which the Court doth grant."

Francis Johnson, who transcribed the earliest records of the town of Marblehead, stated, before 1674, that when he copied them the old book was not whole, several leaves having been torn out.¹ The existing records give scanty information of the doings of the town and of the people who then constituted it.

The first board of seven men, or selectmen, consisted of Moses Maverick, Samuel Doliber, Francis Johnson, Nicholas Merritt, John Peach, sr., John Deverox and John Bartoll. Francis Simson was the first constable, and lived there until 1666, when he removed to Rhode Island, having become a Quaker. He was born about 1610, and had a sister who was twice married.

¹Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, volume V, page 279.



MARBLEHEAD

Felt says that when Marblehead became a town it contained forty-four families. A list of the grantees of the common lands in Marblehead probably gives a fair representation of the freeholders at that time. The following names are given: James Smith, Richard Rowland, Samuel Doliber, John Gatchell, Edmund Nicholson, William Barber, David Thomas, John Legg, Peter Pittford, Erasmus James, Thomas Bowing, John Stacy, George Chin, John Northey, Nicholas Merritt, Thomas Pitman, Timothy Allen, Thomas Lane, Arthur Sanden, Isaac Allerton, Moses Maverick, William Walton, John Lion, Henry Stacy, William Chichester, Samuel Carwithin, David Carwithen, Thomas Gray, Richard Norman, John Peach, jr., Richard Curtice, John Hart, William Charles, John Deverox, Abraham Whiteare, John Peach, sr., John Bartoll, Joseph Doliber, Robert Knight, John Bennet, Francis Johnson, Walsingham Chilson, John Norman and John Goyt.

Robert Knight moved from Salem to Marblehead, where he lived from 1644 to 1653. He then removed to Manchester. He had a daughter Marie. Mary Hill lived in Marblehead, 1643-1645. Timothy Allen lived there from 1645 to 1654¹; and removed to Lynn before 1660. George Pollard died in Marblehead in 1646. In his will, he mentioned no relatives.² Henry Pease lived there from 1646 to 1653; and had wife Gertrude in 1651. Mathew Gillett (Jellett) was a boy servant of George Williams in Salem in 1641; and lived in Marblehead in 1646. Henry Trevett lived in Marblehead from 1646 to 1654. He was born about 1623; and had a wife in 1664. George Tucker was of Marblehead in 1647, and removed to the settlement at Gloucester about 1650.

The map of Marblehead as it was when the town was set off from Salem has been made from the records of grants and conveyances, and is as nearly correct and complete as it can be made. The following is a list of the owners of the tracts of land which are numbered. Those portions of the town which are not numbered constituted the common and undivided land, being very ledgy and rough and unsuitable for planting or other improvement.

1. *Coy Pond Land*. This tract of land is the fifty-acre game preserve of Emanuel Downing, and has ever since been known as the Coy Pond land.³ This was conveyed by John

¹Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, volume I, page 91.

²Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, volume I, page 106.

³See chapter two of this volume.

Humphrey to Mr. Downing Sept. 6, 1638,¹ and the latter died possessed of it about 1657. This was the northwestern end of the grant of five hundred acres made by the town of Salem to John Humphrey May 2, 1636. Mr. Downing granted it to his grandson, Solomon Stoddard of Boston, and he conveyed it to Moses Maverick and Richard Rowland, both of Marblehead, May 1, 1667.² This tract was later claimed by Salem, and is still a part of it.

2. *The Plain Farm.* This tract of four hundred and fifty acres of land was the balance of the grant of five hundred acres of land made by the town of Salem to John Humphrey May 2, 1636, after his sale of fifty acres to Emanuel Downing, Sept. 6, 1638. Mr. Humphrey leased both this and the Pond farm to Zacheus Gould for ten years from Sept. 29, 1640. Sept. 6, 1642, in the Boston court, Mrs. Lydia Banks recovered a judgment of one hundred pounds, and probably levied an execution upon the land. Sept. 24, 1645, she conveyed it to Moses Maverick, David Corwithen, Arthur Sandin, William Charles, John Peach, the elder, and "others the inhabitants of Marblehead, all that farm called ye Playnes farme," etc.³ It was subsequently divided into fourteen or more parts. Mr. Humphrey had a house on this land, which had been built by Nathaniel Pickman in 1639, and kept servants there; and when he went to England, in the autumn of 1641, he left his son-in-law, Adam Oatly, at the house, which the latter finished. As agent for Mr. Humphrey, Oatly sold the house and land to John Friend of Salem; but this did not stand against the execution of Mrs. Banks, apparently.

3. *Hugh Peter Grant.* This tract of land, containing three hundred and fifty acres, was granted by the town of Salem to Hugh Peter about 1636; and he conveyed it, by his agent, to John Devereaux of Marblehead, fisherman, July 1, 1659. Mr. Devereaux built a house upon the lot, on or near the site of the Devereaux residence which is now standing, and died possessed of the estate in the spring of 1695. Mr. Peter died as a regicide, and his only daughter and heiress, Mrs. Elizabeth Barker of London, England, claimed the title to the farm sometime after the decease of Mr. Devereaux. She released her interest therein to his son Robert Devereaux June 29, 1704.

4. John Ruck owned this ten-acre lot about the time that Marblehead became a town, and conveyed it to Richard Rowland before 1672.

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 1, leaf 1.

²See The Essex Antiquarian, volume XIII, page 132; and Historical Collections of the Essex Institute, volume 46, page 1.

³Essex Registry of Deeds, book 1, leaf 29.

5. This lot consisted of three ten-acre lots, which were owned very early by Moses Maverick; and he conveyed it to Richard Rowland Aug. 25, 1672. In this lot are the famous dungeons or kettle holes made by the glaciers.

6. Thomas Oliver, a calander, owned this ten-acre lot early, and conveyed it to John Bradstreet of Salem in or before 1658. The ancient Indian circular palisaded fort was located at the extreme southerly end of this lot.¹

7. James Underwood, a baker, owned this ten-acre lot very early, and conveyed it to John Gatchell, a planter, before 1651.

8. Abraham Williams owned this lot of ten acres very early, and conveyed it to John Gatchell in or before 1651.

9. Richard Temple owned this lot of about thirty acres of land, and conveyed it to Moses Maverick in or before 1650.

10. Richard Hollingworth owned this lot when Marblehead became a town, and he died possessed of it in 1654.

11. William Dixey conveyed this lot of land to Henry Harwood of Salem April 20, 1640²; and Mr. Harwood died in the spring of 1664, possessed of it.

12. This lot of land was granted by the town of Salem to Henry Harwood, who conveyed it to William Stratton, "master of ship of Bristow that then used this country," July 10, 1649.³ Captain Stratton sold it to William Payne and Richard Russell, who immediately erected at the brook in the cove the first grist mill in Marblehead. William Beale of Marblehead hired the mill until it was sold to Joseph Jewett of Rowley, and even after Mr. Jewett bought it. Jewett conveyed the property to John Bradstreet of Marblehead June 28, 1658.⁴ The mill was gone in 1674.

13. The town of Salem granted this lot of land to Thomas Tuck in or before 1657; and he conveyed it to William Beale Nov. 25, 1657.

14. This lot belonged to William Beale in 1658.⁵

15. Richard Hide of Salem early owned this lot, and conveyed it to Thomas Pitman of Marblehead, fisherman, Nov. 4, 1657.⁶

16. Francis Collins owned this lot in 1657, and died possessed of it in 1689.

17. John Legg early owned this lot and died possessed of it in 1674.

¹See volume I, pages 27 and 28.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 6, leaf 39.

³Essex Registry of Deeds, book 1, leaf 7.

⁴Essex Registry of Deeds, book 2, leaf 31.

⁵Essex Registry of Deeds, book 2, leaf 82.

⁶Essex Registry of Deeds, book 4, leaf 4.

18. The western half of this lot of land early belonged to Richard Hollingworth, and the eastern part to William Hunter of Salem, mariner, in 1658. Mr. Hunter died in 1691, possessed of his part of the lot.

19. Samuel Friend of Manchester, planter, conveyed this lot to John Peach, jr., of Marblehead, a fisherman, Dec. 3, 1658.¹

20. This lot of land belonged to John Legg of Marblehead in 1658, and he died in 1674, having devised it to his wife Elizabeth.

21. This lot of land belonged to John Peach as early as 1658.

22. The owner of this lot at about the time of the incorporation of Marblehead has not been learned.

23. This lot belonged to Joseph Grafton of Salem, mariner, in 1649; and he conveyed it to Thomas Dixey of Marblehead, the ferryman, Aug. 30, 1658.²

24. This lot belonged to Thomas Edwards, a shoemaker, very early, and he conveyed it to David Corwithen, sr., July 9, 1649.³

25. This lot of land belonged to Joseph Younges of Salem very early, and he conveyed it to David Corwithen Sept. 24, 1649.⁴

26. This lot of land and the house thereon belonged to William Luckin of Marblehead in 1643, when the land and houses were in the occupation of William Chichester. The houses were gone a few years later.

27. This was the ten-acre lot of Abraham Whitear of Marblehead, a fisherman, in 1652, when he sold it.

28. Robert Knight of Marblehead owned this lot in 1652. He removed to Manchester, and sold the land to Richard Reith of Marblehead in 1686.

29. This lot is the ancient cemetery among the ledges. In the midst of it stood the meeting house, and at that place marked with a dot on the map was "Walton's Spring," from which water was obtained in later years for church purposes.⁵

30. This minute house lot belonged to John Peach, jr., very early. He sold it to John Norman of Manchester, and the latter conveyed it to Robert Knight of Marblehead Sept. 28, 1651.⁶

31. This lot of land belonged to Capt. Isaac Allerton, and he conveyed it to his son-in-law Moses Maverick very early.

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 1, leaf 43.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 2, leaf 51.

³Essex Registry of Deeds, book 1, leaf 6.

⁴Essex Registry of Deeds, book 2, leaf 64.

⁵See volume 1, page 297.

⁶Essex Registry of Deeds, book 5, leaf 111.

32. This was the property of Matthew Cradock, the governor of the Massachusetts Bay Company in England, in 1629. A house stood upon it in 1638, and it was occupied by Rev. William Walton. Mr. Cradock died, and his widow Rebecca, who had married Richard Glover of London, gentleman, conveyed it to Mr. Walton June 6, 1650.¹ He died in 1668, and this became the homestead of his son Samuel Walton, who lived in it. He conveyed it to Ambrose Gale of Marblehead, merchant, Sept. 20, 1686²; and Mr. Gale to Joseph Gallison of Marblehead, a fisherman, Dec. 31, 1706.³ Mr. Gallison died in 1754, and the estate descended to his grandson John Gallison. The old house was gone soon afterward.

33. Peter Petford owned and lived upon this lot in 1641, and erected a fishing stage there. He owned the house, stage and land until his death, in 1659.

34. Arthur Sandin was granted land in Marblehead in 1638, and was one of the earliest inhabitants of the town. He lived on this lot, and was the first innkeeper in the town, being first licensed therefor in May, 1640. He died in 1667, possessed of the house and lot.

35. This lot early belonged to Thomas Pitman, and was the property of Francis Johnson in 1655.

36. Walsingham Chillson of Marblehead owned and lived in this lot, and July 13, 1655, conveyed the house and land to Francis Johnson.⁴

At the northwesterly end of this lot stood the town stocks.

37. This lot was owned by Timothy Allen in 1648. He removed to Lynn, and conveyed it, with the house thereon, to Elias Hendley of Marblehead Sept. 28, 1660.⁵

38. This lot early belonged to John Coit, who lived in the house situated on the extreme eastern point of the land. About 1635, this cove at the foot of State Street was agreed to be a place of public use for the town, and John Coit built a stage on this lot, it being one of the first, if not the first, in the town. Mr. Coit removed to Cape Ann, and conveyed the house, stage and land to William Pitt Feb. 9, 1647.⁶ When he was of Boston, merchant, Mr. Pitt conveyed the whole estate to his son-in-law Christopher Lattimer of Marblehead, mariner, who was then living upon the premises, Feb. 2, 1659.⁷

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 1, leaf 24.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 7, leaf 115.

³Essex Registry of Deeds, book 19, leaf 127.

⁴Essex Registry of Deeds, book 13, leaf 242.

⁵Essex Registry of Deeds, book 8, leaf 177.

⁶Essex Registry of Deeds, book 1, leaf 6.

⁷Essex Registry of Deeds, book 4, leaf 4.

39. Thomas Taynour owned this lot as early as 1661.
40. This lot of land and house thereon belonged to Henry Pease of Marblehead in 1656.
41. This lot belonged to Henry Pease in 1656.
42. John Gatchell of Marblehead, planter, owned and lived on this lot in 1652.
43. This lot belonged to Francis Johnson in 1666.
44. This lot early belonged to Emanuel Clarke, who conveyed it to Joseph Bowd in or before 1664.
45. Erasmus James of Marblehead owned this lot, with the house thereon, very early. He died, and his widow Jane James conveyed the house and lot to James Smith of Marblehead Aug. 6, 1660.¹
46. This was the homestead of Richard Rowland of Marblehead, planter, as early as 1648, and he died, possessed of it in the summer of 1685.
47. William Barber of Marblehead, a fisherman, owned this lot in 1651.
48. Samuel Doliber of Marblehead owned this lot of land, with the house thereon, very early, and conveyed the estate to John Waldron of Marblehead, a fisherman, June 20, 1651.²

Though William Walton was never ordained to the ministry, he continued to preach to the people of Marblehead until his death, in October, 1668. A meeting house had been built on burying hill, and the usual troubles which arose from seating the people came to the inhabitants. Until a church was organized, in 1684, the members of the Salem church who lived in Marblehead attended the services of the church in Salem on days of the sacraments of the Lord's supper and baptism, and on other Sundays were found in the little meeting house amongst the ledges and the graves on the hill. The members of the Salem church who lived in Marblehead in 1684 numbered fifty-four.

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 4, leaf 130.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 4, leaf 67.

CHAPTER XIV.

FORT ON WINTER ISLAND



At a meeting of the seven men, Jan. 21, 1649-50, there was granted to William Robinson sixty acres of land, which was formerly granted, and his son twenty acres; to John Tucker¹, James Patch², Edmond Grover, John Hill³ and Philip Verin forty acres each; to Josia Roots about two acres of land adjoining to his ten-acre lot on the northeast side, and to Robert Morgan's

John Tucker

James Patch *Philip Verin*

John

Hill

at the other end; to William Scuder thirty acres by Mr. Bartholmew's; to Mr. Bacon one

hundred acres beyond the great river; to John Lovett twenty acres more in the swamp and upland; and to Henry Cooke forty acres beyond the river "or on this side by Henerie Bartholmew."

¹John Tucker was in Salem from 1642 to 1647; was called father-in-law to a boy, under eighteen years of age, named John, son of John Beaumont, who died in or before 1647. Mr. Tucker probably married the widow of the deceased.

²James Patch lived near Mackerel Cove, Beverly, from 1648 to the autumn of 1658, when he died, leaving wife Hannah and children, James Patch, Mary Patch and Elizabeth Patch. In his will, he mentions his brothers Nicholas Woodbury and John Patch.

³John Hill, born in Bristol, England, about 1635; wheelwright; lived on the easterly side of Aborn Street and southerly of Glasshouse field, and later in Beverly; married, first, Miriam Gardner; and, second, Lydia

At a meeting of the seven men, Feb. 21, 1649-50, there was granted to Robert Molton, jr., the thirty acres formerly laid out to him.

Ralph Fogg, the first clerk of the court in Salem, had before this date lost the prestige he had had in the town for a number of years, and, Feb. 28, 1649-50, made his final appearance in the court to answer for a charge of lying in the face of the open congregation on a Lord's day, slandering the church, and after the meeting was ended complaining to Governor Endecott of wrong that he had done him, both in church and court, saying that the governor was the grand jury and the grand jury, the governor. The court ordered that Fogg should confess his error in the meeting the next Lord's day, as follows: "I Ralfe Fogge do acknowledge that I did very wickedly and sinfully in that I did in the face of the Congregation deny that the Church or any particular member did ever make known to me any one particular for the which the Church proceeded agnst me the which in saying I did very falsely slander the Church of Christ and that I did very sinfully in saying that the Governour had done me wrong and that he was the Grand Jury and the Grand Jury was him for all which I am very sorry." If he should refuse to make this confession, it was ordered that he stand at the whipping post half an hour after lecture with a paper in his hat on which in capital letters should be written: "For slandering of the Church and for abusing the Governor." Mr. Downing and Captain Hathorne were ordered to see it done, and in case he "stands not quietly with his back to the post that then the constable is to bind him to it."

At a town meeting, March 16, 1649-50, it was "Ordered that all the land lying on Cape Ann Syde from Mr. Blackliech his farm unto Rich Dodg his farm and all between the old planters farm and Mackerel Cove and so to the head of the ten acre lots on Cape Ann Side that is undisposed of and lieth in common shall be reserved for common, and none of it disposed provided such grants as have been made before this order to particular persons shall be made good unto them." This great tract of rough country, of great ledges, boulders, hills and swamps, contained upwards for four thousand acres. Two or three small lots had been granted to individuals out of it, but generally it was wild and

Buffum Aug. 26, 1664; died in the autumn of 1680; she married, second, George Locker; children: 1. Miriam, born March 24, 1658; married William Haskell May 1, 1679; 2. Susanna, born July 31, 1660; 3. Lydia, born March 30, 1666; 4. Elizabeth, born Dec. 15, 1667; 5. John, born Jan. 22, 1670-1; married Elizabeth Oaks April 27, 1696; 6. Robert, born Sept. 11, 1676.

primeval, and most of it is still untamed. Snake Hill, Pride's mountain, Cat swamp, Burnt hills, Turtle Hill, Beaver Pond, Bald Hill, Rattlesnake Hill, Beverly rock, Red rocks, Prospect Hill, Grindstone Hill, Standley's grove, etc., are found therein. This common land was afterward divided into several commons, by the town of Beverly, in the territory of which it is situated. The last great division was the sheep pasture, which contained about eleven hundred acres, and is in that section known as Egypt. A walk or ride through Wood, Witch or Common lane will give some idea of what it was like in the early days.

At the meeting of the seven men, July 10, 1650, there was granted to Job Swinerton "that strip of meadow sometime in the hands of Mr. Phillip Verin and lately granted to Richard Stileman until he should remove his dwelling which we conceive Richard Stileman hath done, but if he continue with us then he is still to enjoy it according to his grant, otherwise Job Swinerton is to enjoy it."

At this time, there was in existence no highway leading northerly towards Topsfield from what is now Danvers Square. At this meeting of the seven men, July 10, 1650, William Dodge, Jacob Barney and Nathaniel Putnam were appointed to lay out the highway "from the further side of that farm that was Mr. Bishop's, now in the hands of John Porter, unto Crane River." The town of Topsfield had probably planned a road from the hamlet there to the Salem line, and Salem laid out its continuation to Danvers Square. The course adopted being practically North, Locust and Maple streets. At the Square it followed the old Ipswich and Boston road to Crane River, and thence by the ordinary way to Salem through Peabody.

Thomas Duch alias Arden lived in Salem in 1650, and had a wife and daughter. Thomas Rix,¹ a barber, was living in Salem in that year, and had a shop near the meeting house.

Thomas Rix

¹THOMAS RIX¹ married, first, Margaret, widow of Miles Ward in 1650; she died July 24, 1660; married, second, Bridget (Muskeet), widow of William Fiske Nov. 3, 1661; she was his wife in 1680; he married, third, Susanna (Skelton), widow of John Marsh; he died in 1684; she survived him; children: 1. Remember², baptized Oct. 13, 1650; 2. Sarah², baptized June 29, 1651; married Richard Prince; 3. Hester², baptized June 5, 1653; 4. Thomas², baptized Aug. 26, 1655; 5. James², baptized Oct. 18, 1657; 6. Theophilus², baptized Aug. 13, 1665; married Hannah —; they were living in 1724.

JAMES RIX², carpenter and shipwright; removed to Preston, Conn., in 1702; children: 1. James³, baptized April —, 1685; 2. Sara³, baptized Aug. —, 1688; 3. Thomas³, baptized Feb. —, 1693-4; 4. Lydia³, baptized March 8, 1696; 5. Mary³, baptized April 2, 1699; 6. Elizabeth³, baptized Aug. 31, 1701.

At a meeting of the seven men, Aug. 12, 1650, there was granted to Francis Skerry a little spot of ground at the end of his ten-acre lot at the Great Cove, between his lot and the marsh of John Small; and November 9th, the selectmen granted to Robert Hiberd twenty acres of ground at the upper end of William Dodge and Roger Haskal's ground, next to the swamp, for commonage and wood.

Nov. 11, 1650, at a town meeting, there was delivered to Richard Greaves and Zacheus Cortis a corselet apiece of the town's, being in good repair, in which condition they were to keep them and return them to the town upon demand.

On the twelfth, the selectmen granted to William Browne two hundred and fifty acres of upland and twenty-five acres of meadow to be laid out near Ipswich River. December 21st, they granted to Lawrence Sothwick a quarter of an acre of meadow adjoining to his four acres; and, a week later, to Jacob Barney fifty acres of land at Long Hill adjoining the farm which was Mr. Alford's; to Thomas Robins three acres of meadow in the great meadow beyond Wenham, of that meadow that was supposed to belong to Mr. Payne, "provided there be so much recovered from Ipswich of that meadow"; and to Job Swinerton forty acres of land near Richard Huchinson's in lieu of twenty acres granted to him.

At the Salem court, Jan. 2, 1650-1, Humphrey Woodbury and Hugh Woodbury were sworn freemen; and Nicholas Patch was freed from training on account of his age, and John Stone on account of age and infirmity in one of his arms.

Feb. 8, 1650-1, the selectmen allowed John Batcheller to fence in a little neck of land to save a parcel of his marsh on Rial's Neck, provided that he should leave bars in the midst of it for any one to cart down to the water, and return the land to the town upon demand.

Feb. 25, 1650-1, at the Salem court, Salem was presented for want of some bridges. First, for want of a cart bridge at Stony Butts brook, and was ordered to build one sufficient to lead a horse over, a cart bridge not being considered necessary; second, for want of a foot bridge at Crane River, and was ordered to make it; and, third, for deficiency in a bridge at Mackerel Cove creek. To this last presentment, the town answered that it was ready to make a new bridge when the highway should be laid out, and also promised to perfect the highway to Manchester.

The western portion of Ipswich was incorporated as a town under the name of Topsfield Oct. 18, 1650. It included, on the south side of Ipswich River, what is now East Middleton and extended from Nichols brook easterly as far as the Wenham meadows.

At a town meeting, March 24, 1650-1, "Captain Hathorne and Jefferrie Massey are appointed to run the line and perfect it between Ipswich and Salem and have liberty to choose such as they judge meet to assist them in it and the town to bear the charges." Nothing resulted from this vote apparently, and June 20, 1653, the seven men appointed Jeffery Massey, Lieutenant Lathrop and Sergeant Porter to meet with Ipswich men for the perfecting of bounds "between them and us towards Topsfield" the next Friday. Then, two years more elapsed, and, March 8, 1654-5, the selectmen desired Mr. Corwine to get an "Artist" to come to Salem and run the line and appointed Mr. Corwine, Lieutenant Lawthrop, Jeffery Massy and Edmond Batter to treat with the Ipswich men and empowered them to perfect the division line. Again, March 25, 1657, the selectmen of Salem ordered Major Hathorne, Mr. Corwin, John Porter and Jefferie Massey to meet with Topsfield men April 9th and treat with them about the bounds between the towns. September 22d following, the selectmen "entreated" Major Hathorne, Mr. Corwin and Jacob Barney to meet some of the inhabitants of Topsfield and treat with them as to their mutual bounds. At a town meeting, March 8, 1657-8, a request of Topsfield men was presented to settle the line by a decision of the general court, and it was voted that Maj. William Hathorne move the general court to give the sense of the several grants relative to the bounds of the towns. At a town meeting, April 26th, at the request of Topsfield, the town chose two men to agree with them about the line, with full power to decide the same, and Maj. William Hathorne and Henry Bartholmew were so appointed and empowered. Still, Jan. 29, 1658-9, the selectmen appointed another committee to perform this service, namely, Jeffery Massey, Thomas Putnam, Nathaniel Putnam and Joseph Hutchinson. This attempt to run the line was successful, and for the entertainment of the men that ran the line Thomas Putnam was paid twenty shillings and Joseph Gardner, thirty shillings. The following agreement was drawn and signed by representatives of the two towns:—

March 25th 1659.

Wee, whose names are under written, being chosen & impowered by the inhabitants of Salem & Topsfield to runne the sixe miles extent, & also the divitionall lne betweene the two tounes, have thus agreed and determined, namely: that wee have runne the sixe miles extent upon the northwest & by north, which ends in the edge of a swampe of John Putnams, called the Great Ashing Swamp, next unto a hill comonly called by the name of Walnutt-tree-hill, nere unto Perries wigwam, & from thence have thus farr agreed upon the divitionall lne which runns southwest westerly to the river side, comonly called by the name of Ipswich River, where wee marked trees by a rocke towards the

east, & a necke of land, comonly called Cromwells Neck, westwardly of the sajd trees marked, & from thence southwest one mile & a quarter, & so on according to the rule that Mr. Joseph Gardner runne the aforesajd divisionall ljne, & from the sixe miles extent towards the north east easterly, as it is bounded & marked, one mile & a quarter, ending at a swampe by a hill called Smiths Hill, and from thence towards the east north east, ending upon a hill nere Wenham Causey, & so towards the east & by north one hundred rodds, ending at Wenham meadow side.

THO: PUTNAM,
JOSEPH HUTCHINSON,
NATHANIEL PUTNAM,
ABRAHAM REDDINGTON,
JOHN REDDINGTON,
JOHN WILD,
marke
WILLIAM W EVENS.

These surveyors neglected to make their return for nearly two years. The town of Topsfield was still dissatisfied, and it made another complaint to the general court. May 6, 1664, the town of Salem chose Captain Curwin, Henry Bartholmew, Lieutenant Putnam and Nathaniel Putnam to attend the court and answer the complaint. Lt. Thomas Putnam appeared in the court against the same. The court heard the parties on the twenty-ninth, and decreed that the agreement of March 25, 1659, was binding upon the two towns, and ordered each town to pay one-half of the expense of running the line. Thus ended the dispute of about fourteen years duration. Dissatisfaction generally resulted from fixing of the bounds of the territory of towns, and several decades sometimes elapsed before their final establishment.

At a meeting of the selectmen, April 21, 1651, it was ordered that the fifty and thirty acres of land formerly granted to Mr. Garford should be laid out near Burchen Plain; and that forty acres of land and four acres of meadow formerly granted to Thomas Spooner "was long since laid out to him." There was granted, at this meeting, to Edmund Grover three-quarters of an acre, on the highway side, between his ten-acre lot he then lived on and Henry Herrick's lot, in recompence of some land taken from him for a highway through his lot. Thomas Oliver, jr., was given the privilege of cutting the grass growing on the highway between his father's lot and the lot of Thomas Watson, sometime the lot of Thomas Gouldsmith.

April 29, 1651 (or May 3d), the selectmen granted to Nathaniel Putnam five acres of meadow near Ipswich River.

Apparently, one or both of the parties became dissatisfied as to where the six-mile limit was found to be, and complained to

the general court, and the court, May 7, 1662, ordered that it be run by Ensign Noyse and Jonathan Danforth. These surveyors neglected to make their return for nearly two years, when they made their decision. Their return was as follows:—

April 22—1664.

Acordinge to the order of the honoured generall Court may the feventh 1662 wee whos names are heervnto subscribed, runinge the deviding line between fallim and Topffeild, we runne from fallim meetinge hous fix miles vpon playne grovnd. (by travis) somthing more westerly then the north and by west poynt wheare we sot a stake and erected a heape of ftons, ther fstanding a white oake about two or three moore southerly of it marked with ST and from that heape of ftones we first rane eastward Circularly and marked a whit oake with ST and so continuinge the line with marked trees vntill we came at bifhops medow to a red oake marked at the north end of bifhops greater part of medow and so runinge between the two medows over bifhops broke to a white oake and from thence to longe sponge almost all the way through it by maples and one walnut tree marked in the sponge from thence croft Thomas puttmans medow to a red oake marked on the east side of it and so over the hill Through farmer porters medow, vnto a litle whit oake marked with TS which fstands on the east side of the high way by the forde over the brooke which is commonly called ftony brooke from thence it runes croffe another parcell of farmer porters medow on the north end of the long hill which lyeth on the fouth east of the fayd medow by a marked walnut tree and from thence to wennum line which line from the heape of ftons is about two mille and one hallfe Then wee began at the first heape of ftons and ran toward the fouth east (ftill keping fix milles from falem meeting house) we rane over the northeast end of maior Hathorns hill about fixty pole (by estemation) from his medow from thence runninge by a marked tree part of m^r Curwins farme Crose by the side of a sponge of medow which lyeth vpon Ipswich river neare thirty poles from the river, and from thence the line runs below the side of the fteepe hill by the fyde of the medow vnto a marked pine and from that alonge in that narrow sponge of medow vnto an other pine marked with ST fstanding in a litell pine fwampe on the east fyd of the litell brooke about two poles from it, from thence it ran through henry ffelpes feild on the east fid of his hous vnto a great red oake marked with ST fstanding a bout ten poles west ward of andever road to fallim and from thence to a pine forward in the line and so to a duble whit oake marked as before which fstands on the fouth of a litell medow fenced in and from that to redding line foe that his fouth west line is about four milles from the heape of ftons, all which work was faithfully wrought acording to the rulles of art, and the who¹¹ bounds of falem as now we have rune it is full fix miles from falem meeting hous

THOMAS NOYES,
JONATHAN DANFORTH.¹

¹Massachusetts State Archives, volume 112, leaf 154.

William Bailey lived in Wenham in 1648, and had a wife, whose name was Grace in 1655; in Salem in 1651; and in Rhode Island in 1658. Anthony Needham,¹ a young man, and

¹ANTHONY NEEDHAM¹ was born about 1631; yeoman; lived on Lowell Street in Peabody, near the Boston and Newburyport turnpike; married Ann Potter Jan. 10, 1655-6; they were living in 1696; children: 1. Rebecca², born Dec. 21, 1656; married Michael Chappleman Jan. —, 1675-6; 2. Anna², born Aug. 31, 1658; 3. Elizabeth², born Dec. 1, 1659; 4. Provided², born April 12, 1661; 5. Anthony², born April 11, 1663; 6. Mary², born April 30, 1665; 7. George², born March 26, 1667; of Salem in 1731; 8. Isaac², born April 15, 1669; 9. Abigail², born May 31, 1671; married — Gould of Salem; 10. Thomas², born July 25, 1673; farmer; married Ruth Sibley Aug. 8, 1706; 11. Dorothy², born Aug. 25, 1675; married William Browne of Ipswich; 12. Rachel², born March 17, 1677-8; married William Small.

ANTHONY NEEDHAM²; yeoman; married Mary Swinerton Jan. 3, 1695-6; she was his wife in 1735; he died in the winter of 1757-8; children: 1. Thomas³, born Feb. 4, 1695-6; 2. Rebecca³; married Jonathan Felton; 3. Anthony³; living in 1736; 4. Humphrey³; living in 1736; 5. Jasper³, born about 1707; 6. Ruth³; married Benjamin Warner of Brimfield. ISAAC NEEDHAM²; husbandman; lived in Salem Village; died in the spring of 1750; children: 1. —³, born Dec. —, 1693; 2. George³; 3. Isaac³; 4. John³; husbandman; married Elizabeth (Smith), widow of Jonathan Walcott Feb. 11, 1739-40.

JASPER NEEDHAM³; joiner and husbandman; lived in Danvers; married Mary Cook (published Nov. 20, 1731); died April 3, 1794; children: 1. Daniel⁴, born June 15, 1735; 2. Stephen⁴, baptized Aug. 31, 1735; died young; 3. Benjamin⁴, born Aug. 6, 1738; lived in Danvers; married Lydia Small Feb. 7, 1771; died Oct. 9, 1779; had children; 4. Stephen⁴, born Oct. 15, 1742; yeoman; lived in Danvers; married Elizabeth Moulton of Brimfield (published Nov. 18, 1758); died Dec. 28, 1801; she died at Lynnfield Dec. 4, 1827; had children. GEORGE NEEDHAM³; innholder and yeoman; married Rachel Gould April 11, 1717; they were living in 1737; children: 1. Lydia⁴, baptized May 22, 1726; 2. Mary⁴, baptized Oct. 27, 1728; 3. Rachel⁴, baptized Oct. 27, 1728; married John Stevens (published Oct. 2, 1744); 4. George⁴, baptized Oct. 27, 1728; 5. Thomas⁴, baptized Oct. 27, 1728; 6. John⁴, baptized July 27, 1729; married Ruth Twiss July 10, 1749; 7. William⁴, baptized Dec. 23, 1733. ISAAC NEEDHAM³; carter; married Mary Farrington (published April 25, 1735); he was living in 1754; she died Jan. 11, 1781; children: 1. Daniel⁴, baptized May 15, 1736; 2. Sarah⁴, baptized May 28, 1738; 3. Mary⁴, baptized Aug. 17, 1740; died May 10, 1759; 4. John⁴, baptized Oct. 24, 1742; 5. Martha⁴, baptized Jan. 6, 1744-5; married George Archer; 6. Isaac⁴, born March 4, 1746.

THOMAS NEEDHAM⁴; joiner and cabinet maker; married, first, Mary Twist (published July 13, 1751); second, Seeth Phippeny Feb. 17, 1754; she was his wife in 1759; married, third, Lydia Lefavour (published Aug. 4, 1779); died in the spring of 1787; she married, secondly, Capt. William Jenkins Aug. 8, 1793; children: 1. Thomas⁵, baptized Aug. 3, 1775; 2. Seeth⁵, baptized Aug. 8, 1756; 3. Nathaniel⁵, baptized Aug. 6, 1758; 4. Sarah⁵, baptized June 22, 1760; 5. Daniel⁵, baptized Dec. 12, 1762; 6. Mary⁵, baptized Sept. 9, 1764; 7. Hannah⁵, baptized April 16, 1769; 8. Mary⁵, baptized Sept. 29, 1771; 9. Elizabeth⁵, baptized Sept. 29, 1771; 10. Thomas⁵, baptized Jan. 9, 1780; 11. —⁵, baptized after June, 1781; 12. Robert⁵, baptized Nov. 9, 1783; 13. —⁵, baptized in 1784; 14. —⁵, baptized March 12, 1785. ISAAC NEEDHAM⁴; merchant; married Elizabeth Pope Jan. 12, 1769; she died Oct. 3, 1800; he died Feb. 19, 1830; children: 1.

Edward Woolen,¹ fisherman and shoreman, were also here in 1651.

The December session of the Salem court was ordered by the general court, May 7, 1651, to be held a month earlier, as December, "by experience hath been found too troublesome and dangerous for the magistrates and country to attend in regard of the season."

May 23, 1651, the general court granted to Capt. William Hawthorne, upon his petition, four hundred acres of land in New Hampshire, considering his good service to the country.

At a town meeting, June 16, 1651, upon the petition of Nicholas Howard, John Batchelder and others that they might have liberty of common in the land lying near their houses and that it might not be appropriated to any, it was ordered "that all that land that lyeth within Ipswich way from the new bridge unto the head of Frost-fish brook undisposed of shall be reserved for common and none of it granted in propriety to any."

The local court sat in the chamber of John Gedney's ordinary at this time; and the court allowed five shillings to be paid to those who attended in the house, two shillings to Robert Prince and three shillings among the rest of the servants. At the same time, the court presented the town for allowing open wells which were dangerous for the drowning of children and cattle,—one near Captain Hawthorne's house, one near Mr. Browne's house, and others. The town was ordered to make them secure or stop them up within a week, on penalty of five pounds.

Two days later, an indenture was allowed, by which Jeremiah Boutman,² "sometime an inhabitant at Thropp, Suffolkshire, England, "with the consent of his uncle and guardian, Mr. Robert

John⁵, baptized May 19, 1771; married Sally (Peirce), widow of Capt. Joseph Holman (published March 8, 1800); died at New Orleans in July, 1805; she died May 20, 1853; 2. Molly⁵, baptized April 11, 1773.

NATHANIEL NEEDHAM⁵; married Sarah Cheever Jan. 25, 1784; died May —, 1802; she married, secondly, Capt. William Jenkins; children: 1. Nathaniel⁶; 2. Thomas⁶, baptized Feb. 4, 1787. THOMAS NEEDHAM⁵; cabinet maker; lived in Salem; married, first, Mary Bell (published June 17, 1799); second, Abigail (Peirce), widow of Joshua Buffum Dec. 4, 1808; she died Oct. 23, 1853; he died Sept. 26, 1858; child: 1. Eliza Peele⁶, born about 1800; married Henry Upton Aug. 14, 1823.

¹Edward Woolen lived here until he sold his house and land on the easterly corner of Essex and Turner streets in 1690.

²Jeremiah Butman (Bootman) was born about 1631; fisherman; married, first, Hester Lambert Oct. 8, 1659; second (?), Mehitable ——— about 1664; he died Feb. 6, 1693-4; she survived him; lived in Beverly; children: 1. Mary, born July 4, 1660; living in 1678; 2. Jeremiah, born Nov. 4, 1662; died Feb. 27, 1686-7; 3. Mathew, born Sept. 11, 1665; lived in Beverly; husbandman; married Elizabeth Hooper April 28, 1690; was dead in 1719; had children; 4. Samuel, baptized Oct. 26, 1679; 5. Hannah, born Sept. 29, 1683.

Newman, was apprenticed to Mathew Nixon of Salem for seven years, to be taught fishing.

Nov. 10, 1651, the selectmen, upon complaint by Edward Wharton about a strip of ground "between his house and that which was lately Mr. Keniston's, now in the possession of Simon Groce, that it was a great annoyance to him," they granted it to Wharton; and William Baylie was given liberty to cut what grass he could find "at the great pond on this side of Mr. Blackliech his farm that is not in any man's propriety until the town take further order." Five days later, the seven men granted to Jeffery Massey four acres of meadow formerly granted, part to be the pond beyond the great river, the rest to lie by the river side; and "he shall mow the same this summer, not being able to lay it out until after the hay should be taken of."

Late in the autumn of 1651, there was manifest an eager desire to sell strong water at retail, and, November 25th, Emanuel Downing, Capt. William Hathorne, William Browne, George Curwin, Walter Price, Edmond Batter and Henry Bartholmew, the leading men in Salem, were so authorized by the Salem court. As Mr. Downing soon returned to England, his license was never renewed; neither was Captain Hathorne's. William Browne's license was renewed in 1662-1680; Captain Curwin's in 1662-1680; Captain Price's in 1662-1670; Edmond Batter's in 1662-1680; and Henry Bartholmew's in 1662-1674.

Nov. 28, 1651, the Salem court presented Thomas Trusler for taking excessive wages from John Alderman, namely, ten shillings and six pence for a day's work of six oxen and a man.

Dec. 16, 1651, the seven men granted to Mr. Brett sixty acres of land in the place he desired, if it be there and not prejudicial to former grants, and if, when former grants are made good, there be any land remaining he should be further considered to have more added. January 7th following, they granted to Osmond Traske thirty acres of land to be laid out near Richard Dodge's farm, in consideration of a highway laid out through his ten-acre lot. They also granted to Nicholas Woodberie forty acres of land,—twenty acres of it to be that "which was late in the possession of Mr. Thorndike."

Feb. 13, 1651-2, the seven men granted to John Swasey¹ forty acres of land to be laid out near Henry Bartholmew's farm. "Robert Goodell having forty acres of land granted long since

¹John Swasey lived on the south side of what is now Derby Street, in the rear of No. 99 on said street. He married Katherine King; and conveyed the house and lot to his wife's mother, widow Dorothy King, March 15, 1652-3, removing from town.

by the town and he having bought land of several others that had land granted to them, viz. Joseph Grafton, thirty acres, John Sanders, forty acres, Henry Herrick, forty acres, William Bound, forty acres, Robert Pease and his brother, thirty acres, Robert Cotta, thirty acres, William Walcott, thirty acres, Edmund Marshall, twenty acres, Thomas Antrum, twenty acres, Michael Shafln, twenty acres, Mr. Venor, forty acres, John Barber, thirty acres, Philemon Dickenson, twenty acres, Mr. Goose, fifty acres, in the whole four hundred and eighty acres, it is ordered that the said Robert Godell shall enjoy the said four hundred and eighty acres of land, being part of the eleven hundred acres, he discharging the town of the above said grant, and he is allowed to said four hundred and eighty acres of upland twenty-four acres of meadow, provided that the meadow laid out within his upland be a part of it."

Henry Bartholmew and seven others, commissioners of the eight towns of the county, met at Salem March 31, 1652, and certified that Maj. Daniel Denison and Capt. William Hathorne were chosen magistrates for the county courts of Essex for the year ensuing.

Arthur Kippen,¹ a fisherman, lived in Salem from 1652; and John Hardy had a Scotch servant, named Duncan Macall the same year. Mathew Dove² was a servant of John Blackleach of Salem for four years from June 1, 1640. He had been a servant of George Luxor, master of the ship Friendship. He married Hannah Archer, and lived at 9 Daniels Street. He was living here in 1689.

April 5, 1652, the seven men granted to Jacob Barney, jr., thirty acres of land to be laid out with fifty acres formerly granted to his father. May 1st, the selectmen granted to Samuel Corney the land that was left for a highway at the end of his ten-acre lot next the river on Cape Ann Side, which was for so much land as was taken out of his lot by the country way, which he accepts of therefor; to James Standish the little spruce swamp near his

¹Arthur Kippen married Abigail ———; they were living here in 1673; children: 1. Abigail, born Jan. 4, 1658-9; died Oct. 3, 1662; 2. Arthur, born Jan. 6, 1660-1; 3. Mary, baptized April 13, 1662; 4. William, baptized April 13, 1662; died Sept. 14, 16—; 5. Elizabeth, born May 12, 1662; 6. ——— (daughter), baptized May 17, 1663; 7. Joseph, born Feb. 23, 1666-7; 8. Hannah, born June 28, 1668; 9. Sara, born "last of May," 1670.

²The children of Mathew and Hannah Dove were as follows: 1. Hannah, born Oct. 23, 1652; married Richard Harris March 10, 1670; 2. Elizabeth, born Dec. 16, 1653; married Samuel Wakefield June 2, 1675; 3. Dorcas, born Oct. 16, 1656; 4. Bethiah, born May 26, 16—; 5. Sara, born July 3, 1660; died July 18, 1660; 6. Daniel, born Sept. 10, 1661; lived in Salem in 1682; 7. Deborah, born Dec. 10, 1665; married John Marsters; 8. Mathew, born Dec. 3, 1667; 9. Ruth, born Oct. 15, 1673.

house, provided that any inhabitant make use of any of the wood or trees in it while they shall remain growing there; and to Joseph Haughton thirty acres of land where it is most convenient for him. On the seventeenth, they granted to John Ruck liberty to enclose the highway, now Norman Street, between Mr. Emery's and his land until the end of September, provided he leave bars to be drawn at each end for any that may have occasion to make use of that way; to Josiah Roots the confirmation of a former grant of a little strip of land, containing about two acres, lying next to his ten-acre lot on Cape Ann Side, on the northeast side; to John Putnam, sr., what a former grant of fifty acres of land lacked in area, to be made up to him in land lying between his son Nathaniel's land and land of Richard Huchinson; and to Hugh Woodberie, Mark Lathrop and Thomas Picton a spot of meadow lying between Benjamin Felton's



PINE TREE SHILLING

meadow and the great swamp near Wenham, equally. At this meeting it was ordered that Ensign Dixey should make a gate and bars in the general fence on Cape Ann Side, at the further side of the field on the way laid out to Manchester.

The general court, at its session of May 26, 1652, made an order, for temporary purposes, to establish a mint in Boston, and agreed with John Hull, as master of the mint, to melt all bullion, plate or Spanish coin that any one might bring to him, and, becoming sterling, to be coined into twelve pence, six pence and three pence pieces, with "N. E." on one side and the value on the other side, the mint master to have five per cent of this amount of coin produced. Oct. 19th, the design was somewhat changed, and two rings were stamped on either side, with the word "Massachusetts" and a tree in the centre on one side, and the words "New England" with the year on the other side. The exercise of this prerogative of the sovereign power, although it was intended to be temporary, was undoubtedly hailed with disfavor when it came to the knowledge of the government in

England.¹ However this may or may not have been, the powers in the fatherland were not then very critical of the acts of the colonists in New England.

John Brackenbury was presented to the Salem court, June 30, 1652, for wearing points and ribbons. The witnesses were John Porter and Lieutenant Lathrup. It has been said that this prohibition was on account of the strict religious plainness of all things among the Puritans. This is partially true, but the principal reason was the expense.

Oct. 21, 1652, the general court appointed Nov. 10, 1652, to be a Fast day, for the loss of many persons by unwonted diseases; unusual storms and continued rains; worldly mindedness, oppression and hardheartedness; England and the wars there; increase of heresies and errors; etc.

Nov. 27, 1652, the town ordered that the country way from the ferry to Ipswich before Ensign Dixey's house, should be continued, provided he kept it in sufficient repair for horses and carts, which he promised to do.

Feb. 21, 1652-3, the selectmen sold to Samuel Eborn about four acres of land, lying to his house, and to Serg. John Porter was granted fifty acres of upland in lieu of ten acres of meadow formerly granted to him. Nine days later, there was granted to the inhabitants on Cape Ann Side half an acre on the hill adjoining Robert Morgan and Thomas Roots' lot on Cape Ann Side; and to John Remont fifty acres of land next Mr. Alford's farm, which land was formerly granted to Jacob Barney, provided he does quietly possess and enjoy the fifty acres laid out to him in lieu of it. June 6, 1653, the town ordered that the common land lying before the ten-acre lot of Francis Skery, next Thomas Watson's, should be given to Francis Skerry, if to any one; but for the present the town reserved it. June 20, 1653, the seven men granted to Job Swinerton ten acres of land at the east end of the forty acres formerly laid out to him in lieu of the two acres wanting in his ten-acre lot in the North field.

Governor Endecott had two sergeants or servants, at the expense of the Colony, to wait on him, before 1653. In that year, they were Robert Gutch and Elias Mason. Each of them received twelve pence a day for their services, and they petitioned the general court for an increase of pay, alleging that his former attendants were free a portion of the time and could attend their callings, but the time of the petitioners was wholly taken and they had no opportunity seasonably to follow their business, etc., and, also, "considering the difference between their service and

¹See the Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, for the details of this matter.

ours in respect of our honoured Gov^r habitation." They were allowed eighteen pence a day.¹

In 1653, the church in Salem sent to the general court a petition, signed by Edward Norris and Samuel Sharpe, praying that a restraint should be put upon choice of preachers, except upon certain approval.²

Job Hilliard,³ a fisherman, Thomas Barnes,⁴ a blacksmith, Francis Marsters⁵, a Frenchman, and Samuel Cutler⁶ first appeared in Salem in 1653. Margaret White and Elizabeth Due (Dew) came from Wincanton, England, about 1642. Margaret was the servant of Henry Her-
rick in 1651, and became Mrs. Endecott's maid. She married Cornelius Hulett in 1654.

Thomas Barnes

¹Massachusetts Archives, volume 67, leaf 45a.

²Massachusetts Archives, volume 10, leaf 84.

³Job Hilliard was son of Margaret Wright of Weathersfield, who died before 1671; married, first, Sarah ———; she died Oct. 14, 1660; married, second, Mary Oliver April 1, 1661; he died "in the begining of March," 1669-70; she married, secondly, William West Aug. 30, 1672; children: 1. Abigail, born July 26, 1662; married John Hooper of Marblehead; 2. Benjamin, born May 6, 1664; probably died young; was dead in 1701; 3. Sarah; married ——— Connaway; 4. Job, born June 1, 1669; cordwainer and mariner; lived in Charlestown.

⁴Thomas Barnes was born about 1632; married Mary ———; drowned Dec. —, 1663; she married, secondly, James Powllen Aug. 2, 1670; children: 1. Benjamin, born Oct. 1, 1655; living in 1664; 2. Thomas, born in 1657; died in 1657; 3. Mary, born Oct. 12, 1658; died Oct. 14, 1660; 4. Mary, born March 19, 1661-2; living in 1664.

⁵Francis Masters had a son John in 1665, when John was nine years of age. John Marsters married, first, Elizabeth Ormes July 17, 1678; second, Deborah Dove Oct. 18, 1683, at Marblehead; and had children: 1. John, born Sept. 24, 1681; died young; 2. Elizabeth, born last of July, 1684; 3. John, born Feb. 15, 1687; 4. Jonathan, born Nov. 10, 1689; 5. Samuel, born Oct. 1, 1693; 6. Benjamin, baptized Feb. 9, 1695-6; 7. Francis, baptized Nov. 14, 1697; 8. Nathaniel, baptized Sept. 24, 1699; 9. Deborah, baptized Nov. 2, 1701; 10. Hannah, baptized Feb. 27, 1703-4; 11. Moses, baptized April 21, 1706; 12. Edward, baptized July 2, 1710.

⁶SAMUEL CUTLER¹; planter; married, first, Elizabeth ———; second, Sarah Church July 7, 1698; he was living in 1706; children: 1. Hannah², born Dec. —, 1655; married John Putnam; 2. Abigail², born Jan. —, 1656-7; 3. Sarah², born Dec. 23, 1658; 4. Samuel², born in 1661; 5. Ebenezer², born in 1664.

SAMUEL CUTLER²; housewright and husbandman; married Sarah Satle Jan. 20, 1691; she was his wife in 1731; died in the spring of 1733; children: 1. Sarah³, born Jan. 2, 1692-3; married Nathaniel Flint Feb. 17, 1714-5; 2. Samuel³, born June 12, 1694; cooper; living in Salem in 1733; 3. Jonathan³, born Oct. 12, 1696; probably died before 1730; 4. Abigail³, born April 21, 1699; married John Walden July 18, 1717; 5. Hannah³, born Feb. 6, 1701; 6. Cornelius³, born Sept. 5, 1703; 7. Eunice³, born Nov. 30, 1705; married Ezekiel Goldthwaite; 8. Susannah³, baptized Aug. 15, 1714; 9. Daniel³, born about 1715; living in 1733. EBENEZER CUTLER²; husbandman; married Mary Marsh March 11, 1688-9; living in 1727; she

Feb. 20, 1653-4, the selectmen granted to John Putnam, jr., twenty or thirty acres of land, if it be adjoining to Captain Hathorne's farm, in consideration of twelve shillings due for bridge work and he had none formerly granted; to Humfrey Woodberie a parcel of swamp lying between his land on both sides, not more than ten acres, and the wood was reserved to the inhabitants to fell as they pleased at all seasons, the land on one side being Guido Bayley's; and to Henry Skerie a little hill encompassed by his own marsh near Mr. Friend's mill, if it had not been already granted. This little hill is that lying near Bass River, between Elliott Street and the ancient site of Draper's point ferry landing. March 6th following, the town granted to John Browne all the meadow and the upland enclosed which was lately in the possession of Mr. Garford; to George Emerie the herbage of that parcel of land which was John Woodberie's in the old planters marsh; and to John Kitchen so much land as will necessarily make a cellar near Goodman Trusler's fence, over against the house of said Kitchen. April 27, 1654, the selectmen granted Mr. Gardner's request for himself and those that now do or hereafter should live at those ten-acre lots' ends or side that they have the common land that lies at the foot of Mr. Read's hill to lie as common for their joint use. There was also granted the request of Serg. George Gardner for a small plain of upland, containing about six acres, lying near Robert Moulton, jr.'s, meadow, and to the round hill near Mr. Humfre's farm and so to that land that was granted to Francis Perry. There was also granted to John Symons liberty to fence his ground which was formerly William Comins', in the town of Salem, "round home to the bank," provided that he made two sufficient stiles for a foot way through the lot. There was also granted to Richard Bishop four acres, Henry Skerie two acres and Richard Brackenberie three acres of meadow, lying "at the further end of Salem bounds" next to Mr. Richard Saltingstall's farm, provided the meadow was within the bounds of Salem. There was granted

was his widow in 1734; children: 1. Mary³, born March 19, 1691; married ——— Sibly before 1734; 2. Elizabeth³, born June 26, 1693; lived in Salem, unmarried, in 1734; 3. Ebenezer³, born Oct. 1, 1695; of Sutton, husbandman, in 1734; 4. Zachariah³, born Feb. 5, 1698-9; fisherman, of Salem, in 1734; 5. Ezekiel³, born Nov. 4, 1700; when of Killingly, Conn., he married Katherin Marsh April 13, 1736; 6. Amos³, born Oct. 4, 1703; of Salem, husbandman, in 1734.

DEA. CORNELIUS CUTLER³; tailor and husbandman; lived in Danvers part of Salem; married Abigail King Oct. 12, 1725; died in the winter of 1766-7; she survived him; children: 1. Elizabeth⁴, baptized Sept. 13, 1730; married Ebenezer Jacobs; 2. Jonathan⁴, baptized July 16, 1732; physician; lived in Danvers; married Martha Trask of Beverly Dec. 11, 1760; had children.

to Henry Skerie all that upland which lies within the fence of John Batchellor that fences in his salt marsh on Ryall's Side, provided that it remain in common when the crop was taken off.

May 8, 1654, the selectmen granted to Thomas Picden three acres, John Batcheller two acres, John Pickett two acres and Charles Gott three acres of meadow, lying at the farther end of Salem bounds next to Mr. Richard Saltinstall's farm, provided the meadow was within the bounds of Salem. There was also confirmed to Ralph Tomkins a grant made to him in 1648, a spot of meadow, lying near Mr. Downing's farm on the northwest and on the west to a farm that was granted to Philip Verin at the head of Cow House River, provided it is not within any other person's bounds.

The general court, May 14, 1654, ordered that "the foureth day next come sevensnight shall be set apart and kept as a public day of humilliation throughout our jurisdiction."

At a meeting of the selectmen, May 15, 1654, there was confirmed to Thomas Watson three acres of meadow and to Lieutenant Lathrop his former grant of eight acres, two more being now added, at the farther end of Salem's bounds next to Mr. Richard Saltinstall's farm, provided that the meadow was within Salem bounds. There was also granted to Francis Skerie a small spot of upland lying near his ten-acre lot in the North Neck by the water side "which is free from George Williams his salt marsh."

At a town meeting, May 27, 1654, a former grant of one hundred acres of upland to Thomas Ruck, sr., was confirmed. There was also granted to Mr. Ruck five acres of meadow at the farther end of the bounds of Salem, provided it is within the bounds of Salem.

William Marston¹ removed from Salem to Hampton in 1637, and returned to Salem about 1654. He removed to Newbury about 1669, and from thence to Hampton about 1670. George Salmon² came to Salem in 1654.

It seems odd, in these days, that at any time attendance upon town meeting was compulsory. Before the time of which this is written, freemen were sometimes fined not only for not attending

¹William Marston married Sarah ———; died in Hampton June 30, 1672; children: 1. Hannah, born Sept. 1, 1655; 2. Sarah, born Feb. 12, 1658-9; 3. Elizabeth, baptized April 10, 1659; 4. Mary, born April 2, 1661; 5. Deliverance, born July 15, 1663; married Thomas Cooper Dec. 27, 1680; 6. William, born Sept. 19, 1665; 7. William, baptized Sept. 20, 1668.

²George Salmon (Samon) married Remember Felton Oct. —, 1654; died about Feb. 12, 1672-3; she was his widow in 1678; children: 1.



BROAD STREET BURYING GROUND

such meetings, but because they did not speak on the question before the meeting. At the meeting held as above it was "ordered that all those persons that shall not seasonably attend town meetings, either by their persons or proxies for every such offence or delinquency, after due warning according to order, shall pay eighteen pence."

Oct. 2, 1654, the selectmen granted to Jonathan Porter ten acres of upland on Cape Ann Side in consideration of a highway.

Thomas Rix sold his shop and house near the meeting house, for eleven pounds, in 1654.¹

Feb. 26, 1654-5, the selectmen granted to John Putnam, jr., thirty acres of upland near the farms of Captain Hathorne, John Rucke and William Nichols, it being in exchange of thirty acres he should have had at the end of Captain Hathorne's farm, and the surplus of the land contained within those bounds was granted to Richard Graves in consideration of forty acres formerly granted to him.

At the same time, the selectmen, upon the request of John Putnam, sr., Richard Huchisson, Daniel Ray and John Hathorne, granted to them a small rocky piece of land adjoining the farm lately in the possession of Captain Hathorne, but then possessed by these grantees; and forty acres of upland were granted to Jefferie Massey for transcribing that portion of the town book which Mr. Downing left unfinished.

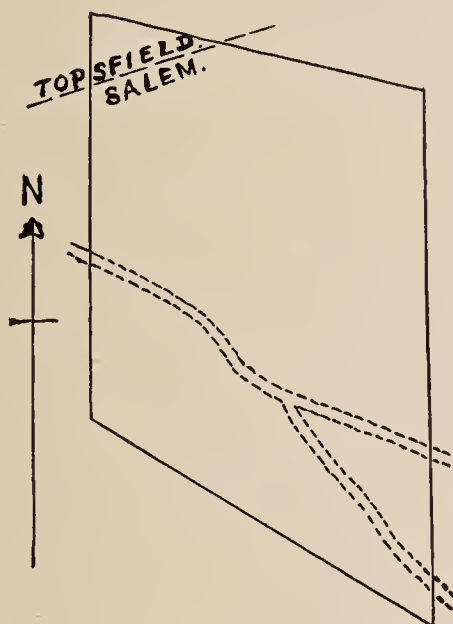
Jan. 4, 1654-5, the town confirmed to Richard Huchenson a grant a parcel of upland, not exceeding twenty acres of upland, situated between the farms of Mr. John Thorndike and Mr. Elias Stileman.

May 17, 1655, the town "Ordered that there shall be a burial place on the hill above Francis Lawes' house." This is the old Broad Street burying ground, which is still in use.

What is now the extension of Summer Street up the hill by the northeasterly end of the burialplace was, in the early days,

Elizabeth, born in 1665; died young; 2. Elizabeth, born Feb. 10, 1666-7; 3. Mary, born March 16, 1668-9; was brought up by Robert Fuller; married Joseph Doliver of Marblehead; 4. Susanna, born March 30, 1670; 5. George, born March 1, 1672; 6. John, baptized March 30, 1673.

¹Salem Town Records, volume I, page 181 (printed).



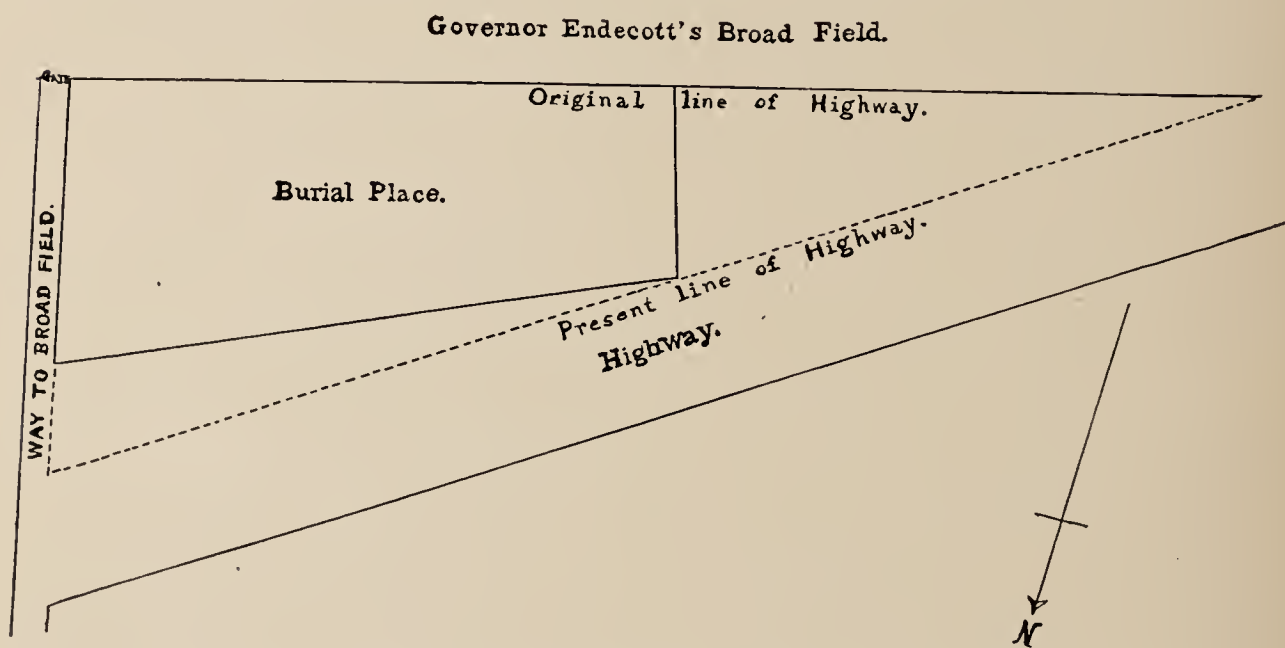
PUTNAM GRANT

the narrow way to the northerly corner of Governor Endecott's broad field. At the top of the hill, at the easterly corner of the burying ground was a red gate.

This broad field of Governor Endecott contained forty acres, and extended along the original highway from the red gate, southwesterly, to the present location of Hawthorne Street, and from the street southeasterly to the South River. The house of Francis Lawes, from whom this hill derived its name, stood on the northwesterly side of the street.

Apparently, the burialplace remained unfenced until 1732.

The northeasterly end of this peculiar highway was originally about four hundred and fifty feet wide. The cemetery took up more than one-half of its breadth, and went southwesterly as far as it does now,—that is, to Winthrop Street.



PLAN OF LAWES HILL BURYING GROUND

The dotted line indicates the location of the street as its southeasterly boundary at the present time being about one hundred feet wide. At about the close of the War of the Revolution, that part between the burialplace and the dotted line was used for the site of the almshouse, a factory for the manufacture of duck cloth for sails of the vessels of Salem, and later, for the building in which was the registry of deeds. Still later, it was the site of the Salem State Normal School, the Salem high and other schools. In 1808, the portion of the original way between the broad field and the dotted line, at the southwesterly end of the burying ground, was taken out of the street location, and subsequently conveyed by the town to the respective adjoining owners. This triangle came to a point at the western corner of Broad and Hawthorne streets.

May 17, 1655, the town appointed Mr. Corwine and Mr. Gedney to secure materials and workmen to repair the town house for the school and watch.

At this time, the town had a horse, cow and some sheep which they probably received for taxes.

The bridge on Lowell Street, in Peabody, over the brook which runs around the South Church meeting house, was built by John Southwick in 1655, and, in 1662, he made extensive repairs upon it. July 21, 1669, the selectmen appointed John Pickering, Josiah Southwick and William Trask "to make a foot bridge at the brook near to Thomas Goldthwait"; and, Oct. 28, 1680, the selectmen ordered that there should be a horse bridge made there, and John King was chosen overseer of the work. The bridge over the brook at Central Street is about as old.

Mordechai Craford¹, a mariner, came to Salem in 1656, and built a house at Juniper, which was burned in the night of Sept. 10, 1666. Capt. Thomas Savage, who had a mortgage upon the premises, foreclosed it, and Captain Craford's wife was accused of setting the house on fire, as she had threatened to do so; but, upon trial, she was found by the jury not guilty.

Dec. 24, 1655, the selectmen granted to Gregory Gibbs half an acre of land to enclose near Clay brook, to make bricks, so long as he should continue to make them.

John Talbey, Dec. 24, 1655, was to be put out as a servant to Robert Morgan or some other man for one year, at the expense of the town. Jan. 29, 1655-6, Henry Cooke agreed to so take him for a year, the town to supply him shirts, cloth to make a coat, covering for a bed and some things to make a bed, Cooke to have eight bushels of Indian corn. Aug. 4, 1656, the selectmen "Ordered that John Talbey being commonly noted for a person spending his time idly and unprofitably: we think it meet that he should be sent to the next magistrate to be employed accordingly (provided for such persons)." Aug. 22, 1657, the town voted that George Corwin and Jacob Barney appear at the Ipswich court to inform it of John Talbe, and advise about putting him in the house of correction at Ipswich. Lawrence Southwick was paid twenty shillings for keeping Talbey and seventeen shillings for things laid out for him.

Edward Wharton was granted liberty by the town, Dec. 24, 1655, to build a porch before his door upon the land of the town, Mr. Corwine and Edmond Batter to determine "how far out it might come."

¹Mordechai Craford (Cravat) was born about 1621; married Edith (Judith) ———; living in 1671; children: 1. Hester; married John

John Endecott sat in the Salem court as a magistrate for the last time Nov. 28, 1654. He removed to Boston soon after, upon the request of the general court, "if his own necessary occasions would permit." He lived in Boston in what is now Pemberton Square. He was then sixty-eight years old and in poor health, as he wrote June 29, 1657, to John Leverett, who was then the colonial agent in England: "in the extremity of heat and after a long sickness, I am very faint; not fit to do any thing."

He was chosen president of the Colonial Commissioners the next year (1658).

Mr. and Mrs. Endecott did not, however, sever their connection with the Salem church until November, 1664.

He died March 15, 1664-5, aged seventy-seven, in Boston, where he was buried "with great honor and solemnity," eight days later, but his grave is unknown. May 25th following, the general court voted to pay for the expense of the "wine, cakes, toombe and powder" on the occasion of his funeral, sixty pounds towards mourning clothes for his widow, "children and family," and twenty pounds for five years to his widow. In his *Wonder-Working Providence*, Edward Johnson wrote of him as follows:—

John Endicat *twice Governour of the Englifh, inhabiting
the Mattachufets Bay in N. England.*

*Strong valiant John wilt thou march on, and take up ftation firft,
Chrift cal'd hath thee. his Souldier be, and faile not of thy trust;
Wildernes wants Chrifts grace fupplants, the plant his Churches pure,
With Tongues gifted, and graces led, help thou to his procure;
Undaunted thou wilt not allow, Malignant men to waft:
Chrifts Vineyard heere, whose grace fhould cheer, his well-
beloved's taft.*

*Then honoured be, thy Chrift hath thee their Generall promoted:
To fhew their love, in place above, his people have thee voted.
Yet muft thou fall, to grave with all the Nobles of the Earth,
Thou rotting worme, to duft muft turn, and worfe but for new
birth.*

Apparently, the draining of Beaver Pond was intended, as the selectmen, March 13, 1655-6, granted to John Thorndike, Joshua Roots and the rest of the proprietors that had meadow near the pond, at Richard Dodge's farm, should have the land that would be gained by the draining, according as it should bound upon each of their proprietries, provided they are at equal charge in the work, otherwise they that bear the charge should have the benefit.

Hosman Dec. 23, 1669; 2. Susanna; had an illegitimate child, by Stephen Haskett, which she murdered in 1668.



HOUSE OF JOHN BECKETT

March 13, 1655-6, the selectmen appointed Serg. John Porter, Mr. Gardner, Jacob Barney and Thomas Putnam to "lay out highways through John Endecott's farm and others' farms there about as may be most convenient for the town and the inhabitants thereabouts: extending to the great river."

John Beckett¹ appeared in Salem in 1656. He lived in the ancient Becket house on Becket Court.

John Beckett

This was originally the home of John Jackson, who died

¹JOHN BECKETT¹ was born about 1626; shipbuilder; married Margaret —; died Nov. 26, 1683; she married, secondly, Philip Cromwell before 1687; children: 1. Mary²; married Daniel Webb; 2. Sarah²; married Robert Bartoll of Marblehead March 16, 1681; 3. Hannah²; youngest daughter; married Isaac Sternes; 4. William², born about 1669; 5. John²; married Elizabeth Locker; shipwright; living in 1711.

WILLIAM BECKETT²; shipwright; married Hannah Sibley May 18, 1683; died Nov. 10, 1723; she was his widow in 1734; children: 1. John³, born Aug. 10, 1684; 2. Hannah³, born July 17, 1686; married, first, Joseph Manning of Nantucket July —, 1707; second, Richard Bethel June —, 1711; 3. Margaret³, born May 14, 1688; married, first, John Swinnock Nov. 13, 1712; second, Philip Cowen May 16, 1723; 4. William³, baptized March —, 1695-6; 5. Mary³, baptized March —, 1695-6; died before 1731, probably young; 6. Benjamin³, baptized March 14, 1697-8; died young; 7. Elizabeth³, baptized June 2, 1700; married William Slade Feb. 28, 1724-5; 8. Retire³, baptized April 23, 1704.

in the winter of 1655-6. It then became the estate of Jonathan Porter, who conveyed it with one and three-fourths acres of land

JOHN BECKET³; shipwright; married Susanna Mason Sept. 20, 1711; died in 1763; she was his widow in 1769; children: 1. Mary⁴, born July 25, 1712; married James Collins; 2. Susanna⁴, born April 15, 1714; married John Babbidge; 3. John⁴, born Feb. 25, 1714-5; 4. Margaret⁴, born about 1718; married Joseph Searls Nov. 20, 1781; 5. William⁴. WILLIAM BECKET³; married Mary Mascoll Sept. 10, 1713; died in 1716; she married, secondly, Daniel Webb July 27, 1727; children: 1. Hannah⁴, born in 171-; probably married Benjamin Phippen July 5, 1739; 2. Mary⁴, baptized Aug. 26, 1716; living in 1732. RETIRE BECKET³; shipwright; married Hannah Graves of Beverly March 11, 1725; died June 17, 1734; children: 1. Hannah⁴; married, first, Joseph Hathorne Feb. 20, 1742-3; second, Abraham Parker of Bradford Feb. 17, 1745-6; 2. William⁴; 3. Abigail⁴; living in 1735; 4. Sarah⁴; married Thomas Murry March 25, 1750.

JOHN BECKET⁴; shipwright; married, first, Rebecca Beadle of Boston May 3, 1738; she died Jan. 13, 1758; married, second, Sara Rue Nov. 25, 1762; he died Aug. 29, 1781; children: 1. Elizabeth⁵, born Jan. 5, 1738-9; married William Peele Jan. 26, 1762; 2. Susanna⁵, born Dec. 11, 1740; married David Felt; 3. Rebecca⁵, born Aug. 8, 1742; died March 23, 1743; 4. Mary⁵, born April 4, 1744; died April 13, 1744; 5. Rebecca⁵, born Feb. 25, 1744-5; died June 15, 1753; 6. John⁵, born Nov. 17, 1746; 7. Benjamin⁵, born July 16, 1748; probably married Hannah Ulmer April 16, 1767; living in 1794; 8. Sarah⁵, born Feb. 15, 1749-50; married Nathaniel Silsbee; 9. Hannah⁵, born Nov. 17, 1751; married Joseph Cloutman June 20, 1770; 10. Rebecca⁵, born Sept. 14, 1753; married William Fairfield; 11. Eunice⁵, born Jan. 15, 1756; married, first, John Bray; second, Thorndike Daland; 12. David Beadle⁵, born Dec. 18, 1757; died Jan. 23, 1759; 13. Martha⁵, born Dec. 19, 1757; died Jan. 6, 1758. WILLIAM BECKETT⁴; shipwright; married Susanna Fowler of Newmarket, N. H. (published April 6, 1745); died about 1760; she died, his widow, April 21, 1817, aged ninety-four; child: 1. Susannah⁵, born about 1747; married Thomas Rue. WILLIAM BECKETT⁴; shipwright; married Mary Murray Aug. 9, 1752; died in or before 1794; she died, his widow, Feb. 3, 1826, aged ninety-seven; children: 1. Retire⁵, born about 1754; 2. Hannah⁵; married Thomas Rowell; 3. James⁵; 4. Mary⁵; married Joseph Brown; 5. Abigail⁵; married Benjamin Hawkes Aug. 14, 1791; 6. Sarah⁵; married Ebenezer Slocum Sept. 11, 1791; 7. Lydia⁵; married Samuel Leach; 8. Jonathan⁵, born May 25, 1773.

CAPT. JOHN BECKET⁵; caulker, boat-builder and shipwright; married, first, Sarah Browne March 16, 1769; she was drowned June 17, 1773; married, second, Elizabeth Ingersoll March 9, 1775; she died Jan. 23, 1790; married, third, Sarah Dean Jan. 24, 1791; he died Aug. 19, 1804; she died, his widow, Nov. 5, 1834; children: 1. Sarah⁶, born about 1774; married John Babbidge; 2. John⁶; 3. Elizabeth⁶, born about 1782; married Benjamin Waters Sept. 13, 1805; 4. Rebecca⁶, baptized March 27, 1785; married Samuel Cook of Boston Nov. 21, 1821; 5. David⁶, baptized Nov. 12, 1786; 6. Mary⁶, baptized Jan. 10, 1790; died, unmarried, March 8, 1817. RETIRE BECKETT⁵; shipwright; married Rebecca Swasey June 4, 1794; died May 29, 1831; she died, his widow, March 25, 1842; children: 1. William⁶; died at sea, unmarried, in 1814; 2. ———⁶ (daughter), born in 1796; died July 6, 1796; 3. ———⁶ (daughter), born in 1798; died July 16, 1800; 4. Mary⁶, born about 1800; died July 24, 1806; 5. Rebecca⁶, born about 1803; died at Roxbury, unmarried, June 22, 1859. JAMES BECKETT⁵; spar-maker; married, first, Deborah Peabody of Haverhill Dec. 11, 1783; she died Jan. 4, 1802; married, second, Susanna Porter of Beverly Feb. 5,

to John Becket May 26, 1656.¹ Mr. Becket was a shipwright, and the head of the long line of famous shipbuilders on his premises there. The homestead remained in the family for some two hundred years, descending from John Becket through his son William, then Retire, John, John, John, and John. The latter John Becket died in 1816, and his heirs conveyed the house and land around it to Stephen Gauss in 1853 and 1854. The house faces due south. It is well preserved and will weather many winters more.

March 13, 1655-6, the selectmen granted to Nicholas Woodbury four acres of meadow at the west end adjoining to the pond near Mr. Blackleach's farm.

1804; died March 4, 1827; she died, his widow, Sept. 26, 1857, aged ninety-two; children: 1. Sarah⁶; married Robert Richardson June 2, 1811; 2. Mary⁶; married William Kelly Oct. 16, 1808; 3. Elizabeth⁶; married Francis Goss; 4. Caroline⁶; married, first, Otis Allen; second, Jacob Tarr; 5. William⁶; died, unmarried; 6. James⁶, born about 1795; died, unmarried, May 18, 1819. JONATHAN BECKET⁵; shipwright; married Jane Hyland Campbell of Amherst, N. H., Nov. 29, 1807; died Jan. 28, 1839; she died, his widow, Nov. 22, 1873, aged ninety-two; children: 1. Alfred H.⁶; living in 1839; mariner; 2. Daniel C.⁶; 3. Emeline C.⁶; married John Barlow Aug. 8, 1884; 4. Mary Jane⁶; died, unmarried, April 20, 1898.

CAPT. JOHN BECKET⁶; master mariner; married Sarah Brown Aug. 2, 1807; died at sea on his passage to Cork, Ireland, Oct. 24, 1816; children: 1. John⁷, born about 1812; died July 24, 1818; 2. John⁷, born about 1808; died Feb. 14, 1810; 3. John W.⁷, baptized March 16, 1817; 4. Elizabeth⁷, baptized May 11, 1812; 5. David⁷, born in 1815; died Oct. 8, 1817. DAVID BECKET⁶; spar-maker and wood wharfinger; married Elizabeth Townsend May 1, 1817; died June 20, 1836; she died, his widow, March 18, 1872; children: 1. John Ingersoll⁷, baptized Aug. 29, 1819; carpenter; married Rebecca K. Andrews Nov. 14, 1839; 2. Mary Elizabeth⁷, baptized Aug. 29, 1819; married Joseph Browne July 22, 1838; 3. David Augustus⁷, born April 30, 1824; 4. William M. J.⁷, born about 1827; mariner; married Elizabeth ———; lived in New York City in 1854; 5. Rebecca C.⁷, born about 1829; lived in Boston, unmarried in 1853; 6. Priscilla I.⁷, born about 1829; lived in Boston, unmarried, in 1853; 7. Joseph L.⁷, born about 1836; living in 1844. DANIEL C. BECKETT⁶; shipwright; married Sarah Picket; she died June 8, 1858; died Aug. 20, 1887; children: 1. Charles Henry⁷, born about 1834; died Dec. —, 1838; 2. Daniel C.⁷; 3. Edward C.⁷, born about 1839; currier; married Tamson S. Poor of South Danvers Sept. 29, 1864; was in Chelsea Soldiers Home in 1901; 4. Lucia C.⁷; married Charles F. Burchstead Oct. 5, 1862; 5. Alfred H.⁷, born in 1846; boatbuilder; died, unmarried, Jan. 23, 1868.¹

DAVID AUGUSTUS BECKETT⁷; mariner; married Ellen M. Brown Aug. 30, 1846; lost overboard from the brig Cherokee, on a voyage from Aden to Muscat, Sept. 25, 1847; she married, secondly, Edward Lampson Aug. 11, 1851; child: 1. Ellen Augusta⁸, born in 1847; died Dec. 24, 1847. DANIEL C. BECKET⁷; gas fitter; married Imogene Greenman; (she married, secondly, Roderick N. Knapp July 11, 1870?); she died, wife of Daniel C. Becket, March 8, 1913; he survived her; children: 1. Sarah A.⁸, unmarried in 1915; 2. Imogene⁸, born April 10, 1865; 3. Fannie E.⁸; married ——— Crockett of Revere.

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 1, leaf 37.

Nov. 5, 1656, was appointed by the general court as a day of thanksgiving for plenty and abundance of the blessings of the earth, supply of the churches with officers beyond expectation, etc. The frequency of fasts and thanksgivings indicate a nearness to and consciousness of the dependency of the early settlers upon God and of his interest in their welfare.

Nov. 27, 1656, the selectmen ordered that Simon Bradstreet should have fifty acres of upland in consideration of ten acres of meadow which should have been laid out with the one hundred acres formerly granted to John Stratton as conveniently as may be for Serg. John Porter.

The next day, the Salem court heard the case of William Lord, jr., for beating James Abbot,¹ servant of Edmond Batter.

Lt. Thomas Lawthrope was granted by the selectmen, Jan. 16, 1656-7, six acres of upland about the Longham; and there was formerly granted to Samuel Corning twenty acres of upland near the land of John Harding, sr.,² deceased.

The selectmen, April 23, 1657, agreed with Samuel Archard and Nathaniel Pickman to make the stocks sufficient and "set up" the whipping post. At this period, the constable was paid two shillings and six pence for each person he whipped. Nov. 16, 1667, constables were released from whipping, and the town agreed to hire a whipper.

Richard Sibley,³ a traymaker, lived in Salem as early as 1657.



WHIPPING POST

¹James Abbott came from Wincanton, England, about 1642.

²"John Harding" was John Hardy, who died in 1652.

³RICHARD SIBLEY¹ married Hannah —; died in 1676; she was his widow in 1700; children: 1. *Samuel*², born March 10, 1658-9; 2. *Hannah*², born Sept. 20, 1661; married William Beckett; 3. *Sarah*², born Dec. 20, 1663; living in 1676; 4. *Damaris*², born Aug. 26, 1666; living in 1676; 5. *John*², born first week in April, 1669; 6. *Mary*², born Jan. 25, 1671-2; living in 1676; 7. *Elizabeth*²; living in 1676.

SAMUEL SIBLEY²; house carpenter and shingler; married Sarah Wells Sept. 13, 1695; killed by the Indians at Haverhill Aug. 20, 1708; she married, secondly, John Sawyer (published Nov. 25, 1710); children: 1. *Hannah*³, born May 17, 1696; married Batt Moulton of Amesbury Dec. 1, 1712; 2. *Richard*³, born Jan. —, 1698; 3. *Sarah*³, born March 27, 1699; married Edward Emery of Newbury, Dec. 19, 1719; 4. *Jonathan*³, born Nov. 25, 1701; joiner; lived in Amesbury and Newbury; married Hannah Goodridge Nov. 27, 1730; had children: 5. *Samuel*⁵, born July —, 1704; 6. *Samuel*³, born May 5, 1705. JOHN SIBLEY²; husbandman, cordwainer and weaver; lived in Salem Village; married Elizabeth Peale July 4, 1695; they were living in 1722; children: 1. *Elizabeth*³, born Oct. 3, 1696; died in 1698; 2. *Elizabeth*³, born April 13, 1699; 3. *Hannah*³ (twin), born March

May 11, 1657, the selectmen granted to Thomas Robbins the thirty acres of land granted to his predecessor Thomas West, to be bounded between Elias Mason's forty acres and Osborne Trask's thirty acres near Rise Edwards' land. Also, the selectmen delivered to constables Jeffrie Massey and Henry Skerry "the three barrels of town powder which lately stood in the little house over the deacons' cellar."

June 8, 1657, the selectmen ordered that John Porter and Thomas Putnam forthwith repair a highway, now Pine Street, leading from John Endecott's farm to Goodman Huchisson's house; and it was agreed that the way through Daniel Ray's ten-acre lot in the North neck should be exactly bounded by Jeffrie Massey and Francis Skerie before the last of the month. It was, also, agreed that John Porter, Jacob Barney and Jeffrie Massey should determine the differences between William King, John Batchellor, Nicholas Heaward and others and Ensign Dixey, Josiah Roots and Samuel Corning concerning a driftway from the head of Bass River into Royall's neck. This way is probably the ancient way from Balch Street, through Rial Side, to Stoney or Aunt Betty's Cove.

Thomas West was found by the Ipswich court, March 31, 1657, to have committed two burglaries, one on the Lord's day, and that he also stole five bushels of malt, one bushel of wheat, a pistol and some tobacco pipes. He was sentenced to be whipped and pay treble price of the stolen goods. He appealed to the general court, which referred the case to the next session of the Salem court, July 1, 1657. The local court, it being "his first offence," ordered that he be branded in the forehead with the letter B and have one of his ears cut off.

Alexander Seers¹ lived in Salem as early as 1657.

At this time, Edmond Batter was the county treasurer.

14, 1701; died March 21, 1701; 4. Mary³ (twin), born March 14, 1701; died March 21, 1701; 5. Mary³, born Aug. 25, 1702; 6. John³, born Dec. 1, 1704.

SAMUEL SIBLEY³; cordwainer and merchant; lived in Newbury from about 1735 to 1738; married Meribah Bartlett of Exeter, N. H., in 1730; died in 1749; children: 1. Samuel⁴; 2. John⁴; 3. Nathaniel⁴; 4. William⁴; of Exeter in 1761; 5. Sarah⁴; married Somerby Gilman of Exeter; 6. Susanna⁴; of Exeter in 1763; 7. Littlefield⁴, baptized May 6, 1739, in Salem; mariner; married Sarah Lambert Aug. 19, 1765; 8. Hannah⁴, baptized April 19, 1741; lived here in 1763; 9. Eunice⁴ (twin), baptized Oct. 7, 1744; 10. Priscilla⁴ (twin), baptized Oct. 7, 1744; 11. Mary⁴, baptized Sept. 6, 1747; spinster, of Salem, in 1770.

¹Alexander Seers married Mary ———; died in the spring of 1667; she married, secondly, Stephen Searls the same year; children: 1. Robert, born Aug. 6, 1657; living in 1667; 2. Mary, born Feb. 22, 1659-60; died Nov. 23, 1662; 3. Abigail; died Jan. 16, 1662-3; 4. Alexander, born May 25, 1664; living in 1667.

In the synagogue of the Hebrews the men are seated on one side of the auditorium and the women on the other side. In the early days in Salem, the seating shows that the sexes were separated in different pews. The Friends are seated in their congregations in this manner, and they probably followed the method of seating they had been accustomed to in the Puritan meetings.

At the meeting of the selectmen, June 8, 1657, the seats in the meeting house were assigned to prominent persons for the first time. It was agreed that William Browne and George Corwin should sit with Major Hathorne in the magistrates' seat; Mrs. Hathorne and Mrs. Corwin should sit in Mrs. Endecott's seat, being enlarged; that in the second seat where Mrs. Hathorne and Mrs. Corwin lately sat Mrs. Price, sister Elizabeth Browne, wife of John Browne, sister Grafton and the wife of Sergeant Porter should sit; Sergeant Hale's wife and Francis Skerry's wife should sit in the seats of Mrs. Price and sister Grafton; Mrs. Norris should be seated with Mrs. Browne; sister Prince should be seated where Sergeant Porter's wife lately sat; and that Sergeant Porter should sit in the seat with Captain Trask.

March 22, 1657-8, the selectmen agreed that the fore seat in the south gallery should be set apart for the following named persons: Alexander Seeres, Thomas Barnes, Job Hilliard, Richard Adams, Mordechai Cravat, William Trask, Samuel Porter, Thomas Sallowes, Andrew Woodbury, Arthur Kippen and Thomas Robbins. April 22, 1661, the selectmen ordered that Serg. John Porter be "placed" in the deacons' seat; and, Jan. 7, 1661-2, they granted leave to John Putnam, John Marsh, John Cromwell, John Becket, Joseph Huchenson, Job Helliard, Francis Collince, Thomas Barnes, Isaac Williams and Theodore Price to build a seat by the south gallery. May 3, 1667, the selectmen agreed that John Ormes and John Marsh might "build a seat at the west end of the meeting house under the gallery: provided they take into them so many as the selectmen think meet." The selectmen also gave liberty to Eliezer Hawthorne and "John Corning and Company" to build a seat in the front of the south gallery; provided that it doth not annoy those that are behind them; neither those that are seated under the gallery: and that they take in with them so many as the selectmen judge meet and convenient."

Mr. Samuel Whiting, son of Rev. Samuel Whiting of Lynn, was engaged as assistant to Rev. Mr. Norris, pastor of the church. He was born in Skirbeck, in England, March 25, 1633. His mother was Elizabeth St. John of Bedfordshire, who was a sister of Oliver St. John, chief justice of England under Oliver Cromwell, and is said to have been of Royal blood. He graduated

at Harvard College in 1653; and married Dorcas Chester of Charlestown Nov. 12, 1656. He came to Salem in August, 1657; and at the request of the town, Capt. George Curwin purchased the house of John Miller, tailor, which stood at number 149 Essex Street, for the occupancy of Mr. and Mrs. Whiting, Aug. 29, 1657.¹ This was the house owned and occupied by Alexander Field, cordwinder, who conveyed the house and land to William Venus of Salem Feb. 3, 1651-2.² Mr. Venus conveyed it to John Miller of Salem, tailor, Feb. 16, 1652-3³; and Mr. Miller conveyed it to Mr. Corwin for the town for the occupancy of Mr. Whiting. After Mr. Whiting had left Salem, Mr. Corwin conveyed the house to Edward Grove, sailmaker, March 19, 1668-9¹; and when it was owned by Mr. Grove it was destroyed by fire in the great conflagration of 1698.

For provision for Mr. Whiting, the town paid twenty pounds, having voted, Aug. 22, 1657, to provide necessities for his entertainment "until he resolves to stay with us." The town voted, Feb. 17, 1657-8, that Mr. Norice should have eighty pounds and Mr. Whiting seventy pounds, and wood for the fire for the year ensuing; and that the elders' maintenance should be endeavored to be raised by subscription. Aug. 18, 1658, the town ordered that that part of the house Mr. Whiting lives in should be made tight by shingling or otherwise with speed. Nov. 21, 1658, the town voted that the house which Mr. Whiting lives in should be given to him and his heirs provided he should stay in town the next three years. March 8, 1658-9, he had not determined whether he would stay. Firewood was furnished to him in 1660.

At a town meeting, Feb. 17, 1657-8, having agreed that the elders' maintenance should be endeavored to be raised by subscription, Major Hathorne and Edmond Batter were appointed to take care of the subscription from the bridge to Mordechai Crevet's, Thomas Antrum and Sergeant Stileman from the bridge to Michael Shafflin's house⁴ and for the ten-acre lots, and Sergeant Porter and Thomas Putnam for the farms; and April 26, 1658, the town ordered that all persons who will not subscribe nor contribute to the maintenance of the ministry should be taxed. Apparently, voluntary contributions were not very generous, as, March 8, 1658-9, the town ordered that the selectmen investigate and learn if the ministers had received their last year's pay. On this latter date, the town voted that the ministry be paid by a town tax.

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 3, leaf 70.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 1, leaf 12.

³Essex Registry of Deeds, book 1, leaf 18.

⁴Michael Shafflin's house was on Lowell Street, opposite Forest Street, in Peabody.

Sept. 14, 1657, the selectmen ordered for the settling a highway between Salem and Reading that John Porter and Nathaniel Putnam meet with inhabitants of Reading.

June 20, 1657, the town received James Rising¹ as an inhabitant; and granted to Thomas Hale,² for his trade of a glover, a small portion of ground, not exceeding two and a half rods square. This land was at the northerly end of Washington Street. Mr. Hale emigrated from England to Boston in 1637, and settled in Newbury. He came to Salem in 1657 and returned to Newbury in 1661.

The road to Topsfield from what is now Danvers Square was laid out in 1657. It followed Maple Street to Locust Street and thence to Topsfield, practically as Locust Street now runs. The return of the Salem and Topsfield committees to the Salem quarterly court is as follows:—

the 22 . 8 . 57

We hose names ar under written beinge apointed by the too Tounes to lay out a cuntrie way be twine the too Townes Salem & Topsfeld we began vpon John Porters farme acordinge as the trees ar marked and so alonge vpon Daniell Rayes farme too pole brod and so thoroh the woods to a farme of John Porters wich was formerly m^r Kenistones and so thoroh the woods to a farme of John Porters wich was formerly m^r Dounings and so thoroh the woods to the Rever against Gudman Tounes house and this we have don accordinge to our best descesion

JOHN PORTER
WILLIAM DODGE
THOMAS BORMAN
FRANCES PABODY

This was alowed of by the court (as it is layd out) held at Salem
29th of June 1658

ROBERT LORD *cleric*

Nov. 9, 1657, the selectmen ordered that the difference between John Porter and John Putnam about a highway over Mr.

¹James Rising came from Boston; married Elizabeth Hinsdale July 7, 1657; and removed to Windsor, Conn., after 1662. He died there in 1669.

²Serg. Thomas Hale married Thomasine ———; died in Newbury Dec. 21, 1682; she died Jan. 30, 1683; children: 1. Thomas, born Nov. 18, 1633; married Mary Hutchinson May 26, 1657; lived in Newbury; had children; 2. John, born April 19, 1635; carpenter; married, first, Rebecca Lowell Dec. 5, 1660; she died June 1, 1662; married, second, Sarah Somerby Dec. 8, 1663; she died June 19, 1672; married, third, Sarah Symonds of Ipswich; she died Jan. 19, 1698-9; he died June 2, 1707; had children; 3. Samuel, born in Newbury Feb. 2, 1639-40; removed to Woodbridge, N. J.; married, first, Lydia Musgrave March 19, 1669; second, Sarah Ilsley of Newbury July 21, 1673; she died in Woodbridge Jan. 19, 1680-1; he died there Nov. 5, 1709; had children; 4. Apphia, born in 1642; married Benjamin Rolfe Nov. 3, 1659.

See Ould Newbury, by James J. Currier, page 85.

Sharp's hill be determined by Captain Trask; and that Francis Skerie forthwith remove his fence that is near John Luff's to the enlargement of the country way one pole into his ground.

The town voted, Nov. 18, 1657, "that ould goodie Neves," a widow, should have relief from the town. Dec. 14th she was allowed five pounds.

Sept. 14, 1657, the selectmen ordered that Jacob Barney and Jeffry Massey view a highway to the mill and meeting house, and hear William King and others of his neighbors and Roger Haskell, who disagreed as to its course, and report to the selectmen.

Nov. 20, 1657, the selectmen ordered that the way from the meeting house "on Cape Ann Side to Lawrence Leach his mill shall be directly in the Country way to Edmund Grovers and from thence to the way lying betwixt the said Grover's land and of Osman Traske and so forward through the land of Henery Hericke." It was also ordered that, "as some of the neighbors on Cape an syde" desire a way from the meeting house to the mill through the proprieties of Roger Haskell and others, their desires were granted, provided they first paid to the owners of the land over which it goes full satisfaction, the way not to exceed four rods wide, and to be made and maintained by those that make use of it. Two men to be chosen by the selectmen were to appoint the way.

William Sergeant had lately removed himself and family to Salem, "under pretence of some work he had undertaken to do, and was not approved of by the selectmen as an inhabitant, Jan. 11, 1657-8. Henry Herrick promised that they and their children should not become chargeable to the town.

Feb. 8, 1657-8, the selectmen granted to Robert Lemon, in consideration of a country way laid out through his five-acre lot and a foot path through it, thirty acres of land at Cape Ann Side next the sea, near that which was William Balie's lot.

The town, Feb. 17, 1657-8, ordered that Mrs. Sharpe should have ten pounds for her relief for the year ensuing.

At a town meeting, March 8, 1657-8, it was voted that John Gedney should "have the lane that is between his fields in the Neck as one goes down towards Ipswich, paying to the town forty shillings, provided there be a foot way through those fields." At the same meeting, upon the request of James Patch, about the exchange of some land on Cape Ann Side, Mr. Conant and Samuel Corning were appointed to view it. It was also ordered that these men lay out Ensign Dixie's land on Cape Ann Side.

March 22, 1657-8, the selectmen requested John Gardner, William Flint and Henry Skerry to join with Lynn men to perambulate their line, beginning at the sea and so to the great pond

by the road towards Lynn, and Thomas Putnam, Joseph Pope and John Putnam from the pond to the seven men's bounds and so on, April 15th. Whether or not this perambulation of the Lynn bounds occurred is unknown; but apparently the line was uncertain, and, April 7, 1662, the selectmen appointed Major Hathorne, Mr. Curwin, William Flint and John Pickering to run the line from the sea to the long pond, and Thomas Putnam, Thomas Flint, Nathaniel Putnam and Henry Bartholmew from the pond to the seven men's bounds. Still, again, Jan. 18, 1663-4, the selectmen appointed Captain Curwin, Lieutenant Putnam, William Flint and Henry Bartholmew to meet with some persons of Lynn "to perfect the bounds between us from the sea to the ponds by the way to Lynn."

The town, April 26, 1658, voted that the selectmen should take care of William Chichester's family for the present, he being out of the country and it was uncertain when he would return. He had left his wife Mary and several children without means to bring them up. They lived in Marblehead in 1645 and 1646, and removed from there to Salem. August 18th, the town ordered that she should receive half a bushel of Indian corn each week for the relief of herself and family for the present. The Salem court ordered, July 20, 1658, at the time of her abode in Salem, for the maintenance of Alice Chichester and her child Salem should pay three-fourths and Marblehead one-fourth; and, on the thirtieth, the selectmen of Salem considered sending her away. August 31st, the selectmen of Salem and Marblehead respectively agreed that her son named Jeremiah, now about three months old, be apprenticed to Edward Harnet, a tailor, who had cared for them. Mr. Harnet soon removed from town. Mrs. Chichester's father, David Corwithee, apprenticed her son James to Francis Skerry Dec. 1, 1658. James was then about ten years old. Skerry agreed to send him to school until he could write a legible hand, to give him a ewe lamb to keep, to give him ten pounds at the end of his time and two suits of clothes, one for Lord's day and the other for working days. In 1662, her husband had been in Virginia about five years and the house, valued at thirty pounds, was ordered by the general court to be sold by her and the debts be paid from the proceeds of the sale. Mrs. Chichester was granted by the town, March 30, 1663, a small plot of ground "below Richard Harvey's house to set a dwelling house on, containing twenty-five feet in length and eighteen feet in breadth, provided she build on it within two years." She does not appear again.

April 26, 1658, the town chose William Dixie and James Patch highway surveyors for Cape Ann Side, and John Neale and

William Flint to Strongwater brook, at Thomas James' and at Mr. Gardner's; Jacob Barney and Thomas Putnam were chosen surveyors for the bridges about the governor's farm.

Joseph Miles¹ was in New England as early as 1653, and lived in Salem in June, 1658. He was a cooper by trade; and lived in what is now the north-west corner of the Howard Street burying ground. This site was a bluff, overlooking the widest part of North River.

Joseph Miles

Humphrey Coombs² was in Salem in 1659, being a fisherman. He built his house on the western corner of Essex Street and Hodges court in 1661. Samuel Pitman³ lived in Salem as early as 1659.

Sam: Pickman

In July, 1658, Goodman Gible had a servant named John Garven,⁴ who beat Richard Middleton, a servant of John Putnam, violently with a stick.

Into the Salem court, July 20, 1658, Salem was summoned for the insufficiency of the highway between Lynn and Ipswich near the house of Thomas James, and for insufficiency of the pound.

The general court appointed Wednesday, Nov. 10, 1658, because of "the Lord's displeasure against us in the sad divisions in several churches, the arrogance and boldness of open opposers of the truth and ways of the Lord, unseasonable rains, and mor-

¹Joseph Miles married, first, Mary Whelase Jan. 18, 1661-2; she died in 1663; married, second, Exercise Felton Nov. 7, 1664; he died in the spring of 1693; she died, his widow, in the summer of 1704; children: 1. Mary, born April 1, 1666; died young; 2. Susanna, born Oct. 7, 1667; 3. Abigail, born July 5, 1669; 4. Mary, born March 27, 1671; 5. Elizabeth, baptized Nov. —, 1673; 6. Sarah, baptized May —, 1677; married Thomas Elkins Jan. 14, 1701.

²Humphrey Coombs married Bathsheba Raymond July 29, 1659; and lived here in 1705; child: 1. Hannah, born May 26, 1660.

³SAMUEL PITMAN¹ (Pickman) was a mariner; married Lydia — in or before 1659; died in the spring of 1691; she was his widow in 1694; children: 1. Sarah², born Dec. 4, 1659; died May 24, 1660; 2. Sarah², born in 1663; married, first, — Mayfield; second, Samuel Phillips; 3. Samuel², born Nov. 21, 1664; 4. Peter², born Aug. 14, 1667; died Sept. —, 1668; 5. Peter², born Feb. 27, 1669-70; died young; 6. Lydia², born Jan. 7, 1672-3; unmarried in 1694; 7. Joshua², born Aug. 19, 1675; died young.

SAMUEL PITMAN²; married —; died in or before 1694; children: 1. Elizabeth³, born April 26, 1686; living in 1694; 2. Samuel³, born Jan. 10, 1687-8; died young; 3. Atwood³ (Ashwood), baptized Feb. —, 1688-9.

⁴John Garvin was lost at sea Feb. 5, 1661-2. He had a daughter born July 26, 1662. See files of the Salem quarterly court.

tallity in divers places," that it may be kept "a solemn day of humilljation for intreating the Lords favorable presence yet to be continued to his poor people and churches in these ends of the earth, and to the rising generation after us."

Nov. 21, 1658, the selectmen granted to Maj. William Hathorn the town's right in the planters marsh, and also about fifteen or twenty acres of land near Fish brook to straighten his fence.

Nov. 27, 1658, the selectmen ordered that the forty acres granted to each of Philip Veren, Henry Cooke and John Hill be laid out in the common land above the house of Thomas James. Forest Street, in Peabody, now runs through these lots, which lie just westerly of Summit Street. Four acres of meadow was also to be laid out to them. Richard Bishop, Elias Mason, Thomas Robins, Joseph Boyse, John Kitchen and Henry Renalls were given the rest of the meadow there, if there is any more, and also the swamp running up near Nicholas Phelp's farm.

In November, 1658, George Gardner had a servant named Baldwin House.¹

Dec. 7, 1658, the selectmen granted to John Bachelour and Thomas Pickden a swampy brushy meadow in the great swamp near Wenham, measuring eight acres; and to Anthony Buxton, Nathaniel Felton, Thomas Watson and Henry Skerry four acres of meadow each next to that granted to Richard Bishop and company, which lies on both sides of Norris brook where it flows into Ipswich River, at the angle in the latter stream, near Bald Hill. Twelve acres of the thirty granted to widow Felton, two spots of land near the great swamp, was ordered to be laid out adjoining Nathaniel Putnam's; and the remainder was given to Christopher Waller in the dividend above the farm of Thomas James.

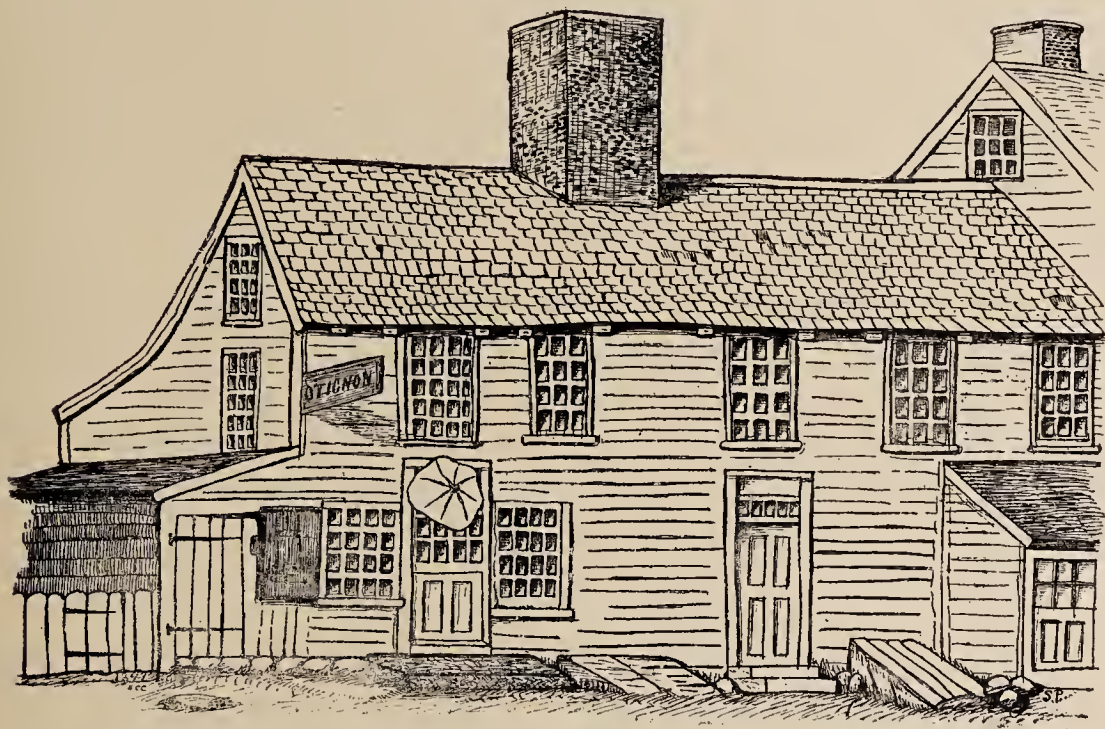
Isaac Burnap² was living in Salem at this time. At this meeting of the selectmen, John Mason³ was allowed to be an inhabitant. He became a brickmaker, and, in 1662, built the ancient house which formerly stood on the western corner of Essex and Summer streets. He conveyed it to Stephen Sewall, the merchant, Jan. 31, 1686-7, and four days later Mr. Sewall conveyed it to Isaac Stearns, a glazier. Mr. Stearns died in 1692,

¹Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, volume II, page 126.

²Isaac Burnap was son of Robert and Annis Burnap of Hoddesden End, Great Amwell Parish, England, and baptized March 20, 1629-30; married Hannah Antrum Nov. 8, 1658; and died in Reading Sept. 18, 1667. They had a son named Isaac, who was living in 1663.

³John Mason was born about 1625; brickmaker on Summer Street; married Hannah ———; lived in Salem as late as 1686.

and his son-in-law, John Chapman, a tailor, lived there from 1706 until his decease, in 1744. The house then became divided, Mr. Chapman's daughter, Hannah Gillingham, receiving the northern half, and his widow Elizabeth the southern half. Eventually, the title passed into the hands of strangers, and, in 1850, widow Eliza W. Fiske, who then lived in Chelmsford, conveyed the whole of the premises to John Kinsman of Salem, who



HOUSE OF JOHN MASON

took the old house down, building in its place the present brick house. The engraving of the ancient house given above is a copy of a pencil drawing made by Edward C. Cabot in 1841.

John Croade,¹ who had been known as John Hewson (or, Hughson), was in Salem as early as 1658. Alister Mackmallion,² who was born in Scotland about 1632, came to Salem about

John Croade

¹JOHN CROADE²; merchant; married Elizabeth Price March 17, 1658-9; died in the late autumn of 1670; she survived him; children: 1. Elizabeth², born Oct. 21, 1661; living in 1674; 2. John², born June 14, 1663; 3. Hannah², born July 14, 1665; living in 1674; 4. Jonathan², born Jan. 17, 1667-8.

JOHN CROADE²; merchant, joiner and innholder; married Deborah Thomas Dec. 1, 1692; children: 1. Elizabeth³, born Aug. 21, 1693; 2. John³, born Aug. 20, 1695; 3. Thomas³, born April 18, 1697; 4. Ruth², born May 8, 1699; 5. Mary³, born March 18, 1700-1.

²ALLISTER MACKMALLION³. (Mackmallen, Mackmallon and Mackmillen); married Elizabeth — before 1658; died in the autumn of 1679; she

1658, and lived at 49 St. Peter Street. John Lambert¹ came to

married, secondly, John Baxter Sept. 1, 1679; she was living in 1694; children: (1. ———²; married Mathew Dove before 1669?); 2. *John*²; 3. *Alexander*².

JOHN MACKMALLION²; carpenter; married Mary Gilson Dec. 11, 1684; living in 1694; children: 1. *John*³, born Sept. 5, 1685; 2. *Joseph*², born Sept. 24, 1687; married Elizabeth Taylor of Boston. (published June 30, 1711).

ALEXANDER MACKMILLION²; chairmaker and turner; married Rebecca ———; he was living in 1720; she was living in 1734; children: 1. *Elizabeth*³, born March 16, 1702; married ——— Harbutt; 2. *John*³, born March 9, 1704; died July —, 1705; 3. *Abigail*³, born Dec. 25, 1706; married ——— Russell; 4. *Jonathan*³, born Aug. 23, 1708; 5. *Kezia*³, born March 9, 1710; married ——— Clough; 6. *Hannah*³, born July 11, 1713; unmarried, of Boston, in 1734.

JOHN MACKMILLION³; house carpenter; married Sarah ———; she was his wife in 1736; he was of Salem in 1743; child: 1. *Timothy*⁴; of Salem, house carpenter, in 1770; died in 1778. JONATHAN MACKMILLION³; chairmaker; married Rachel Procter July 20, 1732; died before December, 1739; she survived him; child: 1. *Eunice*⁴, baptized Sept. 16, 1733; married John Peirce of New Salem before 1784.

¹JOHN LAMBERT¹; his wife never came to America and was living in 1684; he died late in the autumn of 1685; child: 1. *John*², born in 1629.

JOHN LAMBERT²; fisherman, mariner and shoreman; married Preserved Gaskill; died in the winter of 1710-1; left a widow; children: 1. *Daniel*³, born Oct. 3, 1658; 2. *Sarah*³, born Feb. 7, 1660-1; living in 1684; 3. *Ezekiel*³, born March 3, 1661; 4. *Samuel*³; died July 7, 1662; 5. *Samuel*³, born March 16, 1664-5; 6. *Mary*³, born April 26, 1667; living in 1684, unmarried; 7. *Jonathan*³, born Dec. 23, 1669; 8. *Hannah*³, born Dec. —, 1671; died Dec. —, 1671; 9. *Ebenezer*³, born April 2, 1674.

DANIEL LAMBERT³; shipwright; married, first, Mary Gray June 5, 1682; she died Aug. 29, 1693; married, second, Elizabeth (Croade), widow of Edmund Bridges; died in the winter of 1694-5; she survived him in 1711; children: 1. *Mary*⁴, born Feb. 20, 1683; of Boston, unmarried, in 1711; 2. *Elizabeth*⁴, born April 9, 1684; of Boston, unmarried, in 1711; 3. *Daniel*⁴, born Dec. 7, 1686; 4. *Samuel*⁴, born Feb. 5, 1688; 5. *Preserved*⁴, born April 21, 1691; died Sept. 24, 1691; 6. *Joseph*⁴, born April 12, 1692; 7. *Rachel*⁴, born about 1694; living in 1710. SAMUEL LAMBERT³; mariner, shoreman and weaver; married Margaret Browne before 1690; died in the spring of 1732; she survived him; children: 1. *Margaret*⁴, born Jan. 14, 1690; married Joshua Tyler; 2. *Preserved*⁴, born April 30, 1692; married Thomas Mason; 3. *Samuel*⁴, born Jan. 1, 1693-4; mariner, of Salem, in 1729; 4. *Hannah*⁴, born Nov. 17, 1696; married Benjamin Manning; 5. *Jonathan*⁴; living in 1733; 6. *Joseph*⁴, born Aug. 1, 1702; tailor; married Lydia Ropes before 1738. EBENEZER LAMBERT³; shipwright; married Mary ———; died in the winter of 1727-8; she survived him; children: 1. *Margaret*⁴, born July 26, 1696; 2. *Ebenezer*⁴, baptized Aug. 24, 1701; 3. *Mary*⁴, baptized Aug. 24, 1701; 4. *Mary*⁴, baptized March 26, 1702-3; 5. *Eunice*⁴, born April 3, 1706; 6. *Benjamin*⁴, baptized July 3, 1709; 7. *Sarah*⁴, baptized June 24, 1711; 8. *Seeth*⁵, baptized Sept. 6, 1713; 9. *Ebenezer*⁴, baptized June 9, 1717; 10. *Ezekiel*⁴, baptized June 9, 1717; 11. *Jehoaden*⁴, baptized Oct. 25, 1719.

DANIEL LAMBERT⁴; shipwright; of Newport, R. I., in 1734; married Margaret Horne (Orne) May 6, 1708; she died in June, 1714; child: 1. *Sarah*⁵, born May —, 1714; married John Mathews of Boston. SAMUEL LAMBERT⁴; married Mary Squire May 4, 1710; died in the spring of 1742; children: 1. *Patience*⁵, baptized Aug. 13, 1710; 2. *Eunice*⁵, baptized July

Salem as early as 1660, and lived on the site of the city hall, in Beverly. He was a fisherman .

FORT ON WINTER ISLAND

A fortification was made on Winter Island as early as 1643; and at least two small cannon were there, as Capt. Thomas Breadcake was permitted by the general court in 1664 to take two small guns from "Winter Island by Salem" for his cruise against Turkish pirates.

In 1652, the town of Salem voted to build a "form" on the southeast point of Winter Island, toward which the general court gave one hundred pounds; and the town voted, May 27, 1654, to pay one hundred pounds out of the country rate or "the remainder towards our fortification."

May 17, 1655, the town "Ordered that the fort upon Winter Island shall be finished with all speed: Mr. Corwine, Leift. Lawthrop, Edmond Batter are appointed to order the work about the fort together with those formerly appointed." It was also "Ordered that the island where the fort is, is appropriated for the vse and maintaining of the fort." It was also "ordered that those men appointed for the ordering of the fort have power to warn men to work about the fort to the finishing of it, according to the proportion of each man's rate."

May 29, 1655, the general court granted to John Endecott, Esq., Catta Island, of about two acres, near Marblehead. The name became abbreviated to Cat Island, and for many years has been known as Lowell Island because a number of families from Lowell spent their summers there.

March 13, 1655-6, Mr. Browne and Mr. Corwine were ordered by the selectmen to "take care to see the great guns speedily mounted," and April 23, 1657, the selectmen appointed Mr. Price to "see the work about the great guns to be speedily done as also to get them mounted."

May 7, 1656, the selectmen ordered that Jeffery Masey and Edmond Batter should speedily remove the planks of the town that are now on the North neck to the fort upon Winter Island.

June 18, 1666, the town voted that the work to be done at the fort, under the order of the general court, be carried on by a day's work of every man in the town above the age of sixteen

13, 1712; married William Steward. JOSEPH LAMBERT⁴; shoreman; married Mary Williams Feb. 2, 1726-7; died in 1764; she survived him, and died in the spring of 1796; children: 1. *Joseph*⁵; 2. Margaret⁵, born in 1729; married William White May 22, 1754; 3. Mary⁵, born Feb. 2, 1732-3; married Andrew Preston Feb. 4, 1753; 4. Sarah⁵; married ——— Underwood; 5. Priscilla⁵, born in 1739; married Daniel Ropes; 6. Elizabeth⁵; married Henry Phillips May 28, 1771.

years, and so round the town, from day to day until the work should be finished, notice of each man's turn to be given to them by Capt. George Corwin, who was also to decide how many should be employed each day.

His Majesty first required fortifications in this country, the general court empowered Captain Corwin about it with the advice of Major-general Leverett, who likewise ordered it, and Captain Corwin acquainted the town with it. The town voted that it should be done and the manner of it.

About July 27, 1667, Captain Corwin hired a team or two of oxen and John Pickering, Edward Flint, Nathaniel Pitman and Samuel Pitman for the work. The guns were in Town-House Square, near the house of Mr. Batter. As the oxen began to move one of the guns, the axle-tree canted out of the notches of the carriage, not being fastened, and the oxen were stopped for fear of drawing the gun off the wheels. The men told Corwin that the guns were not fit to be carried as they were, but they could take them out of the carriages and draw them with a chain. He said, "No, that would make double labor," and that he would wait until the day after the next day, because he had heard that the way over the gut was worn so narrow that they could not go over, and it should be mended on the morrow. While the attempt to carry the guns was in progress, Batter appeared and twitched Corwin by the arm, saying that he would never pay a penny for the charge if the guns were removed without the selectmen's consent, and Batter told the men that it would not be safe to transport the guns without the consent of the selectmen.

Captain Corwin entered a complaint in the local court against Batter for hindering the work by telling the workmen not to move the guns without the consent of the selectmen. Batter answered by saying that the selectmen had had possession of the guns for thirty-two years and that about eighteen years before, the general court endeavored to take them away, but the efforts of the Salem deputies succeeded in keeping them in Salem, claiming that they should shortly be fitted for the defence of the country. Corwin replied that the guns did not belong to the town, and the relation of the selectmen to them was this, that the latter were to furnish the supplies for them and make repairs, while the guns were really in the custody of the committee of militia in the town; also,

CAPT. JOSEPH LAMBERT⁵; mariner and merchant; married Mary Foot Jan. 9, 1775; died in the winter of 1790-1; she survived him; children: 1. Joseph⁶; (married Abigail ———); mariner in 1796; 2. Lydia⁶; married Moses Townsend; 3. Hannah⁶; married Matthias Rice; 4. Mary⁶; married Benjamin Crowninshield; 5. Priscilla⁶; unmarried in 1794; 6. Elizabeth⁶; married Thomas Welcome.

that Major Hathorne had often told him the guns belonged to the country.

Major-general Leverett received no accusation against Batter,—only a letter, stating how things were seditiously transacted in the town, and that apparently a conspiracy existed to hinder the defence of the town when news was brought of the great loss of the English in Virginia. The major-general had charge of the fort and the ordering of all the great guns in the colony, and he commanded Captain Corwin to move the guns. July 26th following, the selectmen ordered that Captain Corwin should have the great guns carried down to the fort with as convenient speed as he could, and that the town would defray the cost, and also the expense of carriages for them. Edmond Batter and Nathaniel Putnam, two of the six selectmen, dissented from the order.

Captain Corwin concluded his reply to the answer of Mr. Batter, as follows: “and yet this [is] not sufficient to satisfy one man: now likewise it appears, who [hath] hindered all things for the good of the town, wherein himself is not in the first place; in a word, he it is, who is the occasion of all the troubles and divisions which have been in the town of Salem, and yet would seem to be the only grieved person.” He “would lay the blame of these precedential cases (as he terms them) upon military officers being over-impowered whereas the true cause is in himself; for had he been chosen captain, when Captain Price was elected, all had been well, and the committee of militia in all things acted to his satisfaction: but he being well known unto this honored Court, It is to be hoped, that your honors will take his case into consideration, and something humor his ambition, for if he were made captain of some remote village in this country, he would (Cæsarlike) count himself happier therein, than to be the second man in Salem.”

The court advised them to forget their differences and to study peace, unity, love and concord.

At a joint meeting of the committee of militia and the selectmen, Aug. 4, 1673, as they had received an order from the major-general and the major of the regiment to speedily repair the fort, mend the platform and fit up the great artillery and make such provision as the juncture of time required “do conclude all of us, to take our turns, two of us at a time upon each day to oversee the work and to employ workmen to carry on the work as the case requires and do desire Mr. Bartlemew to be assistant with us in his turn in carrying on of this work.”

On the twenty-fourth of the next month, the selectmen appointed Mr. Batter, Lieutenant Gardner, Mr. Rucke, John Hawthorne and John Turner to “finish the highway at Morde-

cay's cut that it may be a sufficient way for cart and horse to go to the fort." This work was done by Francis Collins.

Robert Hibbard did carpentry work at the fort, John Higginson laid the platform, which was plank furnished by John Norman, spiked down, Manasseh Marston and Daniel Rumball did iron work about the fort, Francis Collins, John Marston, John Massey, Francis Skerry and Nathaniel Prece performed labor there, Jonathan Walcot and Thomas Flint made wheels for the guns, and work was also done on the wheels by John Ormes, William Curtis (iron work), Richard Hide and John Beckett. Anthony Needham did carting.

ISLANDS

Baker's Island was known under that name as early as 1630; Tinker's Island was so called in 1659; and the Misery islands were collectively called, in 1658, Moulton's Misery, and, later, The Misery or The Miserys.

The Miserys were originally connected by a sand bar, and the bar was exposed at half-tide, even as late as 1800. This subsidence is still continuing, according to scientists.

In 1659, John Ingersoll, Thomas Sallowes and Paul Mansfield signed a petition to the general court, in which they stated that they had "for our furtherance in our trade of fishing settled a stage upon an island (bordering upon the sayd towne) called Morton's-Misery," and had been at charges amounting to thirty or forty pounds; and they prayed that the islands might be granted to them. The petition¹ was denied; but, in 1663, the petitioners had a stage and house there.

Upon the request of the town of Salem, in 1660, as "the Miserys and Baker's Island" are fit for the employment of fishing, which is a great part of the business of the petitioners, that the general court would grant these islands to the town, the court allowed the petition, providing that it should be lawful for any fisherman to make use of them for curing of fish, and whatever conduces to it, or building houses, stages, etc., as, also, wood and flaking in fishing seasons.

John Lambert and others requested of the town of Salem the grant of some land on Moulton's Misery Island to plant, March 2, 1662-3, but were refused.²

¹Massachusetts Archives, volume 45, leaf 87.

²Bartholomew Gale of Salem secured a deed of Moulton's Misery island from Thomas Tyler of Martha's Vineyard Feb. 12, 1673-4 (Essex Registry of Deeds, book 8, leaf 106). Tyler released his interest in the island. To this instrument, Thomas Mayhew added that "ye said Thomas Tyler is

Dec. 27, 1673, the selectmen appointed a committee to care for the preservation of wood and timber upon these islands and to bring away any of it that had been cut by men of Marblehead.

Feb. 19, 1677-8, the selectmen leased the Great and Little Misery islands to Capt. George Corwin for a thousand years and a day, for three pounds a year. Upon Great Misery Island, he built a summer residence, which, according to valuations, must have been costly.

It has been already mentioned that Baker's Island was granted by the general court to the town of Salem in 1660.

In 1670, some persons of Marblehead or others had encroached on "our commons," in cutting wood and timber on this island, and the selectmen investigated. Trees were allowed to be cut upon the island for house construction in the town. Dec. 27, 1673, the selectmen appointed a committee to care for the preservation of the wood and timber on the island and to bring away any wood found there which had been cut by men of Marblehead. The next spring, permission was given to Francis Skerry to fell thirty trees there for bark.

Feb. 19, 1677-8, the selectmen leased the island to John Turner for three pounds a year, probably for a thousand years and a day. Mr. Turner built a summer house on the island; and, in 1680, when he died, the house was completed and furnished.

the son of the sagamore of Agawam, a known man in ye country; he sold the town of Ipswich, all or the most part of it; all the old planters knew him that had ought to do with the Indians in those days. George can inform concerning him, he that hath lost his nose."

CHAPTER XV.

QUAKER PERSECUTION



THE disturbed condition of society and government in England during the Revolution and the Commonwealth was the occasion of freedom in matters of religion and fanaticism. Among the most prominent of the new orders that had their origin at that time were the Fifth Monarchy and Ranters or Quakers.

The latter sect first came to general notice when, in 1648, George Fox, son of a weaver in Drayton, Leicestershire, England, began to promote it by preaching. Having no creed, no system of ministry, nor practice and government like other churches, their services were conducted as the individual members recognized the impulse or suggestions of the spirit to speak, read or pray in the occasional meetings. If no such suggestions were received, the time was passed in silence. The freedom was so great that it was impossible to know what they generally believed. All other religions of the time and region included outward observances and formulated creeds.

Fox's preaching was primarily of the necessity of repentance, and his insistence upon universality and sufficiency of the light and power of the Spirit. There were so many new movements with zealous followers, that strife between them was frequent, and soon the acerbity of the language used by the sects against each other surpassed anything of the kind in normal times.

The churches of England, especially those of nonconformity, and also the army of Cromwell were affected by the mutability of religious belief, and because of this condition in the mother country the general court, May 14, 1656, appointed June 11th to be kept as a public day of humiliation, "to seek the face of God in behalf of our native country, in reference to the abounding of errors, especially those of the Ranters and Quakers, that the Protector may be preserved from the machinations of evil minded

persons, that the Lord's presence and blessing may be on the naval and land forces of our native country at home and abroad, that the Lord would go out with the Protestant armies against Anti-Christ and his adherents, the settling of unity and peace amongst the churches here, that the ordinances of Christ may become more effectual to all, especially to children and servants, the rising generation."

While this fast was being held, a vessel with two women missionaries of the Quaker faith on board was nearing the shores of New England. These women landed in Boston about the first of July, and were put into the prison immediately and their books burned officially in the market place, although there was no law that supported such an action, except the general law against heresy. After remaining in the prison five weeks they were sent away.

August 7th, another Quaker-bearing vessel came into Boston Harbor. There were among its passengers eight of the obnoxious sect. Three of them were Christopher Holder, William Brend and John Copeland. Mr. Brend was nearly seventy, but Holder and Copeland were young and unmarried. The officials took and burned the hundred books they had brought with them, even the Bible. The men were put into the prison, where they were kept about eleven weeks, although no law had been passed against them or their books. When the men were released, they apparently worked their way southward towards Rhode Island.

The next session of the general court was held October 14th, and the following law was immediately enacted directed against this new sect:—

Whereas there is a cursed sect of haereticks lately risen up in the world, w^{ch} are commonly called Quakers, who take upon them to be immediately sent of God, and infallibly asisted by the spirit to speake and write blasphemouth opinions, despising government and the order of God in church and comonwealth, speaking evill of dignities, reproaching and reviling magistrates and ministers, seeking to turne the people from the faith, and gaine proselites to their pernicious ways, this Court, taking into serious consideration the premises, and to prevent the like mischiefe as by their meanes is wrought in our native land, doth heereby order . . . that what master . . . of any . . . vessell that shall henceforth bring into . . . this jurisdiction any knowne Quaker . . . shall pay . . . one hundred pounds to the countrie, except it appeare that he wanted true knowledg or information of their being such; and . . . that what Quaker soever shall arive . . . shall be forthwith comitted to the house of correction, and at their entrance to be severely whipt; and by the master thereof to be kept constantly at worke, and none suffered to converse or speak wth them.

This law also provided for the burning of Quaker books and writings concerning their "devilish opinions," prohibiting support of their opinions or their writings to the extent of banishment.

In preparation for the coming of Quaker missionaries to Salem, the selectmen ordered, June 8, 1657, that if any inhabitant should "take in or receive" any foreigner without the approval of the selectmen he should pay twenty shillings every week during the continuance of such entertainment. This order was confirmed by the town twelve days later.

Holder and Copeland went to Salem, where, in spite of this order, they were hospitably entertained by Lawrence Southwick, who lived in the ancient house which formerly stood on the north side of Main Street, opposite Washington Street, in Peabody. Mr. Southwick probably bought three acres of land of Edward Lummus of Ipswich, a weaver, and built this house, but received no legal transfer of the title until March 22, 1658-9¹, when the grantee was in prison in Boston. Mr. Southwick devised this house and land to his son Daniel, who conveyed it to his son Lawrence, both of whom were husbandmen, and lived here. Lawrence Southwick died in 1717. It then went to his son Daniel, who conveyed it to his brother Joseph in 1742.² Joseph died in 1791, having devised the house and lot to his son Edward. Edward died in 1836; and it then went to his son Philip R. Southwick, a tanner. Mr. Southwick removed to Boston, and sold the estate to David Pingree in 1847³. The trustees under a deed of trust of Mr. Pingree conveyed it to Isaac B. and Lewis W. Elliot in 1856⁴, and they conveyed it to Calvin Pierce. Mr. Pierce took the old house down in 1862, and used the materials of the old house in a new house which is numbered 41 Webster Street, in Peabody. The picture of this house on the opposite leaf is a copy of a miniature India ink drawing, less than two inches square, made by Nathaniel Votin of England about 1810.

For entertaining these Friends (as they called themselves), Mr. and Mrs. Southwick, "an aged and grave couple," and members of the church, were taken and committed to the prison in Boston, there being at that time no jail in Salem. Mr. Southwick was soon released to be dealt with by the church, but Mrs. Southwick remained seven weeks, and was allowed to return home upon paying a fine of forty shillings.

Holder and Copeland attended the regular services in the meeting house Sept. 20th, and at their close Holder attempted to

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 1, leaf 56.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 88, leaf 235.

³Essex Registry of Deeds, book 390, leaf 143.

⁴Essex Registry of Deeds, book 533, leaf 76.



LAWRENCE SOUTHWICK HOUSE.

He had spoken only a few words, when Edmond Batter, a member of the church, and a commissioner of the court, grabbed him by his long hair and pulled him backward, and furiously thrust a glove and a handkerchief into his mouth to gag him. Another member of the church, Samuel Shattock, fearing that Holder would be choked to death, rose and pulled away the hand that was trying to stifle him. The two strangers were thrust out, and taken to a house, where they were kept until the next day. Then they were conducted to Boston, where they immediately received thirty stripes a piece, with a knotted whip of three cords, so cruelly that a woman who saw it fainted and fell. The journey from Salem to Boston was undoubtedly made on foot over rough paths and through the forests for twenty miles without refreshments. It can be imagined, though slightly, what their bodily condition must have been after enduring the tramp, hunger and the terrible whipping. That night, without food, they were put into a small room, without bed or straw, only the bare boards to lay their torn backs on. For three days, they had neither food nor water. No one was allowed to see or speak to them. Their imprisonment continued for nine weeks, without exercise, fire or bedding, through the chilly months of October and November.

Soon after his arrival in America, young Copeland wrote, in a letter to his parents, "Take no thought for me. The Lord's power hath overshadowed me, and man I do not fear; for my trust is in the Lord who is become our shield and buckler, and exceeding great reward."

After their release, Holder and Copeland probably went to Rhode Island, and while passing through Plymouth were subjected to a severe scourging. It was a common saying at that time, as the Pilgrims copied the Puritans, that it was "a Pilgrim saddle on a Bay horse."

On the first of August, 1658, they felt moved to go again to Boston. They reached Dedham on the third of the month, and lodged there that night. The next morning, they were arrested and taken to Boston. There they were put into the prison, which was a close room; and remained there, without food, for eight days. The jailor's wife, fearful for their fate, brought them some milk, and from that time friends were permitted to put food in through the window.

In this little room, without good air, and with little food, they remained more than a month. The reader can imagine the nature of the sanitary conditions of such a place, and it was probably neither different nor better than the dungeons of Europe.

September 7th, an order was made to cut off their right ears, which was done on the tenth. Holder was the first to suffer, and

as the cutting was begun the marshall, who had been ordered to see it done, turned away from the brutal sight. Another Quaker prisoner, who was there with Holder and Copeland, and who was also to be subjected similarly, said to the marshall, "Nay, turn about and see it done."

Holder was sent to England, but he returned to the Bay Colony, and the general court banished him on pain of death before "the third day after the next ship sails for England."

Samuel Shattock, who could not but resent the barbarous treatment of the strangers in the meeting house, was compelled to follow the strangers to Boston and to prison, although he was a man of good repute in the town. How long he remained in the jail in Boston is unknown. It was for a few days or weeks, apparently, and when he was permitted to return to his home he had no desire to attend meetings of the church. November 25th, he was presented for absence from church services. Both Mr. Shattock and the Southwicks were fined in the winter and spring for such absences. Others of the church had no heart to worship in its religious meetings, and withdrew their presence from them. They met by themselves on the first day of the week, quietly and peaceably, in one another's houses.

Edward Harnett, who was sixty-nine years of age and his wife seventy-three, constituted another of these families, who suffered heavy fines, with little or nothing to satisfy them. They lived in Peabody, near the site of the city hall. They sold their house, barn and land Feb. 20, 1657-8, and disappeared.

Oct. 17, 1657, the general court amended the law against Quakers by providing that in case of a repeated offence, every male Quaker should have one of his ears cut off, etc., and for a subsequent offence should have the other taken off and every female Quaker, for each subsequent offence should be severely whipped, and upon the next offence have her tongue bored with a hot iron, etc.

Hunted as beings more terrible than wild beasts, the Friends felt that they could not endure the thought of constant fear of arrest and imprisonment and loss of their property taken for the payment of fines for not attending the religious services of the church, and turned their attention to the liberty of Rhode Island, and three of the inhabitants of Salem started together for the territory of Roger Williams. These were John Small, Josiah Southwick and John Burton. The first day they traveled as far as Dedham, a distance of thirty miles. As they were entering the ordinary there to lodge, "the chief men of that place" examined them about religion, and the next morning the constable appeared with assistance and arrested them. With a halberd and brazen-

headed staff, they were convoyed along the thoroughfares to Boston, like important criminals. Upon the payment of a fine for the benefit of the constable and his men, these Quakers were allowed to return to Dedham and continue their journey.

Lawrence Southwick, Josiah Southwick and Edward Harnett were fined, March 8, 1657-8, for absence from meeting; and Lawrence Southwick, Josiah Southwick, Cassandra Southwick, wife of Lawrence, and Samuel Shattock were fined May 10, 1658, for similar offences. June 29th, Anthony Needham's wife, John Southwick's wife and John Small were fined for such misdemeanors.

Edmond Batter was a great man in his own estimation, and when Governor Endecott removed to Boston, he aspired to the governor's seat as magistrate of the Salem court, but William Hathorne was appointed. Batter was chosen treasurer. This increased his conceit, and he pursued the Quakers with avidity, in association with Samuel Archer, his brother, Benjamin Felton and Henry Skerry, church members, and Thomas Roots, constable.

William Brend¹, who came on the vessel with Holder and Copeland, was a man of three-score and ten. He began his missionary labors in Rhode Island, and worked his way toward Boston, preaching as he went. While in Plymouth, he was severely scourged, but his age excited no compassion in the hearts of his persecutors.

While he was on his way north, a new law was passed by the general court, May 19, 1658, providing that "Quakers and such accursed heretics arising among ourselves may be dealt with according to their deserts, and that their pestilential errors and practices may speedily be prevented," and "that every such person professing any of their pernicious ways by speaking or writing, or by meeting on the Lord's day or any other time to strengthen themselves or seduce others to their diabolical doctrines," should be fined, every person so meeting ten shillings, every one speaking in such meeting five pounds, and any such person who has been punished by scourging or whipping under former laws to be kept at work in the house of correction till they give bond with sureties "that they will not any more vent their hateful errors or use their sinful practices," or else should depart out of the jurisdiction and never return.

Regardless of the law, Brend continued on his way to Salem, where he held meetings with William Ledra², who is said to have been a Cornishman, though his home was in Barbadoes, and who also had come to New England as a Quaker preacher.

¹His name is also given as Brand on the Salem court records.

²His name is spelled Lederay and Lutherway on the Salem court records.

They were welcomed by several families in Salem, who sympathised with the new faith, Lawrence Southwick's and Nicholas Phelps' being the most prominent among them. Meetings were held at the same time as the church services, at which the strangers preached of repentance and forgiveness of sins through Christ, and of the joy of the spiritual life.

On Sunday, June 27th, a meeting was held at the house of Nicholas Phelps, in "the woods," as that western portion of the territory of Salem was then called. This house stood on the northerly side of Lowell Street, just westerly of the Phelps Mills railroad station, in West Peabody. This was about five miles from the meeting house in Salem, and the privilege of attending religious services in one's own neighborhood was welcomed. This meeting was attended by the missionaries. The Phelps house was built upon the Norris grant by Eleanor, widow of Thomas Trusler about 1654. She died the next spring, having devised this estate to her sons Henry and Nicholas Phelps (children by her former husband). The half interest of Nicholas was taken for the payment of fines for being a Quaker and not attending church, and Henry bought it in. In 1664, he conveyed the estate to Joseph Pope. Many years later, the place returned into the Phelps family and then remained in it until Francis Phelps took the ancient house down in 1856. The illustration is a copy of a pen and ink sketch of about that date from an oil painting of the old homestead made about a century ago, and now in the possession of Mrs. Maria Hood of Danvers.

Governor Endecott had removed to Boston and Major Hathorne was the principal person in authority in Salem, and Edmond Batter, a commissioner, was his executive, assisted by James Underwood, the town constable. To this meeting came Mr. Batter (whom George Bishop, in *New England Judged*, called "a bloody man" and "a cruel wicked man") and the constable, and required the people to assist the constable in arresting the offending but inoffensive Quakers. This the company refused to do, probably because there was neither occasion nor need of interference. After using some violence to the strangers, the commissioner and the constable went their way. The next week, Batter gave their names to the court, who caused them to be arrested and kept in a neighbor's house two days until the latter part of the session of the court which was then convened.

The aged Brend and the younger Ledra and the score of men and women, who had been arrested with them filled the court chamber in the tavern of John Gedney on Essex Street, June 29th. Many of the men stood with their hats on until the officers pulled them off. The magistrates were Simon Bradstreet, Gen. Daniel

Denison and William Hubbard, all of Ipswich, and Maj. William Hathorne of Salem.

The court sought to prove that the prisoners were Quakers, but had no evidence. In confession only was that to be obtained. During the examination, the strangers were asked, "Why and [for] what they came into these parts?" and one of them answered, "To seek a godly seed; the Lord God said, Pass away to New England."¹ One of the prisoners demanded, "How they might know a Quaker?" Bradstreet answered, "Thou art one, for coming with thy hat on." The questioner then said, "It is a horrible thing to make such cruel laws, to whip, and cut off ears, and burn through the tongue, for not putting off the hat." They were then charged with blasphemy, and told that they held forth blasphemies at their meetings. One of the missionaries desired the court to make any such thing appear, if it were so; and told them that they might be convinced, they would do well to attend their meetings, that they might hear, and give account of what was done and spoken, and not conclude of a thing they knew not." Denison said, "If ye meet together, and say anything, we may conclude that ye speak blasphemy." They endeavored to appeal to English law and English courts, without avail.

The prisoners acknowledged that they were Quakers, and were taken, probably on foot, with Lawrence Southwick and his wife Cassandra Southwick, Josiah Southwick, Samuel Shattuck, Samuel Gaskin and Joshua Buffum, who had also made a good confession, eight in all, to the house of correction in Boston, the next morning. The warrant is dated July 1, 1658; and they were received in Boston at six o'clock in the evening of the next day.

The original warrant for the commitment of William Ledra to Boston is in existence². It reads as follows:—

To the Constable of Salem or his Deputy:

You are hereby Required to take the body of William Ledra, & to convey him safely to Boston, there to Appeare before y^e Deputy Gouvernor to be further proceeded withall according to Law, Laft:
2^{mo}.

WM. HATHORNE.

Brend and Ledra were shut up in a room, provided for the purpose, the jailer having stopped and darkened the windows and all other means of conveyance of food and provisions for fresh air, though it was the hot season. He laid before them some porridge and a piece of bread which they did not eat. No one was permitted to communicate with them. Without any food,

¹"why & w^t they came into these p^{ts}—to seek a godly seed the lord god s^d pase away to New England."—*Salem Quarterly Court Records*.

²Massachusetts Archives, volume 10, leaf 265.

Brend and Ledra remained there from Friday to Wednesday, when each of them was whipped ten stripes with a "knotted-three-fold-corded-whip," for being Quakers. The next morning, the jailer put Brend in irons, neck and heels, locked so close together, that there was no space between them,—only for the horse-lock that fastened them. Thus he was fastened for sixteen hours, because he did not work for the jailer. In the meantime, he had no meat, and his back was torn with the whipping of the previous day. The jailer then gave him twenty blows with a pitched rope, and subsequently ninety-seven blows. His flesh was beaten black and into a jelly, and under his arms the bruised flesh and blood hung down, clotted as it were in bags. Ledra was also whipped. They were then locked into a close room, and the jailer went away. Lying upon the boards, Brend soon fainted. A cry was made, and the doors were thrown open and means used to save his life. Governor Endecott was alarmed and sent his son and a surgeon to do what they could. The latter thought that the flesh could not heal, but would rot off. When the public saw and knew what had been done they posted papers at the meeting house and in the street demanding punishment of the jailer. The wounds healed, and instead of the jailer being punished, he was ordered to beat each of the missionaries fifteen lashes with the three-fold-corded-whip, and Brend's sores were reopened. The floggings in the prison had been repeatedly so cruel, that, at the terrible scourging in this instance, the public became so indignant, that the officials released the Quaker prisoners, Brend, Ledra and others, and banished them on pain of death. But the unseen Healer had more labors in store for the aged Brend, and he arose from his sick cot, and left the colony, afterwards preaching in Rhode Island and the West Indies.

Samuel Gaskin was apparently released soon after his incarceration, and returned home. He was occasionally fined for absence from the services of the church and for attendance at Quaker meetings. The other Salem prisoners in the house of correction in Boston remained there all through the heat of the summer, from their husbandry. After two weeks' imprisonment, they wrote to the Salem court as follows:—

This to y^e Magestrats in Court at Salem
 ffreinds wharas it was you^r pleafures to Commit vs whose names
 are vndar written, to y^e house of Corection in Boston, though y^e lord y^e
 Righteous Judge is o^r wittnes y^t we had don nothing worthy of fstripes
 or bonds, & we being Comited by order from y^e Court, to be delte with
 all as y^e law puids for foriane Quakers as yo^u pleafe to call vs: & hauing
 fome of vs sufared you^r law & pleafurs . . . now y^t w^{ch} we doe
 expect is y^t wharas we haue sufared y^e law, fo now to be fet free by y^e
 fame law (if yo^w act by a law) as you^r manar is wth ftrangars, & not

to put vs vpon y^e account of one law, & execute another vpon vs, w^{ch} according to you^r one manar we ware neuer Conuicted of. then as y^e law express, if yo^u had sent vs vpon y^e account of y^e new law we shoud then haue expected y^e Gailors ordars to haue bin vpon y^t account, w^{ch} y^t it was not apeares by y^e warrant w^{ch} we haue y^e punishment w^{ch} we beare, as four of vs w^{ch} was whipt. amongst whome was Cafandra Suthick who had formerly bin whipt & now allso according to you^r former law; ffreinds let it not be a smal thing in you^r Eyes. y^e Expofing as much as in yo^w lyeth our famelies to Ruin, its not vnknowne to yo^w y^e feason & time of y^e yeare for those y^t liue of husbantry, & what thare Cattal & famelies may be expofed vnto. & allso fuch as liues on trade. we know if y^e fpirit of Christ did dwell & Rule in you these things would take impreffion vpon you^r harts. w^t o^r liues & conuerfations haue bin in y^t place is well knowne, & what w^e now fufar for is much from falce Reports & vngrounded Jelousie of herefie & fedition, these things lyes vpon vs to lay before yo^w; as for o^r parts e haue trew peace & Rest in y^e lord, in all ou^r fufaring, & are made willing in y^e powar & ftrength of god freely to ofar vp o^r liues in this caufe of god, for w^{ch} we fufar, yea & we doe find through Grace, y^e inlargments of god in o^r imprifoned eftate to whome alone we Comit o^r felues & famelies for y^e difpofing of vs according to his infinite wifdome & pleafure in whole loue is o^r Rest & life

LAWRANCE SUTHICK
 CAFFANDRA SUTHICK
 JOSIAH SUTHICK
 SAM¹¹ SHATTOCK
 JOSHUA BUFFUM

ffrom y^e houle of bondage in bofton where in
 we are made Captiues by y^e will of men
 although in meafure made free
 by y^e Son ioh: 8. 36 in wth we Quietly Rest
 this 16th 5th m^o 1658.¹

Lawrence Southwick was fined in March and May, preceding his imprisonment, for absence from the regular church services on Sundays, and his wife was admonished for her "usual absence," in July, 1657, and fined in May, 1658. Their son Josiah had been fined for such absence at the same time as his father.

Soon after this letter was written, and as its effect, probably, Samuel Shattuck and Joshua Buffum were allowed to return to their homes to superintend their affairs. The three Southwicks remained in the jail in Boston; and soon afterward they were transferred to the Ipswich house of correction.

Nicholas Phelps, who was "a weak man, and one whose back was crooked,"² was fined forty shillings for entertaining Quakers

¹The original letter is on file with the Quarterly Court of Essex County, at Salem, volume 4, leaf 75. It is inserted here reduced nearly one-half in size.

²George Bishop, in New England Judged.

and having the meeting at his house, and also fined for being a Quaker and for absenting himself from public worship.

Hannah, wife of Nicholas Phelps was present at this meeting, and also Mr. and Mrs. John Southwick¹, Daniel Southwick, Provided Southwick, Mr. and Mrs. Joseph Pope², Anthony Needham and his wife Ann, Edward Wharton, Henry Trask³ and his wife Mary, Tamosin, wife of Robert Buffum, Thomas Brackett, John Hill⁴, George Gardner's wife and Robert Adams.

John Southwick manifested little or no interest in the faith of the Friends; neither did he attend the services of the church constantly, apparently caring little or nothing for religious things. His wife was repeatedly fined for absence from the church as late as 1663. Joseph Pope attended church very little, distance from the meeting house and an apparent lack of interest causing his absence. He was fined several times for his absence, a whole year at one time and more than half a year at another. Anthony Needham went to this meeting at the house of Mr. Phelps, in June, but not again. Mrs. Needham became an enthusiastic Friend. Mr. Wharton was not an absolute Friend at first, but, fired by the torch of persecution, he became a bold and good confessor of the faith. Neither Henry Trask nor his wife, although she was a daughter of Lawrence Southwick, were interested in this meeting, and she was repeatedly fined for her absence from church services until 1666, when she apparently recovered her former relations with the church. Robert Buffum was not a Quaker, but his wife Tamosin became one and attended the Quaker meetings. She was repeatedly fined until 1669, her husband having died in August of that year. Thomas Brackett did not become a Friend. Neither Daniel Southwick nor his sister Provided were troubled for being at this meeting, both being under age. John Hill and his wife were not subsequently identified with the Quakers. Mrs. George Gardner was repeatedly fined for absence from church, the last time being in November,

¹John Southwick lived on the north side of Lowell Street, in Peabody, about half a mile from Central Square.

²Joseph Pope lived on the easterly side of Central Street, in Peabody, about three hundred feet southerly of Sparrow lane.

³Henry Trask lived on the easterly corner of Main and Mill streets, in Peabody. Savage says that he came to America on the Mary and John in 1634. He lived in Salem as early as 1652; and married Mary Southwick. He died before 1694; and she married, secondly, William Nichols. Children: 1. Mary, born Aug. 14, 1652; married Jeremiah Meachum; 2. Ann, born April 14, 1654; married, first, Robert Wilson; second, Joseph Foster; 3. Sarah, born July 27, 1656; married, first, — Archer; second, Abraham Whiticar; 4. Henry, born April —, 1669; living in 1694.

⁴John Hill lived on the north side of Gardner Street, in Peabody, about eight hundred and fifty feet easterly from Liberty Street.

1669, when the persecution of the Friends had become lax. Robert Adams had formerly lived in Salem, but at this time he was a resident of Newbury. Subsequently, the Salem court ordered him to pay costs for attending this meeting.

On Sunday, July 4, 1658, the meeting of the Friends was held at the house of Lawrence Southwick. There were present Thomas Brackett, John Small, Daniel Southwick, Margaret, wife of John Smith, Mrs. Nicholas Phelps, Mrs. Isaac Page, Mrs. Samuel Shattock, Mrs. John Southwick, Mrs. Anthony Needham, Mrs. Henry Trask, Provided Southwick and a daughter of Robert Buffum.

John Small became a Quaker, and his fines for absence from church did not cease until 1667. Margaret, wife of John Smith, was daughter of Robert Buffum. She paid costs for attending this meeting, and was repeatedly brought before the court, and fined for absence from church, the last time being in June, 1670. The daughter of Robert Buffum was undoubtedly Deborah who married Robert Wilson. She was young, and was not complained of until 1661.

At another meeting of the Friends, held on Sunday, July 11th, there were present Nicholas Phelps, Thomas Brackett, Daniel Southwick, Mrs. Samuel Shattock, Mrs. Isaac Page, Mrs. Anthony Needham and Provided Southwick.

At a meeting of the local court, adjourned from June 9th to July 20th, several of the people who had attended these "Quaking" meetings, as the court records have it, were present. Henry Trask, George Gardner's wife and Mrs. Joseph Pope were fined for attending the meeting in June. Thomas Brackett was fined for his attendance at these meetings and for absence from the services of the church. November 30th, he was again fined for a similar offence. May 28, 1659, he petitioned the general court to have his fine remitted, "humbly acknowledging his being drawn away by those called Quakers from the good ordinances of God here established, and too often to meet and join with those ill affected persons, to the dishonor of God, troubled this commonwealth, & wound & greife to his wife, family & conscienc, for which he desires to be humbled." Half of his fine was remitted, and the Salem court remitted the other half. He and his family then disappeared from Salem. Daniel Southwick was fined for attending these meetings, and he was also ordered to pay costs for absence from church. His sister Provided Southwick was fined for attending these meetings, and was ordered to be set by the heels in the stocks an hour. The fines for absence from church of Provided terminated in 1670 and of Daniel in 1671. June 26, 1666, he refused to pay his fine, and was ordered

to be whipped. Mrs. Shattuck was ordered to pay costs for being at these meetings; and she was fined for absence from the church meetings often until June 28, 1670. Mrs. Isaac Page was ordered to pay costs for attending these meetings and for absence from the church meetings. She disappeared from Salem immediately. Mrs. Ann Needham was fined for attending these meetings, and was frequently fined for absence from church until June, 1670. June 26, 1660, she was fined three pounds and fifteen shillings for absence from church services, which she refused to have paid for her, and the court "considering her former offences and provoking speeches," and she, claiming to have the punishment inflicted upon her person, ordered her to be whipped twelve stripes. This whipping was given by Thomas Roots, the constable, who received two shillings and sixpence for this service.

"After this," wrote Bishop¹, "the People who Suffered were more Joyned together, . . . as a Testimony . . . that they were of God, and so they met together at Salem, waiting upon the Lord, whose Presence there with them was more Precious than Life; therefore they offered up Life, and their All, to Enjoy his Presence." "So Meet they did," said Bishop, adding, though Captain Hathorne pursued them like a blood-hound, and had his will on them, in person and estate, though they had been friends.

Major Hathorne signed this order to the constable of Salem at this time:—

You are required, by Vertue hereof, to searck in all suspicious Houfes for Private Meetings; and if they refuse to open the Doors, you are to break open the Door upon them, and return the Names of all y^e find to Ipswich Court.

WILLIAM HATHORNE.

The constable was so eager in his search that, with an axe, he broke open the door of a house wherein they had met, though if he had asked to come in he would have been welcomed. The constable took the names of four of the persons present and sent them to the court at Ipswich. This meeting was probably held on Sunday, Sept. 26, 1658. Bishop says that the court did not desire a large number of the Quakers to be present at one time, being fearful of its effect upon the people. The constable arrested three of the quartette, and took them to the court in Ipswich. These were Samuel Shattuck, Nicholas Phelps and Joshua Buffum. The fourth was Mrs. Ann Needham, who could not be brought, as she was in childbed².

¹New England Judged, page 78.

²Her daughter Anna was born Aug. 31, 1658.

The court convened on Tuesday, Sept. 28th, the second day after the meeting. Nicholas Phelps had heard some one say that the Quakers denied magistrates and ministers, and he gave them a paper stating the contrary. The court asked him if he acknowledged it as his own view, and he said, "Yea." Then they fined him forty shillings. Simon Bradstreet questioned them about the Trinity, Christ's body, etc. They replied, "Produce your evidences: We desire nothing but a fair Tryal, the Priviledge of Men: We are not afraid nor ashamed to declare what we hold, whether before the court, or elfewhere." They offered before all the people: to have a fair trial by a jury of twelve men, according to law. But this, the court denied. General Denison sarcastically said to them, "That they had left off being Doctors of Divinity, and were turned Lawyers." Joshua Buffum was fined fifteen shillings for being at this Quaker meeting. Then they were sent to the house of correction there to continue in their imprisonment until they gave security to renounce their opinions or removed without the jurisdiction of the colony. Thus they rejoined their neighbors.

Upon his entrance to the jail, Phelps was cruelly whipped, but his physical condition excited no compassion; and within half-an-hour each of the others received ten strokes with a knotted-cord whip. Phelps was whipped three times in five days, ten cruel strokes each time, with a three-fold corded whip, with knots. Added to the horrors of his imprisonment, was the thought of affairs at home, as it was then the harvest season. But his spirit did not waiver.

Oct. 19, 1658, the general court, becoming convinced that the terrible laws which had been enacted were insufficient to stop the preaching of the Quakers, and "for the further prevention of infection and guiding of people in the truth," passed a law banishing all persons "favoring the Quakers who after due means of conviction remain obstinate and pertinacious," and Rev. John Norton was requested to speedily undertake to convince them of their errors.

Learning that the Salem Quakers in the Ipswich house of correction would do nothing to effect their release, the general court immediately ordered that they should be brought before them. This was done, and they were all taken to Boston, where they were placed in the prison.

A few days afterward, William Marston of Hampton, who was on his way to Boston, stopped in Salem, and was requested by Lawrence Southwick's children to carry some provisions to their parents, and also their son Josiah's wife to take some things to her husband. Mr. Marston himself was put into the prison,

and kept fourteen days in a cold room, though he was seventy years of age.

Much endeavor was vainly made to convince and reform the prisoners, by Mr. Norton, and the court then ordered that Samuel Shattock, Lawrence Southwick and his wife Cassandra Southwick, Nicholas Phelps, Joshua Buffum and Josiah Southwick depart out of this jurisdiction before the first day of the next court of election, which if they should neglect or fail to do, they should then be banished under pain of death. Governor Endecott told them "That all deserved to be hanged," and that they were blasphemers and heretics. Shattock's sister Mary Hamor, upon her petition, was allowed by the general court to be permitted to meet him, when he should be brought to Boston, and take him to Rev. Mr. Norton's house for his conversion¹.

Under this order they were released from prison, and, returning to their homes, cared for their suffering families and farms. The time of their probation was about at an end when, at the session of the court, May 11, 1659, the six were called before it. Governor Endecott charged them with rebelling against the authority of the country in not departing according to order. They answered that they had no other place to go to, and had their wives, children and estates to care for; nor had they done anything worthy of death, banishment or bonds, or any of the hardships or ignominious punishments which they had suffered in their persons, besides the loss of a large amount of money and property that had been taken to pay fines. Governor Endecott was silenced; but General Denison made this unanswerable reply, that they stood against the authority of the country in not submitting to its laws; that "they and the church people are not able well to live together; at present the power is in our hand, and therefore the strongest must fend off." The sentence of banishment was then pronounced upon them, and only two weeks' time (until June 8th) was allowed in which to settle their affairs and bid "good-bye" forever to their families and friends and home.

Lawrence Southwick and his wife, in their old age, parted from their children, and with but little money and few articles, the fines of the court having taken much of their estate, secured a boat and sailed southward along the coast. They finally built a little house on Shelter Island, in Long Island Sound; and there passed the few months of their exile. The privation and exposure that they experienced during the rigorous winter that followed was too severe for their aged and weakened bodies, and both died in the following spring, his wife surviving him three days.

¹Massachusetts Archives, volume 17, leaf 3.

Josiah Southwick and Joshua Buffum also went to Shelter Island. They returned into the colony more than two years later, and Josiah Southwick was discovered in Boston soon afterward, and taken into custody. He was kept in the Boston jail nine weeks, and then the court of assistants, Sept. 9, 1661, ordered that he be tied to a cart's tail, stripped above his waist and whipped out of Boston with ten stripes, and then with ten stripes through Roxbury, and then to be delivered to the constable of Dedham, who was ordered to whip him ten stripes out of the jurisdiction of the colony. Southwick said to the court: "Here is my body; if you want a further testimony to the truth I profess, take it and tear it in pieces; your sentence is no more terrifying to me than if you had taken a feather and blown it in the air." He was whipped, not with whip cord, as in England, but of dried intestines of animals, of such as bass-viol strings are made, and with three knots at the end, which the constable laid on with both hands, producing most violent torture. Twenty-six miles of scourging that day, and then the constable left him in the wilderness fifteen miles from any town. His back was plowed, and his flesh torn and beaten. But some friends had followed and assisted him to his home, more than thirty-five miles that night, making in all more than sixty miles of travel that day and night, probably without food or drink. His friends had one horse between them, and he undoubtedly rode on horseback in the night.

Samuel Shattuck and Nicholas Phelps took advantage of an opportunity to sail for England, four days later, with the intention of laying the whole matter before parliament. They returned together, but Mr. Phelps, being weak in body, after some time died. His mother, Mrs. Eleanor Trusler, had died in 1655, and her sons Henry and Nicholas Phelps inherited her farm in West Peabody, where, at the house thereon, the first meeting of the Friends had been held. Nicholas Phelps' half of the house and lands were taken for the payment of fines. Batter, the treasurer, apparently turned it over to Nicholas Phelps' brother Henry, who owned the other half interest, Henry having married Batter's sister; and, July 18, 1664, Henry sold the entire estate to Joseph Pope.

On the day that Lawrence Southwick and his wife and friends were sentenced to banishment, at the suggestion of Captain Hathorne, the county treasurer was authorized to sell their younger children, Daniel, aged twenty-two, and Provided, aged eighteen, to the English in Virginia or Barbadoes¹. This was because these young people could not pay the heavy fines imposed

¹John G. Whittier wrote a poem upon this subject, entitled "Cassandra Southwick," having substituted the name of her mother in place of Provided Southwick, as her mother's was a more poetic name.

upon them "for siding with the Quakers, and absenting themselves from public ordinances," and as a means of satisfaction of the fines. But no one would have anything to do with the proposition, and they were released. The records of the quarterly court held at Ipswich May 10, 1660, stated: "Provided Southwicke, upon proof of her contemptuous carriage at Salem to the great disturbance of the peace. The court sets a fine on her of forty shillings and to abide in prison until she have paid it and the fine set by Salem court or other course be taken to sell her for the payment there of according to law and fees of court." But neither was Provided Southwick sold under this decree.

While Lawrence Southwick and his associates were preparing to take their final leave of everything worth remaining for, William Brend, the Quaker preacher, who had found a sympathetic and receptive friend in Southwick when he first came to America, had, regardless of his banishment, apparently returned to bid his friends "Good-bye," so little regard had he for physical consequences. He was arrested and placed in prison, and ordered by the general court to be released on the sixteenth of May, and be out of the jurisdiction within two days thereafter, on penalty of death¹.

He returned to England, and, in 1662, he was one of the hundreds of Friends confined in loathsome Newgate prison. He died at the age of ninety; and the following is the record of his burial: "William Brend, of the Liberty of Katherine's, near the Tower, a minister, died Seventh mo., Seventh, 1676, and was buried at Bunhill Fields." Twelve years later, the remains of John Bunyan, the celebrated author of "Pilgrim's Progress," were laid in the same burial place.

The beautiful spirit of this venerable pilgrim is shown in his writings, in one of which, written in prison, he says, "It hath been upon my heart, when in the sweet repose of the streams of my Father's love and life, by which my heart hath been overcome, to visit you with a loving salutation from the place of my outward bonds. . . . Oh, in the love and life of the Lamb, look over all weakness in one another, as God doth look over all the weakness in every one of us, and doth love us for his own Son's sake—in so doing peace will abound in our borders, it will flow forth amongst us like a river, and it will keep out jars, strifes and contentions."

William Robinson and Marmaduke Stephenson were two preachers of the Friends, and they were arrested and imprisoned. After being flogged they were released and banished. They came

¹Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume IV, part 1, page 371.

to Salem, where they remained awhile. Daniel Gould wrote that he overtook them at Salem, where they had a meeting in the woods (West Peabody), as people were afraid to have meetings in their homes. There was a "great flocking" to it to hear; "And the Lord was mightily with them, and they spoke of the things of God boldly, to the affecting and tendering of the hearts of many." The three then went to Piscataqua and its neighborhood, "in the service of the Lord," and found the people friendly as they went. They returned to Boston, the party numbering ten or twelve besides Robinson and Stephenson, and were all put into prison. Gould received thirty stripes, being tied to a gun carriage, and two men and three women were also whipped at the same time, ten stripes each. They were in an upper room, and Robinson spoke from the window to the crowd without, who were eager to hear. The people were ordered to disperse, but being a large number they would not go; and so James Oliver, the captain, "hauled" some of the prisoners down the stairs to a low dark "cub" solitary place. The Friends bade goodbye to and embraced the two preachers as the soldiers took them away to the place of execution.

Mary Dyer, formerly of Boston, but then of Rhode Island, had been banished with Robinson and Stephenson, "for their rebellion, sedition, and presumptuous obtruding themselves upon us, notwithstanding their being sentenced to banishment on pain of death, as underminers of this government, etc.," were brought before the general court Oct. 19, 1659, and returned to the prison without action, the next day being again brought in and sentenced to die, by hanging on the seventh day thereafter.¹ On the twenty-seventh, one hundred soldiers, completely armed with pikes, and musketeers with powder and bullet, under command of Captain Oliver, were ordered to lead them to the place of execution and see them hang "till they be dead." Reverends Zachariah Symmes and John Norton were ordered to repair to the prison and tender their endeavors to make the prisoners sensible of their approaching dangers, and prepare them for their end.

Thirty-six of the soldiers were ordered to remain in and about the town as sentinels to preserve peace while the rest went to the execution; and the selectmen of Boston were required by the general court to impress ten or twelve able and faithful persons every night during the sitting of the court "to watch with great care the towne, especially the prison." The general court became very much alarmed over its acts, fearing the people, and a statement was printed and distributed by it and written into the records

¹New England Judged, by George Bishop, page 121.

to excuse or "vindicate" it.¹ This was prepared by Rev. John Norton, to whom the general court, November 12th, voted its thanks "for his great paines and worthy labors in the tractate he drew up, and by order of this Court hath been printed, wherein the dangerous errors of the Quakers is fully refuted and discovered," and also five hundred acres of land, "as a small recompence for his paines therein."

Upon the arrest of Robinson and Stephenson, there followed them to Boston Alice Cowland (Coulard) "who came to bring linen wherein to wrap the dead bodies of them who were to suffer," and Daniel Gold, William King, Mrs. Hannah Phelps (wife of Nicholas Phelps, who was banished), Mrs. Mary Trask (wife of Henry Trask) and Mrs. Margaret Smith (wife of John Smith and daughter of Robert Buffum), all of Salem, came together to "accompany those who should suffer." Provided Southwick came with them to see her sister, who was then in the prison, and they were all put into the prison. So the prison began to fill.

At the time appointed, the three victims went hand in hand to the place of the execution. After the men had been hung, Mrs. Dyer mounted the ladder, and the rope was placed about her neck and the hood adjusted. She expected every moment to be launched into eternity, but she did not know that her son had secured a reprieve of two days that she might depart from the territory of the colony. She was returned to the prison, sorely disappointed, as she had expected to immediately meet her Savior face to face. She went to Rhode Island, but returned the next May, and was executed June 1st.

When the bodies of Robinson and Stephenson became rigid, instead of taking them down, the rope was cut and the bodies fell to the ground, and in the case of one of them the skull was fractured. Their shirts were ripped off with a knife, and their naked bodies were unceremoniously cast into a hole, which was dug in the open field. Friends of the dead wanted to take the bodies away, but the executioner refused to allow it, but did permit the bodies to be wrapped in linen. Water ran into the pit, and so nature, as though sympathetic, covered the remains. Thus was verified the prophecy of the Son of God: "The time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service. And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me."²

¹This "Vindication" is printed in full in the records of the court, volume IV, part I, pages 385-390.

²John 15: 2, 3.

Edward Wharton of Salem, a glazier, who lived on the south side of Essex Street and on the easterly corner of Higginson Place, being the house next to the meeting house, was a Quaker before the persecution became severe, and as it developed he grew in faith and adherence to the principles of the Friends. Once, when he was about to be scourged by the constable, Philip Cromwell, who was a slaughterer, Wharton asked him how he, who had been his near neighbor, could treat him so, he answered, "He must needs go that the devil drives."¹ He, also, had accompanied the preachers Robinson and Stephenson from town to town in their journeys between Salem and the Piscataqua River; and four days after their execution he was arrested at Salem and imprisoned in the jail in Boston. November 3d, he was whipped twenty-four lashes.

At the session of the general court, which convened Oct. 18th, and at which Robinson and Stephenson were sentenced to death, Christopher Holder, who had been banished and had gone to England, was now returned to New England. He was arrested and placed in the jail in Boston and at this session of the court sentenced to banishment on pain of death and ordered to leave the colony within three days after his release from confinement. He was whipped on the twenty-second of the month.

Daniel Gold, William King, Mrs. Margaret Smith, Mrs. Mary Trask, Provided Southwick and Mrs. Hannah Phelps were arrested and committed to prison in Boston, and, Nov. 12, 1659, they were brought before the general court. King was about twenty-six years old, and lived on the western side of Bass River (now in Beverly) about sixty rods southerly from the upper end of the river, where McKay Street is now located. These persons were confined, so the record says, "for adherence to the cursed sect of the Quakers, . . . not disowning the same, nor their submission to the order here established, either in church or commonwealth, . . . their disorderly practices and vagabond like life in absenting themselves from their family relations and running from place to place." Mrs. Phelps was admonished, Gold to be whipped with thirty stripes, King fifteen, and Mrs. Smith, Mrs. Trask and Provided Southwick, ten each. Daniel Gold was ordered to depart from this jurisdiction within five days. The others were committed to prison. Gold, shorn of his clothes, was tied to the wheel of a great gun, his skin stripped from his back and his flesh beaten on his bones. The women remained in jail until friends paid the jailer's fees. William King, Mrs. Phelps, Mrs.

¹This is what the clown said, in Shakespeare's play, "All's Well that Ends Well," scene III, and is probably an old English saying. George Peele, the earlier English dramatist, also used the same saying.

Smith, Mrs. Trask and Provided Southwick were released soon after.

A Quaker meeting was held, in February, 1659-60, at Wharton's house, next the meeting house, while the church services were going on. This was certainly audacious and courageous. At least, William King, Mrs. Smith, Mrs. Trask and Provided Southwick were there and were arrested. Provided Southwick was committed to the Ipswich house of correction, but the others were imprisoned in Boston. Mrs. Trask had three children at home, respectively seven, five and three years of age. Through her husband's pleading with Governor Endecott, she was allowed to go home for two months the succeeding summer. Mrs. Smith's husband, John Smith, was arrested for speaking at the ordination of Rev. John Higginson, August 29th, and eight days later was brought to the Boston jail. Joseph Nicholson and his wife Jane, who was great with child, came to Salem about March 18, 1659-60, and John Southwick took them into his house. April 3d, the selectmen fined him twenty shillings a week thereafter while she remained in the town. They were Quakers, and May 30th were banished from the colony on pain of death, being ordered to depart by the next Wednesday. They could not secure passage to England, to which place the general court permitted them to go.

A letter¹, written from the jail in Boston, by John Smith to his wife's brother Joshua Buffum, and dated Nov. 4, 1660, states that William Ledra, Mr. and Mrs. Nicholson, Edward Wharton, Mrs. Trask and William King were with the writer and his wife in the Boston jail. The following is a copy of this letter:—

Joshua Buffum dear brother this is to let thee understand and all friends with thee how many of us ar hear in prison at this time.

Nicholas Upshall he hath ben hear fourteen months or thereabout being formerly banished upon his returning for to remain in prison all his lif time as they say. William Lidra who being banished at the Cort of Assizes on the 7 month who was returning after some time to visit us hear in prison was apprehended before he came to us and carried before the Governor and so sent to the prison. And Joseph Nichoson and his wife and child who came to take passage to go for England who was had before the cort and his liberty granted to go away and a boat pressed to cary him on bord the ship at Nantasket the master of the ship refused to cary him came up to Boston again and went before the Governor desired to have prison room or some other privit hous to be in till there was another opportunity to go. William Lidra was called forth also and demanded whether he would go for England he answered he had no occasion to go for England therefore could not go they said he should go somewher else then

¹This letter is in the possession of Mrs. Mary Cassandra Hodges of New York City.

he asked whither som answered to the gallows so he was brought to the prison again and hear both remain. Hear is Edward Wharton who was brought to the prison the latter end of the 3 month or thereabout for not going to ther meeting as they call it. John Chamberlen one of the town of Boston imprisoned the latter end of the 3 month for declaring against the minister of Charlston in publick as they call it. Her is Robert Harper and his wife imprisoned for coming to visit us hear in prison the 26 of the 8 month or therebout. My wife and Mary Traske imprisoned the 12 day of the 12 month 1659 and hear kept ever since only Mary Traske was at home 2 months of the time or therabout through her husbands pleding with the Governor who was imprisoned both of them for meeting at Edward Whartons house near the meeting hous and for making disturbance before they had done as they say being moved of the lord to speak not knowing but that it was don. William King imprisoned at the sam tim was banished and departed to Rod Iland not long after for the sam thing. Provided Southwick imprisoned also for the sam meting in Ipswich prison and let out the county cort at Ipswich to answer at Sallem Cort on the 9 month and I was put in prison for making a disturbanc on the day of ordination as they say being moved of the lord to declare against them therein imprisoned the 6 of the 7 month 1660 and hear now must remain al winter for ought we know. Only Joseph Nichoson and his wife it is lik shall pass to England when oportunity is.

Wrighten in the hous of correction
the 4 day of the 9 month 1660.

From the dear brother in the
[Lord?] JOHN SMITH
Arraigned and in prison.

[Indorsed:]

For the hands of
Joshua Buffum at
Shelter Island or elsewhere.

There are a number of letters which were written by the missionaries, and a joint letter by Mary Traske and Margaret Smith to Governor Endecott, dated at Boston, Dec. 21, 1660. This is found in the Massachusetts Archives, volume 10, leaf 267. All these letters are printed in New England Judged.

Sometimes, though not often, as it was resourceless, the Quakers complained to the court of indignities done to them. John Kitchen's¹ wife Elizabeth had Edward Batter presented before the Salem court June 26, 1660, for publicly slandering her. John Ward and Thomas Meekins, two young men, with Batter and two of the constables, Philip Cromwell and Thomas Roots, were going along the road near Strongwater brook, one morning, and met Mrs. Kitchen and a man, riding on a horse. Batter and Roots took hold of the bridle and told Mrs. Kitchen to get off the

¹John Kitchen lived on the northerly side of Essex Street, about two hundred feet westerly of Beckford Street.

horse, but she would not. They pulled both her and the man off the horse, which Roots took from them, mounted and rode away with it. Ward and Meekins testified to this, but the constables deposed that Batter did not touch Mrs. Kitchen, nor called her base, and that he was not in a passion. He confessed in court, however, that he asked her if she had been "a pawawing," called her a quaking slut, as he supposed she was coming "from a quaking meeting, seeing also some other persons (that way affected) coming that way which she came," etc. Result, only admonition.

The general court, Oct. 16, 1660, granted the request of the Quakers then in prison that they might go to England, provided they go in the ship then bound thither; and this order included Mr. and Mrs. Nicholson. But Margaret Smith and Mary Trask, whose husbands, as far as the court knew, were not Quakers, were "committed to the house of correction, and there kept to constant labor and mean diet," until the court released them, or their husbands should choose to carry them out of this jurisdiction, not to return without leave, as they were under sentence of banishment.

John Small, sr., Philip Verrin, Samuel Gaskin, Mrs. Tamosin Buffum, Daniel Southwick, Samuel Salmon and Mrs. Thomas Gardner, sr.¹, were summoned to the Salem court Nov. 10, 1660, for attending a Quaker meeting; and on the twenty-ninth of that month Mrs. Richard Gardner was also presented for attending such a meeting. In 1667, Mr. and Mrs. Richard Gardner had removed to Nantucket.

The monarchy in England had now become restored, and Charles II succeeded as the sovereign. The Massachusetts Bay Colony held a special general court to address the king and parliament. In the address to the king, occurs the following paragraph about the Quakers:—

Concerning the Quakers, open & capitall blasphemers, open seducers from the glorious Trinity, the Lords Christ, our Lord Jesus Christ, &c, the blessed gospell, and from the Holy Scriptures as the rule of life, open ennemjes to gouernment itself as established in the hands of any but men of theire oune principles, malignant & assiduous promoters of doctrines directly tending to subvert both our churches & state, after all other meanes for a long time vsed in vaine, wee were at last constrejned, for our oune safety, to passe a sentence of bannishment against them, vpon pajne of death. Such was theire daingerous, impetuous, & desperat turbulency, both to religion & the state ciuil & ecclesiasticall, as that, how vnwillingly soeuer, could it haue binn avoyded, the magistrate at last, in conscience both to God

¹Thomas Gardner lived on the northerly side of Tremont Street, in Peabody, about nine hundred feet easterly of the brook.

& man, judged himself called, for the defence of all, to keepe the passage wth the point of the sword held towards them. This could doe no harme to him that would be warned thereby: theire wittingly rushing themselves therevpon was theire oune act, & wee, wth all humillity, conceive a crjme bringing theire blood on theire oune head. The Quakers died, not because of theire other crimes, how capitoll soeuer, but vpon theire superadded presumptuous & incorrigible contempt of authority, breaking in vpon vs, notwthstanding theire sentence of bannishment made knoune to them. Had they not binn restrained, so farr as appeared, there was too much cause to feare that wee ourselves must quickly haue djed, or worse; and such was theire insolency, that they would not be restrained but by death; nay, had they at last but promised to depart the jurisdiction, & not to returne wthout leaue from authority, wee should haue binn glad of such an oppertunity to haue sayd they should not dye¹.

William Ledra was kept chained in the open prison in Boston through the succeeding seasons, even through the cold and inclement winter. March 11, 1660-1, he was brought into the court, at the same time as Wharton, and sentenced to be hung on the fourteenth. Upon hearing the sentence, he said to the court, "Thou hast no evil justly to lay to our charge." William King was also banished. Another, who had been banished, just then entered the court room. This was Wenlock Christison of Salem, who was well known, and had come to bid good bye to Ledra, though his life might be the price. Consternation and surprise were so general at his appearance that no one moved or spoke for several minutes. Nothing seemed to make this calm and quiet people fear. Death itself had no terrors for them. He was placed at the bar and condemned to die.

Wenlock Christison

Three days were then allowed Ledra to prepare for death. On the day before he was executed, he addressed a letter to "The little flock of Christ," in which he said: "Stand in the watch within in the fear of the Lord, which is the very entrance of wisdom and the state wherein you are ready to receive the secrets of the Lord. Hunger and thirst patiently, be not weary, neither doubt; stand still and cease from thy own workings, and in due time thou shalt enter into rest and thy eyes shall behold His salvation. Confess Him before men; bring all things to the light that they may be proved whether they are wrought in God. Without grace possessed there is no assurance of salvation. By grace you are saved."

¹Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume IV, part I, page 451.

The following day (March 14, 1660-1), the chains which had so long bound him to a heavy log were knocked off, and he went "forth to the slaughter in the meekness of Jesus." His last words from the scaffold were: "I commend my righteous cause unto Thee, O God! Lord Jesus receive my spirit." Governor Endecott and a guard of soldiers were present. The beating of drums drowned the words of the victim.

In the same winter, of 1660-1, Joseph Nicholson and his wife, who had been arrested at Salem, were imprisoned in the Boston jail.

John Smith and his wife, after nearly two years spent in prison, were released, and they started for Salem. She was sick and weak, and though leaning on a staff she fainted by the way, as she was driven by officers through Boston. Governor Bellingham met them, and ordered them back to prison.

On the day (March 11, 1660-1) that the general court sentenced William Ledra to death, Edward Wharton was banished, and was allowed eleven days to get without the territory of the colony. He asked for the reason of his sentence, and was told of his showing Quaker preachers from town to town. Wharton queried of the court, "Have ye not plowed blood-furrows on my back for that already, although you had no law for it?" But rarely a Quaker stayed banished. Wharton had been at Oyster River and Georgiana, now York, Me.; and, in 1662, was at Piscataqua, having good meetings. A Congregational minister there circulated a story that Wharton had left his wife and family, though he had never been married.

When banished, Wharton went into the northern part of New England, to Saco, and then to Black Point, in Casco Bay. "The outcasts" there received him kindly and gladly. He then returned towards Boston, was refused entertainment in several places, and finally stayed with an old couple (Mr. and Mrs. Stephens) in the woods. The next evening a "professor" told the woman that the man was a Quaker, and she was liable to a fine of five pounds. He went into the court at Dover, July 4, 1663. Maj. William Hathorne was the judge and Elias Stileman, clerk. The latter had been Wharton's next door neighbor in Salem. Wharton addressed the court: "Wo to all oppressors and persecutors, for the indignation of the Lord is against them. Therefore Friends, whilst you have time, prize the day of his patience, cease to do evil, and learn to do well; ye who spoil the poor and devour the needy: ye who lay traps and snares for the innocent." The court ordered that his legs be put into the stocks. He then said to the marshall: "Thomas Wiggins, Thomas Wiggins, Thou shouldst not rage so, thou art old and very gray; and thou art an old persecutor, its

time for thee to give over, for thou mayest be drawing near to thy Grave." This caused Wharton to be whipped. Tied to a pair of cart wheels, with a great rope about his middle, drawn by a number of persons, he was whipped and then put into prison where another man's wife was. After several days, he was placed on the back of a horse without a bridle, and holding on by the pummel of the saddle, his horse was led, as if he was a notorious offender, from town to town, through three towns, given ten stripes in each town, as a vagabond Quaker, although he was a house-holder in Salem and about his business. On returning to Salem, he was tied to the whipping post, and given fourteen lashes by John Massey, the constable.

Afterward, being at Rhode Island awhile, with Wenlock Christison, he went to Boston, and had "a glorious meeting." Governor Endecott ordered him to be whipped to Salem May 4, 1664, but he returned to Boston next day. With Christison, he was at Salem the next month, and they went to Boston. From there they were whipped thirty stripes to Salem, on the thirtieth, being vagabond, though ordered to be whipped to his dwelling place, which he owned. When Wharton was in Boston in May, 1665, to get a ship for Barbadoes, he was again whipped.

In the Salem court, June 30, 1668, Edward Wharton appeared "in an irreverent manner and contempt of authority," with his hat on, refusing to take it off, and having no business with the court, he boldly charged the government in open court with unrighteousness. Afterwards, he came into the court and charged the court with cruelty and shedding of innocent blood, which upon trial he admitted, and being asked whether he did not do wrong in so speaking, he replied, "God forbid I should own that to be wicked which God requires of me." He was fined fifty pounds, and ordered to lie in prison till it was paid.

May 22, 1661, a new law had been enacted against Quakers who had no home or right to be within the jurisdiction of the colony, as they "haue not bin restrained by the lawes already provided." Under the new law such Quakers could be arrested by any person; and for the first offence they should "be stripped naked from the middle upwards, tied to a cart's tail and whipped to the next town; for the second offence, the letter R should be branded upon their right shoulder and be whipped out of town as for the first offence; and, for the third offence, be banished on pain of death.

William King, who had been banished, returned without leave, and was brought before the court of assistants at Boston, in March, 1661; and upon his declaration, "how much he, by the rich grace and mercy of God, was now brought to loath and abhor

himself for his sinful and shameful practices against authority here established," was referred to the general court May 22, 1661, and released on security; and the general court fully discharged him.

During the session of the general court, on June 1st, Wenlock Christison, who had appealed from his sentence of death pronounced by the court of assistants in March, was now sentenced to death by Governor Endecott, to be executed on the thirteenth, immediately after the lecture, provided that if he should in writing agree to forthwith depart this jurisdiction and return no more, he should be discharged. The favor was accepted.

Samuel Shattock¹ and Nicholas Phelps, upon their banishment, in the summer of 1659, went directly to England to lay the whole matter of the persecution before the government. They found that authority there was in a chaotic state, and until the throne was restored and Charles II became king nothing could be accomplished. Through the influence of friends of the English Quakers, later, access was obtained to the presence of the king, who heeded their request and issued an order to the Bay Colony to cease the persecution. The following is a copy of the letter:—²

CHARLES R.

TRUSTY and wellbeloved, We greet you well Having been informed that feveral of Our Subjects amongst you, called *Quakers*, have been and are Imprisoned by you, whereof some haue been Executed, and others in danger to undergo the like, We have though fit to signifie Our Pleasure in that behalf, for the future, and do hereby Require, That if there by any of those People called *Quakers* amongst you, now already condemned to suffer Death, or are Imprisoned, and obnoxious to the like Condemnation, You are to

¹SAMUEL SHATTOCK¹ was a feltmaker and hatter; lived at 181 Essex Street; married, first, Grace —; second, Hannah —; died June 6, 1689, aged sixty-nine; she died Sept. 14, 1701, aged seventy-seven; children: 1. Samuel², born Oct. 7, 1649; 2. Hannah², born Aug. 28, 1651; married — Soames of Boston; 3. Damaris², born Nov. 11, 1653; married Benjamin Pope; 4. Mercy², born March 14, 1655; married, first, Andrew Elliott Dec. 9, 1680; second, Benjamin Trask of Beverly; 5. Priscilla², born May 1, 1658; married — Nichols of Salem; 6. Return², born Aug. 16, 1662; married John Sanders Sept. 24, 1688; 7. Retire², born March 28, 1664; died Sept. 9, 1691; 8. Patience², born Nov. 18, 1666; married John Smith July 29, 1689.

SAMUEL SHATTOCK²; feltmaker and hatter; married Sarah Buckman July 24, 1676; died in the winter of 1722-3; children: 1. Samuel³, born Sept. 7, 1678; died Dec. 14, 1695; 2. John³, born March 13, 1679-80; captain; mariner, of Salem, 1727; married Mary Crawley Nov. 11, 1708; died Aug. 4, 1734; she was living in 1733; 3. Margaret³; married Mial Bacon.

Damaris Shattock, widow, who married Thomas Gardner, was undoubtedly mother of Samuel Shattock, as also of Sarah Shattock, who married Mr. Gardner's son Richard Gardner.

²New-England Persecutors Mauled With their own Weapons, by Thomas Maule, page 23.

forbear to proceed any further therein, but that you forth-with fend the said Persons, whether condemned or imprisoned, over into this our Kingdom of *England*, together with their respective Crimes or Offences laid to their Charge, to the end such course may be taken with them here, as shall be agreeable to our Lawes, and their Demerits. And for so doing, these Our Letter shall be your sufficient Warrant and Discharge.

Given at our Court at White-hall, the 9th day of Septemb. 1661. in the 13th Year of Our Reign. Subscribed to Our trusty & well-beloved John Endicot, Esq; and to all and every other Governours of Our Plantation of New-England, and to all the Colonies thereunto belonging, that now are, or hereafter shall be; and to all and every the Ministers and Officers of Our said Plantation and Collonies whatsoever within the Continent of New-England.

By His Majesty's Command,

W. MORRIS.

Samuel Shattock bore the precious missive¹ to Boston, the captain of the vessel being himself a Quaker. Captain Oliver, the executioner, went on board the vessel when it landed, recognized Shattock, and hearing him and the captain conversing, supposing that all the people on board were Quakers, returned and reported that "Shattock and the Devil and all" had arrived.²

Nov. 27, 1661, another session of the general court was held and the letter of the king was considered and accepted with reservations, as follows:—

The just & necessary rules of our gouernment & condicon for preservation of religion, order, & peace hath induced the authority here established from time to time to make & sharpen lawes ag^t Quakers in refference to their restless intrusion & impetuous disturbance, & not any propensity or any inclination in vs to punish them in person or estate, as is evident by our graduall proceeding wth them, releasing some condemned & others liable to condemnation, & all imprisoned were released, & sent out of our borders; all w^{ch}, not wthstanding their restless spiritts haue mooved some of them to returne, & others to fill the royall eares of our soueraigne lord the king wth complaints against vs, and haue, by their wearied solicitations in our absence, so farr prevayled as to obtaine a letter from his maj^{ty}, to forbear their corporall punishment or death. Although wee hope, & doubt not, but that if his maj^{ty} were rightly informed, he would be farre from giving them such favour, or weakening his authority here so long & orderly settled, yet, that wee may not in the least offend his maj^{ty} this Court doth heereby order & declare, that the execution of the lawes in force against Quakers, as such, so farr as they respect corporall punishm^t or death, be suspended vntill this Court further order.

¹See the poem of John G. Whittier, entitled "The King's Missive."

²New England Judged.

This order caused directly the Quaker persecution to cease, although indirectly it continued some time longer. The prisoners were set at liberty. The charter gave the New England government no authority to pass laws taking limb or life, and probably no such laws would have been enacted had there been a stable government in England at that time.

It cannot seem strange that some of the sufferers under the Quaker laws should have become so insane as to appear naked in public, under an idea that it was their duty to thus declare the lack of spiritual apparel of New England's established church.

Deborah, daughter of Mrs. Tamison Buffum, and wife of Robert Wilson, was young, very modest and retiring. In June, 1662, she felt constrained to go through the town naked as a sign of the bareness of the religion of the church. She had gone through only a portion of the town before she was arrested, and the court record says that she, for "her barbarous and unhuman going naked through the Town, is sentenced to be tied at a Carts tail with her body naked downward to her waist, and whipped from Mr. Gidney's Gate till she come to her own house, not exceeding thirty stripes, and her mother Buffum and her sister Smith, that were abetted to her, etc., to be tied on either side of her, at the carts tail naked to their shifts to the waist, and accompany her." Daniel Rumball, a constable, was called to whip her, but he demurred, being loth to do it, and said so to the court, but was ordered to do his duty. Her husband (it may be presumed in collusion with Rumball, though neither was a Quaker) followed after, and clapped his hat sometimes between the whip and her back. She was fined year after year for absence from church, until 1668, when the court was "informed" that she "was dis-tempered in her head."

When, in the season for plowing, John Small's best yoke of oxen was taken from him for the payment of fines, Mrs. Small asked the court why their oxen were taken, and she was informed that they gave the property to the poor. Just then John Gedney, at whose tavern the court had always sat, came in, and she asked if he was the poor they gave it to. Major Hathorne said, "Would you have us starve while we sit about your business?" The court records show bills paid for food and drink, and the man-servants and maid-servants who were paid out of the treasury; and the greater the receipts from the fines the more they could spend out of them for themselves, as expenses of the court, and apparently the people had noticed it.

Philip Veren spoke to some of his neighbors of the cruelties of the court towards the Quakers, being a man of a lively conscience. He said that the government had murdered the dear

saints and servants of God and that he himself saw one of them murdered at Boston. Sept. 29, 1663, the Ipswich court, for these "seditious and treasonable words against the government" and this "great offence against the country in slandering the government," ordered him to be severely whipped.

Samuel Shattock went into the Salem court, Nov. 24, 1663, and charged the court and country with being guilty of innocent blood and words to that effect. He was sentenced to pay a fine. Dec. 21, 1675, John Holmes accused the Salem magistrates of murdering the Quakers, William Robinson and Marmaduke Stephenson.

At this time, the general court enacted some new laws against the Friends; but it was too late for them to have any substantial force. In 1677, constables were authorized to search for meetings and apprehend the persons who were present for punishment.

In the spring of 1669, a young man, named Thomas Maule¹, appeared in Salem, and became the foremost of the Friends, in wealth and energy. He was son of Thomas and Susanna Maule, and was born May 11, 1645, in Barkville Parish, near the city of Coventry, in Warwickshire, England. He wrote, in middle life, that

Thomas Maule

Human Learning I have not,

yet several books emanated from his pen. When about twelve years of age, he left England and went to the Island of Barbadoes, and from there, for the sake of his health, to New England about 1666, being then of age. He heard much preaching and loud praying, he said, and after living among the people in a certain place about three years, he experienced their words to be good, but their works evidenced quite the contrary. He then went to Salem where he found the church similar to that in the town he had just left. Here, he soon found, however, a number of quiet people of few words and good works, and to these he was attracted. As he was a stranger, the officials supposed that he was a Quaker, and April 19, 1669, fined Samuel Shattock and Samuel Robinson, who en-

¹Thomas Maule, tailor and shopkeeper, married, first, Naomy Lynsey of Lynn July 22, 1670; and, second, Sarah, daughter of James Kendall of Staffordshire, England, Oct. 6, 1713; died in 1724; children: 1. Susanna, born Sept. 15, 1671; 2. Elizabeth, born Sept. 11, 1673; 3. Deliverance (son), born Oct. 21, 1675; died Sept. 28, 1676; 4. Sarah, born Sept. 17, 1677; 5. Margaret, born March 20, 1679-80; 6. Peleth, born May 10, 1682; 7. John, born Oct. 9, 1684; cordwainer; lived in Philadelphia, Pa.; 8. Joseph, born Feb. 16, 1686-7; died March 14, 1686-7.

tertained him, twenty shillings each. He was then but twenty-three, and spoke his mind freely. He said that Mr. Higginson preached lies and that his doctrines were of the devil. Being complained of, May 3, 1669, the local court ordered that he be whipped ten stripes well laid on."



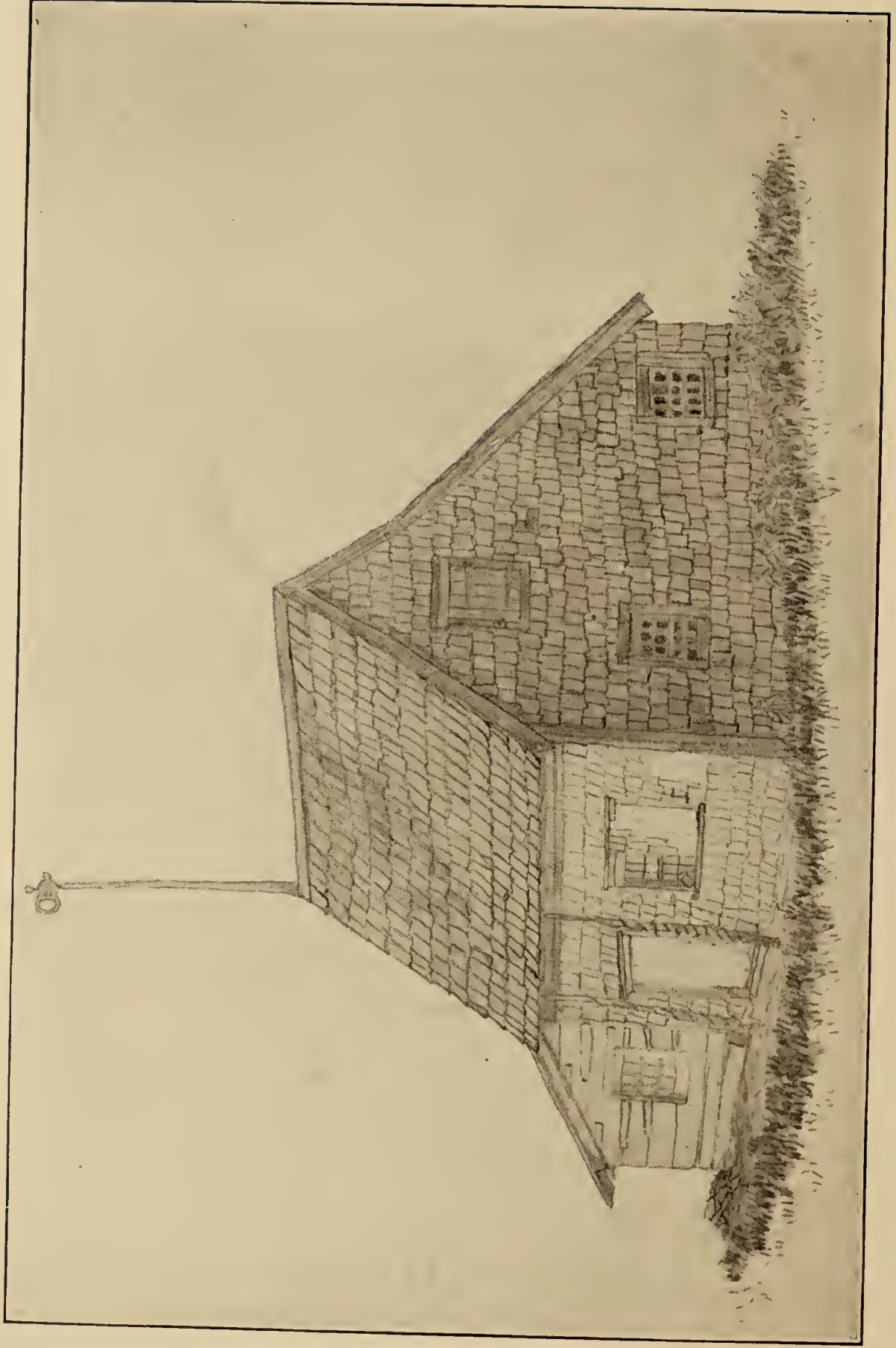
THOMAS MAULE HOUSE

In Salem court, Maule was fined for working openly in his shop, June 29, 1675, which was a public fast day.

Maule was a tailor when he came to Salem, but soon entered into trade and did a large and successful business, dealing in all the general kinds of merchandise, hardware, drygoods, medicines, country produce, furs, staves, tobacco, grain, hay, rum and other liquors. About 1685, he also made bricks on the easterly side of Cambridge Street, about two hundred feet from Essex Street. His house stood on the southerly side of Essex Street, about one hundred feet westerly of Cambridge Street, and was built on land of Jonathan Neale in 1679. The agreement for its construction was made Dec. 20, 1678, and it was finished Oct. 30, 1679. It was thirty-five feet long, twenty feet wide with fourteen feet posts. The deed of the land was not made out until Oct. 6, 1681.¹ He deeded it to his son John, April 9, 1707², and it passed to the Holman family in 1746, when Samuel Hayward was conducting the shop. In this house many meetings of the Friends were undoubtedly held. In 1815, it was described as very old and quaint looking. The title remained in the Holmans until 1848, when it was conveyed to John Clark and from his heirs, in 1851, it passed to the Curwen family. It was removed in 1852. The illustration

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 6, leaf 27.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 19, leaf 164.



FIRST QUAKER MEETING HOUSE.

of the old house is copied from a pencil drawing of it made by Miss Kate Johnson in 1850.

It has been said that the first burial place of the Friends was on the side of the hill, at the western corner of Boston and Goodhue streets. When Edward Wharton died, March 3, 1677-8, in his nuncupative will he gave five pounds towards procuring a burying place. With this money was purchased, for this purpose, a small lot of land owned by Joseph Boyce, who was also a Friend, on the southerly side of Main Street, opposite Grove Street, in Peabody. The yard has been used ever since, the last interment having been made in or about 1882. The State legislature, in 1924, authorized its abandonment and the removal of the remains of persons buried there to the Friends burial place on Essex Street, in Salem, and the next year the remains were so removed.

Maule erected some buildings for others, and probably had in his possession considerable used lumber. In the autumn of 1688¹, he erected a meeting house for the Quakers out of such lumber on the northwesterly corner of his six-acre pasture, the site being on the southeasterly side of Essex Street, just easterly of Grace church. Oct. 13, 1690, he conveyed that corner of the pasture with the building thereon to Josiah and Daniel Southwick, Samuel Gaskin, Caleb Buffum, Christopher Foster and Sarah Stone, all of Salem, and Samuel Collins, of Lynn, and others of the people called Quakers, "for the use of the above named and several others of the people commonly called Quakers to worship and serve God in."² This building was the meeting house of the Quakers for twenty-five years. The high seat on which the leaders of the services sat was called the gallery in this meeting house. As the Quakers were building a new house for their services, Nov. 18, 1718, Daniel Southwick, Samuel Gaskill, Caleb Buffam and Samuel Collins, being the survivors of the grantees named in the deed from Maule, for themselves and others interested in the property, reconveyed to him the land and old building thereon. The meeting house was added to, and was a dwelling house until 1753, when the old meeting house part was separated from the main portion of the dwelling house and removed to Gallows' Hill pasture, where it was then used for smallpox patients. It was there until 1864, when, under a mistaken idea that it was the first meeting house in Salem or was a part of that meeting house, it was removed to the grounds of the Essex Institute, where it remains. Because of the misinterpretation of the agreement for the

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 8, leaf 102.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 9, leaf 29.

building of the addition of the first meeting house, all the posts were lengthened two and a half feet; so the building as it now appears is two and a half feet higher than it was when found. The illustration of the building shown herewith is a copy of a pencil sketch of it made by James Henry Emerton in 1861, as it stood in the pasture and was used as a woodshed.

Love to God, love to men, sacrifice and heavenly aspirations were the essentials of the faith of the Friends,—all else was secondary. It is almost impossible for one in these days to understand the actions of the Puritans who left England and the communion of the Episcopal Church on the plea of liberty of conscience, and came to America where they manifested far greater and more heinous intolerance than was shown them at any time.

The cause lay in the union of church and state. The church and the state should exist and work side by side, but as soon as the state lives in the church, the will of the state will be paramount. Ecclesiastical law, so far as creed is concerned, will always cause trouble in the state, because all men do not think alike, believe alike or run in any other grooves, and the aims of church and state are different and often antagonistic. The state must be governed and conducted by all the people, whatever their religious faiths may be. Christ settled this matter once for all time when, being shown a coin, he asked, "Whose is this image and superscription," Being told, "Caesar's," he said, "Render to Caesar the things that are Caesar's; and to God the things that are God's."

The great result of this persecution of the Quakers was the end of the temporal power of the church in New England. To this time no one could vote or hold office unless he was a freeman; no one could be a freeman unless he was a member of the Congregational church; and no one could be a member of the church except by the consent of the minister. Therefore no one could be a freeman, nor vote, nor hold office, except with the consent of the church. Charles II had heard, even before he had succeeded to the throne, of the differences between the Congregationalists and the Quakers in the Massachusetts Bay Colony, of the hateful and awful treatment of one another of these "followers" of the meek and lowly Jesus, and he, being of the Episcopal Church, which was banned by the Puritans, informed the government of the colony that it owed its origin and very existence to the spirit of liberty and conscience, and ordered that the qualifications of freemen should thereafter be based entirely upon standards outside of church membership. Another fact is also apparent in Salem. Practically, the Congregational church in the colony was an established church, existing and controlled by the state, that is, the temporal or secular authority. At this time, the unity of the

church here was broken. Salem became divided into three parishes, each independent of the others, namely, the Salem Village church, the Cape Ann Side (Beverly) church and the original church. Soon, the authority of the town passed into the parishes, each having the former powers of the town to levy taxes for the support of the church within the respective territories. This was repeatedly modified until the parish became entirely personal, that is, that no one belonged to it except those who voluntarily were admitted into it, and it was supported wholly by voluntary donations.

Thus dawned a condition, not less Christian, not less patriotic, wherein freedom of belief and form and life did not hinder the civil life. In this view of the terrible persecution, Salem became the battle ground where was fought out the principle of separate duties to God and things. It seems almost incredible and impossible that one of the contending parties should have been the meek and non-resisting Friends, without a creed, liturgy, priesthood or sacrament; and which have never allowed war, oaths or litigation. By their quiet passiveness and reasoning, their scruples immediately became recognized and acquiesced in by the governing powers. In a local way, it is an interesting fact that the meeting house which Thomas Maule built for them out of secondhand lumber is the only meeting house of that early time now in existence in Salem, and that it was, unwittingly, it is true, removed to the Essex Institute, more than sixty years ago and has been carefully guarded all the decades since, by descendants of the Puritans, as a sacred thing. Such is the irony of fate.

CHAPTER XVI

REV. JOHN HIGGINSON



JANUARY 29, 1658-9, the selectmen ordered that the ten-acre lot of Joseph Hardy ("Hardinge") on Cape Ann Side be bounded and recorded; and twelve acres of upland near the farm of Thomas James were granted to Francis Skerry for about forty rods of his land which was added to the highway going to Richard Stackhouse's ferry.

May 2, 1659, the town granted "to Helyard Varen room before his now dwelling house to make a porch." This was the Higginson and Williams parsonage in Town House Square. At the same time, the town granted to William Robinson one-fourth of an acre of land between the old mill and his house.

Thomas Flint¹ was living in Salem as early as 1650. He was brother of William Flint who had come to Salem eight years earlier as a tenant of Emmanuel Downing.

¹THOMAS FLINT¹ was a farmer; wife Ann; died April 15, 1663; children: 1. *Thomas*²; 2. *Elizabeth*², born June 30, 1650; married John Leach; 3. *George*², born March 6, 1652-3; farmer; lived in Reading in 1682; married, first, *Elizabeth Putnam*; she died March 6, 1697; married, second, *Susannah Gardner* March 2, 1698-9; she died March —, 1720; had children; 4. *John*², born Dec. 3, 1655; 5. *Anna*², born Feb. 25, 1657-8; died April —, 1663; 6. *Joseph*², born in 1662.

CAPT. THOMAS FLINT²; served in King Philip's War; carpenter; lived in Salem Village; married, first, *Hannah Moulton* May 22, 1666; she died March 20, 1673; married, second, *Mary Dounton* Nov. 15, 1674; died in the spring of 1721; children: 1. *Abigail*³, born June 27, 1668; married *Henry Houlton*; 2. *George*³, born April —, 1672; husbandman; wife *Sarah*; they were living in 1749; 3. *Thomas*³, born Aug. 20, 1678; 4. *Mary*³, born Nov. 11, 1680; married *Jonathan Hayward*; 5. *Ebenezer*³, born April 6, 1683; husbandman; lived in Reading; married *Gertrude Pope*; died in 1767; had children; 6. *William*³, born July 17, 1685; 7. *Elizabeth*³, born Aug. 30, 1687; married *Thomas Nichols* of Reading Nov. —, 1709; 8. *Jonathan*³, born Nov. 8, 1689; husbandman; lived in Reading; married *Mary Hart* Feb. 18, 1723; had children: 9. *Ann*³, born Oct. 29, 1691; married *Ebenezer Nichols* of Reading June 21, 1711; 10. *Samuel*³, born Sept. 29, 1693; 11. *Lydia*³, born June



NICHOLAS PHELPS HOUSE



May 11, 1659, the general court made the observance of Christmas a misdemeanor, in the following words: "For pre-

1, 1695; probably married Joseph Putnam Jan. 3, 1720-1. JOHN FLINT²; husbandman and carpenter; lived in Salem Village; married Elizabeth —; she died before 1730; he died April —, 1730; children: 1. *Samuel*³, born Dec. 12, 1679; 2. John³, born Feb. 8, 1681; husbandman; lived in Windham, Conn.; married, first, Christian Reed May 5, 1709; she died Sept. 27, 1721; married, second, Lydia Gennings March 14, 1722; he was living in 1731; had children; 3. Hannah³, born April 4, 1685; married John Tarbell of Billerica Aug. 25, 1705; 4. *Stephen*³, born Dec. 29, 1687; 5. Joshua³, born Oct. 28, 1689; lived in Windham; married Deborah Ingalls of Andover Oct. —, 1715; died at sea; had children; 6. Joseph³, born Feb. 25, 1692-3; mariner; married Patience Mascoll; living in 1731; 7. Lydia³, born July 20, 1696; married — Phillips; 8. Sarah³, born Aug. 18, 1700; married Richard Brinmit; 9. Elizabeth³, born Jan. 10, 1702-3; married Benjamin Gillingham. JOSEPH FLINT²; husbandman; lived in Salem Village; married Abigail Hayward Aug. 6, 1685; died in 1710; she was his widow in 1719; children: 1. *Joseph*³, born June 25, 1686; 2. Nathaniel³, born Dec. 11, 1688; lived in Windham; married, first, Sarah Cutler Feb. 17, 1714-5; she died Dec. 20, 1726; married, second, Mary Davis May 22, 1727; she died Feb. 22, 1728; married, third, Mercy Abbee Dec. 11, 1734; he died June 3, 1766; she died Dec. 5, 1771; had children; 3. Abigail³, born Jan. 12, 1690-1; probably married Robert Russell of Andover June 22, 1716; 4. *Jonathan*³, born March 31, 1691-2; 5. Anna³, born Aug. 3, 1693; 6. Samuel³, born Jan. 1, 1694-5; tailor; of Salem in 1717, and of Middleton in 1738; perhaps married Ruth Putnam March 6, 1722-3; 7. Lucy³, born April 22, 1698; probably married Thomas Eliot of Boxford May 30, 1723; 8. Elizabeth³, born July 6, 1700; probably married Samuel Marsh Feb. 23, 1726-7; 9. Sarah³, born March 5, 1703-4; died, unmarried, in 1723; 10. Ruth³, born March 31, 1705; 11. Eunice³; probably married Thomas Goldthwaite in 1730.

CAPT. THOMAS FLINT³; yeoman and carpenter; married, first, Lydia Putnam Jan. 6, 1703-4; she died Aug. 31, 1711; married, second, Mary Putnam of Middleton Jan. 8, 1713; third, Abigail (Leech), widow of John Ganson Sept. 1, 1726; she was his wife in 1735; he was living in 1741; children: 1. Thomas⁴, born Nov. 23, 1705; farmer and millwright; lived in Reading; married Priscilla Porter of Topsfield Dec. 7, 1732; she died April 28, 1774; he died Jan. 24, 1775; had children; 2. Jonathan⁴, born Oct. 12, 1707 (of Killingly, Conn., husbandman, in 1749?); 3. Lydia⁴, born Sept. 10, 1709; probably married Joseph Porter in 1730; 4. Mary⁴, born Aug. 19, 1711; probably married Eleazer Porter in 1729; 5. Edward⁴, born June 12, 1714; died July 9, 1714; 6. *Elisha*⁴, born July 22, 1715; 7. Elizabeth⁴, baptized Oct. 6, 1717; married Thomas Dorman of Topsfield June 17, 1735; 8. Anna⁴, baptized Nov. 15, 1719; married, first, Simon Bradstreet of Topsfield Dec. 16, 1740; he died Sept. 18, 1747; married, second, John Baker of Topsfield Feb. 2, 1748-9; 9. Moses⁴, baptized Sept. 24, 1721. DEA. WILLIAM FLINT³; husbandman; lived in Reading; married Abigail Nichols April 20, 1713; died Oct. 2, 1736; children: 1. William⁴, born April 14, 1714; husbandman; married Lydia Twiss in 1745-6; 2. Abigail⁴, born Sept. 30, 1719; 3. Elizabeth⁴, born Feb. 8, 1722; 4. James⁴, born July 25, 1724; lived in Reading; father of Rev. James Flint, pastor of the East Church in Salem, and of Rev. Jacob Flint of Cohasset, Mass.; 5. *Joseph*⁴, born Sept. 7, 1726; 6. Benjamin⁴, born Dec. 26, 1728; 7. Mary⁴, born Jan. 14, 1730; 8. Kendall⁴, baptized in 1733; 9. Jacob⁴, baptized in 1734. CAPT. SAMUEL FLINT³; husbandman; lived in South Danvers; married Ruth Putnam March 6, 1722-3; died March 10, 1767; she died Sept. —, 1780; children: 1. Ruth⁴, born Jan. 14, 1723-4; 2. John⁴, born Aug. 27, 1725; deacon; captain; farmer; lived

venting disorders arising in several places within this jurisdiction by reason of some still observing such festivals as were superstitiously kept in other countries, to the great dishonor of God and offence of others, it is therefore ordered . . . that whosoever shall be found observing any such day as Christmas or the like, either by forbearing of labor, feasting, or any other way, . . . shall pay for every such offence five shillings, as a fine to the county."

June 15, 1659, was commended by the general court to be set apart as "a solemn day of humiliation for the imploring of God's favorable presence yet to abide with our dear native country, and with us his poor people and churches in the ends of the earth, and with our seed after us," the court "taking into their serious consideration the present unsettled estate and condition of our brethren in our native country, by commotions and great thoughts of heart, both in country and parliament, now assembled, a good issue whereof doth wholly depend upon the Lord's favor and goodness towards them, as also the Lord's frowns upon ourselves by

in Middleton; married Huldah Putnam Jan. 8, 1746-7; died Feb. 15, 1802; she died May 1, 1802; had children; 3. Mary⁴, born April 10, 1730; 4. Samuel⁴, born April 9, 1733; captain; farmer; soldier of the Revolution; lived in South Danvers; married Ede Upton Jan. 12, 1758; killed at the head of his company, at Stillwater, Oct. 7, 1777; she died July 6, 1812; had children. STEPHEN FLINT³; husbandman; lived in Middleton; married Hannah Noulton in 1714; she was his wife in 1731; he died in 1753; children; 1. Samuel⁴, born Sept. 1, 1715; 2. Anna⁴, born June 9, 1718; 3. Elizabeth⁴, born Dec. 2, 1721; 4. Mehitable⁴, born Jan. 28, 1724; 5. Hannah⁴, born Dec. 3, 1727. JOSEPH FLINT³; yeoman; lived in South Danvers; married Rachel Sibley Nov. 16, 1710; had a wife Mary in 1727; died in the spring of 1747; children: 1. Joseph⁴; probably died before 1746; 2. William⁴; lived in Danvers; yeoman; married Ruth Newman May 24, 1751; 3. Lydia⁴; living in 1746; 4. Ruth⁴; living in 1746; 5. Ann⁴; living in 1746; 6. Abigail⁴; living in 1746. JONATHAN FLINT³; husbandman; married Hannah Swinerton Jan. 3, 1716-7; she was his wife in 1738; child: 1. Hannah⁴, baptized Oct. 21, 1722.

CAPT. ELISHA FLINT⁴; farmer; lived in South Danvers; married Miriam Putnam Jan. 28, 1741-2; was living in 1773; children: 1. Mary⁵, baptized March 13, 1742-3; 2. Moses⁵, baptized July 13, 1746; 3. Rebecca⁵, baptized Jan. 29, 1748-9; 4. Mehitable⁵, baptized Jan. 15, 1758; 5. Miriam⁵, baptized Nov. 12, 1759; 6. Hannah⁵, baptized Nov. 13, 1763. JOSEPH FLINT⁴; house carpenter; married Sarah Putnam Aug. 14, 1753; died Dec. —, 1795; she was his widow in 1799; children: 1. Sarah⁵, baptized Feb. 19, 1758; thrown from a sleigh into Ipswich River and drowned Jan. 14, 1775, aged eighteen; 2. Elizabeth⁵, baptized Jan. 27, 1760; unmarried in 1795; 3. William⁵, baptized Jan. 24, 1762; lived in Maryland; married Lydia Mitchell in 1799; died Jan. 12, 1832; she died June 25, 1841; had children; 4. —⁵ (daughter), baptized March 11, 1764; 5. Mary⁵, baptized Aug. 3, 1766; married — Holmes; 6. Kendall⁵, baptized Sept. 11, 1768; sadler; lived in Maryland; married Bridget Lang Aug. 4, 1793; died at Easton, Md., Dec. 14, 1800; had children; 7. Phebe⁵, baptized Aug. 5, 1770; 8. Thomas⁵, baptized Jan. 17, 1773; living in 1795; 9. Sally⁵, baptized March 5, 1775; 10. Joseph⁵; living in 1795; 11. Abigail⁵; married Abner Parrott of Talbot, Md.

the irreparable rents and divisions in sundry churches, the great security and sensuality under our present enjoyments, the sad face on the rising generation, together with threats of future evils in this present spring season, all of which are signs of the Lord's displeasure for our withdrawing from him."

July 7, 1659, the selectmen ordered that the foot bridge over the marsh at N. Putnam's farm be speedily mended, William Flint and Samuel Cutler to do the work; and William Dodge and John Rayment were chosen to mend the bridge and highway between Frost-fish River and Wenham.

Nov. 29, 1659, the selectmen gave leave to Richard Harvey¹, a tailor, to mend the little house adjoining the meeting house, and make use of it for a shop at the pleasure of the town.

Richard Harvey

Dec. 8, 1659, was commended by the general court, as a day of thanksgiving and acknowledgement of God's favors.

March 14, 1659-60, the selectmen appointed Sergeant Porter and Edmond Batter to lay out highways in the ten-acre lots on Cape Ann Side as need may require.

Matthew Woodwell² lived in Salem as early as 1659, and was a seaman at first, subsequently becoming a brickmaker. He bought a tract of land through which High Street now runs, and on which, at 2 High Street court, in 1666, he built a small house, and lived there until his decease in 1691.

¹Richard Harvey married Jehoidan —; died before 1679; she survived him; children: 1. Sarah; died Dec. 26, 1659; 2. — (son), born Sept. —, 1660; 3. Anna, baptized Dec. 8, 1661; married — Cole; 4. Elizabeth, baptized Dec. 8, 1661; died before 1729; 5. John, baptized Dec. 8, 1661; house carpenter; died, probably unmarried, in 1728; 6. Jehoidan, baptized July 13, 1662; married John Ward Aug. 22, 1689, at Marblehead; 7. Abigail, baptized Nov. 6, 1664; married — Stow.

²MATTHEW WOODWELL¹ (Woodall) married Mary —; died in 1691; she survived him; children: 1. Samuel², born Oct. 3, 1659; 2. Mary², born Feb. 3, 1661-2; died young; 3. John², born May 9, 1665; glover; married Elizabeth Stacey; living in 1702; 4. Mary², born Oct. 26, 1667; 5. Matthew², born Dec. 4, 1668; married Ann —; died in 1701; 6. Margaret², born Aug. 4, 1671; married John Robinson June 18, 1694; 7. Elizabeth², born May 5, 1674; married Benjamin Pickman of Marblehead Nov. 14, 1700; 8. Dorcas², born about 1676; married Stephen Chapman Nov. 5, 1707; 9. Mary², born Nov. 26, 1677; 10. Lydia, baptized May —, 1685; died Oct. 25, 1686.

SAMUEL WOODWELL²; glover and brickmaker; married Thomasine Stacy; died Dec. 15, 1697; she married, secondly, — Hills; children: 1. Samuel³, born Jan. 14, 1687; 2. John³, born July 2, 1687; 3. Gideon³, born Jan. 30, 1688-9; cordwainer; lived in Boston in 1712; married Mary Tongue June 1, 1713; 4. Joseph³, born Sept. 25, 1690; married Sarah (Chamberlain),

John Bly¹ lived in Salem as early as 1653, when he was about fourteen; John Pomeroy was here in 1660, being a mariner, and was cast away at sea in 1662; and George Keaser², a tanner, came here from Lynn in the autumn of 1660, when he built a dwelling house on South River, on the easterly side of Liberty Street. There, he established tanning. He had bought the land six years previously.

George Keaser

widow of Josiah Clark March 13, 1711-2; lived in Boston, cordwainer, in 1712 and 1714; had a child; 5. Benjamin³, born Dec. 28, 1691; seaman; lived in Boston in 1715 and in Charlestown subsequently; married Alice Johnson of Charlestown Nov. 1, 1715; died Jan. 17, 1721-2; she survived him; had children; 6. Jonathan³, born April 5, 1693; 7. Elizabeth³, born April —, 1695; married Paul Langford Dec. 4, 1716; 8. David³, born Nov. 17, 1697; lived in Boston, blacksmith, in 1718; removed to Hopkinton about 1730; deacon; married Mary —; she was taken captive by the Indians and died in prison at Quebec; had children.

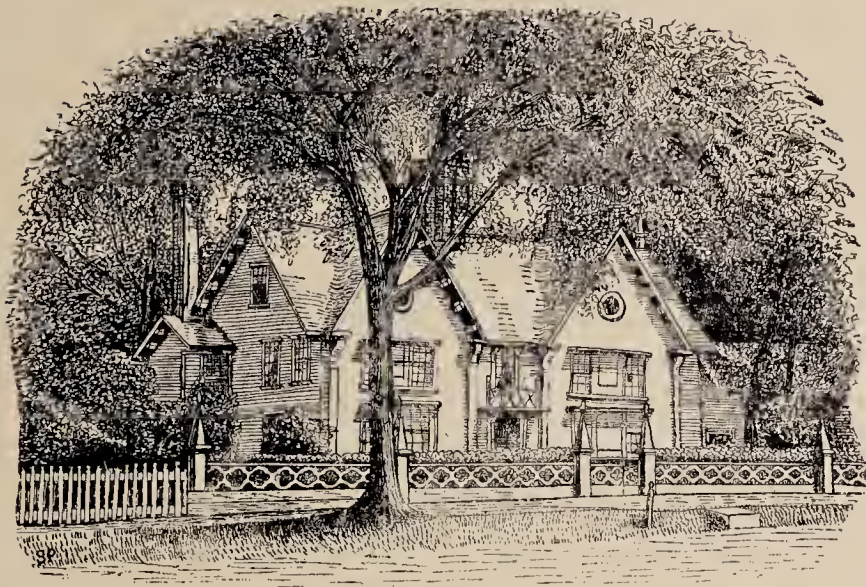
SAMUEL WOODWELL³ removed to Hopkinton before 1730, and to Hopkinton, N. H., before 1736; glover; married Elizabeth Carrill Nov. 10, 1715; was living in 1754; children, born in Salem: 1. Elizabeth⁴, baptized Feb. 1, 1718-9; 2. Mary⁴, baptized July 2, 1721; 3. Samuel⁴, baptized June 28, 1724. JOHN WOODWELL³; married — —; child: 1. Mary⁴, baptized Nov. 3, 1706. JONATHAN WOODWELL³; fisherman; married Priscilla Stacy May 8, 1716; died in 1737; children: 1. John⁴, born Nov. 30, 1719; 2. Joseph⁴, born July 18, 1722; 3. Jonathan⁴, baptized April 5, 1724; 4. Jonathan⁴, born Aug. 7, 1726; 5. Stacy⁴, born Jan. 19, 1728-9; 6. Priscilla⁴, baptized Oct. 3, 1731.

JOHN WOODWELL⁴; mariner; married Elizabeth Gillingham Aug. 28, 1739; children: 1. Lydia⁵, baptized May 24, 1741; married Samuel Alexander (Landers) Sept. 18, 1757; 2. Elizabeth⁵, baptized Dec. 19, 1742; married Benjamin Babbidge; 3. Mary⁵, baptized Jan. 8, 1743-4; married Samuel Archer; 4. Priscilla⁵, baptized Oct. 13, 1745; 5. Priscilla⁵, baptized Dec. 13, 1747; married Jonathan Glover; 6. John⁵, baptized Feb. 4, 1749-50.

¹John Bly was a brickmaker; married Rebecca Golt Nov. 11, 1663; was living in 1709; she was living in 1713; children: 1. —, born Jan. 3, 1663-4; 2. John, born Jan. 27, 1665; living in 1685; 3. Benjamin, born Oct. 8, 1666; 4. Mary, born May 25, 1668; 5. Rebecca, born July 20, 1670; married James Gillingham; 6. Edmond, born Sept. 14, 1672; living in 1685; 7. Hannah, born Oct. 8, 1674; 8. William, born Sept. 17, 1676.

²GEORGE KEASER¹ (Kezar and Keyser), born about 1612; married, first, Elisa —; she died June 24, 1659; married, second, Rebecca (widow of Benjamin Ashby?); she was his wife in 1687; he died in the summer of 1690; children, all born in Lynn: 1. Sarah²; married John Gilloway April 7, 1666; 2. Eleazer² (eldest son), born about 1646; 3. John², born about 1651; tanner; settled in Haverhill; married Hannah Davis of Haverhill Sept. 28, 1677; was massacred by the Indians March 15, 1696-7; had children; 4. Mary²; married Thomas Mould; 5. Benjamin², born about 1658; died about January, 1698-9, probably unmarried; 6. George², born May —, 1657; 7. Edward², born June 20, 1659; died Nov. 28, 1659; 8. Hannah²; never married, being unable to take of herself.

CAPT. ELEAZER KEASER²; tanner; married, first, Dec. 9, 1679. Mary Collins, who died; married, second, Hannah, widow of Miles Ward; died in the spring of 1721; she died Jan. 20, 1723-4; children: 1. Mary³; married James Collins Jan. 7, 1701-2; 2. Sarah³, born Dec. 6, 1686; died before 1721.



JOHN PICKERING HOUSE

April 3, 1660, the selectmen ordered that "all timber wood and all other lumber" should be cleared in all streets and highways within the town, that is, from the bridge and so all the neck within the town, that there may be sufficient passage for carts and "foot and horse by night and day."

At the same time, the selectmen fined Joseph Miles twenty shillings for entertaining a stranger, a Scot, several weeks, and voted to "clear the town of him"; and Thomas Spooner was fined ten shillings for entertaining Goody Finch, "a strange woman," and with others who have entertained her to give security to "discharge the town of her."

John Pickering lived, as early as 1642, on the northerly side of Broad Street, westerly of Pickering Street. In 1659, he purchased the lot of land next easterly of his house, and upon this higher ground built the ancient Pickering house the next year. A



PICKERING FIREBACK

fire back was set in the back part of the fireplace. This fireback was cast at the iron-works in Saugus at that date, and is preserved in the museum of the Essex Institute. John Pickering died possessed of the house in 1694. The next owner was his son John Pickering, who also died possessed of it. The next owner was the latter's son, Dea. Timothy Pickering, who died possessed of it in 1778. It then descended to his son Col. Timothy Pickering, who was born in this house in 1745, and became secretary of state under Washington and Adams, secretary of war, postmaster-general and member of congress. Colonel Pickering died possessed of the house in 1829; and its title and possession still remain in the family.

May 1, 1660, the selectmen admitted Nicholas Deacon as an inhabitant of the town, and Henry Herrick and Benjamin Balch were fined for entertaining him the next day. November 29th following, he was presented to the local court for living apart from his wife, and Henry Herrick was one of the witnesses against him. In 1669, Deacon told the court that he expected his wife soon. He was then living in Beverly.

May 8, 1660, the selectmen admitted John Sampson¹ as an inhabitant of the town, provided that he took effectual course to bring his wife with him; and on the same day William Haynes², a tailor, who had come from Virginia, was also admitted an inhabitant.

John Sampson

A week later, the selectmen granted to William Lord, sr., in further satisfaction of the land taken for the site of the first meeting house, ten acres of land between Thomas James' and Mr. Downing's farm.

Aug. 13, 1660, the town granted to John Loomis³ sixteen square rods of land between the two ways (Boston and Aborn streets), as an enlargement of his house lot.

William Ellet of Cape Ann Side went into a deep pond after a duck, which had been shot, Sept. 13, 1660; and he was found

¹John Sampson was born about 1627; yeoman; constable; lived in the Beverly part of Salem as late as 1680; was called "son-in-law" of Richard and Mary Haines in 1677; children: 1. Sarah, born June 18, 1668; 2. Mary, born Nov. 15, 1670; 3. Ciprian, born March 13, 1672-3.

²This was, perhaps, the William Haynes who married Sarah Ingersoll of Salem in or before 1644; and was a husbandman in Salem in 1648, having been in Virginia in the interim.

³John Loomes was a seaman, and lived on the western corner of Boston and Aborn streets in 1659; married Mary Trask; died about 1685, leaving an only son John and widow Mary, both of whom lived in Salem in 1700. Mr. Loomis' daughter Mary was born Dec. 16, 1659.

drowned the next morning. The pond was "environed with long weeds, some about nine fathoms," and both of his hands had weeds fast wrapped around them. A jury, consisting of William Dodge, Robert Hubbard, John Leach, Edmond Grover, Zackary Herrick, Cornelius Baker, Osmond Trask, John Grover, Joseph Harris, Nicholas Decane and Isaac Davis, was summoned, and they decided that the deceased had been drowned by accident¹. Neither Elliot nor his wife Sarah were desirable citizens².

Nathaniel Pattey appeared in Salem this year for the first time, and he was of Bass River Side the next year. He was a servant of Hugh Woodberry; and was gone to sea in November. Nov. 6, 1660, the selectmen admitted Clement Salmonds³ to be an inhabitant. He came from Boston, and returned thither in 1662. Hugh Jones⁴ came from Wincanton, England, about 1642, in Mr. Stratton's ship, as a servant of Robert Gutch, and lived in Salem in 1660, having been a servant of Thomas Gardner. He became a planter.

h v Jones

After Charles II ascended the throne of England, fearful that the events occurring during the period of the Commonwealth might have influenced the young monarch unfavorably toward the Massachusetts Bay Colony, the general court addressed to him the following letter (which is here given somewhat abbreviated:—

To the high & mighty Prince Charles the Second, by the grace of God
King of Great Brittain, Fraunce, & Ireland, Defender of the
Faith, &c.

Most gracious & dread soueraigne:—

May it please your maj^{ty}, in the day wherein yow happily say yow now know that yow are king ouer your Brittish Israel, to cast a favorable eye vpon your poore Mephibbosheth, now, &, by reason of lamenes in respect of distance, not vntill now, appearing in your presence; wee meane vpon New England, kneeling with the rest of your subjects before yo^r maj^{ty}, as her restored king; wee forgett not our ineptness as to these approaches. Wee at present owne such impotency as renders vs

¹Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, volume II, pages 222 and 223.

²Mrs. Elliot married, secondly, before November 27th, James Bedde. The latter drank intoxicating liquor to excess, and she had an uncontrollable tongue. They lived in Wenham in 1662. Mr. Elliot had a daughter Sarah, who survived him. As a boy, in 1641, he was a servant of Hugh Laskin.

³Clement Sammon married Joanna Riland June 13, 1660, in Boston; children: 1. John, born May 9, 1661, in Salem; 2. Mary, born Jan. 12, 1663-4, in Boston; 3. Elizabeth, born Feb. 26, 1665-6, in Boston; 4. Samuel, born April 5, 1668.

⁴Hugh Jones, born about 1641; married, first, Hannah Tompkins June 26, 1660; she died in 1672; married, second, Mary Foster Dec. 31, 1672; he was living in 1681 and dead in 1691; she was living in 1696, and was of

unable to excuse our impotency of speaking vnto our lord the king; yet, contemplating such a king, who hath also seene adversity, that he knoweth the heart of exiles, who himself hath binn an exile, the aspect of majesty, thus extraordinarily circumstanced, influenced, and animateth exanimated outcasts (yett outcasts, as wee hope, for the trueth) to make this addresse vnto their prince. Hoping to find in yo^r sight, wee present script, the transcript of our loyall hearts, into yo^r royall hands, wherein wee craue leaue.

To supplicate yo^r majesty for yo^r gracious protection of vs in the continuance both of our civil priuiledges according to (& of our religion & libertjes) the grauntees knowne end, of suing for the pattent conferred vpon this plantation by your royall ffather. This, our libertje to walke in the faith of the gospell wth all good conscience according to the order of the gospell, (vnto which the former in these ends of the earth is but subservient,) was the cause of our transporting ourselves, wth our wiues, our litle ones, & our substance, from that pleasant land ouer the Atlanticke Ocean into the vast & wast wildernes, choosing rather the pure Scripture worship, wth a good conscienc, in this poore, remote wildernes, amongst the heathens, then the pleasures of England, wth submission to the impositions of the then so disposed & so farre pre-vayling hierarchie, w^{ch} wee could not doe wthout an evil conscience. . . .

Our wittnes is in heaven, that wee left not our countrje vpon any dissatisfaction as to the constitution of the civil state. Our lott, after the example of the good old non conformist, hath binn only to act a passiue part through out these late vicissitudes & successiue ouerturnings of state. Our seperation from our brethren in this desart hath binn & is a sufficjent bringing to minde the affliction of Joseph; but providentiall exemption of vs hereby from the late warrs & temptations of either party wee account as a favo^r from God; the former cloaths vs wth sack cloth, the latter with innocence. . . .

Wee could not liue wthout the publicke worship of God. Wee were not pmitted the vse of publicke worship wthout such a yoake of subscription & conformity as wee could not consent vnto wthout sinne. That wee might therefore enjoy divine worship wthout the humajne mixtures, wthout offence either to God, man, or our owne consciences, wee wth leaue, but not wthout teares, departed from our country, kindred, & fathers houses, into this Pathmos, in relation wherevnto wee doe not say our garments are become old by reason of the very long journey, but that ourselves, who came away in our strength, are, by reason of very long absence, many of vs become grey headed, & some of vs stooping, for age. The omission of the prementioned injunctions, together wth the walking of our churches, as to the point of order, the congre-

Woburn in 1707; children: 1. Hannah, born Feb. 9, 1660-1; 2. Sara, born April 30, 1663; 3. Elizabeth, born Oct. —, 1664; 4. Mary, born Jan. 30, 1665; married John Pudney Jan. 1, 1683-4; 5. John, born Aug. 4, 166-; of Framingham in 1726; 6. Deborah, born March 10, 1669-70; 7. Samuel, born April 30, 1672; living in 1696; 8. Rebecca, born Oct. 15, 1673; 9. Abigail, born Jan. 7, 1674-5; 10. Hannah, born May 17, 1677; 11. Rachel, born April 17, 1670; living in 1690; 12. Sarah, born July 10, 1681; living in 1696; 13. Lydia, born Feb. 20, 1684-5; 14. Hugh; of Woburn in 1707.

gationall way is all wherein wee differ from our Orthodox brethren. S^r, wee lye not before yo^r sacred maj^tje. The Lord God of gods, the Lord God of gods, he knoweth, & Israell he shall know; if it were in rebellion or schisme that wee wittingly left our dwellings in our owne, or continew our dwellings in this strainge land, saue vs not this day. . . .

With the religious stippulation of our prajers, wee, prostrate at yo^r rojall feete, begg pardon for this our boldnes, craving finally that our names may be enrolled amongst

Yo^r maj^tjes most humble

Subjects & suppljants,

JOHN ENDECOTT, Gouno^r, in the name & by
the order of the Generall Court of y^e Massachusetts.

With this letter to the king, another was sent, addressed to Parliament, and also a letter of instructions to the colonial agent in England.¹

Rev. Edward Norris, pastor of the church, was not well for several years before his decease. In his will, dated Dec. 9, 1657, he wrote: "having infirmity upon me which may prove very dangerous, and mortal." Sometime after, he was stricken speechless in the pulpit. He became so weak that the town ordered, May 2, 1659, "that when God shall take Mr. Norrice to rest out of this world to himself: that the town shall be at the charge for his burial." He died Dec. 23, 1659, after serving here nineteen years, and in the prime of his life.

Rev. Mr. Whiting² was still in service here when Mr. Norris died, but removed immediately afterward to Billerica, where he was ordained pastor of the church Nov. 11, 1663. He preached the Artillery sermon in 1682. Cotton Mather called him "a reverend, holy, and faithful minister of the gospel." He died Feb. 28, 1713-4, at the age of eighty. The following lines are in a poem published soon after his death:—

Whiting, we here behold a starry light,
Burning on Christ's right hand and shining bright;
Years seven times seven, sent forth his precious rays,
Unto the gospel's profit and Jehovah's praise.

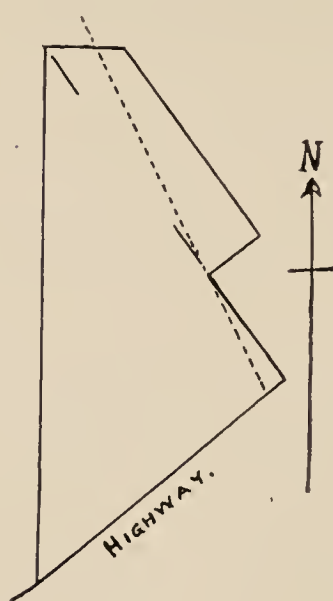
Nov. 29, 1659, the town ordered that the ministry for the next year be supported by voluntary contributions put into the "drawing box"; and those that will not so contribute should be taxed by the selectmen. The only record about the success of this plan is a single line in the accounts of the town: "Rec p sev^rale

¹These papers are all printed in full in the Records of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, volume IV, part 2, pages 449 to 456.

²Rev. Samuel Whiting married Dorcas —; children: 1. Elizabeth; 2. Samuel; 3. John; minister at Lancaster, where he was killed by the Indians Sept. 11, 1697; 4. Oliver; 5. Dorothy; 6. Joseph; 7. James; 8. Eunice; 9. Benjamin; 10. Benjamin.

men for the msty £1, 17s., 6d." At this time the Quakers were making inroads on the church attendance and influencing the members in their interest in its services and their maintenance.

It was expected that a stranger would be the new minister who must soon come, and it was deemed necessary that a parsonage should be provided for him. There had been no parsonage since the death of Rev. Francis Higginson, in 1630—thirty years before. Nov. 29, 1659, the town therefore voted "that there shall be a house built for the ministry." The site chosen for it was the lot on the northwest side of Washington Square west, between the Second Church and Williams Street. On the plan, the dotted line indicates the westerly line of Williams Street. The lot was



owned by Daniel Rumball who permitted the town to take it, and he was given a lot of land in satisfaction therefor¹. On the day that the town voted to build the parsonage, William Browne and Mr. Corwine were desired to agree with carpenters for its construction; and to pay for the same two hundred pounds was ordered to be raised by taxation Dec. 14, 1659. The house was of considerable size. The strip of land on the easterly side of the lot was conveyed by John Williams to Mr. Higginson, the new minister, Nov. 20, 1682. Mr. Higginson's barn stood upon this strip, and the house was on the street end of the original lot.

Mr. Higginson died in 1708, having in his will devised the estate to his son Col. John Higginson, who died March 23, 1719-20, possessed of it. In his will, he devised it to his daughter Mary, wife of James Lindall and her children. She died in 1753, leaving three children, Timothy Lindall, Sarah Lutwyche and Abigail Jennison, widows, the latter being of Boston and the others of Salem. Sarah released her interest to her sister Abigail in 1754, and Mrs. Jennison lived in the house. Timothy and Abigail divided the estate two days afterward, Abigail thereby becoming the owner of the house and that portion of the land. She removed to Danvers before 1759, when the house was occupied by Ruth Putnam and William Patterson, a mariner, and she conveyed the property to Mr. Patterson Jan. 1, 1761². He died in 1770, and the administrator of his estate conveyed the "old house" and land to Jonathan Andrew May 9, 1771³. The house was gone before 1788.

¹Salem Town Records, volume II, page 7.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 109, leaf 85.

³Essex Registry of Deeds, book 129, leaf 244.



John Higginson

John Higginson, a son of Rev. Francis Higginson, the first teacher of the church, was thirteen years old when he came to Salem with his parents in 1629. He was born at Claybrook, Leicester, England, Aug. 6, 1616. He was chaplain at Fort Saybrook, Conn., in 1641; taught school in Hartford; and studied theology with Rev. Thomas Hooker. In 1643, he became assistant to Rev. Henry Whitfield of Guilford, Conn., whose daughter Sarah he married. He had sole charge of the church there from 1651 to 1659. In the latter year, he took passage in a ship for England, and because of the severity of the weather was obliged to put into the harbor of Boston. Apparently, he visited Salem soon afterward, about the time of the decease of Mr. Norris. He was asked to remain here awhile, and be the temporary pastor of the church. He agreed to stay a year. Subsequently, he was invited to become the permanent pastor, and he gave his affirmative answer in the following letter:—

It hath been matter of serious enquiry to me w^t should be the will of God & my duty in this great turne of my life, especially in ordering my Abode here amongst you for a time, w^{ch} hath been ouerruled by the Prouidence of God wholly beyond my owne intention in my removall from y^e place where I was before. And yet truly when I haue considered all, I encline to look at y^e call of y^e people here as the call of God for my continuance amongst you. I desire to be thankfull to God & thankful to you all for your loue to me & mine, & am willing to settle amongst you as in Acts 2. 42 so when I joyn in church fellowship with you So long as the Church & people of God here continue in the stedfastnes of Faith in Christ & *order* of y^e Gospel as now you doe.

So long as I finde y^t I can (with a good Conscience)

1. cary on y^e *part of y^e worke* of Christ w^{ch} may be
2. long to me & *discharge* my duty to my Family.

I doe express my selfe willing to setle amongst you with a true intention, and a true affection having no other thoughts or desires but to liue & dye amongst you as my Father did before.

There is but one thing, I would commend vnto y^e Congregation that you would seriously think of a Ruling Elder, for though I should not be vnwilling to doe w^t y^e Lord shall, enable me, yet I am not free to vndertake church work without y^e Assistance of a Ruling Elder, the place being great the people many, & y^e work like to be much especially in such times as these.

And for myselfe I know my own weaknes many wayes & y^t I *shall haue need of y^e Freedome of my Spirit & command of my time*, y^t I may in some measure fulfill y^e work of y^e ministry vnto wch I am called of God by yourselues.

This invitation was accepted in June or early in July. With his family and goods, he was transported from Boston to Salem by Capt. Richard Moore by water, for which service the town paid him forty shillings. His family consisted of his wife Sarah and

children, John, aged thirteen, and four others. Two children were born to them in Salem.

The church elected John Browne ruling elder, in his absence, and he accepted the position July eighth, and, in accepting it, he said in effect that though he judged himself unfit and there were many others more able for the work, yet considering the call of God and his people in it, and that he might be any means of the church's settlement, he did give up himself to the Lord and to the church in the work so far as the Lord should enable him thereunto. His occasions at Virginia required his presence there the following winter, and when the Lord should please to return him safely from thence he should then continue at home and apply himself to the work as the Lord should enable him.

Letters inviting the churches of Ipswich, Lynn, Reading and Boston to participate in the ordination exercises were sent. At the ordination, which was in August, 1660, Mr. Higginson preached the sermon from I Cor. 3 : 7 : "So then neither is he that planteth anything, neither he that watereth; but God that giveth the increase." Maj. William Hathorne and the deacons imposed their hands upon Mr. Higginson, and then he upon the ruling elder. Rev. John Norton of Boston gave the right hand of fellowship, speaking from Gal. 2 : 9 : "And when James, Cephas, and John, who seemed to be pillars, perceived the grace that was given unto me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship; that we should go unto the heathen, and they unto the circumcision."

Mr. and Mrs. Higginson were dismissed from the church in Guilford and received into the church in Salem. The parsonage was unfinished Jan. 8, 1660-1, when the selectmen agreed with John Ruck that he should have ten pounds a year for entertaining Mr. Higginson "into his house" on what is now Mill Street, for so long time as he should live in the house; and the town to be at the charge of making a brick chimney in the outhouse. Mr. Ruck was to have twelve pounds for the wood he was to provide Mr. Higginson with the first year. The Ruck house at that time was the northwesterly portion of the present house, where the great chimney is. The house was built, as it was originally, before 1643.

Mr. Higginson was the stenographer of the synod which was held at Cambridge in 1637, being employed by magistrates and ministers of the Bay to make a report of the meetings and write out the material parts for printing, which he did, and it was accepted by the general court at Boston, in May, 1639. It was agreed that he should have the benefit of the printing of it, which was estimated at one hundred pounds. He loaned the copy to the ministers, and some of them wished to have it printed, and

some did not. In May, 1641, he again delivered the copy to the court, to whom he wrote, from Guilford, Aug. 9, 1643, requesting the court to pay him for his services, and suggested fifty pounds¹. The court replied by saying that he was given the right to print it and "make his best of it"; and if he had been persuaded not to print it by any persons it was his matter and not the court's. So, apparently, all his labor was lost.

The town voted, March 9, 1659-60, to pay Mr. Higginson one hundred and sixty pounds a year as salary and twelve pounds for his fuel; and, July 17, 1671, it was mutually agreed that he should have one hundred pounds a year and forty cords of wood, and the same was agreed to in 1676-7. The salary was at first raised by voluntary subscription, and the deacons reported monthly the amount contributed. This was soon found to be a precarious or at least uncertain method, and afterward the town voted that the selectmen solicit contributions directly from the people. After three years trial of this last method, the salary was found to be forty pounds behind. In 1667, it was decided to make an assessment upon the people (Quakers excepted); and, June 30, 1668, a number of residents petitioned the Salem court for arbitration with Mr. Higginson relative to his claims, to settle the whole matter, lest through long delays "such a place as this, any sad inconveniences may follow to the dishonor of God, the discouragement of the ministry and the dishonor of the people here." No action was taken upon the communication.

April 13, 1661, the town granted to Mr. Higginson one and three-fourths acres of swampy land near the northeast corner of Washington Square, "in the Common Pen neare Mr. Stileman's field on the south and Mr. John Gidney's and John Neale on the north to begin at the upwards west corner of Mr. Stileman's pasture and cross over to John Neal's field and so downwards to the sea between those fields above named"; and also six acres of land at the Neck, constituting what is now known as Juniper Point, and described as "in the great neck neare to Mordechai Creuet's new Dwelling." Apparently, when in need of money he sold the swamp lot in or before 1664; and the Juniper lot in 1671.

DOMESTICITY

As commerce increased new articles came to the houses of the settlers. An "eastend" carpet, calico carpets, a Thrum rug, and a worsted Thrum rug appeared. "Sea beds" were here, flags were used to fill ticks, and Flanders ticks were in some houses. There were flag-bottomed chairs, looking glasses, desks and wicker baskets; also, Turkey cushions, Turkey-work chairs,

¹Massachusetts Archives, volume X, leaves 185 and 186.

leather chairs and straw-bottomed chairs. William Woodcock, the apothecary, had a trunk with feet. Thomas Trusler had "a broad plait candlestick of brass, to hang on a wall." Brass and-irons appeared in some foreroms. Framed pictures were frequently hung in the best room. Latten ware became common, as pudding, dripping, sauce and other pans, cullenders, candlesticks and lamps. Snuffers were introduced to trim the candles. There were also Lisbon ware, silver cups and spoons, china porringers, quart stone jugs and brass savealls. In the kitchen, began to appear nutmeg graters, mincing knives, and molasses and oranges.

New materials for apparel appeared, as Hampton serge, galloon ossinbridge cloth, Turkey mohair, silk mohair and hair camlet. In spite of the fact that it was proposed in the general court in 1654, that the Irish be prohibited from entering the Colony, because of "ye cruel and malignant spirit that has from time to time been manifest in ye Irish nation against the English nation," Irish cloth, linen, serge and blanketing, and even Irish beef became common here. Upon the clothing, were soon used silver, gold and steel buttons, and there were tape and ribbon. The buttons came on cards, much the same as they do now.

The apparel of the women now included taffety scarfs, felt hats, silk hoods, lawn handkerchiefs, sleasie aprons, straw hats, cametto coats, buckskin buskins, dimity waistcoats, red waistcoats, castor hats, narrow-brimmed hats, Portugal caps and ivory combs. French fall shoes appeared here in 1680. Among other personal articles, were snowshoes, walking canes, pen knives, razors and silver-bowed spectacles. Furs of all kinds were plentiful.

The principal money in circulation was the Spanish and New England silver coins.

In the way of military weapons and accoutrements, as well as for protection and hunting, were muskets, carbines, fowling pieces, pistols, rapiers, swords and snapsacks. Henry Harwood had a javelin.

There were a considerable number of slaves here, Negroes and West Indians.

As to methods at meals, the adults ate their repasts and then the servants and children ate the same class of food.

Books began to accumulate here as the years passed. The Bible was the common book, being found in most houses. The next was the Psalm book, with an occasional copy of the New Testament. Widow Margery Wathin, who died in 1644, had twenty-four old books, valued at eight shillings, and a Bible and testament, at nine shillings. Elias Mason had nine books, appraised at thirteen shillings, when he died in 1646. William Clark died in 1647, possessed of Purchas' Pilgrimage, a rare and im-

portant volume. Mrs. Rebecca Bacon died in 1655, possessed of Doctor Sebe's and Doctor Preston's Works, Calvin's Institutions, Luther upon the Galatians, Mr. Shepard's Morality of the Sabbath, Nicholas Gibbin's Disputations, Joshua Symonds' books, Markam and ten small books, besides three Bibles and a Concordance. Thomas Sallows, who died in 1663, had two of Mr. Burroughs' writings. Thomas Flint had, at the time he died, in 1668, a great Bible, Psalm book and a sermon book. John Symonds, who died in 1671, had, among other books, a volume of Doctor Preston's works and one of Mr. Rogers' works. William Bowditch, who died in 1681, had beside a large Latin Bible, eleven books called Rutherford's Letters, valued at one pound and two shillings; twenty books of Durham on the Commandments, appraised at one pound and ten shillings; five books of Mr. Rait against Popery, valued at six shillings and three pence; three books of William Colvill's Works; two books of George Downe's Works; one volume of John Browne's Works; one volume of John Despagne's Works; and two books of Meinlies against Dempster.

Rum, in considerable quantities, early appeared here.

The husbandman soon acquired the practice of keeping his grain in the garret of his house, and established a dairy room called a buttery.

The settler who cultivated the ground and conducted the business of farming most extensively was Farmer John Porter, in what is now Danvers, whose title he certainly earned. At the time of his death, Sept. 6, 1676, he had twelve acres planted with Indian corn and two acres with peas and twelve acres sowed to barley and one to wheat. He had eight oxen and two three-year-old steers, a bull, fifteen cows, nine two-year-olds, eight yearlings and eleven calves, five horses, six mares and two colts, forty-six ewe sheep and wethers and fourteen lambs and fourteen swine and eleven young shoats. He had two negro slaves and three English servants.

Clergymen seem to have been the most educated men among the early settlers. They had the largest libraries, at least. Lawyers were rare, and the minister did many things that a lawyer ordinarily does. The legal side of their services was almost confined to drawing of wills and deeds, although advice must have been frequently sought. Early deeds occasionally began with "To all Christian people to whom these presents shall come," etc.; and it is easy to imagine who prepared them. Wills more generally manifested their authorship in the preamble: "In the name of God amen, I, John Pickering of Salem, being of perfect mind and memory, do make and ordain this my last will and testament in manner and form following. First, I bequeath my soul to my

Lord God and Saviour, and my body to the earth from whence it came." This will is dated July 30, 1655.

Barbers were the first surgeons. They were early called here barber-surgeons or limb-dressers. They performed amputations and phlebotomy, extracted teeth, etc. Their sign is continued to this day. It was a pole wound with a narrow bandage, and originally had a basin suspended from it, all of which indicated the winding of the bandage around the limb to stop the bleeding and the basin in which to catch the blood.

Physicians had little knowledge of the body or intellect. Their special preparation was a knowledge of certain customary remedies for the manifest symptoms. Apparently, they had little or no knowledge of the technical advantage of administering certain remedies, or what quality of the medicine produced the results, or why. The published recipes of Dr. Zerobabel Endecott of Salem give an exact view of the methods of the seventeenth century physicians. Such ingredients as had been employed by other practitioners, whether their physiological effects were known or not, were prescribed. Among the herbs and other things used were red lead, lead ore dissolved, wax, stone horse's livers dried in an oven, powdered and administered in milk, herbs of various kinds, as fivefinger, brambles, strawberry roots, plantains, sumac powdered, elecampane roots powdered, wormwood, wild carrot seeds, sweet fennel seeds, raisins, maiden hair, liverwort, elder buds, knotgrass, shepherd's pouch, agrimony, pollipod, borrag, buglose root, rosemary, primrose, cowslips, violets, crude tobacco leaves feverfew, peony seeds, the fillings of a dead man's skull, spices, camomile, etc. The most revolting substances were included in many remedies, and are unfit to be mentioned. The following is a cure for a distracted woman, and is a specimen of the remedies used in that period: "Tak milk of a Nurce that giues suck to a male Child & also take a hee Catt & Cut of one of his Ears or a peece of it & Lett it blede into the milk & then Lett the sick woman Drink it doe this three Times."

The records reveal a number of instances where patients lived with the physicians while being treated. The bills are classified into treatment and diet. This seems to have been a practice at that time in Salem and Marblehead. These are cases where the patient had no home or place where he could remain and have proper care. This practice was the beginning of the modern hospital.

The expense of funerals at that period was ordinarily about two pounds, sometimes as low as twelve shillings, but that of Capt. Walter Price, in 1674, amounted to sixty pounds, and of Maj. William Hathorne, in 1681, to forty-one pounds. Coffins cost about ten shillings. The formal services at a funeral were

simple. A large number of people attended, the minister was usually present, but did not read or pray or address the people. At the tolling of the funeral bell, the people met at the late home of the deceased, and carried the remains solemnly on a bier,—above which was carried a pall, a large black cloth, supported by four or six men, horizontally,—to the grave, by which they stood until the burial was completed. Prayers and serious remarks were rare here until nearly the close of the seventeenth century. At the funeral of William Woodcock, the apothecary, in 1669, six gallons of wine was consumed, and three gallons at his child's burial. Finger rings were sometimes given to the mourners. Doctor Bentley, in his Diary, wrote, in 1787, as follows: "Mr. Edw. Norris shewed me a Ring belonging to the first Edward Norris & now held by the sixth for the seventh, a minor. It is of gold, enameled with a death's Head, with a posy *Live to Die*." This was probably a funeral ring.

CHAPTER XVII.

BELLINGHAM AND DENISON GRANTS



SEPTEMBER 6, 1638, the general court granted to Richard Bellingham seven hundred acres of land; and, viewed by Maj. William Hathorne and Capt. Richard Davenport, it was described as "on the head of Salem, to the northwest from the town, there being in it a hill, with an Indian plantation, and a pond, and about a hundred or one hundred and fifty acres of meadow," and it was confirmed by the court Nov. 5, 1639. 'Squire Bellingham, who was then living in Boston, May 28, 1659, being governor, moved that, in reference to this grant, as the town of Salem had taken a parcel of meadow belonging to the farm, pretending that it was within six miles from Salem meeting house, that the distance be measured, which the court ordered to have done. The result of the measurement, if it were made, is unknown. Governor Bellingham, for two hundred and fifty pounds, conveyed the estate to

Bray Wilkins

Bray Wilkins, husbandman, and John Gingell (Gingion), tailor, both of Lynn, March 9, 1659-60¹.

Wilkins erected a house, in which he lived, probably on the south side of the Fuller burying

place, across the road, in Middleton. Gingell also lived at Will's Hill as late as 1679. Wilkins' house was burned in the latter part of January, 1664; and he apparently built a new one on the westerly side of what is now Middleton Square².

John Gingell

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 2, leaf 17.

²BRAY WILKINS¹, born in 1610; planter; lived in Lynn from 1630 to 1660 and in Dorchester in 1633, according to Savage; and from 1661 in Salem; married Anna — before 1659; she was his wife in 1697; he died Jan. 1,

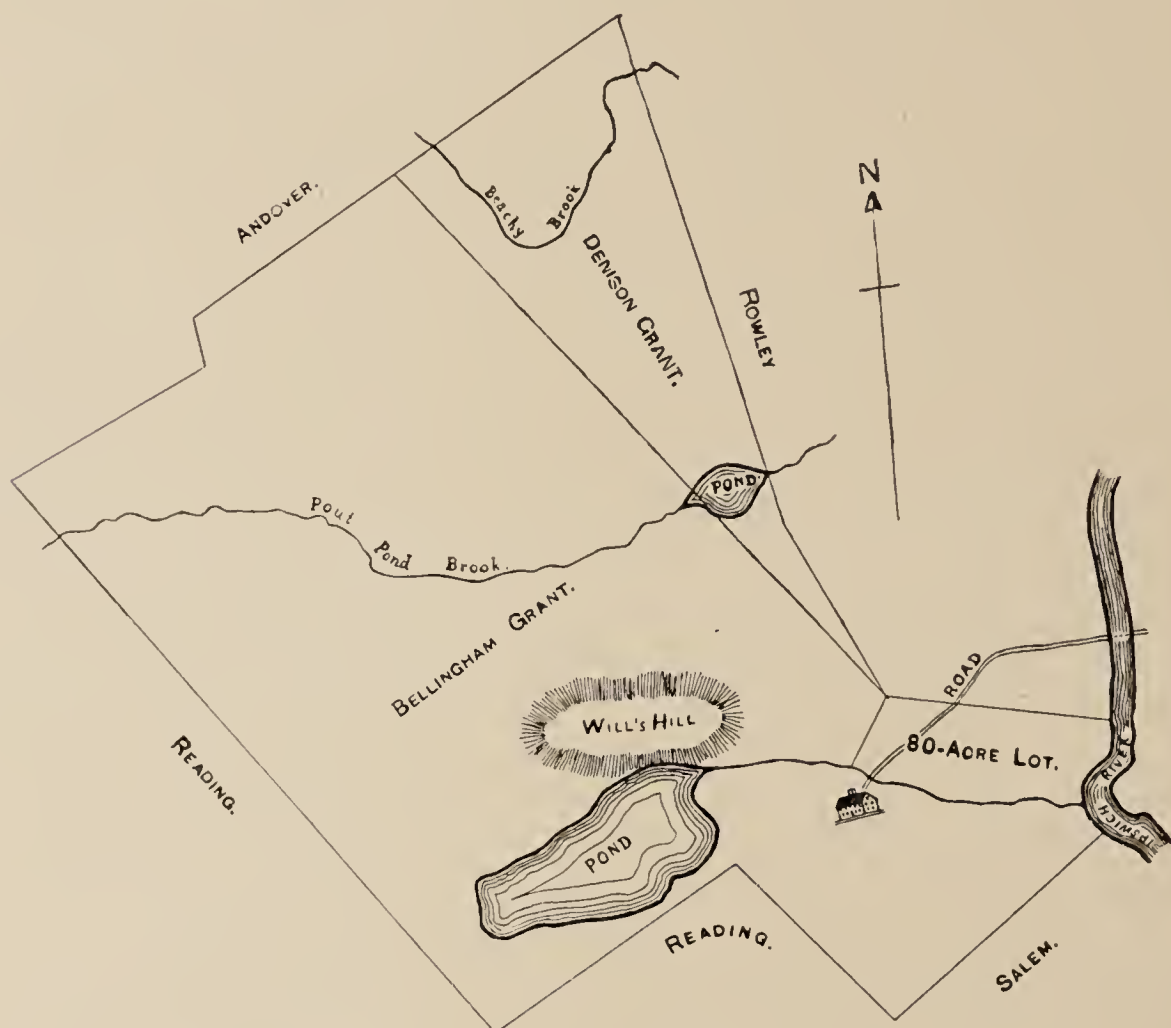
There was also granted to Maj.-Gen. Daniel Denison of Ipswich three hundred acres of land, adjoining the seven-hundred-

1701-2, aged ninety-one; children: 1. Samuel², born in 1636; died Dec. 20, 1688; 2. Henry²; 3. Benjamin²; 4. Thomas²; 5. Margaret²; married Philip Knight; 6. Lydia²; married John Nichols; 7. John².

HENRY WILKINS²; married Rebecca —; she died April 9, 1689, aged forty; children: 1. Rebecca³, baptized Jan. 4, 1684-5; married Philip Mackintire of Reading Feb. 20, 1694-5; 2. Daniel³, born about 1675; "bewitched to death" May 16, 1692, aged seventeen; 3. Elizabeth³, baptized Jan. 4, 1684-5; married — Carrill; 4. Henry³, baptized Jan. 4, 1684-5; 5. Aquila³, baptized Jan. 4, 1684-5; 6. Nehemiah³, baptized Aug. 12, 1683; 7. Susannah³, born Oct. 13, 1684; 8. Ebenezer³, born Jan. 5, 1688-9; married Mary (Bailey), widow of Daniel Wilkins April 24, 1730; had a child; 9. John³, baptized Jan. 14, 1686-7; 10. Ruth³, baptized July 13, 1690; died Dec. 14, 1695, aged six; 11. —³, baptized Aug. 17, 1690. BENJAMIN WILKINS²; married Priscilla Baxter June 3, 1677; died in the autumn of 1715; she survived him; children: 1. Priscilla³, born Feb. 24, 1677-8; died Oct. 24, 1690; 2. Benjamin³, born Dec. 3, 1679; 3. Anna³, born Oct. 31, 1681; married Ebenezer Foster; 4. Jonathan³, born Feb. 24, 1683; 5. Sarah³, born May 11, 1686; married Henry Wilkins; 6. Abigail³, born Sept. 12, 1688; married John Wilkins May 26, 1710; 7. Elizabeth³; married Daniel Roff of Concord Sept. 3, 1718; 8. Priscilla³, born April 21, 1691; living in 1715; 9. Daniel³, born June 28, 1693. THOMAS WILKINS²; husbandman; married Hannah Nichols May —, 1667; died in 1717; she survived him; children: 1. Hannah³, born Nov. 14, 1669; 2. Thomas³, born May 26, 1673; lived in Boxford; married Elizabeth Towne of Topsfield Dec. 19, 1694; died in 1726; she survived him; had children; 3. Bray³, born Nov. 13, 1678; 4. Joseph³, baptized July 20, 1690. 5. Isaac³, baptized July 20, 1690. JOHN WILKINS²; husbandman; lived in Salem Village; married, first, Lydia —; she died Jan. 27, 1688-9, aged twenty-two; married, second, Betty Southwick Aug. —, 1687; she was his wife in 1718; he died in 1723; children: 1. John³, born Jan. 20, 1688-9; 2. Esther³, born June 25, 1690; living in 1718; 3. Daniel³, born May 12, 1692; living in 1718; 4. Betty³, born Dec. 29, 1695; living in 1718; 5. Jonathan³, born May 6, 1697; 6. Lydia³, born Dec. 23, 1699; married Mark How of Boxford Dec. 20, 1725; 7. Mercy³, born March 13, 1701; married Benjamin Chevers Oct. 20, 1725; 8. David³, born March —, 1703-4; living in 1718; 9. Joseph³, baptized June 7, 1719; married Rebecca Yell (Bell?) Feb. 1, 1731-2; 10. Stephen³, baptized June 7, 1719; husbandman; lived in Middleton; married Hannah Curtis Aug. 24, 1732; died April 1, 1742; had children; 11. Solomon³, born about 1710; lived in Middleton; married Patience Lambert Oct. 29, 1730; had children.

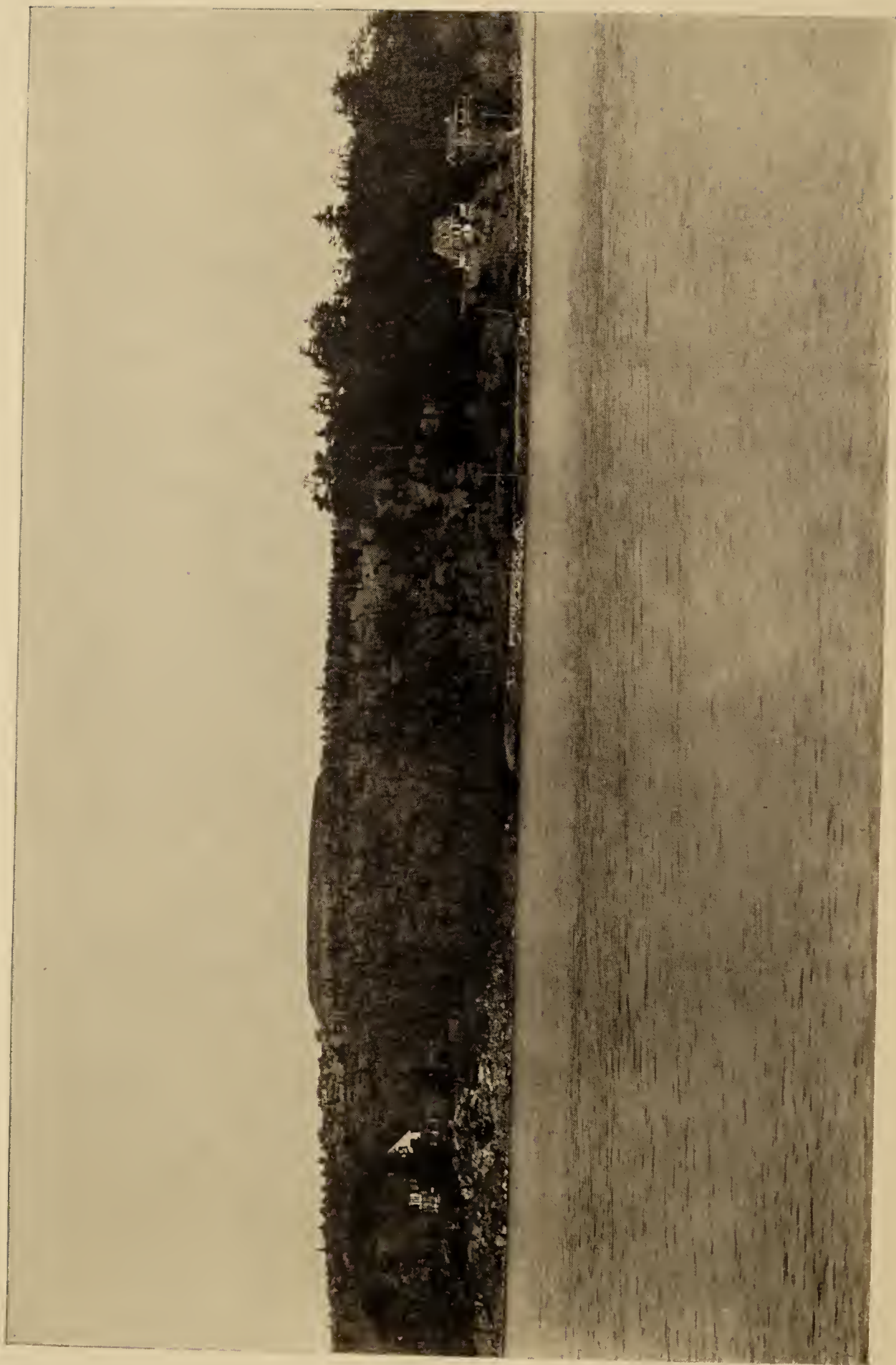
HENRY WILKINS³; husbandman; lived in Boxford and Middleton; married, first, Sarah Wilkins July —, 1703; second, Mary Lewis Oct. 22, 1718; children: 1. —⁴ (daughter), born May 27, 1704, in Boxford; 2. Sarah⁴, baptized June 23, 1706, in Boxford; married Isaac Nichols of Sutton Feb. 1, 1726-7; 3. Hannah⁴, born Jan. 4, 1708-9, in Boxford; 4. Abigail⁴, born Aug. 10, 1711; 5. Elizabeth⁴, born June 22, 1715; 6. Priscilla⁴, born July 11, 1720; 7. Ruth⁴, born July 9, 1724, in Middleton; 8. Henry⁴, born Sept. 23, 1735. AQUILA WILKINS³; husbandman; married Lydia Nichols July 12, 1704; died in Middleton Jan. 17, 1766; children: 1. Ebenezer⁴, baptized April 14, 1706; 2. —⁴, baptized Sept. 10, 1708; 3. Ruth⁴, baptized Sept. 11, 1726. NEHEMIAH WILKINS³; lived in Boxford; married, first, Elizabeth Guppy Dec. —, 1708; second, Hannah Wilkins Oct. 4, 1711; child: 1. Elizabeth⁴, baptized Oct. 31, 1714; married Jeremiah Towne Dec. 15, 1735. JOHN WILKINS³; husbandman; married Abigail Wilkins May 26, 1710; living in 1737; children: 1. —⁴ (son), baptized

acre grant made to Richard Bellingham, May 7, 1662. This was also conveyed to Bray Wilkins. The actual boundaries of these grants were not determined until, upon an order therefor, dated May 7, 1662, the day that the Denison grant was made, and the order included the layout of both grants. The report was made



BELLINGHAM AND DENISON GRANTS.

May 18, 1712; 2. —⁴, baptized April —, 1714. BENJAMIN WILKINS³; married Marjery Roff of Concord July 20, 1702; children: 1. Othniel⁴, baptized June 9, 1706; married Mary Veley (Tapley) Jan. 23, 1728-9; 2. Mary⁴, baptized Oct. 26, 1707; 3. Benjamin⁴, baptized Sept. 2, 1711; married Elizabeth Tapley Nov. 15, 1737; 4. Naomi⁴, baptized Nov. 1, 1713; married John Wilkins April 6, 1738. JONATHAN WILKINS³; husbandman; lived in Middleton; married Hannah Rolf (published Dec. 6, 1712); children: 1. Lois⁴, born April 26, 1714; 2. Lois⁴, baptized July 3, 1715; 3. —⁴ (daughter), born Jan. 13, 1717; 4. Jonathan⁴, born March 18, 1721; 5. Benjamin⁴, born March 1, 1724; 6. Daniel⁴, born March 8, 1727; 7. Asa⁴, born April 26, 1730. DANIEL WILKINS³; husbandman; lived in Middleton; married Mary Bailey (published Oct. 13, 1714); died in 1743; children: 1. Jonathan⁴, born Aug. 25, 1715; lived in Middleton; married Abigail Goodale Oct. 5, 1737; had children; 2. Mary⁴, born Feb. 25, 1718-9; 3. Elizabeth⁴, born Sept. 30, 1721; married Samuel Wilkins June 13, 1740; 4. Abigail⁴, baptized July 18, 1725; married William Cobb June 27, 1743; 5. Sarah⁴, baptized April 2, 1727; 6. Rachel⁴, baptized June 4, 1727; 7. Sarah⁴, baptized April 6, 1729; 8. Marcy⁴, born Feb. 26, 1730-1; 9. Priscilla⁴, baptized May 2, 1731; 10. Rachel⁴, baptized



THE POND AND HILL.

September 23rd¹ following. The Bellingham grant is therein thus described: "The first line runs from a white oak, marked R B, northwesterly to a rocky point, where a white oak is marked, and from thence by the southerly corner of Beachy meadow to a white oak, marked; the length about a mile and a quarter. The second line from the last marked white oak upon a west and by south point, about a mile to an oak marked R B. The third line from the said oak, upon a south and by east point, a mile and a quarter, to a tree marked on the southwest side of the pond, taking in a meadow of about twenty-five acres, lying without the said line, and adjoining to it towards the northerly end thereof. The fourth line from the last marked tree, upon an east and by north point, to the first white oak marked R B, in length one mile and quarter. Also, one hundred acres lying square in the plain before the dwelling house of Bray Wilkinson², beginning at the brook that runs into Price's meadow, and running in length down to a white oak marked, about one hundred and sixty rods, and in breadth, both ends, one hundred rods, to a tree, marked,

Sept. 16, 1733; 11. Daniel⁴, baptized March 16, 1735. BRAY WILKINS³; lived in Boxford in 1710 and then in Middleton; married Rebecca Knight of Topsfield Feb. 10, 1701-2; children: 1. Rebecca⁴, born May 20, 1702, in Boxford; 2. Rebecca⁴, born May 18, 1703; 3. Penelope⁴, born Nov. 18, 1703, in Boxford; 4. Penelope⁴, born Sept. 22, 1704; 5. Israel⁴, born Jan. 6, 1705-6, in Boxford; lived in Middleton; married Margaret Case July 18, 1726; had children; 6. Margaret⁴, baptized July 6, 1707; 7. Phineas⁴, born Dec. 26, 1708; Abner⁴, baptized Sept. —, 1711; married Emma Marble Dec. 29, 1737; 9. Mehitable⁴, born Sept. 6, 1711; 10. Ithamar⁴, born Sept. 15, 1712; married Lois — June 3, 1736; had a child; 11. Abigail⁴, born July 28, 1716; married Nathaniel Putnam Feb. 6, 1744; 12. Joshua⁴, born Aug. 26, 1718; lived in Middleton; had children; 13. Ichabod⁴, born July 7, 1720; lived in Middleton; married Mary Clark May 9, 1744; she died July 10, 1803; he died Feb. 27, 1804; had children. JOSEPH WILKINS³; husbandman; married first, Mary White Nov. 22, 1705; second, Margaret Nicholls July 8, 1708; living in Middleton in 1726; children: 1. Mary⁴, born Oct. 29, 1710; 2. Joseph⁴, born March 11, 1712-3; shopkeeper; married Abigail Burt July 20, 1736; had children; 3. Amos⁴, baptized Oct. 24, 1713; 4. Lydia⁴, born Sept. 17, 1715; 5. Elisha⁴, born April 2, 1718; lived in Middleton; married Lydia Nichols Oct. 4, 1738; had children; 6. Archelaus⁴, born June 23, 1721; lived in Southegan West; married Rachel Case Nov. 29, 1744; 7. Hannah⁴, born April 1, 1725; married Humphrey Case June 4, 1747; 8. Margaret⁴, born May 17, 1728. ISAAC WILKINS³; husbandman; married Anna (Wilkins), widow of Ebenezer Foster; children: 1. Timothy⁴, baptized July 3, 1709; married Anna Smith; had children; 2. Isaac⁴, baptized July 26, 1713; 3. Nehemiah⁴, baptized May 6, 1716; 4. Hannah⁴, baptized Aug. 16, 1719; 5. Susanna⁴, baptized July 21, 1724. JOHN WILKINS³; husbandman; married Mary Goodale (published Oct. 24, 1713); children: 1. Edward⁴, baptized Oct. 16, 1715; 2. Samuel⁴, born July 21, 1717; 3. Josiah⁴, born July 1, 1718; 4. John⁴, born Dec. 29, 1720; 5. Edward Nichols⁴, born Nov. 14, 1723.

¹Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume IV, part 2, pages 63 and 64.

²Bray Wilkins.

at either end; the lower or southeast angle being a pine tree, marked, the upper or northwest angle being oak, marked, standing near a great rock; provided, that part of the pine swamp that lieth within the said bounds shall be free and common for any to take off timber growing therein." The Denison grant is described as follows: "Imprimis eighty acres of upland in a long square, bounded on the northeast by John Putnam's land, on the southwest by a brook that runs out of a pond unto Price's meadow, on the northwest by the land of Bray Wilkinson, and on the southeast by Price's meadow. Also, one hundred and forty acres, beginning at a white oak, marked R B, the bounds between Bray Wilkinson and John Putnam and the former eighty acres, and from the said tree joining upon Bray Wilkinson in a straight line to a rocky point, where a white oak is marked, and from thence by the southerly corner of Beachy Meadow to a white oak, marked, at the northwesterly angle of Bray Wilkinson's farm, and so up to Andiver six miles bounds; also, from the said white oak, marked R B, upon a north and by west line adjoining to John Putnam's, to a forked white oak, marked, and so to the brook that runs by Beachy Meadow to Andiver six miles bounds. Also, eighty acres of woodland on the northeast side of the brook that runs by Beachy Meadow, beginning at a marked tree standing near the brook, by a swamp, and running north east and by east about two hundred rod to three white oaks marked, and then turning southward about thirty rod to that part of the brook where another brook falls into the same, and a great rock lies in the midst of the brook." These layouts were made by Maj. William Hathorne and Ens. Thomas Howlet, and confirmed Oct. 8, 1662. Thus the territory of Salem was extended northerly. These grants are now entirely within the town of Middleton.

Timothy Lindall¹, who was born about 1642, came from Duxbury to Salem, where he was allowed to be an inhabitant, Jan. 8,

Tim^o Lindall

1660-1. He became an extensive and successful merchant and a prominent and influential citizen. He lived next westerly of the East India Marine Museum on Essex Street, in Salem.

¹TIMOTHY LINDALL¹, son of James Lindall of Duxbury, married Mary Veren Feb. 7, 1672-3; she died in 1731; he died Jan. 6, 1698-9; she died, his widow, Jan. 6, 1731-2; children: 1. Mary², born April 7, 1674; married, first, Nathaniel Gedney; second, Thomas Phippen; 2. James², born Feb. 1, 1675-6; 3. Timothy², born Nov. 4, 1677; 4. Nathaniel², born Nov. 4, 1679; of Salem in 1703; probably lived in Bristol, Mass.; 5. Abigail², born Sept. 15, 1681; married Capt. Benjamin Pickman; 6. Sarah², born March 4, 1682-3; shopkeeper; married Capt. Benjamin Moreshed July 28, 1737; 7. Caleb², born Feb. 5, 1684; lived in the Parish of St. Lucia, Island of Barba-

Feb. 26, 1660-1, the selectmen confirmed a grant of one hundred acres of upland and ten acres of meadow to Richard Rayment; ten days later the town granted to John Patch forty acres of land on Cape Ann Side; and Mr. Jeremiah Hubbard requested some land.

Joseph Houlton¹, called Joseph Houghton, came to Salem as early as the spring of 1652, when he had land granted to him.

Joseph Holton

does, in 1715 and 1727; merchant; married Sarah —; died Nov. 13, 1751; she died, his widow, June 27, 1754; 8. Rachel², born Dec. 3, 1686; married, first, Thomas Barnard May 7, 1713; he died in 1715; married, second, Capt. Samuel Barnard of Deerfield May 29, 1723; 9. Veren², born Feb. 12, 1689-90; killed by the Indians at Haverhill Aug. 29, 1708.

DEA. JAMES LINDALL²; merchant; esquire; married, first, Elizabeth Corwine Dec. 15, 1702; she died May 19, 1706; married, second, Mary (Higginson), widow of Dr. Edward Weld May 3, 1708; he died May 10, 1753; she survived him, and was living in 1760; children: 1. Elizabeth³, born Sept. 29, 1703; married Edward Gray of Boston Sept. 13, 1739; 3. —³ (son), born Jan. 12, 1704; buried Jan. 13, 1704; 3. Mary³, born Dec. 14, 1705; lived in Charlestown, 1761-1767; died, unmarried, Jan. 22, 1776; 4. —³ (son), born April 25, 1709; died same day; 5. James³, born May 21, 1710; merchant; died Aug. 19, 1754; 6. Veren³, born May 14, 1711; died April 22, 1712; 7. Sarah³, born June 17, 1712; married Lawrence Lutwych of Boston May 6, 1736; 8. Abigail³, born June 16, 1713; married Rev. William Jenison May 15, 1730; 9. Rachel³, born Aug. 9, 1714; died Sept. 9, 1714; 10. Timothy³, born April 14, 1716; merchant; married, first, Elizabeth Gerrish Oct. 14, 1753; she died Aug. 25, 1756; married, second, widow Hannah Swasey June 18, 1763; he died in the summer of 1765; she married, third, Capt. John Bartoll of Marblehead Jan. 8, 1767.

HON. TIMOTHY LINDALL²; H. C., 1695; merchant; judge; representative, speaker, councilor; lived in Boston in 1714; married, first, Bethiah Kitchen May 27, 1714; she died June 30, 1720; married, second, Madam Mary Henchman of Lynn (published Dec. 6, 1749); died Oct. 25, 1760; she died, his widow, Feb. 8, 1767; children: 1. Bethiah³, born Sept. 6, 1716; died Sept. 20, 1716; 2. Bethiah³, born Nov. 17, 1717; died Nov. 23, 1717; 3. Mary³, born Oct. 20, 1718; died, unmarried, Dec. 31, 1740; 4. —³ (daughter), born June 23, 1720; died same day.

¹JOSEPH HOULTON² (Houghton and Holton) was born about 1621; was a servant of Richard Ingersoll about 1640; lived in Salem Village; married Sarah (Ingersoll), widow of William Haynes; died May 30, 1705; children: 1. Joseph², born in 1652; 2. Benjamin², born Feb. 14, 1657-8; 3. Elizabeth², born in 1660; married John Buxton; 4. Henry², born in 1662; 5. James², born in 1665; 6. John², born in 1667; cooper and weaver; married Mary Star Jan. 16, 1688; died in 1721; she married, second, John Rea Oct. 3, 1722; 7. Sarah², born in 1669; married — Needham.

JOSEPH HOULTON²; yeoman; lived in Salem Village; soldier in the Narraganset War; married Hannah Eborne; died in 1732; she died in 1743; children: 1. Joseph³, born Aug. 31, 1673; lived in Boston; married Susanna —; died in 1708; had a child; 2. Hannah³; married Joseph Fowls; 3. Sarah³, born March 4, 1688-9; married Ebenezer Fowls of Charlestown.

July 10, 1661, the general court commended to be kept "a solemn day of thanksgiving and returning praises unto our good God" for "the many favo's wherewith the Lord hath been pleased to compass us about for so many years past in this remote wilderness, and in special the gracious answer that he hath given us to

BENJAMIN HOULTON²; yeoman; married Sarah —; died Sept. 17, 1689; she married, secondly, Capt. Benjamin Putnam; child: 1. *Benjamin*³, born Jan. 14, 1689-90. HENRY HOULTON²; yeoman; married Abigail Flint March 4, 1688-9; died in 1746 or 1747; she died Feb. 28, 1758; children: 1. James³, born Jan. 20, 1689-90; married Ruth —; 2. *Timothy*³, born May 15, 1693; 3. Hannah³, born July 13, 1696; married Stephen Flint of Middleton (published Nov. 6, 1714); housewright; removed to Lynn; married Eunice Collins of Lynn Feb. 20, 1722; died in Marblehead May 14, 1732; 4. Ebenezer³, born April 11, 1699; 5. *Samuel*³, born April 6, 1703; 6. Abigail³, born May 6, 1705; died in infancy; 7. Abigail³, born June 22, 1708; married Jacob Fuller March 16, 1727-8; 8. Elizabeth³, born Sept. 1, 1712 (probably married Abraham Kemball of Wenham in 1729). JAMES HOULTON²; yeoman; married, first, Ruth Felton; second, Mary Linsey of Lynn Nov. 4, 1706; died in 1722; she married, secondly, William Stacey of Marblehead Aug. 22, 1723, and removed to Boston; children: 1. Mary³, born Sept. 11, 1707; married Ebenezer Proctor; 2. James³, born Jan. 16, 1708-9; married Hannah Houlton in 1730; died in 1731; no children; 3. Joseph³, born June 30, 1710-1; cordwainer; lived in Hopkinton and New Salem; married Rebecca Felton in 1731; had children; 4. Ruth³, born Jan. 24, 1712-3; married Samuel Johnson of Lynn; 5. Sarah³, born April 10, 1715; married David Felton; 6. John³, born March 7, 1716-7; captain; lived in Danvers; married Lydia Gott of Wenham Sept. 25, 1751; had children.

CAPT. BENJAMIN HOULTON³; yeoman; married, first, Lydia Leach July 13, 1708; second, Elizabeth (Putnam), widow of Jonathan Putnam Nov. 25, 1736; he died; she married, thirdly, Edward Carlton of Haverhill, N. H., Nov. 7, 1745; children: 1. Sarah⁴, baptized March —, 1709-10; married John Farrington of Andover Nov. 12, 1730; 2. Ruth⁴, baptized July 13, 1712; married Abraham Goodell; 3. Lydia⁴, baptized Sept. 2, 1716; 4. Benjamin⁴, born May 4, 1718; 5. Israel⁴, baptized March 19, 1720-1; 6. Elizabeth⁴, baptized July 7, 1723; 7. John⁴, born in 1726; 8. James⁴, baptized July 27, 1729; 9. Mary⁴, baptized Sept. 19, 1731; probably married Humphrey Holt Nov. 30, 1749. TIMOTHY HOULTON³; removed to Sutton in 1727; town clerk; married, first, Keziah Rea March 7, 1715-6; she died June 14, 1724; married, second, Mary —; children: 1. John⁴, born Sept. 19, 1717, in Salem; lived in Sutton; married Ann Rawson Oct. 1, 1747; died May 13, 1760; had children; 2. Timothy⁴, born Sept. 5, 1719, in Salem; lived in Sutton; married Susannah Putnam Feb. 24, 1742; had children; 3. Nathan⁴, born March 21, 1732, in Sutton; 4. Kezia⁴, born July 4, 1734, in Sutton; 5. Ebenezer⁴, born Oct. 7, 1736, in Sutton. SAMUEL HOULTON³; married, first, Anna Edwards of Wenham Jan. 22, 1728; she died Sept. 18, 1729; married, second, Hannah Gardner (published April 28, 1732); she died March 7, 1762; married, third, Mary —; he died Jan. 18, 1777; she survived him; children: 1. Anna⁴, born Sept. 4, 1729; married David Putnam (published April 17, 1745); 2. —⁴, born Feb. 14, 1734; died same day; 3. Lydia⁴, born Aug. 4, 1735; married Dr. Jonathan Prince; 4. Samuel⁴, born June 9, 1738; physician; member of congress and judge of probate court; lived in Danvers; married Mary Warner (published March 4, 1758); she died Aug. —, 1815; he died Jan. 2, 1816; had children; 5. John⁴, born April 6, 1745; died Nov. 6, 1745.

our late supplication and humbling of ourselves before him," and "in being preserved from contagious diseases & suitableness of the season this present spring, and continuance of the lives of so many of his aged servants of public use in church and commonwealth, even while he seemed to threaten us with so great and unparalleled loss in such juncture of time as this."

Aug. 26, 1661, the selectmen granted to Serg. John Porter the way upon Mr. Sharp's hill in consideration of the way which now goes on "this" side of the hill.

Sept. 7, 1661, John Croade, Thomas Hale, Nicholas Potter, John Corwine, William Woodcocke, Richard Harvey, Andrew Woodberry, Isaac Williams, James Rizing, Thomas West, Thomas Barnes and Richard Tidmarsh were required, as a jury of inquest, by a constable, to go the house of Samuel Beadle, in Salem, to see a dead child. They found the remains laid out on a chest or table; and upon inquiry as to how it came to its death, the parents answered that it was drowned in the well, and no contrary evidence appeared.

Lynnfield Street, in South Peabody, was laid out as a country highway between Salem and Reading, by John Porter and Nathaniel Putnam of Salem and Peter Palfrey and John Wesson of Reading, who were appointed March 25, 1659, and made their return June 24, 1660, as follows: Beginning at a place called the Butts in Salem bounds and so through a plain called Mr. Johnson's plain, then through a little plain between a great rocky hill and Mr. Gidny's meadow and through another little plain, leaving a brushy pond, called Dog Pond, on the lefthand, and so through a great plain, called Mr. Humphrey's plain, leaving Mr. Humphrey's pond on the righthand, and so to the then Lynn line. The Salem portion of the way was laid out four rods wide. The return was accepted by the Salem court Dec. 10, 1661¹.

Nov. 18, 1661, the town granted to John Horne a parcel of land, forty by eighteen feet, in the gut between the houses of William Lord, sr., and Hilliard Veren house, to satisfy him for want of land in his ten-acre lot; also, to Hugh Jones a parcel of land near John Southwick's; also, to William Mappor "so much land as the Inhabitants on Cape Ann Side shalbe Willing to give out of the Comon on the East fide of Bass River"; and, also, to John Green two acres of land where Abraham Warren lived on Ryall Side.

In the Salem court, Nov. 26, 1661, an assault case from Cape Ann Side was tried. The plaintiff was Osmond Trask and the defendant Roger Haskell. The trial is interesting only from its

¹See the two returns which were made, printed in the Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, volume II, page 333.

relation to Haskell's clay pit. This was by the side of the highway at Roger Haskell's hill¹. The road was measured and found to be two rods and five feet wide and it was four rods to the further end of the pit. Haskell said that Trask had taken away clay in a forcible manner to the damage of the highway. Jeffrey Massey, aged about seventy, Nicholas Woodbury, aged about forty, and William Haskell, aged about forty-two, testified that the clay pit in the lane near the house of Roger Haskell was within the bounds of twenty acres of land long since granted to William Woodbury and widow Browne. William Dodge saw Osmond Trask digging clay over against Roger Haskell's door. William Haskell and Robert Hebord testified that the old fence used to stand over part of the clay pit hole, and the four rods set out for the highway did not reach over the clay pit by six feet, etc. The defendant was surveyor and he ordered Trask to stop digging. The clay pit was already dangerous a year before. The pit was six feet deep and so near Haskell's door and gate that it was dangerous for his cattle and carts. Haskell had possessed the land thirteen or fourteen years, and claimed that the lane was not a highway.

Dec. 23, 1661, the town granted to Mr. Johnson two or three acres of upland for fencing in of his meadow at his farm in Brooksby; and Richard Leech a neck of land on Rial's Side which is encompassed by his salt marsh.

John, a negro belonging to Henry Bartholomew, was found dying from a gun wound, in December, of this year, and a jury of inquest was appointed, consisting of John Browne, Richard Prince, Walter Price, John Gedney, Daniel Rumbel, John Gardner, William Woodcocke, Nicholas Potter, Thomas Cromwell, Joseph Gardner, Robert Gray and Hilliard Veren, probably on the day he died or the next day, were sworn on the twenty-third, and on the same day returned their verdict, in which they state that they had "viewed the place where the negro was found lying and a gun lying by him, and heard the relation of several witnesses, that were called before he was quite dead, and viewing his body and finding where the shot went into his body being about or Just beneath his short ribs over his leaft side, and came partly through his shoulder blad behind, and being all agreed in our apprehentions, doe Judg . . . that he did willingly contrive and was the only acter in his owne death by shooting of the said Gun into his owne body."

Dec. 27, 1661, the selectmen rescinded a former grant of four acres of meadow to Nathaniel Felton, and instead he was now granted forty acres of upland on "the further" side of Ipswich River next to his meadow there bought of Joseph Pope; and

¹For the location and a plan of this lot, see *The Essex Antiquarian*, volume XI, page III.

John Bachelour was granted four acres of meadow with the pond near Mr. Blackleech's farm.

At this meeting, William Lake¹ and John Buttolph² were admitted inhabitants, and became prominent citizens.

William Lake

Jan. 2, 1661-2, was appointed by the general court "to be kept a day of solempne humilliation and supplication to the Lord for a thorough redresse, . . . It being obvious to all pious and serious persons amongst us that wee are called of God deeply to humble ourselves for the many and great unproffitablenes, neglect, and indisposednes to a full inquiry and practice of the order of the gospel; the great ignorance and inclination of the rising generation to vanity, profanes, and disobedience; the sinfull indulgence in family government; pride and excesse in apparell; inordinate love of the world and the things thereof; insensibleness of evill occurrences; and in speciall, God's suffering many enemies and underminers to multiply complaints against us to our soveraigne lord the king; the impetuous and restles intrusion of haereticks and enemies to the ways, worship, and ordinances of God; the cursed combination of Anti-christ and his adherents to ruine and trample upon all the sincere servants of God."³

Jan. 7, 1661-2, the selectmen ordered that a former grant of twenty acres of upland to Richard Adams be now entered.

Jan. 20, 1661-2, the selectmen admitted Mathew Price⁴, who came from Charlestown, for an inhabitant of the town, provided

¹William Lake was a set-work cooper; lived on the northwesterly corner of Washington and Federal streets; in 1664, he lived in Philip Cromwell's house; married Ann Stratton about August, 1661; died in 1679; she died in 1680; children: 1. Ann, born June 1, 1662; died June 10, 1662; 2. Abigail, born April 21, 1667; married ———; 3. Mary, born Feb. 1, 1668-9; married Lewis Hunt; 4. William, born March 12, 1674-5; probably died young.

²JOHN BUTTOLPH¹; leather dresser; lived in a house which formerly stood on the site of the Essex Institute; married Hannah Gardner Oct. 16, 1663; removed to Boston, where he lived in 1671; children: 1. John², born Sept. 11, 1664; died April 23, 1665; 2. Jonathan², born Sept. 9, 166-; 3. John², born Oct. 15, 1667.

JOHN BUTTOLPH² married Priscilla ———; he died May 10, 1713; she married, secondly, Simon Willard July 25, 1722; children: 1. John³, born July 1, 1688; lived in Boston; married Mehitable ———; had children; 2. Hannah³, born Dec. 9, 1689; married Nathaniel Osgood March 27, 1710; 3. Priscilla³, born July 31, 1692; married John Lansford Dec. 6, 1711; 4. Sarah³, born Jan. 20, 1693; married John Allen Nov. 18, 1713; 5. William³, born Sept. 7, 1695; died, unmarried, Sept. 23, 1720.

³Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume IV, part 2, page 34.

⁴Matthew Price was a tailor; married Elizabeth ——— before 1656; they were living in 1684; children: 1. Joseph, born in Charlestown March 23, 1656; 2. Sarah; married William Jamison of Charlestown Oct. 18, 1677; 3. Elizabeth; married John Edwards.

he purchased a house to dwell in; and Charles Turner, son of Lieutenant Turner of Boston, was also received an inhabitant.

Matthew Prince

Feb. 18, 1661-2, the selectmen granted to Anthony Buxton twenty acres of land. Giles Corey, in consideration of some of his land having been made use of for a highway, was granted a small strip of about two acres of land near that which was Roger Morey's meadow, and also a spot or hole of meadow near Henry Phelps' house and near his own meadow.

March 3, 1661-2, the town ordered "that the land lying along the high way against Thomas Goldthwaite's and given to Hugh Jones and by him sold to William Robinson shall belong to William Robinson and the widow Cooke from the way to the brook." The town also "Granted to John Buttolf to set fats to Dress lether a parcel of land not exceeding a pole and half square in the swamp adjoining to Mr. Curwin's land that was sometime Mr. Peter's." Three days later, this piece of land was laid out "from the frame set up by Thomas Tuck and so to run over the run and to join to Mr. Curwen's fence." The town also granted to John Beckett a parcel of land, not exceeding half an acre, next Richard Hollingsworth's fence. The town also laid out to Henry West¹.

¹Thomas West and Henry West were brothers and lived in Salem as early as 1658.

Thomas West was a planter; married, first, Phebe Waters Oct. 11, 1658; she died April 16, 1674; married, second, Mary Tenne Oct. 14, 1674; he was living in 1701; children: 1. Samuel, born March 23, 1659-60; died in the summer of 1685; 2. Joseph, born Sept. 3, 1663; 3. Benjamin, born Oct. 1, 1665; "living at the Southward" in 1701; 4. John, born Sept. 9, 1667; 5. Mary, born Jan. 31, 1675-6; 6. Elizabeth, baptized July 1, 1677.

HENRY WEST¹; sadler; married Elizabeth Merriam of Concord Sept. 7, 1664; she died Aug. 26, 1691; he died in 1703; children: 1. Elizabeth², born June 22, 1665; 2. Samuel², born Jan. 25, 1666-7; 3. Susanna², born Nov. 16, 1668; unmarried in 1704; 4. Henry², born Jan. 14, 1670; 5. Elizabeth², born March 4, 1672; unmarried in 1704; 6. Mary², born Feb. 22, 1675; married Richard Prince.

SAMUEL WEST²; sadler; married Mary Poor Jan. 29, 1690; she was living in 1728; he died in 1732; children: 1. Samuel³, born Nov. 21, 1691; 2. Elizabeth³, born Sept. 11, 1693; 3. John³, born May —, 1695; 4. Jonathan³, born Sept. 2, 1697; died young; 5. Daniel³, born April 22, 1699; 6. Nathaniel³, baptized Sept. 6, 1702; 7. Mary³, baptized April 16, 1704; 8. Elizabeth³, baptized Nov. 10, 1706; died, unmarried, Aug. —, 1787; 9. Jonathan³, baptized July 16, 1710. HENRY WEST²; shoemaker and sadler; married, first, Judith Poor Feb. 2, 1704-5; she died Jan. 27, 1715; married, second, Susanna Phippen Dec. 2, 1718; married, third, Ruth, widow of Benjamin Phippen Dec. 22, 1726; he died Dec. 24, 1745; children: 1. John³, born Jan. 6, 1705-6; fisherman; married Margaret Ward March 19, 1730-1; they were both living in 1760; 2. Henry³, born Aug. 13, 1708; 3. Elizabeth³, born Nov. 10, 1710; 4. Mary³, born Oct. 17, 1712; 5. Judith³, born Jan. 23, 1714-5; died Aug. 22, 1715.

on the north side of Thomas Tuck's frame a plot to build a house

SAMUEL WEST³; sadler; married Mary Gale Nov. 25, 1714; she survived him and was dead in 1730-1; children: 1. Mary⁴, baptized Sept. 18, 1715; died, unmarried, Feb. —, 1803; 2. Mehitabel⁴, baptized Oct. 27, 1717; died young; 3. Elizabeth⁴, baptized Dec. 13, 1719; married, first, William Stacey Aug. 17, 1739; second, Jonathan Ashby Dec. 7, 1752; 4. Samuel⁴, baptized June 20, 1722; 5. Mehitabel⁴, baptized Oct. 25, 1724; 6. Sarah⁴, baptized March 19, 1727; 7. William⁴, baptized May 12, 1728; 8. Benjamin⁴, baptized Feb. 14, 1730-1. JOHN WEST³; sadler; married Mary Dean April 28, 1720; she was his wife in 1739; he died Feb. 21, 1751; children: 1. Susanna⁴, baptized Aug. 12, 1722; 2. Sarah⁴, baptized March 15, 1724; died young; 3. John⁴, baptized Sept. 5, 1725; 4. Mary⁴, baptized March 12, 1727; 5. George⁴, baptized April 27, 1729; 6. Sarah⁴, baptized Aug. 8, 1731; married Benjamin Peters Nov. 16, 1752; 7. Benjamin⁴, baptized Jan. 14, 1738-9. DANIEL WEST³; sadler; married widow Elizabeth (Bickford?) Hauker Nov. 19, 1744; died Jan. 3, 1748-9; she survived him; children: 1. Mary⁴, baptized May 18, 1746; married John West Feb. 6, 1766; 2. Daniel⁴, baptized April 3, 1748; housewright; married, first, Ruth Oliver July 12, 1770; married, second, Sarah Burgess Oct. 23, 1796.

SAMUEL WEST⁴; mariner; married Mary Massey Oct. 8, 1747; died in May, 1774; she was his widow in 1791; children: 1. Sarah⁵, baptized Jan. —, 1748-9; 2. Samuel Massey⁵, baptized Dec. 16, 1750; 3. Martha⁴, baptized Jan. 21, 1753; married Alexander Walker April 16, 1770; 4. Mary⁴, baptized Feb. 27, 1757; married Caleb Smith (published Oct. 5, 1777); 5. Benjamin⁵; 6. Abigail⁶, baptized Aug. 26, 1764. WILLIAM WEST⁴; distiller and merchant; married Mary Bickford Nov. 1, 1750; died at sea, by drowning, Aug. 17, 1803; she died Sept. 15, 1813; children: 1. William⁵, born Dec. 3, 1751; died at sea March —, 1788; 2. Sally⁵, born Feb. 8, 1754; unmarried in 1801; 3. Mehitabel⁵, born Feb. 8, 1754; 4. Benjamin⁵, baptized Feb. 9, 1755; lived in Salem, baker, in 1788; 5. Nathaniel⁵, born Jan. 31, 1756; 6. Ebenezer⁵, born Aug. 17, 1758; 7. Edward⁴, born Aug. 22, 1760; mariner; lived in Salem in 1791; 8. Thomas⁵, born Jan. 3, 1762; mariner; lived in Salem in 1788; 9. John⁵, born Sept. 6, 1764; 10. Mary², born Jan. 3, 1769; died, unmarried, April 15, 1813; 11. Sarah⁵, born Feb. 16, 1772; married John Gardner. CAPT. GEORGE WEST⁴; fisherman; married, first, Abigail Cook April 28, 1751; she was living in 1775; married, second, Alice Whittemore (published Nov. 23, 1782); he died March —, 1802; children: 1. Abigail⁵, baptized June 6, 1756; 2. George⁵, baptized June 6, 1756; 3. John⁴, baptized May 22, 1757; 4. John⁵, baptized June 24, 1759; 5. Benjamin⁵, baptized Aug. 5, 1764; 6. Sarah⁵, baptized Aug. 18, 1765 (Sally married Thomas Tuck, published Feb. 17, 1785); 7. Margaret⁵, baptized June 12, 1768; died young; 8. Margaret⁵, baptized Aug. 26, 1770; married Jacob Townsend Aug. 24, 1791; 9. Mehitabel⁵, baptized Aug. 16, 1772. CAPT. BENJAMIN WEST⁴; mariner and merchant; married Abigail Phippen Aug. 9, 1762; she died Dec. —, 1798; he died March 22, 1809; children: 1. Elizabeth⁵, baptized Sept. 29, 1765, at two years of age; died, unmarried, Feb. 3, 1855; 2. Susanna⁵, baptized Sept. 29, 1765; died Sept. 1, 1787; 3. Benjamin⁵, baptized July 31, 1768; merchant; died July 14, 1825; 4. Thomas⁵, born about 1778; 5. Mary⁵; died Nov. —, 1798.

SAMUEL MASSEY WEST⁵; mariner; married Mary Young (published Sept. 8, 1773); he was dead in the spring of 1801; children: 1. Patty⁶, born about 1782; 2. Samuel⁶, born about 1785; 3. John⁶, born about 1787; died Feb. 1, 1821; 4. Nancy⁶, born about 1787; 5. Abigail⁶, born about 1790; living in 1801. CAPT. NATHANIEL WEST⁵; master mariner; commanded a privateer in the Revolution; merchant; married, first, Elizabeth Derby May 23, 1783; she died March 19, 1814; married, second, widow Julia Houghton of

of two rod in length and twenty foot in breadth at one end and eighteen foot the other end."

William Woodcock¹ lived in Salem in 1660, and was the first apothecary here. He was called "doctor", and among his personal

Andover June 25, 1816; she died March 11, 1844; he died Dec. 19, 1851, aged ninety-five; children: 1. Henry⁶, born June 27, 1785; died in 1810; 2. Martha Derby⁶, born Feb. 17, 1787; 3. Nathaniel⁶, born Nov. 29, 1788; 4. Elizabeth⁶, born Oct. 19, 1790; married Capt. Edward Lander Oct. 19, 1813; 5. Edward Gibaut⁶, born April 7, 1794; died aboard Hercules, at Island of Timor, Nov. 20, 1818; 6. Sarah Derby⁶, born Dec. 21, 1797; died April 11, 1819; 7. Richard⁶, born Jan. 23, 1818. GEORGE WEST⁶; fisherman; married Margaret Tuck (published Dec. 16, 1775); drowned on a voyage to North Carolina in January, 1789; she married, secondly, John Coats Jan. 31, 1792; children: 1. George⁶, baptized Aug. 25, 1776; 2. Betsey⁶, baptized Aug. 16, 1778; died in Hamilton Dec. —, 1816; 3. Samuel Symonds⁶, baptized Jan. 26, 1783; 4. Benjamin⁶, born Aug. —, 1787; died Feb. 2, 1847; 5. Nabby⁶, baptized April 5, 1789. CAPT. THOMAS WEST⁵; master mariner; married Elizabeth Moseley April 5, 1807; died Jan. 24, 1849; she died, his widow, Feb. 25, 1864; children: 1. Abigail Phippen⁶, born July 17, 1808; married Richard Gardner Nov. 25, 1835; 2. Elizabeth M.⁶, born Sept. 1, 1810; died Dec. 14, 1825; 3. Susan⁶, born Aug. 16, 1812; married John Rust of Louisville, Ky., Aug. 27, 1840; 4. Thomas Barnard⁶, born May 21, 1815; principal of Beverly Academy; died Oct. 8, 1842; 5. Benjamin⁶, born June 15, 1818; living in 1849; 6. Martha Moseley⁶, born April 7, 1821; married James Emerton; 7. George Eden⁶, born April 19, 1823; lived in Worcester in 1862; 8. Elizabeth M.⁶, born Sept. 19, 1831; unmarried in 1849.

NATHANIEL WEST⁶; removed to Indianapolis, Ind.; state senator; married Mary Bowles White of Beverly Aug. 4, 1811; died Sept. 7, 1843; children: 1. Henry⁷, born Aug. 22, 1812; 2. Nathaniel⁷, born Oct. 22, 1814; 3. William Henry⁷, baptized Oct. 1, 1815; 4. —⁷ (daughter), born March 21, 1816; 5. Mary Elizabeth⁷, born May 15, 1817; 6. George Edward⁷, born Nov. 25, 1819; lived in Indianapolis; trader; married Sarah E. Whittridge Oct. 13, 1845; 7. Francis⁷, born Aug. 13, 1822; 8. Sarah Derby⁷, born Sept. 4, 1825; 9. Martha⁷, born Jan. 11, 1829. RICHARD WEST⁷; merchant; married Dorcas H. Cleveland Sept. 15, 1841; children: 1. —⁷, born March 13, 1844; 2. Julia⁷, born Jan. 5, 1846. GEORGE WEST⁶; merchant; married Deborah Ayers April 1, 1810; died April 14, 1844; she died, his widow, March 29, 1856; children: 1. George⁷, born May 29, 1810; 2. John A.⁷, born about 1812; merchant; died at Somerville, Mass., unmarried, June 15, 1858; 3. Samuel⁷, merchant; living in 1878; 4. Caroline D.⁷; of Salem, unmarried, in 1878; 5. Eliza Ann⁷, born Jan. 11, 1817; died March 3, 1821; 6. Benjamin A.⁷, born March 29, 1820; 7. Eliza Ann⁷, born in 1823; died, unmarried, July 25, 1848.

GEORGE WEST⁷; merchant; married, first, Mary Endicott Dec. 8, 1812; second, Mary Webb; she died Jan. 2, 1844; he died June 24, 1852; child: 1. George W.⁸, born May 17, 1850. BENJAMIN A. WEST⁷; merchant; married Nancy B. Downing Jan. 14, 1852; died at Pleasantville, N. Y., Aug. 3, 1877; she died, his widow, March 31, 1883; children: 1. Annie D.⁸; married Robert W. Willson of New Haven, Conn., Dec. 14, 1881; 2. George⁸, born June 2, 1855; married Sophie C. Harris April 18, 1883; 3. Arthur Webster⁸, born Aug. 26, 1861; president of the Naumkeag Trust Company and Salem Hospital; married Emily C. Fessenden April 13, 1886; died April 20, 1925.

¹William Woodcock married Hannah —; and the following-named children are recorded as having been born in Salem (a child died here about the time Mr. Woodcock died): 1. Hannah, born June 7, 1663; died July 7, 1667; 2. Susanna, born Dec. 17, 1664; died a few days later; 3. William, born Oct. 12, 1666; died March 21, 1667.



WOODCOCK HOUSE

estate was a cornet ("curnett")—a scarf anciently worn by physicians, indicative of their profession. On land of Edmond Batter, at about that date, he erected a large dwelling house which is still standing on its original site at 274 Essex Street. This was the first house erected on either side of the street between Washington and North streets, except houses on the corners of those streets. About 1735, Timothy Orne, who had lately bought the house and land, added to the house, building out the front to the sidewalk and making a gable on the street at the western end by raising the roof in front. The leanto must have been added much later, as its frame is of soft sawn lumber. The main timbers are of oak, a foot square, and the thick planks were hewn from the primitive logs. The attic shows a unique construction of the ridge plank. Mr. Woodcock died June 16, 1669, having never received a deed of the land from Mr. Batter. Mr. Batter gave a deed of it to Daniel Andrew of Salem, a brick-layer, Dec. 13, 1669. Sept. 17, 1670, the widow of Mr. Woodcock released her interest in the property to the administrators of the estate of Mr. Woodcock, and, Feb. 18, 1672-3, the administrators conveyed to Mr. Andrew the house, household goods, clothing, physic, drugs, vessels, pots, horse, etc.

In a letter to the Ipswich court, Rev. John Higginson said that Mr. Woodcock "died in horror, complaining of the snare of company and drinking."

Mr. Woodcock was the first apothecary in Salem, and in the inventory of his estate is listed a small still and another still, four pair broken scales, chest of drawers, box of drawers, a mortar and

an old broken mortar, two glass bottles, gallipots in the shop, in which the ointments were kept, and "apotticharies drugs."

Mr. Woodcock was licensed to distill strong water for a year and sell by retail, at Ipswich court, March 25, 1662. This license was granted with the understanding that he should sell to none but masters of families of good repute, nor sell after sunset, and to keep a record of sales, as to persons, times and quantities. His license was renewed for retailing strong water for one year ensuing Nov. 24, 1663, and for 1665 to 1667.

At the same meeting, John Clifford¹ and William Segrave were admitted as inhabitants, provided they brought a certificate from some magistrate that they were allowed to be inhabitants in this jurisdiction. These young men from Boston were allowed to be inhabitants Feb. 15, 1663-4.

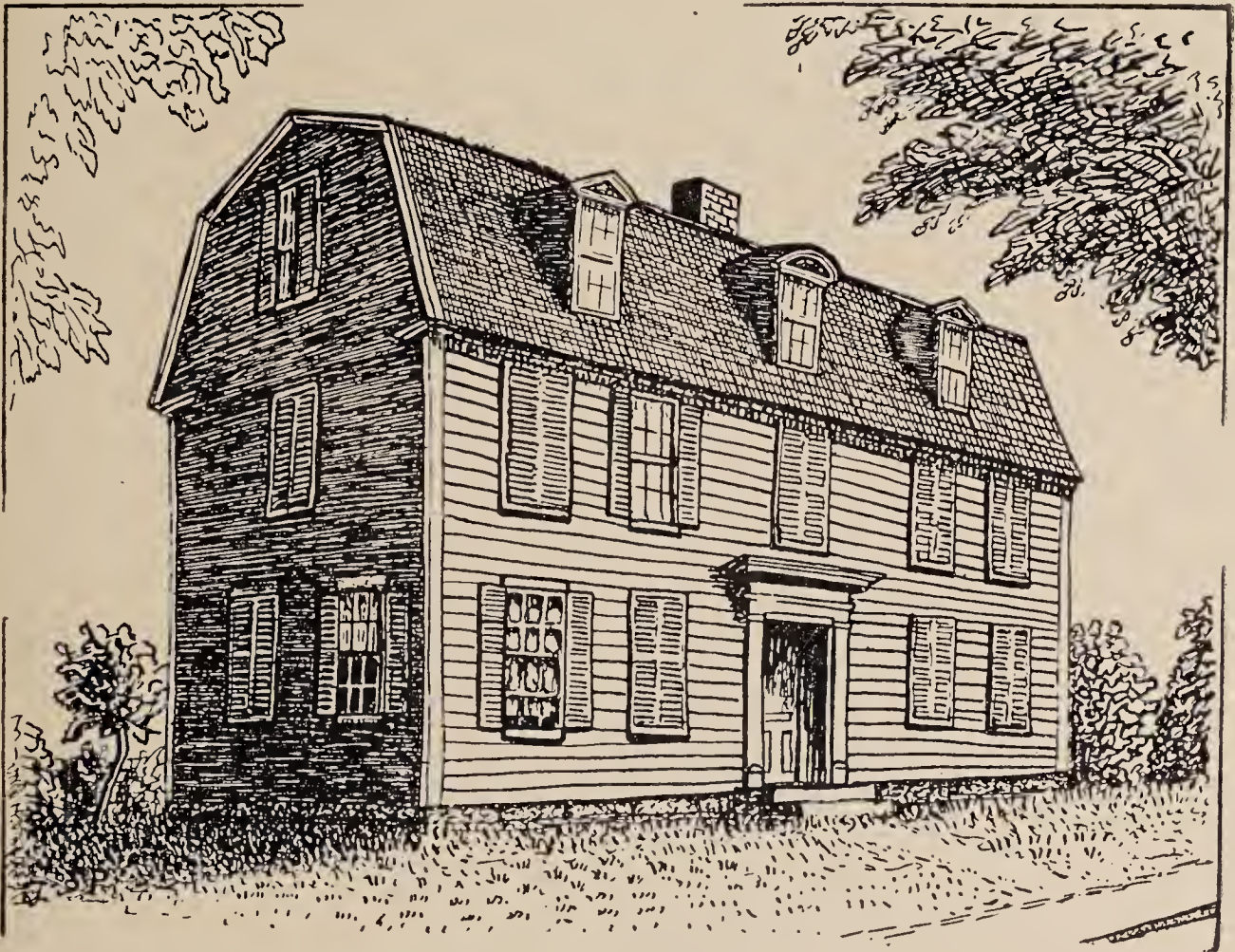
John Balch, son of the immigrant of that name, was drowned in North River in January, 1661-2. A jury of inquest, warned by a constable, consisting of Henry Bartholmew, Jefferie Massey, Richard Prince, Hillyard Veren, Thomas Cromwell, Isaac Williams, Zebulon Hill, William Curtis, John Hill, John Knight, Samuel Archer and Thomas Robbins, probably on the day of the drowning or the next day, were sworn Jan. 16, 1661-2, and, on the same day, returned their verdict, in which they stated that "said Balch beinge constrayned to leave the Canow in which he was bound over the river at Salem ferrie, by reason of the violence of the winde and wave and Indeavoringe to retorne againe to the shore died by the extremitie of the cold with the violence of the winde the rage of the sea and so perished in the water."² He left a widow and a young child, the latter dying soon after.



PLAN OF HOUSE LOTS.

¹John Clifford, born about 1630; rope maker; lived in a house which stood in the middle of Derby Street, on the western side of English Street; removed to Lynn after 1680, and was of Lynn in 1696; married Elizabeth —; died June 17, 1698.

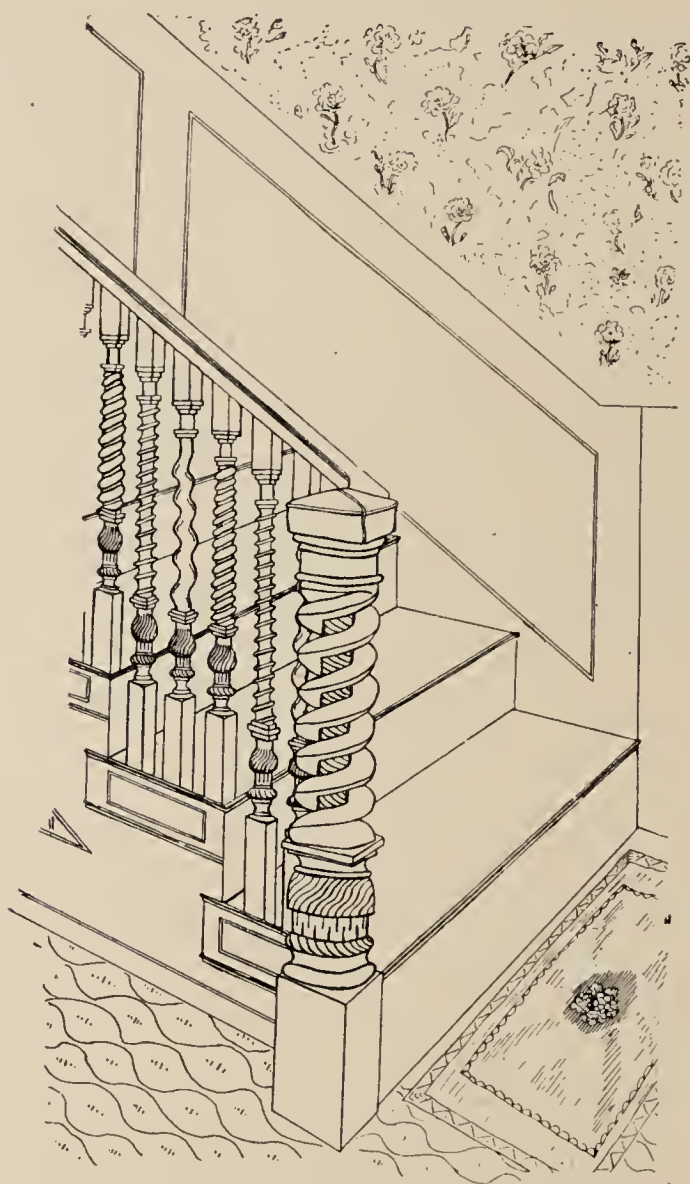
²In volume I, page 84, it is stated, through a typographical error, that John Balch was "divorced June 16, 1662," when it should have read, "drowned in January, 1661-2."



CHRISTOPHER BABBIDGE HOUSE.

June 6, 1662, the selectmen laid out into lots, according to the order of the town, the land lying between Essex Street and the creek leading from the common to Collin's Cove, and sold them for five pounds each. The lots were laid out as shown by the opposite plan, and granted as follows: 1. This lot was granted to John Robinson, the tailor, who was then living at Edward Woolan's, Aug. 7, 1672. He built a dwelling house thereon and lived there. 2. This lot was probably granted to George Gardner Jan. 27, 1662-3. 3. This lot was probably granted to Joseph Porter Aug. 26, 1665. 4. This lot was probably granted to Christopher Babbidge before 1683, when he owned it, having erected a house, in which he lived. This house was one of the best in the neighborhood, and the staircase is still in use in that section of the house which remains upon the original site. A picture of the house as it was built is given above, and a view of the staircase is inserted to show the ancient newel post and balusters, all of which are beautifully carved. Mr. Babbidge died about 1711, and his son Christopher succeeded him on the place. In 1717, the building committee of the East or Second Church met here and considered the plans of its first meeting house, which was built on the opposite side of the street. Mr. Babbidge died in

1755, and the administratrix of his estate conveyed the land and buildings to Richard Derby, the merchant, Nov. 8, 1757. Mr. Derby died in 1783, having devised to his daughter Mary Crowninshield this "House in which she lately dwelt now occupied by Joseph Moses." Mrs. Crowninshield conveyed the estate to James Cheever, a merchant, Aug. 24, 1799. Mr. Cheever died Sept. 23,



STAIRCASE IN BABBIDGE HOUSE.

1839; and his children conveyed the buildings and land to Phineas R. Weston June 1, 1840. In 1859, Mr. Weston cut off the eastern end of the house and moved it to Grant Street, where it still stands. Mr. Weston's family conveyed the remainder of the house and the land to Charles Bowker July 21, 1885, and Mr. Bowker lived there until his decease. 5. This lot was granted to John Mascoll June 6, 1662; and he built a house upon it. 6. This lot was granted to Robert Lemon June 6, 1662; and he immediately erected a house upon it. 7. This lot was granted to widow Hollingworth June 6, 1662; and a small dwelling house was built upon it.

8. This lot was granted to John Williams June 6, 1662; and he immediately erected a house upon it. 9. This lot was granted to Nicholas Bartlett before 1667. He immediately built a house upon it, and lived there. 10. This lot was granted to Matthew Wood in 1667; and he built a house on it that year. This house had only one room upon a floor, and the chimney and entrance were at the eastern end. It was taken down in March, 1789. 11. This lot was owned by George Hodges in 1667, when a house was standing upon it. 12. This lot was granted to Richard Roberts, a tailor, in May, 1673, and he built a small cottage upon it. Between lots eight and nine, the lane leading to the cove was left very wide; and the western two-thirds of it was granted at a town meeting to Jeremiah Butman March 14, 1672-3. This way, which is now called Emerton Street, was thus left very narrow. The houses erected on the five lots first granted were the first houses built on that side of Essex Street, below St. Peter Street, except the ancient Downing house which occupied the site of the Essex Institute. The dotted lines on the plan indicate the rear limits of each lot. The space between those lines and the ancient highway were encroachments upon the common land. March 17, 1692-3, the town voted that the encroachments should be paid for; and also that the owners should keep open the creek that the tide water might freely pass and not annoy the inhabitants who lived farther up the street in the low swampy ground, that is, to the Hawthorne Hotel. When the common land on the north side of the creek, through which Forrester Street now runs, was granted to the owners of the adjoining lots on Essex Street, in 1795, a condition was inserted in each deed that the common shore should be forever kept open at the expense of the grantees. Between the lots as occupied and the creek was the original highway in that section, probably before Essex Street was laid out, over the lot next westerly of Emerton Street, being a part of the way on that side of the ridge originally leading to the Neck. The creek was the outlet for the ponds and swamp which now constitute the common. It was still open in 1862, and probably later.

Oct. 8, 1662, the general court confirmed the election of the officers by the troopers of Salem, Lynn, etc., namely: for captain, George Corwine; for lieutenant, Thomas Putnam; and for cornet, Walter Price.

The selectmen were desired, Oct. 8, 1662, to petition the general court for the grant of Penacook ("pennie Cook") as a plantation, and so engage its planting. A year later (Oct. 21, 1663), the court granted the request,—a plantation at Penicook of four miles square, provided the town people "erect a village there with a minister within four years.

John Milk¹ was in Salem in 1662, being a young man, at first a chimney sweep, and subsequently a herdsman. He lived in a house he had built midway of what is now Federal Street, opposite the Tabernacle meeting house.

Nov. 5, 1662, was appointed by the general court to be kept as a day of thanksgiving, the Lord "having graciously answered our publicke prayers in sparing such a part of the fruites of the earth, whereby man and beast may be sustained, . . . also the safe and speedy returne of our publicke messengers sent for England, together with the continuance of the mercies of peace, liberties, and the gospel."

The Salem court granted a license to John Croad to sell strong waters at retail Nov. 25, 1662, and he was licensed as late as 1667.

Dec. 3, 1662, was appointed by the general court as "a solem day of fasting and prayer," for the affliction and low estate of the cause and people of God universally, with the prevailing power of Antichrist over the Reformed churches beyond the seas, together with some publicke rebukes of God among ourselves."

Dec. 17, 1662, the selectmen granted to Henry Keny thirty acres of land, and six days later ordered that the land between that of Richard Hutchinson and Nathaniel Putnam, formerly granted to John Putnam, sr., should be Hutchinson's in satisfaction for ways which were laid out through his land.

Jan. 13, 1662-3, the selectmen granted to Serg. George Gardner a lot next to the land that runneth to his house by those lots already laid out and of the same proportion, he paying five pounds as others have done; to George Hodges a lot below Goodman Wollans, of the proportions of those lots already laid out, paying five pounds; and to Job Swinerton, jr., a parcel of land, if not over ten acres, lying between Robert Goodell's and his father Swinerton's.

Two weeks from that day, at a meeting of the selectmen, Thomas Pickton exchanged the lot formerly granted to him on Cape Ann Side for the same quantity of land near Long Hill on the north and Bald Hill on the southeast.

At this meeting of the selectmen, it was also "ordered that all the inhabitants within the town of Salem shall sweep or cause their chimneys to be swept wherein they usually make fire once every month from the beginning of the eighth month to the end of the first month and once in two months from the first of second

¹John Milk married Sarah Weston April 3, 1665; she was living in 1688; he died in the autum of 1689; children: 1. John, born Jan. 8, 1668-9; married Elizabeth Hempfield, at Marblehead, Aug. 20, 1689; 2. Mary, born Nov. 22, 1670; living in 1688.

month to the last of the seventh month on the penaltie of twelve pence a time if any shall neglect the same to be paid to the use of the informer and for any that will have their chimnies swept John Milke is chosen and apointed for this year insuinge to be the common chimney sweeper and is to be paid four pence for every chimney swept if it be paid in money wheat or butter and if in other pay six pence a chimney; provided that it is in the liberty of any to sweep their own chimney or to employ any other as they see cause; and it is further ordered that if any chimney through neglect of sweeping should catch on fire so that it flame out at the top of the chimney the owner of the chimney should forfeit ten shillings to the use of the town."

Two months later, at a meeting of the selectmen, Lt. Thomas Gardner requested the grant of about fourteen acres of land adjoining the land of Henry Phelps.

Widow Dennis was supported by the town from 1658 to 1664.

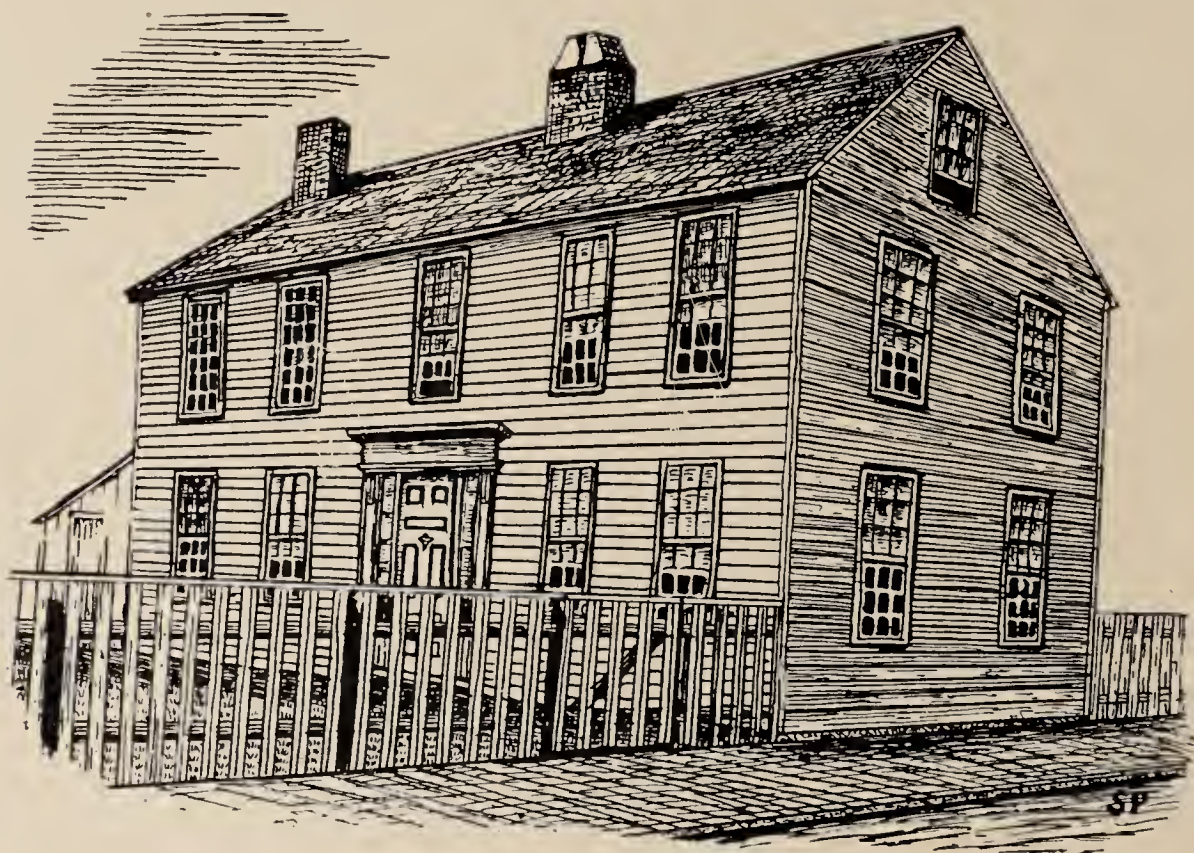
March 24, 1662-3, the selectmen admitted Thomas Longbottom as an inhabitant of the town. At about the same time, there came to Salem Christopher Babbidge¹, a tailor, who had *Christopher Babbidge* been taught his trade by George Marks of his native parish of Totness.

¹CHRISTOPHER BABBIDGE¹ was son of Roger and Hester Babbidge of Totness, Devonshire, England, came to New England in 1661 in the ship Nathaniel, and settled in Salem in or before 1663; tailor; married, first, Agnes Triggs of Totness, and she came to America with him; she died in Salem, Nov. 17, 1667; married, second, Hannah (Jewett), widow of John Carleton of Rowley, Oct. 5, 1674; she was living in 1706, and he in 1711; children: 1. Ruth², born March 21, 1663; 2. John², born April 15, 1666; died Jan. 13, 1688; 3. Hannah² born July 15, 1675; died May 6, 1698; 4. Mary², born March 7, 1676-7 (baptized Annie); 5. Christopher², born Nov. 11, 1678; 6. Richard², born Oct. 1, 1680; died March —, 1680-1; 7. Richard², born July 14, 1682; died Oct. 1, 1683; 8. Nehemiah², born March 25, 1684; died Dec. 24, 1685.

CHRISTOPHER BABBIDGE²; cordwainer; married Lydia Marston Dec. 6, 1705; she was living in 1726; he died in 1755; children: 1. James³ (probably his son), born in 1706; published to Mary Shaddock of Boston March 16, 1727-8, but John Carter forbade the banns, and he married Elizabeth Knowlton of Ipswich June 13, 1728; lived in Ipswich, and died there within a year thereafter; she was his widow in 1732; had a child; 2. John³, born Sept. 7, 1707; 3. Lydia³, baptized Jan. 22, 1709-10; unmarried in 1783; 4. Mehitabel³, baptized June 14, 1713; died, unmarried, Dec. 24, 1784; 5. Benjamin³, baptized Feb. 5, 1715-6; married Abigail Mears of Boston June 17, 1742; 6. Christopher³; 7. Hannah³ (probably his daughter); married Nathaniel Osgood Oct. 6, 1745.

CAPT. JOHN BABBIDGE³; mariner; married Susannah Becket Jan. 11, 1732-3; died May 12, 1745; she survived him, and after teaching her famous private school for fifty years, the corpulent Madam Babbidge died June 3, 1804, at the age of ninety; children: 1. Lydia⁴, born Sept. 7, 1733; assisted her mother in her school; died, unmarried, July 9, 1800; 2. Susannah⁴, born Nov. 3, 1734; married Capt. Jonathan Mason Jan. 22, 1756; 3. John⁴, born May 17, 1736; died, unmarried, Oct. 22, 1757; 4. Elizabeth⁴, born

Richard Sibley built his dwelling house, in 1663, on the southeastern corner of the lot of land upon which the North meeting house now stands, on Essex Street. He died in 1676, and after the death of his widow, subsequent to 1700, the heirs re-



RICHARD SIBLEY HOUSE.

leased their interests to his son John. The estate passed to Joseph Gavett in 1758, and, in 1763, he moved the house to the westerly side of North Street, opposite Lynde Street. The estate remained in the Gavett family. Originally, the house consisted of the easterly end only, including the front door and large chimney.

Feb. 27, 1737-8; married Capt. Benjamin Ward Nov. 15, 1770; 5. *Benjamin*⁴, born Jan. 30, 1739-40; 6. *Christopher*⁴, born Jan. 24, 1741-2; 7. *William*⁴, born April 21, 1744; died Sept. 14, 1753. CHRISTOPHER BABBIDGE³; mariner; married Anstiss Crowninshield Sept. 27, 1749; died in 1752; she married, secondly, William King July 20, 1760; child: 1. Anstiss⁴, born July 13, 1750; married Capt. Robert Stone May 14, 1772.

BENJAMIN BABBIDGE⁴; cordwainer and mariner; married Elizabeth Woodwell Oct. 21, 1762; died Oct. 18, 1774; children: 1. Elizabeth⁵, born Jan. 12, 1763 (probably his daughter); married, first, William Cotten July 27, 1788; he died at Batavia, Java, in 1791; she married, second, Thomas Williams Nov. 12, 1797; 2. *John*⁵ (probably his son), born July 8, 1766; 3. *Benjamin*⁵, born June 27, 1768 (probably his son); 4. Susanna⁵, born April 22, 1770; married Col. Samuel Archer. CAPT. CHRISTOPHER BABBIDGE⁴; master mariner; married, first, Mary Young Jan. 31, 1765; second, Martha (Silsbee), widow of William Emerton, July 28, 1768; he died at St. Sebastian, Spain, Aug. 26, 1792; she died, his widow, Jan. 31, 1804; children: 1. *Christopher*⁵, born May —, 1769; 2. Martha⁵ (probably his daughter), born in 1774; married Andrew Ward; 3. *William*⁵; 4. Susan⁵, born in 1780; died, unmarried, March 5, 1856.

At a town meeting, March 30, 1663, Major Hathorne, William Flint and Henry Bartholmew were appointed to lay out the way to the cove, by John Ruck's, which they accordingly did. This is the northern end of Mill Street, between Norman and Creek Streets.

JOHN BABBIDGE⁵; shipbuilder; married Sarah Beckett June 25, 1789; died March 22, 1860, aged ninety-three; she died July 17, 1856; children: 1. *John Laurens*⁶, born Sept. 21, 1789; 2. William⁶, baptized July 17, 1791; died, unmarried, Aug. 27, 1819, at sea, on board the ship *Argonaut*; 3. Benjamin⁶, baptized April 21, 1793; boat builder; died, unmarried, March 7, 1879; 4. Sarah⁶, baptized Feb. 22, 1795; died Oct. 19, 1841; 5. Nancy⁶, baptized April 30, 1797; 6. Elizabeth⁶, baptized July 7, 1799; 7. Charles⁶, baptized Aug. 16, 1801; died Oct. 14, 1802; 8. Lydia⁶, baptized March 27, 1803; died, unmarried, April 20, 1884; 9. Mary⁶, baptized Nov. 23, 1804; 10. Charles⁶, baptized Oct. 27, 1806; clergyman in Pepperell; married Eliza A. —; 11. Susanna Archer⁶, baptized Feb. 4, 1809; married Gordon Robinson of N. Hampton July 19, 1832. CAPT. BENJAMIN BABBIDGE⁵; mariner; married Mary Phippen (published April 13, 1793); sailed as master of the brig *Nancy*, from Turk's Island, Oct. —, 1810, and was lost at sea; she died March 17, 1812; children: 1. John Phippen⁶, baptized Feb. 22, 1795; mariner, mate of ship *Saco*; married Sarah Pulsifer Aug. 8, 1813; died at City Point, Va., Aug. 2, 1826; she died June 19, 1876; 2. Mary Adelaide⁶, baptized April 26, 1801; died Nov. 30, 1803. CAPT. CHRISTOPHER BABBIDGE⁵; master-mariner; married, first, Ruth Randall of York, Me., May 6, 1792; she died July 5, 1809; married, second, Eunice (Peele), widow of Capt. Michael Barnes Dec. 1, 1822; he died Nov. 24, 1836; she died March 31, 1869; children: 1. Christopher⁶, baptized Aug. 12, 1792; died, unmarried, in Dartmoor prison at Chatham, England, Jan. 19, 1814; 2. Elizabeth⁶, born May 13, 1796; married Capt. Ebenezer Ropes; 3. Margaret Lockhart⁶, baptized Oct. 21, 1798; died, unmarried, Oct. 26, 1821; 4. William⁶, baptized Feb. 15, 1801; died on ship *Mary Ann* at Sumatra, unmarried, Feb. —, 1820; 5. Martha Silsbee⁶, baptized Dec. 26, 1802; married Capt. William Driver; 6. Susan Beckett⁶, baptized March 17, 1805; married Alfred R. Brooks Feb. 19, 1831; 7. Maria Ruth⁶, baptized June 13, 1814; married, first, Henry Russell Sept. 19, 1830; he died July 28, 1857; married, second, Thorpe Fisher Oct. 10, 1860; 8. Christopher⁶, born April 12, 1824; died April 13, 1824; 9. Margaret⁶, born about 1824; died young. WILLIAM BABBIDGE⁵; married Mary Bateman April 13, 1806; she died Nov. —, 1821; he died Dec. 8, 1832; children: 1. Mary Ann⁶, born Sept. 7, 1809; married George W. Pew of Gloucester Nov. 5, 1829; 2. *Francis*⁶, born March 9, 1811; 3. *Christopher*⁶, born Jan. 5, 1813; 4. Nancy⁶, born in 1817; died Oct. 11, 1818.

JOHN LAURENS BABBIDGE⁶; married Nancy Ann Kimball July 26, 1816; died at St. Thomas March 27, 1824; she was his widow in 1871; children: 1. Ann Maria⁷, born about 1817; died Aug. 23, 1841; 2. —⁷ (son), stillborn Nov. 27, 1818. CAPT. FRANCIS BABBIDGE⁶; master-mariner; married Amelia P. Goldthwaite Jan. 27, 1842; died Oct. 31, 1865; she was his widow in 1870; children: 1. Frances A.⁷, born Sept. 21, 1844; 2. Charles⁷, born May 31, 1848; railroad official; married Carrie J. Stanwood of Topsfield Oct. 15, 1879; 3. Augustine L.⁷, born July 1, 1851; married Emma C. Fiske Feb. 28, 1878. CHRISTOPHER BABBIDGE⁶; married Elizabeth P. Masury Jan. 25, 1837; she died Oct. 17, 1861; children: 1. Mary Ann⁷, born June 17, 1839; married Thomas S. Call March 15, 1865; 2. Abba Elizabeth⁷, born Oct. 11, 1841; died May 7, 1844; 3. William⁷, born Nov. 10, 1844; plumber; died Dec. 25, 1890; 4. Margaret E.⁷, born about 1848; married Francis H. Hale May 2, 1867; 5. Lydia B.⁷, born in 1856; died Nov. 2, 1856.

Richard Waters was licensed by the Salem court to distill and sell strong waters at retail from 1663 to 1668.

Aug. 22, 1663, the selectmen granted to John Tompkins all the land lying at the end of the five acres he bought of Jefferie Estee, next Robert Cotte (near Mingo beach?) from his bound at the end of his lot, both upland and marsh, to low water mark; and it was ordered that no person should dig any clay upon the plain commonly known by the name of the mill plain between the causeway and Strongwater brook, upon penalty of five shillings a load.

Three days later, the selectmen admitted William Smith¹ and Isaac Hull² as inhabitants; and John Ruck was chosen to keep a house of common entertainment.

This ordinary was the northwestern corner of the old Ruck house, at 8 Mill Street, now standing. His license was renewed until 1681, and in 1663 he was licensed to sell wine. He was licensed to sell strong waters from 1666 to 1680. Nov. 24, 1663, the court renewed the license of Thomas Gardner to sell one barrel of strong water at retail, and the next day his license was limited to the strong water he had on hand. He was licensed to sell strong water as late as 1668.

This house was built by Thomas Ruck when he purchased the Sweet grant, about 1645. He removed to Boston a year or two later, and became a haberdasher and draper. He conveyed the house and the nine acres of land to his son John Ruck, who lived here, Jan. 9, 1651-2³. This was the first house erected in this square, and the only one until 1664. John Ruck died in 1697, having devised the house and the land under and around it to his sons Samuel and James. They carried on shipbuilding here, and in February, 1711-2, divided the estate, Samuel taking the northern and James the southern half of the lot. The house stood entirely on Samuel's part, and he lived in it. James conveyed to his brother Samuel the land adjoining on the south side of the house in 1712-3; and upon this lot, and annexed to the old

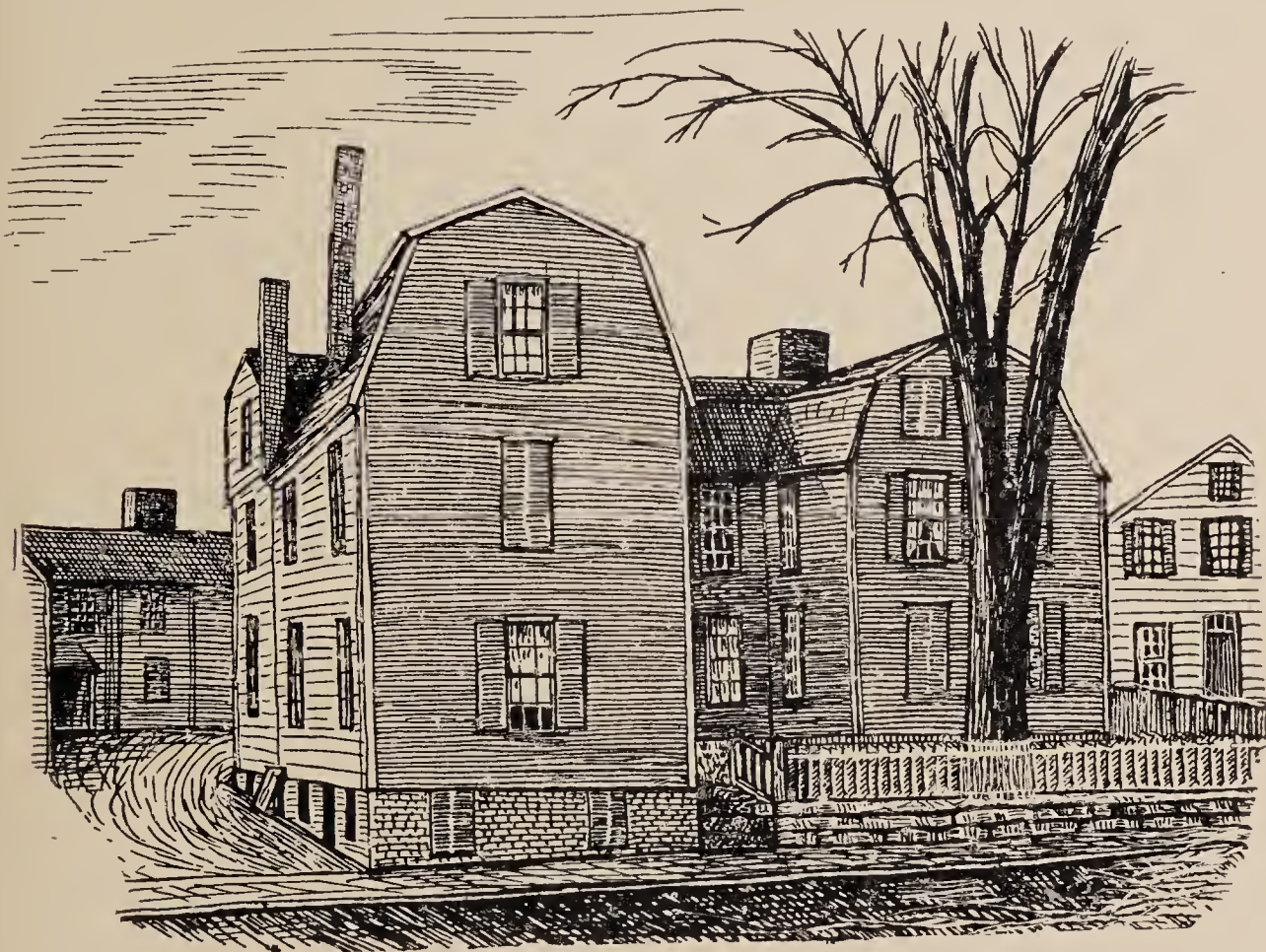
¹William Smith was a sawyer by occupation; had wife Margaret; their children were neglected through drink; children: 1. George, born Feb. 9, 1664-5; 2. William, born May 10, 1670.

²Isaac Hull; cooper; lived in Beverly; came from Topsham, Devonshire, England, this year, in the John of Weymouth; Salem court allowed him, June 30, 1663, as an inhabitant of this jurisdiction; married Sarah, daughter of Roger Cock and widow of John Solart, jr., Sept. 1, 1675, by Rev. William Clare, rector of the parish church of St. George; died in Beverly March 22, 1722-3; she died, his widow, Sept. 10, 1726; children: 1. Isaac; 2. Sarah.

³Essex Registry of Deeds, book 1, leaf 14.

9 Park Hull

house, Samuel built, before 1742, the present southwestern portion of the house. He lived in the old part of the house; and Dec. 27, 1742, he conveyed the new part to Samuel Bacon of Salem, shipwright.¹ Mr. Ruck was still living in the old part of the house when he sold it with the land to Joseph Mackintire of Salem, joiner, July 13, 1751.² Mr. Mackintire sold his part of the house and land to Samuel Bacon, who owned the new part, Oct. 11, 1754.³ While Mr. Bacon owned the estate a part of the



RUCK HOUSE

house was occupied by Richard Cranch, a watchmaker. He was father of Justice Cranch of Washington, and brother-in-law of President John Adams, who used to frequently visit here in his younger years. Mr. Cranch moved to Boston in 1767. He was an Englishman, and soon after he was succeeded as a tenant in the house by Copley, the celebrated painter, who remained here for a time at the beginning of the Revolution, and painted portraits of some of the leading citizens. Copley's son, Lord Lyndhurst, subsequently Chancellor of England, was brought here as

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 82, leaf 243.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 98, leaf 69.

³Essex Registry of Deeds, book 123, leaf 55.

an infant and remained until his parents could sail for England, the father being a tory.

Samuel Bacon died before 1783; and his daughter Mehitable, and her husband John Lawless of Salem, conveyed, in trust, for themselves and their children, to John Templeman of Salem, surgeon dentist, the whole estate March 28, 1783¹, and Mr. and Mrs. Templeman of Georgetown, Md., merchant, conveyed the estate to William Deakins, jr., of Georgetown, merchant, May 20, 1797.¹ Mr. Deakins died in 1799, having devised the property to Francis Deakins, who, Oct. 16, 1799, conveyed it to Mr. Templeman.² Mr. and Mrs. Templeman conveyed it, the same day, to Capt. John Ropes of Salem,³ and Mr. Ropes conveyed it to William Dolliver of Salem, baker, May 27, 1805.⁴ Mr. Dolliver died in or before 1809, and the place was purchased of the estate by Rev. Samuel Worcester, pastor of the Tabernacle church, June 30, 1809.⁵ Mr. Worcester lived here till his death, June 7, 1821, and his administrator conveyed the house and lot to Rev. Thomas Carlisle of Salem, minister at St. Peter's church, Jan. 21, 1822.⁶ Mr. Carlisle became insolvent, and his assignees conveyed the estate to Ephraim Brown of Salem, baker, April 10, 1822.⁷ The estate has been in the Brown family ever since.

Sept. 29, 1663, the Ipswich court allowed fifty pounds to build a prison in Salem out of the Quakers' lands which had been seized.

The ancient Goodale house, now standing in Peabody, on Goodale Street, was built by Isaac Goodale, on land of his father, about 1663. He was married in 1667, and probably then first occupied it. It is two-story in height, with a leanto, which projects about five feet from the northeasterly end of the house, forming a bevelly projection, as it is called. The title and possession of the estate remained in the Goodale family until 1915, when the house and land around it was conveyed to Charles R. Stackpole of Nahant. This view of it was taken in 1888.

Anthony Ashby⁸ came to Salem in 1663, and lived at the Juniper house on Salem Neck, where he was an inn-keeper.

Anthony Ashby

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 162, leaf 186.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 165, leaf 181.

³Essex Registry of Deeds, book 165, leaf 182.

⁴Essex Registry of Deeds, book 176, leaf 134.

⁵Essex Registry of Deeds, book 187, leaf 208.

⁶Essex Registry of Deeds, book 229, leaf 91.

⁷Essex Registry of Deeds, book 228, leaf 227.

⁸ANTHONY ASHBY¹; married Abigail Hutchinson; children: 1. Gershom², baptized June 12, 1670; 2. Abigail², baptized June 12, 1670; 3. Benjamin², baptized June 15, 1684; 4. Elizabeth², baptized June 16, 1684.



GOODALE HOUSE

Dec. 22, 1663, the selectmen appointed Major Hathorne and Mr. Batter to view a plot of ground at the turning of the fence of Major Hathorne at the end of the lane and to lay out a parcel of land to John Glover to build a house on, not prejudicial to the highway, and to make return to the next town meeting.

BENJAMIN ASHBY²; shipwright; married Hannah —; died in the summer of 1713; she was his widow in 1731; children: 1. Benjamin³; shipwright; married Elizabeth Priest Dec. 27, 1700; died April —, 1718; she married, secondly, Thomas Humphreys May 25, 1719; 2. Elizabeth³; married Nathaniel Pease; 3. John³, baptized June —, 1693; 4. Abigail³, baptized Sept. —, 1694; 5. Jonathan³, born Sept. 28, 1694.

JOHN ASHBY³; removed to Beverly in 1714; married Patience Ellenwood of Beverly (published Oct. 4, 1712); died in 1715; she married, secondly, Moses Morgan (published Jan. 12, 1717-8); child: 1. John⁴, born Nov. 8, 1713; lived in Beverly, cordwainer, in 1742. JONATHAN ASHBY³; shipwright; married Jemima Felt Nov. 17, 1715; died Jan. 22, 1729-30; she died, his widow, Nov. 23, 1789, aged ninety-three; children: 1. Jonathan⁴, baptized July 21, 1717; 2. Jemima⁴, baptized Feb. 1, 1718-9; married Thomas Morong June 21, 1739; 3. Benjamin⁴, baptized April 16, 1721; 4. John⁴, baptized April 7, 1723; laborer; lived in Salem in 1750; 5. Hannah⁴, baptized May 30, 1725; married Samuel Luscomb; 6. George⁴.

JONATHAN ASHBY⁴, shipwright; married, first, Mary Dean April 19, 1739; she died in 1751; married, second, Elizabeth (West), widow of William Stacy Dec. 7, 1752; he died Dec. —, 1782; she died June 25, 1783; children: 1. Mary⁵, baptized March 2, 1739-40; probably died unmarried; 2. Hannah⁵, baptized Nov. 1, 1741; married, first, William Young Oct. 8, 1769; second, — Palfray; 3. Benjamin⁵, baptized July 17, 1743; probably died before 1786; mariner (?); 4. Jonathan⁵, born in 1746; 5. Jemima⁵, born March 6, 1751; married, first, Samuel Young May 2, 1774; second, John Howard March 28, 1779; 6. David⁵, baptized April 17, 1757; 7. Sarah⁵,

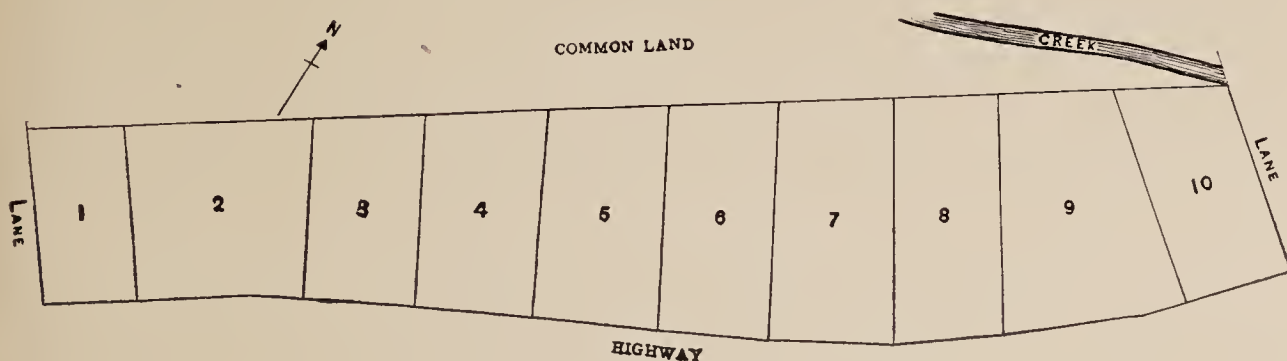
At this time, the town laid out a row of house lots between Essex Street and what is now known as Washington Square, from Washington Square West to Pleasant Street. The second or Daniel Rumball lot had been conveyed to him by the town, April 30, 1660, and the other lots were sold for five pounds each, upon condition that a house should be built upon each lot within two years, and also that they should keep open the water course behind each lot. This, the parties agreed to do, in writing, April 16, 1700. The lots were conveyed as follows: 1. This lot was granted to John Higginson, jr., Dec. 4, 1673. 2. This lot was granted April 30, 1660, to Daniel Rumball, in consideration for his land which

baptized Oct. 1, 1758; married John Orne of Marblehead April 2, 1780; 8. Elizabeth⁵, baptized June 21, 1761; died, unmarried, May 23, 1823. GEORGE ASHBY⁴; mariner; married Hannah Jarvis of Marblehead Jan. 16, 1749; died in the winter of 1789-90; children: 1. Hannah⁵, baptized May 5, 1751; 2. Elizabeth⁵, baptized Feb. 18, 1753; 3. John⁵, baptized June 16, 1754; 4. Mary⁵, baptized Feb. 22, 1756; 5. Martha⁵, baptized Dec. 25, 1757; died young; 6. Thomas⁵, baptized Feb. 3, 1760; 7. Martha⁵, baptized June 28, 1761; 8. Benjamin⁵, baptized March 31, 1771.

JONATHAN ASHBY⁵; shipwright; married Lydia Kimball Dec. 1, 1768; she died July 8, 1793; he died Nov. 15, 1797; children: 1. Jonathan⁶, born Aug. 28, 1769; 2. Lydia⁶, baptized Dec. 2, 1770; unmarried in 1797; 3. Mary⁶, baptized March 1, 1772; unmarried in 1797; 4. Samuel⁶, baptized Dec. 12, 1773; living in 1797; 5. Benjamin⁶, baptized Sept. 22, 1776; living in 1797; 6. Thomas⁶, baptized July —, 1779; living in 1797; 7. Lucy⁶, baptized Jan. 7, 1781; living in 1797; 8. John⁶, baptized Feb. 22, 1784; living in 1797; 9. Elizabeth⁶; aged under fourteen in 1797; 10. Hannah⁶, baptized June 1, 1788; under fourteen in 1797; 11. Hetty⁶, baptized March 14, 1790; died Jan. 30, 1792. DAVID ASHBY⁵; shipwright; married Mary Field (published June 3, 1781); she died April 3, 1789; he died Jan. 15, 1822; children: 1. Samuel⁶, baptized in 1781; died Dec. 13, 1783; 2. David⁶, baptized March —, 1783; married widow Abigail Smith of Wenham June 12, 1804; 3. ———⁶ (daughter); died Sept. —, 1795, aged seven years. JOHN ASHBY⁵; shipwright and blockmaker; married Esther McIntire (published Oct. 7, 1775); they were of Salem in 1791; children: 1. Hester⁶, baptized Feb. 1, 1778; married Thomas Ashby; 2. John⁶, baptized May 7, 1780; 3. Hannah⁶, baptized May 26, 1782; 4. George⁶, baptized Sept. 12, 1784; married Nancy Hartwell Jan. 12, 1808. CAPT. THOMAS ASHBY⁵; grocer and master mariner; married, first, Rebecca Hill Feb. 3, 1789; she died Jan. 20, 1790; married, second, Mary White March 14, 1791; married, third, Esther Ashby March 13, 1803; he died Dec. 29, 1804; she survived him; children: 1. Mary⁶, baptized Nov. 18, 1792; living in 1804; 2. Rebecca⁶, born Dec. 31, 1792; 3. Fanny⁶, baptized May 31, 1796; married Samuel Carlton Sept. 20, 1818; 4. Thomas White⁶, born Feb. 21, 1798; married Margaret Fabens Nov. 3, 1819; 5. Benjamin⁶, baptized May 18, 1800; 6. Charlotte⁶, baptized May 13, 1804.

JONATHAN ASHBY⁶; shipwright; married Sarah Fitch Nov. 11, 1792; died Sept. 24, 1807; children: 1. Sally⁷, born March 13, 1793; died young; 2. Jonathan⁷, born Dec. 15, 1795; died at sea; 3. Benjamin Fitch⁷, born July 22, 1797; 4. William⁷, born March 19, 1799; 5. John⁷, born July 24, 1801; died about 1805; 6. Sarah Fitch⁷, born May 27, 1803; married Marston Hazelton Aug. 31, 1826; 7. Elizabeth⁷, born Nov. 26, 1806.

was taken by the town for the parsonage lot, at the corner of Brown and Williams streets. 3. This lot was granted to Manasseh Marston Oct. 7, 1665. 4. This lot was granted to John Lander April 5, 1672. 5. This lot was granted to Nicholas Man-



LAYOUT OF HOUSE LOTS

ning for his son Joseph Gray April 5, 1672, and the latter built a house upon it. 6. This lot was granted to James Symonds April 5, 1672. 7. This lot was granted to Nathaniel Silsbee April 5, 1672, and he built a house upon it. 8. This lot was granted to Thomas Beadle on or before April 15, 1672; and he built a house thereon. 9. This lot was granted to Peter Cheever April 5, 1672. 10. This lot was granted to Richard Prince, jr., March 7, 1669-70.

Mary, widow of John Jackson, and formerly widow of William Goose, who had died about 1650, had been distracted and supported from 1656 to 1664, when she died. She lived in the Goose house, which was situated at the lower end of English Street, until she died.

Stephen Haskett¹ originated in Henstredge, Somersetshire, England, and came to Salem from Henstredge, Ireland, in 1664, when he was about thirty years of age.

He was a soap boiler, and his house stood in the northeasterly corner of the Howard Street burying ground, on the ancient road which ran along the river bank. He originated the lane which is now Howard Street².

¹Stephen Haskett had a brother Elias in Henstredge; married Elizabeth —, at Exeter, England; died in 1709; she married, secondly, Simeon Stoddard; children: 1. Elizabeth; married, first, William Dynn; he died in 1689-90; married, second, Roger Derby; 2. Stephen, born March —, 1668-9; died March —, 1668-9; 3. Elias, born April 25, 1670; had lived in London, England, and removed to Boston, Mass., esquire, in 1717; colonel; governor of Providence, W. I.; 4. Mary, born March 13, 1671-2; 5. Sarah, born Feb. 5, 1673-4; married Samuel Ingersoll; 6. Hannah, born Aug. 2, 1675; married Richard Symms; 7. Martha; married Richard Derby.

²See deed of Stephen Haskett to William Bath Oct. 2, 1677.—*Essex Registry of Deeds*, 4, leaf 162.

William Hooper¹ lived at Bass River in 1664, at the age of sixteen.

Jan. 5, 1663-4, at a meeting of the selectmen, John Luffe and Robert Hibburd agreed that upon John Luffe's delivering to Robert Hibburd the ten pounds for which he sold his house and land at the ferry, that John Luffe and his wife should live during their lives in a part of his house in which the Frenchman now lives after his year is out, and also should have ten or twelve rods of ground for a garden, if they will fence it; and if John Luffe should be disabled "by sickness or other hand of God" from his work the town will look after him.

Feb. 15, 1663-4, the selectmen confirmed a former grant of thirty acres to Nathaniel Felton near twenty acres of John Burton's; and "old m^r Gardn^r" twenty acres of land near the seven men's bounds in consideration of a country highway through his farm, and "also that some meadow of Mr. Gedney's falleth within his farm." Two weeks from that date, the town ordered that all the lands undisposed of from Mr. Humphrey's hill to the seven men's bounds and all on the other side of the river within the town's bounds are left to the selectmen to dispose of.

March 14, 1663-4, the selectmen granted to Thomas West twenty acres of the land near the seven men's bounds; and to Goodman Hull by the inhabitants of Cape Ann Side, was granted seven acres of land next to David Thomas, near Bald Hill.

April 11, 1664, the selectmen ordered that John Southwick and Thomas Goldthwaite have liberty with such others concerned in it to set up two gates, one near Thomas Goldthwaite's and the other near Michael Shafin's. The selectmen also granted to Anthony Buxton thirty acres of land about the seven men's bounds; to John Tompkin, thirty acres; to Richard Hollingworth, thirty acres (in place of the twenty acres formerly granted to him); to Henry Skerry, twenty acres, in consideration of four acres of meadow formerly granted; to William Flint, fifty acres; to Francis Lawes, thirty acres; to John Pickering, thirty acres; to Francis Nurse, twenty acres; to John Harwood, twenty acres; to Nathaniel Carrill, twenty acres; to John Mascall, twenty acres; and to Robert Pease, twenty acres.

The Salem foot company nominated its officers, which the court at Ipswich refused to confirm and the general court, May 18, 1664, appointed to command it, Maj. William Hathorne, "of whose

¹William Hooper was son of Francis and Julian Hooper of Coker, England; mariner; married Elizabeth — about 1671; died by "suddenly falling overboard at sea," about Nov. 8, 1679; she survived him; children: 1. Elizabeth, born Aug. 1, 1672; married Mathew Butman April 28, 1690; 2. Edward, baptized Dec. 15, 1678; 3. William; married Priscilla Baker April 5, 1698; 4. Dorothy, born Aug. 4, 1680.

ability and service they have formerly had good and long experience," and as lieutenant, Mr. Walter Price, and ensign, Mr. Hilliard Veren, until the company has an orderly election. Oct. 19, 1664, the Salem military chose Mr. Walter Price, captain, George Gardner, lieutenant, and Zerobabel Endecott, ensign, who were thereupon confirmed by the general court. Aug. 6, 1665, the general court confirmed Philip Cromwell, clerk, and Henry Bartholmew, cornet, of the troop commanded by Capt. George Corwin. At this time the northeasterly portion of the common was called the training field.

June 15, 1664, the general court appointed as a fast day, "being sencible of many distractions and troubles under which the country do labor in sundry respects, as also the sad estate and condition of God's people and interests in other places."

Nov. 18, 1664, at a meeting of the selectmen, Samuel Kettle was admitted an inhabitant; and Humphrey Woodbury desired satisfaction for a country highway laid out through his land near Mackerel Cove.

Dec. 13, 1664, the selectmen admitted Rowland Powell, who had lived in Gloucester, as an inhabitant of the town. Two joiners were staying here temporarily,—Thomas Praser, entertained by Serg. James Brown, who wished them to stay until spring, and John Crabtree, who had dwelt in a shop of Mr. Gedney for several weeks whom Mr. Gedney wished to stay until spring that he might work up for him some timber which he had bought.

Feb. 7, 1664-5, the selectmen granted to Humphrey Woodbury five acres of land not more than two miles from his house, in consideration of a highway through his land at the back side of John Black's land; and to Edmund Grover five acres of land in consideration of a highway to Draper's point and to the ferry through his land.

Two weeks from that day, the selectmen admitted John Baxter¹ as an inhabitant and to "improve the trade of a translator." *John Baxter*
At the same time, they granted

¹John Baxter, born about 1631, married, first, Abigail Whiting Nov. 24, 1667; she died Nov. 22, 1676; married, second, Elizabeth, widow of Alister Mackmillon, Nov. 1, 1679; he lived in Salem in 1683; children: 1. John, born Dec. 14, 1668; 2. Abigail, born Dec. 15, 1670; 3. Elizabeth, born May 25, 1673; 4. Mary, born Dec. 26, 1674; died Sept. 19, 1675; 5. William, born Oct. 14, 1676; 6. Sarah, born Aug. 15, 1680; 7. Samuel, born June 10, 1683. In 1678, they had a child, who was sick, and Dr. Richard Knott of Marblehead took it to his house and furnished it with medical treatment, board, etc. The writer has noticed several instances in early times where physicians had taken patients to the doctor's home for board and treatment. These were critical cases. Perhaps it was a practice of that time, when there were no skilled nurses to observe and care for the patient under the

to Richard Harvey, John Robison and John Foster¹ twenty or thirty acres of land about Ipswich River; and Edmond Batter was appointed to see the five pounds that William Hollingwood engaged to pay for the lot of land laid out for his mother. He testified that it had been paid by Mr. Hollingwood to Goodman Clifford towards the keeping of Mrs. Goose.

direction of the physician. In this case, John Baxter agreed to pay Doctor Knott forty shillings for board, etc., and six pounds, fifteen shillings and eleven pence which had been contributed, was to be equally divided between Doctor Knott and Dr. Daniel Weld of Salem, who was associated with Doctor Knott in the cure, for their services.

¹JOHN FOSTER¹ was born about 1618; husbandman; married Martha Tompkins; died in the winter of 1687-8; she married, secondly, Richard Adams; children: 1. Mary², baptized March 24, 1650-1; married Hugh Jones; 2. Samuel², baptized March 7, 1652-3; 3. John², baptized June 3, 1655; 4. Benjamin², born July 3, 1658; probably died young; 5. Jonathan², born Dec. 20, 1660; died March 28, 1663; 6. Jonathan², born Nov. 22, 1662; died Nov. 6, 1667; 7. Joseph², born in 1664; 8. David², born Oct. 16, 1665; 9. Elizabeth², born Nov. 22, 1667; 10. Jonathan², baptized June 12, 1670; cordwainer and husbandman; lived in Boston in 1725; 11. Hannah², baptized July 21, 1672; living in 1703; 12. Martha², baptized Sept. —, 1674; *Ebenezer*², born Aug. 5, 1677.

SAMUEL FOSTER²; husbandman; married, first, Sarah Steward May 14, 1676; second, Margaret —; was living in 1726; children: 1. Samuel³, born May 18, 1677; died Feb. —, 1678-9; 2. John³, born Nov. 30, 1678; probably married Margaret Jacobs Nov. 30, 1699; 3. Samuel³, born July 26, 1680; 4. Anna³, born July 26, 1683; 5. Sarah³, born Oct. 9, 1685; 6. Joseph³, born March 14, 1687; removed to Ipswich; married Mary Creasy Aug. 13, 1712; 7. Benjamin³, born May 24, 1689; 8. Richard³, born Dec. 8, 1692; probably married Lydia Rea March 19, 1714-5; 9. Mary³, born Nov. 8, 1694; married Joseph Carryl April 18, 1721; 10. Margaret³, born Feb. 4, 1697; married Benjamin Carryl Nov. 11, 1726; 11. Jonathan³, born April 2, 1699; probably married Priscilla Procter Nov. 10, 1720; 12. Bartholmew³, born Feb. 23, 1701-2; 13. Timothy³, baptized May 15, 1715. JOHN FOSTER²; husbandman; married, first, Mary Stuard March 18, 1672-3; she died about 1690; married, second, Mary (Cowes), widow of John Pomeroy, July 12, 1692; he died in 1714; she survived him; children: 1. John³, born July 27, 1674; died Sept. 14, 1680; 2. Mary³, born Sept. 12, 1675; married John Harrod of Boston; 3. Anne³, born last of April, 1677; lived in Boston, unmarried, in 1743, spinster; 4. Sarah³, born Nov. 27, 1678; married John Simons; 5. John³, born Nov. 15, 1680; blacksmith; married Margaret —; lived in Attleborough in 1743; 6. Hannah³, baptized Oct. 9, 1681; 7. Jonathan³, born June 14, 1683; 8. Eben³, born Feb. 22, 1685-6; 9. Benjamin³, born March 11, 1687; living in 1708; 10. Mercy³, born July 15, 1689; died at Wrentham before 1743; 11. James³, born April 14, 1693; 12. Ruth³, born June 19, 1694; married Joseph Very Aug. 13, 1721; she was his widow, of Mendon, in 1743; 13. Patience³, born Dec. 20, 1696; probably died young; 14. Patience³, born Dec. 6, 1697; lived in Salem, unmarried, in 1711; 15. Nathan³, born July 5, 1702; shipwright; lived in Boston as late as 1768; married, first, Margaret Baxter Nov. 15, 1728; second, Mary Plaisted July 20, 1738; had children. JOSEPH FOSTER²; husbandman and house carpenter; removed to Dorchester about 1697; married Anna (Trask), widow of Robert Wilson Nov. 21, 1683; they lived in Dorchester in 1705; child: 1. Ruth³, born Oct. 18, 1684. DEA. DAVID FOSTER²; husbandman; lived in the Danvers part of Salem; married, first, Hannah Buxton Jan. 13, 1686-7; second, Elizabeth Herbert Dec. —, 1732; she was

Nicholas Bartlett came from England in 1662 in the ship Nathaniel of Dartmouth. He was born about 1620, and first appeared here in 1665. He was a fisherman, and lived in Cape Porpus, Maine, about 1700.

Maj. William Hathorne read in the general court, May 3, 1665, the following acknowledgement, the reasons of which are unknown to the writer:—

Whereas there are words charged on me by his majesties honorable commissioners in this Court, either directly or by implication, which words I never spake, yet this I freely confesse, that I spake many words foolishly, and unadvisedly, of w^{ch} I am ashamed, and repent me of them, and desire all that tooke offence to forgive me, as his majesties commissioners have freely done.

18 : 3m^o., 65.

WM. HAUTHORNE.

his wife in 1743; he died Sept. 12, 1748; children: 1. Richard³, born Nov. 26, 1687; 2. David³, born March 19, 1689; living in 1743; married Elizabeth Foster Sept. 8, 1712; 3. Jonathan³, born Jan. 10, 1690; living in 1743; 4. Samuel³, born Dec. 24, 1692; yeoman; lived in the Danvers part of Salem; married Sarah Small Feb. 16, 1720-1; living in 1753; 5. Hannah³, born Dec. 3, 1694; married Daniel Shaw April 13, 1727; 6. Elizabeth³, born Nov. 27, 1696; married Samuel Bell Dec. 6, 1721; 7. Joseph³, born Feb. 1, 1698-9; 8. Lydia³, born April 15, 1701; married, first, William Shillaber Sept. 9, 1725; second, Thorndike Procter; 9. Rachel³, born Jan. 15, 1703; married Joseph Osborn July 12, 1726; 10. Abigail³, baptized Nov. 17, 1706; married William Trask; 11. Amos³, born April 21, 1710; married, first, Eunice Stockwell (published Feb. 24, 1732-3); second, Abigail King (published April 24, 1749); removed to New Salem in 1750. EBENEZER FOSTER²; lived in the Peabody part of Salem; married Anna Wilkins Dec. 19, 1700; died in the spring of 1721; she married, secondly, Isaac Wilkins; children: 1. Abigail³, born Sept. 10, 1701; married Nathan Taylor Jan. 1, 1719-20; 2. Jonathan³, born Sept. 9, 1703; lived in Boston in 1732; 3. Stephen³, born Feb. 28, 1705-6; 4. Benjamin³, born May 12, 1708; 5. Ebenezer³, born Aug. 23, 1710; 6. Stephen³, baptized April 4, 1714; 7. Anna³, baptized April 3, 1715; 8. Joshua³, born in 1718; living in 1732.

SAMUEL FOSTER³; married Mary —; was dead in 1729; children: 1. William⁴, born Aug. 18, 1703; lived in Walpole, yeoman, in 1729; 2. Marjary⁴, born Feb. 4, 1705-6; 3. Lydia⁴, born Aug. 24, 1709; 4. Hannah⁴, born April 7, 1712; 5. Timothy⁴, born Aug. 18, 1714. CAPT. JAMES FOSTER³; mariner; married Margaret Pratt May 15, 1719; died in the summer of 1724; she married, secondly, Samuel Endecott Feb. 11, 1724-5; children: 1. Margaret⁴, born July 10, 1720; died Aug. 2, 1720; 2. James⁴, born Aug. 10, 1721; living in 1725. BENJAMIN FOSTER³; lived in Danvers, and removed to Lunenburg; married Mehitabel Steward of Rowley (published Jan. 3, 1727-8); child: 1. Benjamin⁴, baptized Jan. 26, 1728-9. EBENEZER FOSTER³; clothier, weaver and fuller; lived in the Peabody part of Salem until 1744, when he removed to Rutland; married Lydia Felton in 1731; died —; she returned to Salem before 1770, and died Feb. —, 1792; children: 1. Ebenezer⁴, born in 1733; served in the French and Indian wars and the Revolution; lived in Rutland and Oakham; married Hannah Parlin of Concord Dec. 1, 1757; she died Feb. 28, 1808; he died March 19, 1811; had children; 2. Lydia⁴; married Jonathan Bullard May 22, 1755; 3. Skelton⁴; married Hannah Hinds of Rutland in 1766; 4. Samuel⁴; married Patty Williams of Oakham in 1786.

June 22, 1665, was appointed by the general court to be kept as a fast, "lifting up holy hands without wrath and doubting, and may turn from the evil of their doings in the way of a real and thorough reformation, that so the Lord's anger may be turned away from us, and we may obtain reconciliation with him, and the continuance of his gracious presence with us and ours, that his work may appear to his servants and his glory unto their children, together with the favor of the king's majesty toward us, whence we may be encouraged in this wilderness still to offer up the sacrifices of sweet savors unto the God of heaven, . . . having taken into their serious consideration the distressed, bleeding, dying condition of the Protestant Christian interest in the world, the darkness of the hour of temptation, referring to ourselves those manifold public rebukes the Lord hath given us in our concernments at home and abroad, contending with us divers years, and now again by the caterpillars and the palmer worm, denying us the privilege and mercy of being a people desired as in former days, and threatening us, by divers judgments impending, severely to punish us even with the removal of the candlestick out of its place, except we repent, and so to make us a reproach by avenging the quarrel of his covenant, his jealousy being provoked thereunto by the abounding of iniquity among us, the great indisposition and unsubduedness of our spirits to take upon ourselves and submit unto the yoke of Christ, wantons under the peace and liberties we partake of. And considering likewise how great a measure of our prosperity hath its dependence, under God, upon the benign aspect of our sovereign lord the king towards us and the rest of his good subjects in these ends of the earth, as well as in other parts of his dominions, not unmindful also of the alarum from heaven given us in the awful appearances of the comets¹, both this and the last year, warning us to be watchful and quickened unto the discharge of the several duties incumbent on us respectively, as also in regard of the late declared war betwixt England and Holland."

At this time, on account of the restoration of the throne in England, several changes in laws and practice had to be made. The "Commonwealth of England" had to be altered to "in his Majesty's name"; the king's arms had to be set up in every court of justice; the church of England put on legal and political equal-

"'The great and dreadful comet,' as Josselyn called it, made its first appearance on the eighth of November. . . Night after night, the whole winter through, 'the great blazing starre' took its position in the southern sky as soon as the stars began to glint in the evening constellations. Its size and extreme brilliancy greatly alarmed the people. . . Morton said to them that . . . 'it appeared to be sent immediately by God to awake the secure world.'"—*Historic Storms of New England*, by Sidney Perley, page 16.

ity with the Congregational church; May twenty-ninth to be celebrated for the king's birth, the restoration of the throne and the crowning of the king; November fifth, the date of the gunpowder plot; thanksgiving days; that January thirtieth be the annual fast day; the penalties against observing Christmas were repealed; heresy and laws against Quakers were modified; and the coining of money and the power to associate with other colonies were both prohibited, as they were prerogatives of the king. The freemen of Salem appear to have been more progressive than others of the settlements of the Colony as they voted, May 11, 1663, that the deputies should declare it at the next general court as their mind and desire that there might be an enlargement according to what they should, in their wisdom, see meet unto some that are not members of particular churches. The general court made the change May 30, 1665, and thereafter a freeman need not be a member of the church to have all the political rights of a citizen.

Oct. 7, 1665, the town voted that no person should be eligible to the office of constable until he has been an inhabitant two years. At this meeting, it was voted that Anthony Ashbe should have a lot "where Goodman Bavedg lives."

Nov. 1, 1665, the town of Salem admitted Joseph Phippen¹ as an inhabitant of the town.

Joseph Phippen

¹DAVID PHIPPEN¹ (son of Robert Phippen), probably born at Melcomb Regis, Dorsetshire, England, emigrated to America in 1635, and settled at Hingham, Mass. His wife was named Sarah. He removed to Boston, where he died in the summer of 1650. He never lived in Salem. She survived him. Children: 1. *Joseph*²; 2. *Rebecca*²; married George Vickery of Hull; 3. *Benjamin*²; lived in Boston; 4. *Gamaliel*²; lived in Boston; 5. *Sarah*⁵; married George Hodges and Thomas Yeo of Boston; 6. *George*²; probably lived in Hull; 7. *John*², born July —, 1637; died July —, 1640; 8. *John*², born July —, 1640; 9. *David*², born about 1648; 10. *Samuel*², born May 6, 1649, in Hingham.

JOSEPH PHIPPEN²; pumpmaker and fisherman; lived in Falmouth, in Casco Bay, for many years before the first Indian war; married, first, Seaborne Gooden Dec. 22, 1670; second, Damaris, widow of Thomas Searle April 14, 1686; she was his widow in 1724 and 1731; children: 1. *Daniel*³, born Dec. 20, 1671; probably married Elizabeth —; lived in Boston; had a child; 2. *Samuel*³, born Sept. 20, 1674; 3. *Sarah*³, born Oct. 8, 1676; married Benjamin English June 8, 1699; 4. *Dorcas*³, born Dec. 22, 1678; 5. *John*³, baptized Nov. 16, 1679; 6. *Israel*³, born July 17, 1681; probably married Sarah —; lived in Boston; had a child; 7. *Anne*³, baptized Feb. —, 1683-4; 8. *Joseph*³, born March 3, 1686; 9. *Susanna*³, born July 2, 1687; 10. *Benjamin*³, born Sept. 29, 1688; 11. *Elizabeth*³, born Feb. 15, 168-. DAVID PHIPPEN²; shipwright; married Ann (Cromwell), widow of Benjamin Ager June 26, 1672; he lived in Boston in 1692 and 1701; was treacherously killed in the Indian War, Aug. 10, 1703, while carrying a flag of truce inside the fort at Falmouth; his family returned to Salem; she lived in Salem, his

The general court appointed Nov. 8, 1665, as a day of thanksgiving, for "giving seasonable rain this last summer when the

widow, in 1719; children: 1. David³, born April 14, 1673; 2. Thomas³, baptized Aug. —, 1675; 3. Ann³ baptized May 19, 1678; married Benjamin Ropes March 10, 1694-5; 4. Cromwell³, baptized Oct. 5, 1679; 5. Joseph³, baptized Aug. —, 1681; 6. Jane³, baptized Oct. 7, 1683; 7. Abigail³, baptized Aug. 2, 1685; married William Furneux Oct. 2, 1707; 8. Samuel³; lived in Salem, fisherman, wife Mary, in 1714; 9. Elizabeth⁷, baptized May —, 1689; married John Webb Oct. 18, 1705; 10. Sarah³, baptized May —, 1691. SAMUEL PHIPPEN²; blockmaker; married Rachel Guppy Feb. 1, 1676-7; she died Feb. 1, 1710-1; he died Feb. 1, 1717-8; children: 1. Samuel³, born Dec. 12, 1677; 2. John³, born Oct. 4, 1679; died Aug. 6, 1684; 3. Steven², born May 9, 1682; died Aug. 30, 1682; 4. Rachel³, born Aug. 5, 1683; died July 24, 1685; 5. John³, born Dec. 25, 1685; 6. Nathaniel³, born Aug. 4, 1687; 7. Rachel³, born Sept. 13, 1693; of Salem, spinster, in 1749; 8. Joseph³, born Feb. 9, 1696-7.

SAMUEL PHIPPEN³; married Elizabeth English June 12, 1701; died Sept. 17, 1704; she died in the winter of 1727-8; children: 1. Sarah⁴, born July —, 1702; married Zerubbabel Williams Aug. 6, 1725; 2. Abiel⁴, born Nov. 13, 1704; married David Chapin of Boston (published April 17, 1729). BENJAMIN PHIPPEN³; fisherman and cordwainer; married Ruth Marston Nov. 1, 1715; he died and she married, secondly, Henry West Dec. 22, 1726; children: 1. Benjamin⁴, baptized April 28, 1717; 2. Elizabeth⁴, baptized Sept. 7, 1718; 3. Ruth⁴, born in 1719; died, unmarried, Dec. 10, 1785. THOMAS PHIPPEN³; mariner; married Mary (Lindall), widow of Nathaniel Gedney Oct. —, 1706; she died March 19, 1722-3; children: 1. Mary⁴, baptized Nov. 21, 1708; married Edward Rose (published Oct. 10, 1730); 2. Thomas⁴, baptized Jan. 28, 1710-1; 3. Nathan⁴, baptized Oct. 19, 1712; lived in Boston in 1737. SAMUEL PHIPPEN³; mariner; married, first, Mary Beadle in 1708; second, Rebecca Beadle March 20, 1717-8; died in 1732; children: 1. Samuel⁴, baptized Jan. 7, 1710-1; lived in Topsfield; married Amme Averill of Topsfield Sept. 7, 1738; had children; 2. Joseph⁴, baptized June 14, 1713; living in 1732; probably died in 1773; 3. Mary⁴, baptized Aug. 14, 1715; married John Averill of Topsfield May 7, 1735; 4. Ruth⁴, baptized Dec. 21, 1718; married Mascoll Williams June 5, 1740; 5. Rebecca⁴, baptized Dec. 4, 1720; married Robert Allen Dec. 3, 1741; 6. Jonathan⁴, baptized July 1, 1722; living in 1732; 7. Atwater⁴, baptized June 28, 1724; died young; 8. Atwater⁴, baptized June 5, 1726; married, first, Olive Butler March 20, 1750; she died Sept. —, 1790; married, second, Martha Phippen Nov. 7, 1791; she was his wife in 1799; he died Dec. 15, 1806; 9. Mehitabel⁴, baptized July 9, 1727. JOHN PHIPPEN³; housewright; married Elizabeth Hartshorn Nov. 23, 1709; died in the spring of 1755; she was his widow in 1759; children: 1. Elizabeth⁴, baptized April 15, 1711; married Benjamin Cook Dec. 24, 1730; 2. Rachel⁴, baptized Oct. 11, 1713; married James Cook Sept. 18, 1732; 3. Hannah⁴, baptized Dec. 30, 1716; married Joseph Roberts July 7, 1737; 4. John⁴, baptized March 15, 1719; 5. Benjamin⁴, baptized Oct. 29, 1721; 6. Ebenezer⁴, baptized Aug. 2, 1724; 7. James⁴, baptized April 23, 1727; 8. Susanna⁴, baptized Dec. 14, 1729. NATHANIEL PHIPPEN³; cooper; married Margaret Palfrey June 29, 1710; died Aug. 14, 1756; children: 1. Nathaniel⁴, born July 5, 1711; 2. Margaret⁴, born June 15, 1713; died in 1764, unmarried; 3. David⁴, born Sept. 18, 1715; 4. Abigail⁴, born Sept. 16, 1717; married, first, Nathaniel Pike Oct. 11, 1739; second, John Ward of Marblehead in or before 1756; 5. Israel⁴, baptized July 17, 1720; merchant; lived in Marblehead; married Elizabeth Trevitt April 11, 1745; 6. Anstis⁴, baptized June 7, 1724; died, unmarried, April 18, 1775; 7. Lydia⁴, baptized Sept. 17, 1727; 8. Thomas⁴, bap-

fruits of the earth were like to perish, whereby the Lord hath

tized Jan. 17, 1730-1. JOSEPH PHIPPEN³; married Susanna Hartshorne Jan. 18, 1719-20; died in the spring of 1734; she was his widow in 1773; children: 1. William⁴, born Sept. 23, 1721; married Elizabeth Bush April 4, 1744; 2. Susanna⁴, born July 7, 1723; 3. Sarah⁴, born June 25, 1726; married Thomas Dean, jr., July 31, 1751; 4. Joseph⁴, born Dec. 18, 1730; mariner in 1772.

BENJAMIN PHIPPEN⁴; cordwainer; married Hannah Becket July 5, 1739; child: 1. Mary⁵, baptized July 6, 1743. JOHN PHIPPEN¹; married Hannah Hooper Dec. 10, 1742; died in 1760 (?); children: 1. Abigail⁵, born about 1744; married Benjamin West; 2. Hannah⁵, born about 1746; living in 1761; 3. Samuel⁵, born about 1748; living in 1761; 4. Elizabeth⁵, born about 1750; 5. Susannah⁵; living in 1773. NATHANIEL PHIPPEN⁴; cooper; lived in Boston in 1745 and 1747; returned to Salem before 1759; married Seeth Hardy Oct. 14, 1734; died about 1757; children: 1. Seeth⁵; married Thomas Needham Feb. 17, 1754; 2. Hardy⁵; of Marblehead, minor, in 1759; 3. Joshua⁵, born Jan. 27, 1742; 4. Joseph⁵; of Danvers in 1759. DEA DAVID PHIPPEN⁴; joiner; married Priscilla Bickford of Reading May 24, 1738; she was his wife in 1762; he died, a widower, Feb. 15, 1782; children: 1. Priscilla⁵; married John Gill Oct. 5, 1768; 2. Samuel⁵, born in 1744; 3. Lydia⁵, born Jan. 7, 1747; married John Fiske June 12, 1766; 4. Ebenezer⁵, born about 1750; 5. Margaret⁵, born about 1752; died April 23, 1842, aged ninety; 6. Sarah⁵; married Capt. Samuel Hobbs May 28, 1780; 7. Nathaniel⁵, born in 1757; 8. Rebecca; married William King March 10, 1785; 9. Anstiss⁵; married Jonathan Smith Sept. 6, 1789. THOMAS PHIPPEN⁴; cooper; married, first, Margaret Driver Nov. 2, 1749; second, Sarah (Ingalls), widow of John Smith April 12, 1766; he died about 1793; children: 1. Thomas⁵, baptized March 1, 1751-2; 2. William⁵, born Feb. 27, 1752-3; 3. James⁵, baptized April 21, 1754; died April 10, 1756, aged two years; 4. James⁵, baptized April 13, 1760; drowned when a lad; 5. ———⁵, baptized April 17, 1763; 6. Olive⁵, baptized April 19, 1767; married Isaac Perkins March 27, 1790.

JOSHUA PHIPPEN⁵; cooper; married, first, Hannah Sibley Oct. 3, 1764; she died March 21, 1801; married, second, Ursula (Knapp), widow of Jonathan Symonds Oct. 25, 1801; he died April —, 1811; she died, his widow, Dec. 20, 1818; children: 1. Nathaniel⁶, born in 1765; 2. Hannah⁶, baptized June 3, 1770; married Capt. George Hodges March 25, 1798; 3. Nathan⁶, baptized June 3, 1770; 4. Sarah⁶, baptized Dec. 13, 1772; 5. Joshua⁶, born in 1773 (4?); married Susanna (Nancy?) Trask of Beverly (published March 18, 1799); died April 28, 1805; she survived him; 6. Eunice⁶, baptized Dec. 24, 1775; died Dec. 19, 1799, aged twenty; Hardy⁶, born July 6, 1778. SAMUEL PHIPPEN⁵; cabinet maker; married Mary Swain Oct. 27, 1782; died Feb. 22, 1798; she lived in Wakefield, N. H., in 1820; children: 1. Rebecca Maria⁶, born Dec. 7, 1783; married Josiah Dow of Boston Jan. 5, 1806; 2. Samuel⁶, born April 23, 1785; died Oct. 2, 1804. EBENEZER PHIPPEN⁵; cabinet maker; married Elizabeth Simmes Oct. 27, 1772; died March 27, 1792; she died, his widow, June —, 1826; children: 1. David⁶, born July 25, 1775, in Reading; 2. Ebenezer⁶, born about 1777; blockmaker; died, unmarried, Aug. 14, 1813; 3. Rufus⁶, baptized Aug. 7, 1785; died Feb. 28, 1790; 4. Henry⁶, born in 1788; died March 2, 1790; 5. Nancy⁶, baptized Feb. 27, 1790; 6. Maria⁶, baptized March 16, 1792; daughter Mary died Dec. 7, 1792, aged eleven months. CAPT. NATHANIEL PHIPPEN⁵; mariner; married Abigail Hooper (certificate May 2, 1779); died Feb. 24, 1815; she was his widow in 1823; children: 1. Nathaniel⁶, born about 1779; drowned off Cape of Good Hope, "from on board Capt. Chipman," Jan. 4, 1796, aged seventeen; 2. Samuel⁶, born about 1782; died, with Captain Taylor, June 4, 1799; 3. Sarah⁶, born in 1785; died, unmarried, Oct. 12, 1806; 4. John⁶, baptized Dec. 23, 1787; 5. Abigail⁶; mar-

mercifully spared a necessary portion of sustenance for us and our

ried Joseph Jenkins Knapp. THOMAS PHIPPEN⁵; mariner; married Rebecca Wellman Dec. 27, 1774; she died May —, 1837; he died Dec. 22, 1839; children: 1. Peggy⁶, baptized Oct. 24, 1775; 2. Thomas⁶, baptized June 7, 1778; died Oct. 24, 1813; 3. *Israel*⁶, baptized in 1780; 4. Becca⁶, baptized Feb. —, 1784; 5. Rebecca⁶, baptized Sept. —, 1786. WILLIAM PHIPPEN⁵; trader; married, first, Lois Hutchings (certificate Nov. 22, 1777); she died March 11, 1794; married, second, widow Anna Ring (certificate Aug. 6, 1794); he died May 28, 1796; children: 1. *William*⁶, born about 1778; 2. Lois⁶, baptized May 6, 1780; married Benjamin Balch; 3. James⁶, baptized May 6, 1780; died at sea Aug. —, 1795; 4. *Thomas*⁶; 5. Moses Hitchings⁶, baptized Nov. —, 1785; feltmaker; died Aug. 14, 1808; 6. Lydia⁶, baptized Dec. 30, 1786; 7. Polly⁶, born about 1788; 8. George⁶, baptized March —, 1790; Baptist minister; of Lynn in 1827 and of Canton, Conn., in 1829; married Eliza Rhoads; 9. Lucy⁶, baptized Feb. 26, 1792; died, unmarried, Sept. 16, 1881.

NATHANIEL PHIPPEN⁶; cooper; married Anna Pickett of Beverly Sept. 3, 1786; died March 9, 1809; she died, his widow, July 23, 1815; children: 1. Samuel⁷, born Feb. 5, 1787; cooper; married Sarah Burns Dec. 2, 1810; died June 25, 1821; she was his widow in 1850; 2. *Benjamin*⁷, born Oct. 25, 1788, in Portsmouth, N. H.; 3. *Nathaniel*⁷, born Feb. 19, 1791, in Portsmouth; 4. Joshua⁷, born Nov. 17, 1793; 5. Eunice⁷, born Feb. 26, 1796; died, unmarried, Nov. 17, 1863; 6. Ann⁷, born July 20, 1798; 7. Charlotte⁷, born Aug. 13, 1800. CAPT. HARDY PHIPPEN⁶; master-mariner; married Ursula K. Symonds March 18, 1804; she died Feb. 17, 1859; he died Oct. 9, 1868; children: 1. Joseph Hardy⁷, born June 10, 1807; bank cashier; married, first, Susan Harris Lord March 26, 1840; she died Feb. 3, 1882; married, second, Emeline Lord Nov. 26, 1883; died Oct. 15, 1898, aged ninety-one; she died Dec. 6, 1906; no children; 2. Ursula Symonds⁷, born Sept. 21, 1809; married Isaac N. Chapman March 10, 1840; 3. *Joshua*⁷, born Dec. 13, 1812; 4. *George Dean*⁷, born April 13, 1815. DAVID PHIPPEN⁶; rope maker, housewright and mariner; married Nancy (Anne, Anstiss) Cook Feb. 17, 1799; she died Oct. 24, 1815; he died Jan. 14, 1849; children: 1. David⁷, born Nov. 11, 1799; of Topsfield in 1875; 2. Anna Kennedy⁷ (Nancy), born Feb. 2, 1801; died, unmarried, April 16, 1875; 3. Ebenezer⁷, born Nov. 16, 1802; 4. Susan Kennedy⁷, born Aug. 5, 1805; 5. *Benjamin Cook*⁷, born Feb. 11, 1807; 6. Susan Kennedy⁷, born Sept. 16, 1808; died, unmarried, Feb. 21, 1901, aged ninety-two; 7. —⁷; married — Jowders; 8. Stephen Sims⁷, born March 30, 1813; of New Boston, N. H., in 1901. ISRAEL PHIPPEN⁶; married Sarah Hutson of Marblehead July 24, 1808; she died Nov. 1, 1855; he died Feb. 23, 1859; children: 1. Sally⁷, born Oct. 18, 1809; died May 23, 1826; 2. *Israel*⁷, born Jan. 12, 1812; 3. Mary A.⁷, born Aug. 1, 1814; 4. Martha⁷, born Feb. 14, 1817; 5. Esther Adams⁷, born April 23, 1820; married John B. Test Sept. 7, 1852; 6. Ann Maria⁷, born Nov. 14, 1823. WILLIAM PHIPPEN⁶; tobacconist; married Sarah E. Hathorne (certificate June 27, 1797); died about 1841; she died Jan. 21, 1847; child: 1. Joseph H.⁷, born Sept. 9, 1800; cordwainer; married Elizabeth Gavett; she died Nov. 21, 1862; he died Sept. 23, 1875. THOMAS PHIPPEN⁶; married Sarah Lufkin (certificate Aug. 8, 1801); widow Sally Phippen married William Hall March 21, 1824; children: 1. Rebecca⁷, baptized Dec. 29, 1804; 2. Sally⁷, baptized April 10, 1806; died June 4, 1806; 3. Thomas⁷, baptized July 9, 1807; supposed to have been washed overboard from schooner Juno, near Cape Cod, Jan. 8, 1822; 4. Charles⁷, baptized Dec. 28, 1812; 5. Rebecca⁷, baptized Dec. 28, 1812.

BENJAMIN PHIPPEN⁷; cooper; married Mary Massey Wells Jan. 15, 1829; died Feb. 24, 1862; she survived him; children: 1. Benjamin Franklin⁸,

families, also for diverting a squadron of Dutch ships which

born June 15, 1830; cooper; died, unmarried, May 5, 1871; 2. *Nathaniel*^s, born Jan. 26, 1832; 3. *Joseph E.*^s, born Dec. 11, 1833; 4. *Martha C.*^s, born Oct. 31, 1835; died March —, 1837; 5. *Martha Clark*^s, born Jan. 12, 1838; married Samuel Lord; 6. *John Prince*^s, born Oct. 2, 1840; of Boston in 1863; 7. *William Trumbull*^s, born Sept. 25, 1842. NATHANIEL PHIPPEN⁷; cooper; married Martha C. Clark Dec. 24, 1820; died May 22, 1864; she died, his widow, May 9, 1883; children: 1. *Martha Ann*^s, baptized July 2, 1826; married William A. Frye; lived in Athol in 1874 and 1883; 2. *Charlotte Lane*^s, baptized July 2, 1826; married Wm. H. Archer; 3. *Benjamin Howard*^s, baptized Aug. 5, 1827; clerk; married Sarah E. —; died May 9, 1857; she survived him; 4. *Joshua B.*^s, born Feb. 7, 1830; expressman; married Mary R. Dakin; she died Dec. 18, 1886; he died Dec. 17, 1904; 5. *Mary Dustin*^s, baptized Sept. 21, 1834; died, unmarried, March 31, 1883. JOSHUA PHIPPEN⁷; gas fitter; merchant; married, first, Betsey Barr Holman April 22, 1841; she died April 9, 1854; married, second, Eunice Louise Daniels; he died Oct. 8, 1890; she died, his widow, Sept. 20, 1914; children 1. *Mary Elizabeth*^s, born May 20, 1842; married Richard Price Nov. 5, 1864; 2. *Joshua*^s, born May 3, 1857; musician; lives in Winchester; 3. *Edward A.*^s; bank teller; 4. *Hardy*^s, born Nov. 3, 1862; physician. GEORGE DEAN PHIPPEN⁷; cashier of Salem National Bank; married Margaret Barton April 13, 1840; died Dec. 26, 1895; she died Dec. 1, 1896; children: 1. *George Barton*^s, born Feb. 12, 1841; 2. *Samuel Webb*^s, born Oct. 13, 1846; died June 22, 1847; 3. *Arthur Henry*^s, born Sept. 7, 1849; 4. *Charles Endecott*^s born Jan. 20, 1856. BENJAMIN COOK PHIPPEN⁷; baker; married Ann B. Melzard of Marblehead April 20, 1830; she died Nov. 1, 1865; he died Aug. 20, 1866; child: 1. *David*^s, born May 7, 1838; died May 9, 1872.

NATHANIEL PHIPPEN⁸; cooper; married Abbie M. Ellis Feb. 25, 1866; died Jan. 19, 1914; children: 1. *Abbie L.*⁹, born June 27, 1867; 2. *Anna Maud*⁹, born July 21, 1874; married Charles E. Ebsen April 8, 1903. JOSEPH E. PHIPPEN⁸; cooper; married Abbie B. Perry Sept. 19, 1855; died Nov. 27, 1902; she died June 12, 1910; child: 1. *Mary A.*⁹, born July —, 1860; died March 10, 1861. WILLIAM TRUMBLE PHIPPEN⁸; artist and photographer; married Sarah Addie Dix April 12, 1863; died Nov. 8, 1910; children: 1. *Mary Eliza*⁹, born Feb. 18, 1866; 2. *Carrie Lillian*⁹, born Dec. 1, 1867. GEORGE BARTON PHIPPEN⁸; treasurer of New York and New England Railroad Company and broker; moved to Boston about 1894; married Mary Eliza Stodder Nov. 30, 1865; children: 1. *George Stodder*⁹, born July 3, 1868; 2. *Caroline Barton*⁹, born Dec. 2, 1876. ARTHUR HENRY PHIPPEN⁸; bank clerk; married, first, Mary Elizabeth Chamberlain Dec. 18, 1873; she died Aug. 27, 1879; married, second, Elizabeth M. Sanborn Oct. 6, 1881; she died Sept. 10, 1917; children: 1. *Margaret Chamberlain*⁹, born Feb. 15, 1875; died Feb. 17, 1875; 2. *Walter Gray*⁹, born Dec. 25, 1876; physician; married Ethel Arnold Patch April 16, 1906, at Buffalo, N. Y.; have two adopted children; Robert Jordains, born Aug. 31, 1916; and Barbara Emily, born Dec. 7, 1920; 3. *Elizabeth Chamberlain*⁹, born July 7, 1879; died Aug. 5, 1879; 4. *Elizabeth Russell*⁹, born April 30, 1884; married Walter Everett Poor Oct. 9, 1912; 5. *Henry Osgood*⁹, born Sept. 2, 1885; 6. *Arthur*⁹, born May 19, 1887. CHARLES ENDECOTT PHIPPEN⁸; bookkeeper; married Harriet Ellen Gifford Oct. 11, 1880; children: 1. *Margaret Barton*⁹, born Aug. 27, 1883; 2. *Eleanor Gifford*⁹, born May 16, 1891; married Daniel Gordon Tower of Indiana Nov. 11, 1915.

HENRY OSGOOD PHIPPEN⁹; clerk; moved to Hamilton; married Edith Whipple Dane Oct. 5, 1910: 1. *Henry Osgood*¹⁰, born March 15, 1912; 2.

threatened to invade our coasts"; and at the same time there was appointed a fast, to be kept on the twenty-second, on account of "the sad condition of the people of God in other parts, especially the severe hand of God in the pestilence raging in London and in many other places in our native country."

William Downton¹, born about 1629, a carpenter, was in Salem as early as 1665. He lived in the house he had bought, which formerly stood at 15 Washington Street. Edward Humber, a blacksmith, was also living here in the same year, and as late as 1672. Gilbert Tapley², born in 1634, was in Salem in 1665.

He was a fisherman, and at first lived at the Neck, where the causeway led to Winter Island.

Joan Almira¹⁰, born June 18, 1915; 3. Richard Dane¹⁰, born July 1, 1918; 4. Geraldine¹⁰, born July 4, 1925. ARTHUR PHIPPEN⁹; bank clerk; married Alice Davenport Bowden of Marblehead Feb. 24, 1915; children: 1. Mary Elizabeth¹⁰, born July 11, 1915; 2. Jane West¹⁰, born May 23, 1918; 3. Arthur¹⁰, born Jan. 13, 1923.

¹William Downton married, first, Rebecca —; she was living in 1682; married, second, Joanna —; died in the autumn of 1696; she was his widow in 1702; children: 1. Mary; married Thomas Flint; 2. William, born April 12, 1665; living in 1696; 3. John, born June 17, 1669; probably died before 1696; 4. Elizabeth; living in 1696.

²GILBERT TAPLEY¹ married Thomasine —; died April 17, 1714; she died Nov. 1, 1715; children: 1. Gilbert², born Aug. 26, 1665; 2. Joseph², born March 10, 1667-8; died about 1689; 3. Mary², born April 4, 1671.

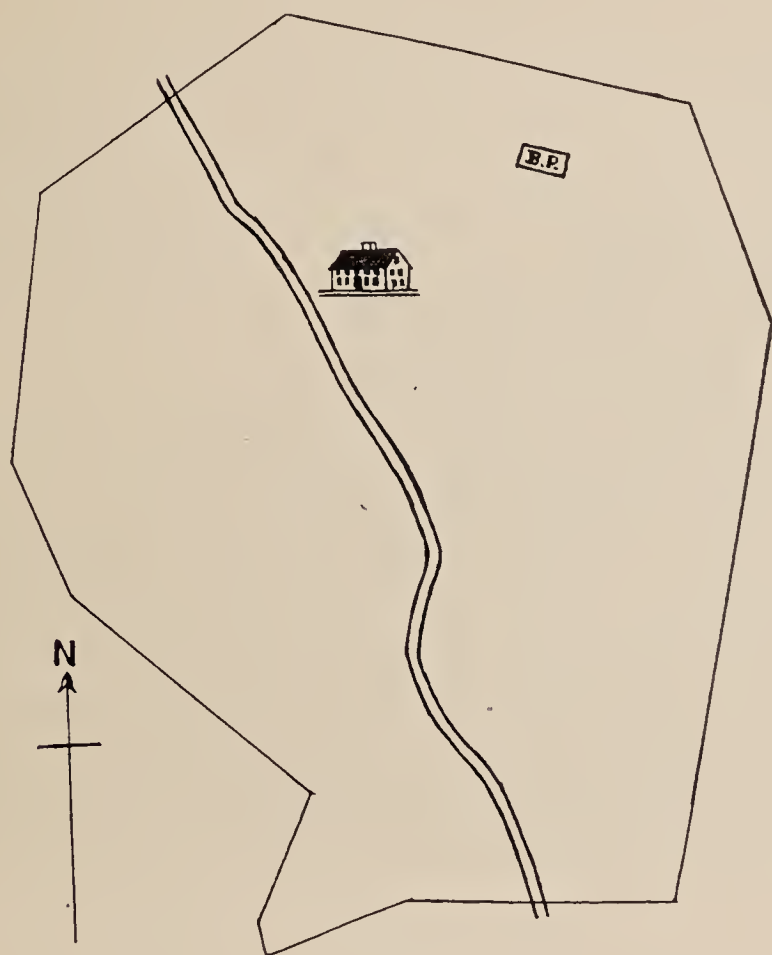
GILBERT TAPLEY²; married, first, Lydia Small April 10, 1686; second, Sarah Archer Aug. 21, 1707; died in 1710; she survived him; children: 1. Mary³, born Nov. 4, 1689; married Christopher Batten Sept. 19, 1706; 2. Joseph³, born July 30, 1692; 3. Lydia³, born March 10, 1696-7; 4. Gilbert³, born July 13, 1699.

JOSEPH TAPLEY³; innholder; married Margaret Masury Nov. 27, 1712; children: 1. Gilbert⁴, born May 6, 1722; 2. John⁴, born about 1728; lived in Peabody; married Elizabeth Buxton Feb. 15, 1749-50; 3. Lydia⁴. GILBERT TAPLEY³; fisherman; married Elizabeth Henderson Jan. 9, 1721-2; died in 1757; children: 1. William⁴; 2. Elizabeth⁴; married John Cox May 15, 1743; 3. Mary⁴; married Benjamin Henfield of Danvers, Nov. 25, 1753.

GILBERT TAPLEY⁴; housewright; lived in Danvers; married, first, Phebe Putnam June 17, 1747; she died May 6, 1770; married, second, Mary (Flint), widow of Nathaniel Smith, March 11, 1771; she died July 1, 1799; married, third, Sarah (Abbott) Farrington of Andover June 6, 1799; he died May 6, 1806; she died in Andover Jan. 19, 1823; children: 1. Amos⁵, born Oct. 15, 1748; soldier of the Revolution; yeoman; lived in Danvers; married, first, Hannah Preston May 9, 1772; she died Oct. 20, 1825; married, second, Sarah (Brimblecom) Berry of Lynn Nov. 8, 1826; he died Sept. 6, 1835;

Nov. 18, 1665, the town granted to Ankias Horsman a lot of land at the east end of Goodman Rumball's lot.

James Priest hung himself with a rope, in November, 1665, and a jury of inquest, consisting of George Gardner, Samuel Gardner, Thomas Cromwell, Thomas Rix, John Beckett, John Cromwell, Richard Harvie, John Williams, Henry Skerry, Wil-



DOWNING GRANT

liam Dounton, John Pickworth and Samuel Pickworth, appointed by the constable of Salem, viewed the body and adjudged that his death was caused by his voluntary will. The verdict was returned to the Salem court Nov. 28, 1665. James Priest was son of James Priest of Weymouth, where he was born May 8, 1640.

The town of Salem granted to Emanuel Downing five hundred acres of land which is now the extreme northeastern corner of Danvers, July 16, 1638, and he conveyed it to John Porter April

had children; 2. Daniel⁵, born Dec. 6, 1750; married Mary Tarbell of Danvers May 5, 1774; died Aug. 10, 1775; 3. Phebe⁵, born Aug. 20, 1753; 4. Joseph⁵, born April 10, 1756; 5. Aaron⁵, born Jan. 25, 1758; 6. Asa⁵, born Sept. 11, 1761; 7. Elijah⁵, born Dec. 14, 1765; 8. Sally⁵, born Oct. 19, 1771. WILLIAM TAPLEY⁴; mariner; married Mary Mascoll Oct. 17, 1745; child: 1. William⁵, born about 1746.

15, 1650. Sergeant Porter conveyed it to his son Joseph Porter, Jan. 2, 1664, as a part of his portion upon the latter's marriage with Anna, daughter of Maj. William Hathorne; and upon this land Joseph erected a house which is still standing. The farm, with the house thereon, is now owned and occupied by Daniel J. Conners. The house is in excellent condition, and apparently able to still weather the storms for centuries. It is fifty feet in length



JOSEPH PORTER HOUSE

and twenty odd feet in width, two stories in height and faces the south. The chimney is large, and each of the front rooms on both floors are twenty feet square. The original barn is now adjoining the house, having a frame similar to that of the house. The posts and beams are hewn of white oak and a foot square. About fifty rods northeasterly from the house, near a swamp, is the original burialplace of the family. There are some half a dozen graves, marked with as many field rocks. Some of the latter now lie upon the ground and others are partly embedded in the earth. All are overgrown with briars and bushes. Two of the stones which lie loosely upon the ground are each about two feet in length and a foot and a half in breadth, and thin at the edges. On one of them are cut the letters "A P" and above them is at least a figure "2". The only early member of the family who lived on the farm whose initials these might be is Anna, wife of the builder of the house,

daughter of Major Hathorne. It is unknown when she died, but she was not alive in 1713, when Mr. Porter executed his will, and it may be that the figure "2" is a part of the date of "1712". Passing over or near these stones no one would suspect that this was a sacred burialplace and that here have reposed for more than two centuries the remains of a daughter of Major Hathorne.

CHAPTER XVIII.

THE SOUTH MILLS.



THE windmill at Burying point continued to be used after 1639, and Samuel Bennett of Lynn conveyed it to Thomas Wheeler of Lynn, who had removed it from Salem to Lynn, April 1, 1653¹.

Poor judgment used in selecting millers, bad grinding, the large loss in the amount of meal returned for the corn sent to mill, the great uncertainty as to when the grist would be ground, and other reasons made Trask's mill very unpopular. Complaints were made to the court, but little satisfaction was thereby secured. This must have been a good mill, as when Captain Trask died, in 1666, it was appraised at one hundred pounds.

William Browne, George Corwin and Walter Price finally requested the town to give them the right to erect a mill on the South River. This request was favorably received, and the town voted, Nov. 29, 1659, to grant them liberty to build a gristmill upon the South River above Mr. Ruck's house where it may be convenient. This vote apparently brought to Captain Trask a forcible reminder of his duty to the public, if he wished to retain its custom, and fault finding quietly subsided. After a few years, complaints were renewed, and it seemed that another move would be made for a new mill. The town was about to grant the privilege of establishing a mill at the place contemplated in 1659, when John Trask, on the behalf of his father, Capt. William Trask, the owner of the old mill, engaged to make as good meal as was made at Lynn and that when they could not supply the town, for want of water or in any other respect, they would send it to Lynn upon their charge and have it ground there. Upon this promise, the town suspended proceedings about building another mill. This was on March 2, 1662-3; but August 22d following, the town voted "that there is liberty granted for building of a mill over the

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 4, leaf 121.

South River near Mr. Ruck's." Another inducement for the construction of the new mill was probably its convenient situation.

On the ninth of November following, the town again voted upon the matter, and ordered "That Walter Price Henry Bartholmew John Gardner and Samuel Gardner have liberty to build a mill over the South River near Mr. Ruck's, provided it be built in two years or to lose their privilege."

John Pickering had petitioned the Salem court June 29th previously, asking that the question of its site might be settled. There was apparently no response to it.

To satisfy Jonathan Pickering for the disturbances of his right to build vessels there, March 23, 1676-7, the town granted to him a "convenient" parcel of land about Hardy's Cove to build vessels on.

These men began the construction of a dam, when one morning they found that their work had been tampered with in the night time, their wheelbarrows and tools and timber were thrown into the river, the stakes pulled up, etc. Later, when the mill building was partly up, an endeavor was made in the night to turn it into the channel¹. This was done by John Pickering, who claimed that the proprietors had no right to build a mill there and obstruct him from going to his land, which was the Broad field of Governor Endecott originally, or using it for ship-building. Mr. Pickering brought two suits against the proprietors of the mill, one for trespass upon his land and the other for damming the water of the river, the writs being dated Nov. 11, 1664.

At either end of the mill dam the town erected gates, which were maintained by the proprietors of the mill.

When the Broad Street burial ground was laid out in 1655, space was left at the eastern end for a passage way and at the easterly corner of the burialplace, there was at a very early date a gate painted red through which was obtained access to the Governor Endecott Broad field. When John Ruck, who owned all the land on the eastern side of this common, sold to Matthew Woodwell a lot of land where the southerly end of Mill Street now runs he agreed to lay out a highway to it fourteen feet wide from what is now Summer Street. This was done, and thus came into existence High Street and the southerly end of Mill Street. A week after the day that Mr. Pickering's petition was filed with the court, the selectmen ordered that a highway be laid out from the way near Bartholomew Gedney's to the new mill laid out that day ten feet above high water mark into the bank near the mill to a stake and so against the mill as it was staked out.

¹For details of these depredations, see Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, volume III, pages 216 and 217.

July 18th previously to the suits being brought, the proprietors of the mill had come to agreement with John Pickering in the matter, that, in consideration of twenty pounds, he gave them liberty to use his land and soil for setting up the dam and mill



SOUTH MILLS

where they had begun the dam and for his damages by stopping up the river below his land, and also to save them harmless for all damages to Matthew Woodall and others. In spite of this agreement, the suits were tried, and in both cases the defendants won.¹

The mill was completed in the summer of 1665. It was originally a single grist or corn-mill, and continued to be such until about 1720. To the original proprietors was added, when the building was finished, George Gardner. Price, Bartholmew and Samuel had each one-quarter, and John and George Gardner each one-eighth part of the business. Major Price died in 167-, and his interest passed to his widow and to her children in her discretion. She conveyed one-eighth to her daughter Elizabeth Ruck, and the other one-eighth to her son John Croade. George Gardner died in 1679, having devised his one-eighth to his son Capt. Samuel Gardner. Mr. Bartholmew was a merchant, and, as a gift, he conveyed his one-fourth interest to his daughters

¹See Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, volume III, pages 203-207.

Hannah Swinerton and Abigail Willoughby in 1689. Samuel Gardner died in 1689, having devised his fourth part to his grandchildren, Abel Gardner, one-eighth, Joseph Henfield, one-sixteenth, and Mary Neale, one-sixteenth. John Croade, who was a merchant, conveyed his one-eighth to the miller William Stacy in 1699. John Ruck's executors conveyed his share,—one-sixteenth to Capt. Samuel Gardner, and the other one-sixteenth to John Higginson, jr.,—in 1702. Widow Hannah Swinerton conveyed to William Browne, esquire, one-eighth in 1702; and the other one-eighth in 1704. John Gardner died in 1705, having devised his one-eighth to his grandson John Gardner of Mendon. Mr. Stacy conveyed his one-eighth to William Browne in 1708 and 1709. John Gardner of Mendon conveyed his one-eighth to Capt. Samuel Gardner and to the latter's son Capt. John Gardner, in 1712. William Browne deeded one-sixteenth to his daughter Mary Lynde in his lifetime, and in his will devised his remaining three-sixteenths to her, in 1716. Col. John Higginson died in 1720, having devised his one-sixteenth to his daughter Elizabeth Gerrish.

The miller was William Stacey from before 1682 until his death, in 1723. Because of this fact, this place of industry was known as Stacey's mills for several years after his death, even as late as 1735. Another set of stones and machinery was added about 1720, and still another set about 1727. These three sets of stones or mills continued in use until after the Revolution. The establishment was known as the South mills as early as 1699 and as late as 1840.

Capt. Samuel Gardner died in 1724, having devised his one-fourth to his grandsons, John Higginson, John Gardner, Daniel Gardner and Samuel Gardner. Daniel Gardner and Samuel Gardner conveyed their one-eighth to their brother John Gardner in 1733. John Gardner was a yeoman, and conveyed one-sixteenth to Jonathan Gardner in 1735. Mrs. Mary Neale conveyed her one-sixteenth to Benjamin Lynde, jr., in 1735. Abel Gardner conveyed his one-sixteenth to his son Jonathan Gardner in 1735, and died in 1739, having in his will devised his other one-sixteenth to his son Abel Gardner. Abel Gardner conveyed his one-sixteenth to his brother Jonathan Gardner in 1739. John Gardner conveyed another of his sixteenths to Benjamin Lynde, esquire, in 1738, and his other sixteenth to William Lynde in 1738. Capt. John Gardner died possessed of his sixteenth, and his widow Elizabeth Gardner conveyed it to Jonathan Gardner in 1742. Joseph Henfield died in 1743, having devised his one-sixteenth to his son Edmund Henfield. John Higginson died in 1744; and his one-sixteenth descended to his son Francis Higginson, who died in 1761, having devised his interest to his wife Esther Hig-

ginson. She married Daniel Mackey, and they conveyed it to Daniel Malloon Feb. 22, 1762. Mrs. Elizabeth Gerrish died in 1734; and her sixteenth passed to her daughter Sarah King by the division of her real estate, Dec. 1, 1756. Mrs. King conveyed her one-sixteenth to James King Dec. 1, 1756; and James King conveyed the same share to Daniel Malloon of Salem, miller, April 20, 1759. Mrs. Abigail Willoughby died, possessed of her one-eighth, and it descended to her son Francis Willoughby of Boston. Mr. Willoughby conveyed it to Thomas Barton June 1, 1747. Colonel Barton died in 1751, and his one-eighth descended to his daughter Mary Toppan. She conveyed it to Daniel Malloon Feb. 4, 1764.

Thomas Brewer was the miller from as early as 1729 till as late as 1739, and Thomas Osborn in 1743 and as late as about 1760. Daniel Malloon was the miller in 1761, and until his death in the spring of 1783. They were known as Malloon's mills as late as 1831. About 1769, a "scythe mill" was added, and also a granary, the latter being in existence in 1804. The "scythe mill" existed in 1776, but was gone before 1811.

Edmund Henfield conveyed his one-sixteenth to Daniel Malloon Feb. 28, 1770. Mr. Malloon died in 1783, and his five-sixteenths descended to his grand-daughter Eunice Andrew. William Lynde died in 1752, having devised his one-sixteenth to his brother Benjamin Lynde, Esq., who died in 1781, and his three-sixteenths was divided among his three daughters, Mary Oliver, Lydia Walter and Hannah Lynde April 21, 1786. Jonathan Gardner died in 1783, having devised his one-fourth to his sons John Gardner and Jonathan Gardner. Jonathan Gardner brought a suit against his brother John, who lived in Danvers, recovered judgment, and, in satisfaction of the judgment, John's one-eighth was assigned to Jonathan Gardner July 12, 1813. The one-sixteenth of Hannah Lynde passed to her sister Lydia Walter. Their mother, Madam Mary Lynde, died in the summer of 1790, and her one-fourth passed to her daughters, Mary Oliver and Lydia Walter. Mrs. Walter died, and her heirs conveyed one-eighth to Jonathon Gardner April 16, 1801, and one-eighth to John Gardner on the same day. Mrs. Eunice Andrew removed to Marblehead and conveyed her five-sixteenths to Peter Hodson Nov. 15, 1804, and it passed from him to Jesse Blanchard. Mrs. Oliver died in September, 1807, having devised her three-sixteenths to her three children, Dr. Benjamin Lynde Oliver, Peter Oliver and Sarah Oliver. Sarah's interest passed to her brother Peter Oliver before 1810.

One of the grist mills was taken out before 1827. A chocolate mill was established in or before 1811, and run by James Brown. It was leased to William Micklefield, tobacconist, by the

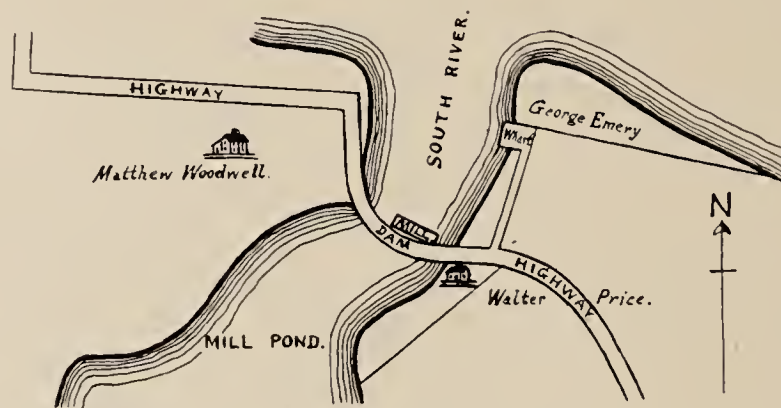
owners of the mills, for ten years, from July 26, 1825, and turned into a snuff mill. There was a slaughter house upon the premises, also, in 1813. A saw mill had been introduced about 1812, and that was continued as long as the mills were run. A pulverizing mill was established in or about 1827, when there were upon the premises two grist, one saw, one chocolate and one pulverizing mill. William Frye was the miller in 1825, and continued until 1832 or later.

Dr. B. L. Oliver conveyed his one-sixteenth to Jonathan Gardner Jan. 28, 1819; and Jonathan Gardner had conveyed to Nathaniel West one-eighth before that date. Peter Oliver became deranged, and his guardian conveyed his one-eighth to Abel Lawrence and John B. Lawrence Feb. 26, 1821. Abel Lawrence conveyed his one-sixteenth to Charles Lawrence March 1, 1824; and Charles Lawrence conveyed his one-sixteenth to Nathaniel West April 20, 1830. John B. Lawrence conveyed his one-sixteenth to Mr. West May 27, 1831; and John Gardner conveyed his one-eighth to Mr. West Jan. 11, 1830. Jesse Blanchard conveyed his five-sixteenths to William Frye Dec. 1, 1825; and Mr. Frye, who had removed from Salem, conveyed his five-sixteenths to William Micklefield, John Jewett, Elliott Smith and Amos F. Smith, constituting the firm of Micklefield & Co., July 9, 1832.

There were dwelling apartments in the mills Jan. 20, 1836, when, for a rental of twelve hundred dollars per year, the mills were leased, for ten years from Feb. 1, 1836, by Nathaniel West, William F. Gardner, William Micklefield, John Jewett, Elliott Smith and the guardian of Amos F. Smith, owners, to said Micklefield, Jewett and Elliott Smith and Jonathan A. Kenney, all of Salem, and Thomas H. Prime of Charlestown, the lessees being the firm of Micklefield & Co. The next year, the mills consisted of two grist, one saw and one snuff mill. A veneering mill was added before 1846, and that was in use for a number of years, the veneer being sawn from squared mahogany logs. The mills were called the City mills as early as 1846. The snuff mill was in existence as late as 1846, and another of the grist mills was discontinued between 1837 and 1846.

Amos F. Smith died in 1833, and his interest descended to his son Amos F. Smith, jr. Jonathan Gardner died in 1821; and his five-sixteenths descended to his son William F. Gardner, who conveyed the same to Jonathan A. Kenney and Thomas H. Prime, mahogany dealers, Jan. 27, 1846. Oct. 21, 1837, Elliott Smith conveyed five-sixty-fourths of the mills to William Micklefield, who died in 1840, possessed of five-thirty-seconds of them. The whole plant was then valued at twenty-two thousand dollars. The executor of the will of Mr. Micklefield conveyed the interest of the estate to John Jewett, Thomas H. Prime and Jonathan A.

Kenney, comprising the firm of Prime, Kenney & Co., March 23, 1849. The guardian of Amos F. Smith conveyed his five-sixty-fourths, at auction, to John Jewett June 2, 1846. Nathaniel West conveyed his three-eighths to John Jewett, Thomas H. Prime and Jonathan A. Kenney, mahogany dealers, Oct. 12, 1849; and these three, "owners of the City mills," conveyed one-tenth of them to Thomas S. Jewett Oct. 18, 1849. John Jewett, Jonathan H. Prime, Jonathan A. Kenney and Thomas S. Jewett, for fifty thousand dollars, conveyed the City mills to The Eastern Railroad Company June 17, 1854. The property then conveyed consisted of grist, veneer and upright saw mills, and the buildings and land. The mills were run a few years after their sale to the railroad company, and then removed.¹



MILL SITE

This was a tide mill, and the mill pond was thus originated.

The land on the eastern side of the South River at the mill was owned by Capt. Walter Price, and the executors of his will conveyed to the owners of the mill a part of his lot March 10, 1675. They built upon it a small house, situated at what is now the easterly corner of Mill and Canal streets, apparently for the residence of the miller. It was subsequently sold, and taken down soon after 1765.

Houses were built at either end of the dam soon after. The accompanying plan shows their locations and first owners.

THE NEW WAY TO MARBLEHEAD.

The only way by land to Marblehead from Salem to this time was by way of Highland Park to Vinning Square and thence to the town of Marblehead. When this milldam was constructed, with a highway over it, the road was changed to run through the South fields, by way of Lafayette Street and Loring Avenue

¹See The Essex Antiquarian, volume XI, pages 158-166, for the full history of the record title of these mills.

to the pumping station on Forest River. The road then followed a path over the bridge, passing over Stony beach, called Webb's, between the river and Legg's Hill toward Marblehead, past Ruck's tree, going through the dungeons, westerly of the new burial place, on the south side of the gravel pit and joining the original highway at what was formerly known as "Our house." This new way saved more than a mile of travel.



NEW ROAD TO MARBLEHEAD

A curious incident of this matter was the method of laying out the road. Salem appointed two citizens of Marblehead to lay out that part of the way which was in Salem, and Marblehead appointed two citizens of Salem to lay out that portion which was in Marblehead. Salem appointed Richard Rowland and Samuel Ward of Marblehead; and Marblehead appointed Maj. William Hathorne and Henry Bartholmew of Salem. The way was laid out April 24, 1666, and the return was as follows:—

The Returne: of thofe that weare Apoynted: to laye owt the Common hie waye: betwixt salem towne and marblhed: is vydz: that the waye: shall: lye: owt of the towne of marblhed: as: the Common Cart waye now lyeth: fower Rodds wyde: and soe to Runn: fower Rodds broade: as wee haue mked trees: neere the way as It is Commonly vfed: only vppon the midle of the playne we Leaue the common waye: and goe: somewhat one the Left hand of the ould waye according as thee trees are marked and soe to Runn: fower Rodd wyde: vntill wee com to: the bridg: and then to goe fower Rodd wyde: vntill wee Com to the litle gate: that standeth In the south feeld ffence: and then we haue determined that the waye shall Runn: through at that gate vppon a strayght lyne vnto an ould tree that lyeth neere that common hie waye: in the south ffeeld and soe to goe along the waye: as it is now vfed: through the south ffeeld vnto the mill dam: and the breath of the whole waye through the south ffeeld to be on Rodd wyde And that this is owre Joynt agreement: wee haue heare vnto sett oure hands this 24 of April: 1666

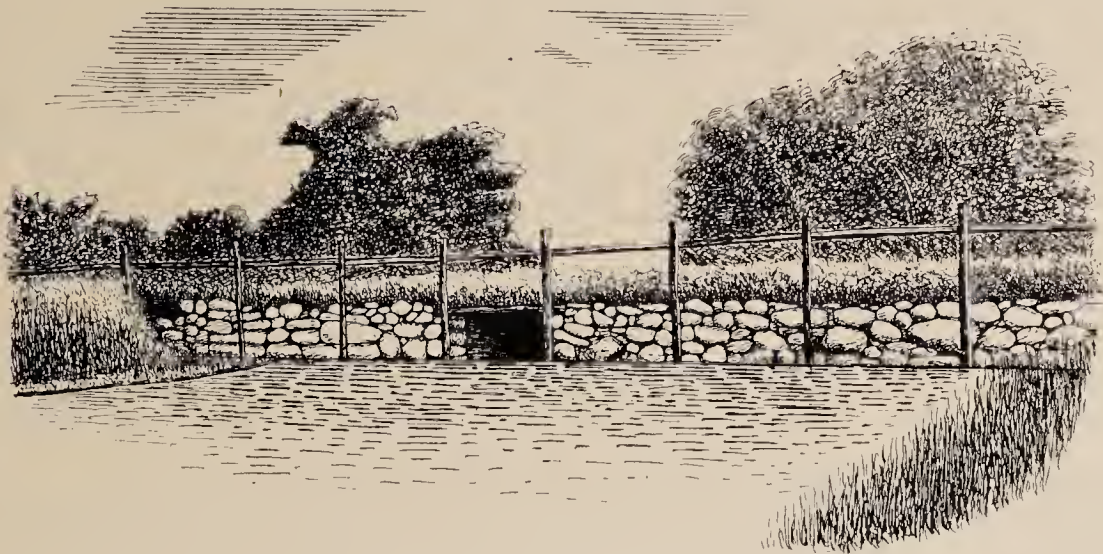
WILLIAM HAWTHORNE
HENRY BARTHOLMEW
RICHARD **T** his
ROWLAND mark:
SAMUELL WARD:¹

Some time before his departure for England, John Humphrey had built a bridge over Forest River, near the Marblehead pumping station, to enable him to conveniently reach his Plain farm at the westerly end of Marblehead. This was about 1640. The bridge was poorly made, and was gone before 1648. The way by which Mr. Humphrey traveled was by boat from the rear of the parsonage across South River to the landing place of the South field, which was at what is now the southeastern corner of Washington and Dodge streets, and then by land over the ancient, narrow and crooked path through the South field and what is now Loring Avenue to this bridge, by means of which he crossed over the stream to his land.

March 13, 1648-9, the selectmen granted to John Hardy liberty to make a dam to drain his salt meadow at the head of Forest River, in the place where the old bridge was, for seven years. Aug. 4, 1656, the term of seven years having elapsed, the town ordered that William Browne should make a foot bridge where Mr. Humphrey's bridge had been and maintain it for a common foot bridge. At the end of another period of seven years, Dec. 22, 1663, the selectmen of Salem appointed Captain Curwin and Mr. Batter to treat with the selectmen of Marblehead about paying their part of the cost of building the bridge, and "issue it" with them. Nov. 17, 1666, the town voted to pay William Flint five pounds for the bridge. June 25, 1667, the Salem

¹Town Records, volume II, page 81.

court, having received a complaint that the bridge was defective, Salem and Marblehead were ordered to bear the cost of repairs and maintenance of the bridge for horses and persons to pass safely, with rails on either side of the bridge. A month later, the



FOREST RIVER BRIDGE

selectmen voted to repair the bridge, and William Flint repaired the Salem half of it. The next January, the selectmen ordered that no person should fasten any lighter or other vessel, great or small, to any part of this bridge, on penalty of one pound.

May 26, 1673, the selectmen chose John Pickering to rebuild or repair the bridge if Marblehead should appoint a person to act with them for their part, the selectmen of Marblehead to be notified to do so. To oppose the endeavors to compel the town of Marblehead to contribute to the maintenance of the bridge, Marblehead petitioned the Salem court for relief as it was claimed that the Coy Pond land many years before was a part of their town and the channel of the river was the dividing line between the towns; but, in 1679, Salem took the liberty of claiming those lands as a part of their territory, and set the town line over about twenty rods from the bridge. After that time, the bridge was wholly within the town of Salem, and the Marblehead men stated that "the great ability of Salem" renders help unnecessary, and that "the poverty and disability" of Marblehead is such that "it should bear no part of the expense of a bridge or causeway entirely in another town." If the court should make Marblehead responsible for a portion of the maintenance of this bridge, the petitioner prayed that the Coy Pond land be restored to Marblehead, "which so long before we had enjoyed."

In 1675, there was a landing place on the northerly side of the river easterly of the bridge.¹

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 4, leaf 121.

CHAPTER XIX.

COMMERCE



THE catching of fish was the business in which most of the mariners of Salem in the first settlement were engaged, and naturally as the people came out of the fishing establishment at Cape Ann. By the middle of January, 1647, the vessels at Marblehead alone had caught in the season of fishing just closed about four thousand pounds worth of fish.¹

Only a few years after the settlement of Salem, trade was established along the coast with the Netherlands, Virginia and the West Indies, and even across the ocean. The trade with the Dutch, which was profitable, almost caused a breach with the other people of the United Colonies, as the Massachusetts Bay traders were indisposed to war with them. Rev. Edward Norris of Salem, however, wrote a long and interesting letter to the Commissioners of the United Colonies, dated at Salem, May 3, 1653, urging them to follow the threats they had repeatedly made by positive and aggressive activity against the Dutch.²

Jan. 1, 1659-60, a small vessel was burned in Salem Harbor.

March 6, 1661-2, Elder John Browne, when on a voyage to Virginia, was shipwrecked, losing the vessel and cargo, and being

¹Felt's Annals of Salem, volume II, page 212.

April 6, 1660, John Croad of Salem, merchant, conveyed to Walter Price of Salem his interest in the fish and train oil that has been or would be procured by their fishing shallop at Marblehead, kept there for fishing, at Moses Maverick's island, from Oct. 1, 1659, to May 31, 1660.

Mordecai Craford, his wife Judith and John Pride, all of Salem, mortgaged to Capt. Thomas Savage of Boston the barque in which Captain Craford usually sailed, and one-half of the barque that Captain Pride goeth in and the produce of a fishing voyage, which said Craford was then undertaking, with two boats at Cape Nawagon, Dec. 27, 1661.

²See the letter in Hazard's Historical Collections, volume II, page 255.

in great danger from the Indians, but, returning safely, he rendered thanks to God before the congregation for his safety.

William Hollingworth was a merchant here in 1663.

Obadiah Antrim was lost, in 1664, on a voyage to Nevis.

In the same year, Josselyn wrote of Salem: "In this town are some very rich merchants"; and, in 1686, John Dunton, who walked from Boston to Salem to see the place, wrote: "I found the town about a mile long, with many fine houses in it, and it is reported the next town to Boston for trade."

In 1665, Capt. Benjamin Fermayes of Salem died on the coast of Guinea.

In July of that year, great fear was produced here by the report that Admiral De Ruyter was in the West Indies, and intended to visit our coast. Preparations were made to receive him; but contrary winds caused him to sail to Newfoundland, where he "did great spoil."

Dec. 8, 1665, there was a great tempest, and a ketch from Barbadoes, with all her company and passengers, were lost near Salem.

In the beginning of 1667, some Dutch men-of-war came to Virginia, and plundered eighteen or nineteen merchantmen and burned a frigate. John Brown of Salem, son of Elder Brown, was one of the victims.

Feb. 12, 1667, the tax of John Norman was remitted as he had received great loss at sea, being taken by the Dutch.

Sept. 7, 1667, Captain Grafton's vessel and cargo were burned here.

Oct. 9, 1667, a committee, of whom was George Curwin, was appointed to devise regulations for the better building of vessels and more correct procedure in admiralty cases. This resulted in the adoption of a maritime code of laws the next year.

Feb. 21, 1669-70, John Grafton and Joshua Ward had lately suffered shipwreck.

Oct. 15, 1673, the general court, having been informed "that there is one Robert Stone, master of a vessel, lately come from New York and arrived at Salem, judges it necessary in order to the present affairs under consideration, that said Stone, together with Mr. Hollingworth, who was lately taken by the Dutch, be forthwith sent for."

Nov. 16, 1674, Capt. Cornelius Anderson, under Dutch colors, took various articles from Capt. Edward Hilliard, at the eastward. Anderson was captured and tried the next year, on this account, for piracy, which was then punishable with death.

July 8, 1677, a vessel arrived here, which took Capt. Ephraim How of New Haven, the only survivor of his crew, from a desolate

island near Cape Sable, where, for eight months, he suffered exceedingly from cold and hunger.

April 20, 1681, a ketch, commanded by Capt. Edmond Henfield, picked up a boat with Captain Andrew and six of his crew, four hundred and fifty miles from Cape Cod. These persons belonged to a Dublin ship, bound to Virginia, which had sunk two days previously, when sixteen men and three women perished.

Thomas Purchase went on a voyage, and nothing was ever heard of him afterwards.

Oct. 16, 1682, surveyors of goods damaged on board of vessels were provided for; and John Hardy, sr., John Brown and Richard More were appointed for Salem.

In 1685, James Collins sailed for Barbadoes, and was lost.

Sept. 8, 1685, as small-pox was raging at Barbadoes, the selectmen ordered that all cotton imported from there should be landed at Baker's Island.

In 1686, the New England flag had a red cross on a white ground, with a crown in the middle of the cross, and under the crown, the letters "J R" (James Rex).

Aug. 4, 1687, two Salem ketches were taken by a French man-of-war.

Sept. 24, 1687, James Thomas, master of the ship Thomas, stated that he and other French Protestants arrived at Salem the ninth, and that their ship was seized. He prays that he may be tried, and, if condemned, enough may be allowed to the seamen, and to relieve himself from distress.

Sept. 10, 1689, the ship Pelican, a pirate vessel, brought in a prize, which was sold.

Oct. 20, 1689, a brig arrived from Newfoundland, with wine, brandy and English manufactures; and another similar cargo came in another brig.

Nov. 11, 1689, a ketch sailed to Virginia to load with a cargo of tobacco, and from thence to proceed to Scotland.

Dec. 13, 1689, a Salem ketch arrived from Holland.

The capture of vessels was always imminent. There were no officers of the strong right hand of the law to defend one's right in the lonely regions of the ocean. The little defence vessels possessed must be used, and in the old days the men who sailed them were steadily moulded into a hardy and courageous race.

Following King Philip's War, the Indians were very troublesome to the fishing vessels. Thirteen fishing ketches, belonging to Salem, and their crews were captured. Some of the men escaped and reached Salem. Great consternation came over the people here when the news came. July 16, 1677, fourteen of the merchants and leading men of Salem petitioned the general court, praying that a vessel, with forty or fifty men, be suddenly sent out

to secure the vessels which had been lost and put a stop to such losses in the future.¹ A fast was held a week later—on the next lecture day. The exercises were conducted by the pastor, Rev. Mr. Higginson, who was assisted in prayer by Rev. Messrs. Hale, Cheevers and Gerrish, the ministers of the neighboring churches. About nineteen wounded men were sent into Salem a few days before, and on the day of the fast some of the ketches returned, which partially relieved the tension of the people. Among the wounded were James Veren and Anthony Waldern of this place. Two of the townsmen, Nathaniel Kun and Peter Petty, were killed. These four appear to have been connected with the preceding vessels, while on fishing voyages at the eastward. Joshua Scottow's narrative says that, August 18th, on signing articles of peace at Pemaquid, Madockawando delivered up five men, who belonged to ketches of Salem and Marblehead.

May 24, 1681, there was a report that Indians intended to surprise "our ketches fishing near Cape Sable." The military committee of Salem petitioned the government that they might impress a vessel and men, and send her to prevent such a purpose, promising that if the report be false they would pay the cost, but, if true, the Province should pay them.

William Johnson and John Graham and other sea rovers, his accomplices, were tried in the court of assistants in Boston, Nov. 12, 1683, on the charge that, in June, 1683, on the high seas, and near the coast of Canada, with force and arms, piratically assaulted, seized and took several vessels belonging to them, namely, a certain ketch belonging to the port of Salem, John Lambert, master, and three other vessels, making the men belonging to the vessels prisoners, and plundering and sharing among themselves the goods in the said vessels. The jury found the defendants not guilty.

Aug. 1, 1687, two ketches of Salem were captured by the French.

June 13, 1689, the government ordered that a vessel "scour our coast of pirates, then carry soldiers on the Eastern expedition, and protect our fishing vessels on the coast of Acadie."

Sept. 17, 1689, five Salem ketches were taken by two French frigates. Soon after this, the merchants of Salem sent a petition to the council, stating that several of their vessels had not returned with their last fares; and that six of them, with thirty men, had been captured and carried into Port Royal. They also remarked, that they were discouraged from fitting out their craft next spring, and desired that an agent be dispatched to see about those detained by the French.

¹Massachusetts Archives, volume 69, leaf 154a.

John Blackleach of Salem petitioned the general court for relief from the depredation of the Moors. The petition was received and consented to, and referred to the elders "to inform them of the mind of God therein," and upon their report to further consider the matter. The Turkish pirates were very offensive along the shores of Europe, and disturbed our foreign commerce. The general court commissioned Capt. Thomas Breadcake, master of a ship, Nov. 13, 1644, to take any Turkish pirate within twelve months. Winter Island had been fortified by two small cannon, belonging to the colonial government; and now the court loaned them for this purpose to Captain Breadcake, who was to return them by the middle of the next summer (1645). The owners of the vessel were bound for their return, or pay the value of the guns by the next summer. The guns were probably never returned. The Barbary corsairs held many of Salem's mariners in bondage for slavery and their ransom charges.

April 13, 1645, the governor and assistants received intelligence that d'Aulnay had taken a vessel from Salem commanded by Joseph Grafton, because she was bound, with provisions, to the Fort of La Tour; that he had turned her crew upon island, kept them there ten days when the snow was deep, destitute of fire, and only covered with an old wigwam; that he then sent them away in a shallop, without gun or compass. The next day after leaving the island, they were pursued by hostile Indians. The governor and assistants sent a request to d'Aulnay to give up the vessel and cargo.

An interesting section of Salem of this period is that around Creek Street, which was a large tidal creek, on the shores of which were wharves and ship building yards, with dwelling houses of the shipwrights, smiths, seamen, etc. Many vessels of the smaller varieties were built here. Capt. Nicholas Manning forged anchors of not less than one hundred pounds in weight and Capt. Manasseh Marston and Jonathan Felt were also anchor-smiths and had their shops here. Samuel King was a blockmaker. This section of territory was granted by the town to John Sweet very early, and from him the title passed to Thomas Ruck and his children and grandchildren and the locality was called "Ruck's Village." Later, the Bacons came and lived here and added their efforts for the building of vessels. So much business was done here that the sound of the mallets was almost incessant and the place became known as "Knockers' hole." The creek was filled about 1829. The western end of Creek Street was laid out, fourteen feet wide, as a lane to the landing place at the head of the creek, in 1692. The western end of Gedney Court was laid out, by the two adjoining owners, to Col. Bartholmew Gedney's building place in 1760, and the High Street end in 1796.

Jacques (James) Pepin was a merchant of Rochelle, France, where his father was an elder in the Protestant Church, and he made voyages to Salem. April 25, 1661, he was one of five to petition the general court to become inhabitants of this jurisdiction. His petition was allowed, but without the right to trade here.¹ "Monsieur Pipen" had a house in Salem in which he lived.² In January, 1672-3, he brought a French woman here in his vessel, and the selectmen ordered him to take her aboard his ship again. This was done by Constable John Williams.³ In August, 1661, "Mounsier Pepine" and Joshua Scottow had been at Salem in Pepin's ship, which, with its cargo, Pepin had sold to William Browne, George Corwin, Joshua Scottow and Walter Price, and the new owners appointed Scottow their attorney to take control of the vessel and cargo, but some days later he relinquished his authority under the power.⁴

London merchants contended that England was the magazine of European goods, and, according to law, the colonists here had no right to procure their goods elsewhere. At this time, New England merchants traded with European ports and invited the people with whom they traded to trade with them, in turn. The merchants of England, therefore, in 1675, petitioned their government that New England might be compelled to conform thereto. The world traded here without any export tax, and with a tax on imports. Edward Randolph came to Massachusetts, with authority to act as inspector of customs, and also a commission to empower the council and others, among whom was George Curwin, to administer oath to Governor Leverett, whereby he should obligate himself to execute the Royal Act of trade. The governor declined to take the oath. Thus, our people refused thus early to play into the hands of England. Randolph charged our government with refusing to obey the royal order for him to be collector of customs. Under subsequent dates, Randolph complained to the Lords of Trade of commercial transactions in Salem.

In 1663, Hilliard Veren was elected by the general court as collector of the ports of Salem, Marblehead and Gloucester, John Croade having been first chosen by the deputies, Oct. 28, 1663, but the assistants did not concur with them. May 20, 1668, the general court chose Edmond Batter and Henry Bartholmew to collect duties at the Salem port. They were ordered to repair to the warehouses, etc., where any foreign goods were placed on sale in any of the harbors. Upon complaint to them, constables of the town levied upon the goods on which the duty had not been

¹Massachusetts Archives, volume A15, leaves 7 and 9.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 2, leaf 42.

³Salem Town Records, volume II, page 154.

⁴Massachusetts Archives, volume 60, leaf 132.

paid. The rate was at that time one penny per pound. The commissioners who had charge of the collection of the duties were ordered to meet at Salem on the first sixth day of each month.¹ Among the protestants against imposts in Salem were Abraham Cole and John Cole. Mr. Veren was the collector in 1679, and he was succeeded by William Bowditch, who died suddenly Oct. 12, 1681. Feb. 15, 1681-2, Benjamin Gerrish was appointed to succeed him. He was probably suspended during the Andros regime, when Thomas Offley was collector. In 1687, Thomas Dyer was surveyor. April 15, 1689, William Brown was appointed, under Andros, "chief officer of the customs at Salem." The Revolution occurred on the eighteenth, and Benjamin Gerrish was elected to succeed Brown on the twenty-fourth.

There was no known custom-house in the early days in Salem. The records were probably kept and the duties paid at the house of the collector.

Feb. 7, 1683, it was ordered that Marblehead, Beverly, Gloucester, Ipswich, Rowley, Newbury and Salisbury belonged to the Salem port of entry. In 1686, the extent of the port of Salem was somewhat modified.

WHARVES

In 1662, the town voted to allow wharves to be built around Burying point; and, in 1681, William Brown, jr., and other merchants were permitted to have wharves on the cove which lay between Burying point and the foot of Norman Street and which ran up near Town House Square. One condition of the privilege was, that the town "have wharfage free there."

Dec. 23, 1661, the town gave liberty for shops to be built below the bank between the burying ground at the Burying point and South River, and gave authority to the selectmen to carry out the purpose. Before spring, however, it was considered as a commercial center; and at a town meeting, May 5, 1662, Abraham Cole, Zebulon Hill, William Lake and Samuel Williams were each granted a twenty-four feet strip from the water to the burialplace, Henry Bartholmew, Mr. Price, John Brown (son of Mr. William Browne) and Edmond Batter were each granted strips thirty-five feet wide, to build warehouses on, and Major Hathorne, John Porter and John Gidney were each granted strips of thirty-five feet in width. There were lands laid out at the burying point: "To Abraham Cole next Natha: Pitman at the head of the Cove. 24 foot To Henry Bartholmew next to Abra: Cole 40 foot To Mr. John Browne, the ruling Elder—35 foot To Mr. Price: 35 foot To Zebulon Hill: for a shop: 24 foot To William Lake 24

¹Massachusetts Archives, volume 60, leaf 38.

foot To Sam: Williams 24 foot To Mr. Batter 35 foot To Jo: Brown Mr. William Browne's son 35 foot To Jo: Gedny 35 foot. To Sam: Gardner and his brother Joseph: 70 foot To Serg. Porter: 35 foot To Major Hathorne 35 foot." It was "ordered that all the bigger lots that are for warehouses shall leave a sufficient way of ten foot broad between their houses and the bank and the lesser that are for shops shall leave a sufficient way of ten foot broad before their houses or shops."

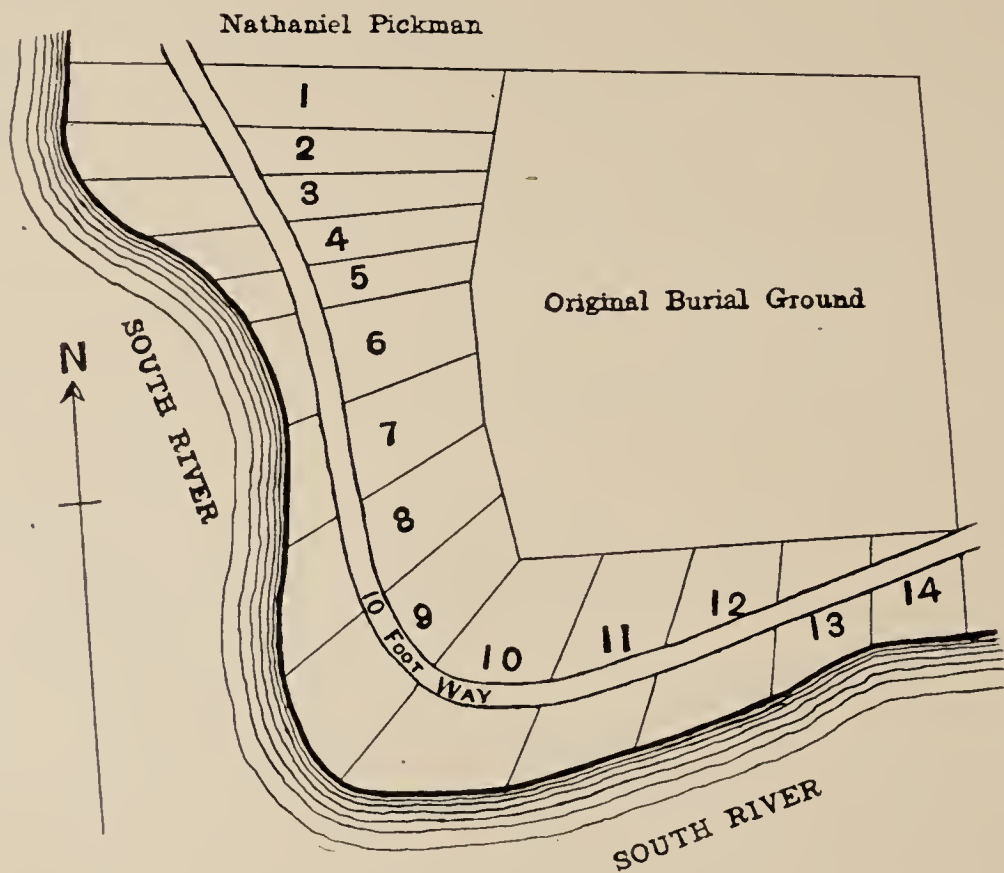
Examination of the titles to these lots, from the present time back to the time the grants were made, show that the layouts were as shown on the accompanying plan. The original owners of the lots were found to be as follows: 1. Alexander Cole; 2. Henry Bartholmew; 3. John Browne, ruling elder; 4. Mr. Price; 5. Zebulon Hill; 6. William Lake; 7. Samuel Williams; 8. Edmund Batter; 9. John Browne; 10. John Gedney; 11. Samuel Gardner; 12. Joseph Gardner; 13. John Porter; 14. William Hathorne.

March 3, 1661-2, the town "ordered that the selectmen with those masters of vessels that are then in town to join with them to advise with such as have land granted at the burying point how that may accomodate them so as that there may be a place left for graving of vessels and that all further proceeding be suspended until this be done." Three days later, the selectmen ordered that "those three shops"¹ laid out together.

Dec. 23, 1661, the town gave liberty for shops to be built below the bank between the burying ground at the burying point and South River, and gave authority to the selectmen to carry out the purpose. Before spring, however, it was considered as a commercial center; and at a town meeting, May 5, 1662, Abraham Cole, Zebulon Hill, William Lake and Samuel Williams were each granted a twenty-four feet strip from the water to the burialplace, Henry Bartholmew, Mr. Price, John Brown (son of Mr. William Browne and Edmond Batter were each granted strips thirty-five feet wide, to build warehouses on, and Major Hathorne, John Porter and John Gedney were each granted strips of thirty-five feet in width. There were lands laid out at the burying point: "To Abraham Cole next Natha: Pitnam at the heads of the Coue. 24 foote To Henry Bartholmew next to Abra: Cole: 40 foote To m^r John Browne the rulinge Elder—35 foote To m^r Price: 35 foote To Zebulon Hill: for a fhopp: 24 foote To William Lake 24 foote To Sam: Williams 24 foote To m^r Battar 35 foote To Jo: Brown m^r William Brownes son 35 foote To m^r Jo: Gedny 35 foote To Sam: Gardn^r and his brother Jofeph: 70 foote To ferg Porter: 35 foote To maio^r Hathorne 35 foote." It was

¹Cole's, Hill's and Lake's.

ordered that all the bigger lotts that are for ware houfes fhall leaue a fufficyent way of ten foote broode between their houfes and the banke and the leifer lotts that are for fhoppes fhall leaue a fufficyent way of ten foote brode before theyer houfes or fhoppes."

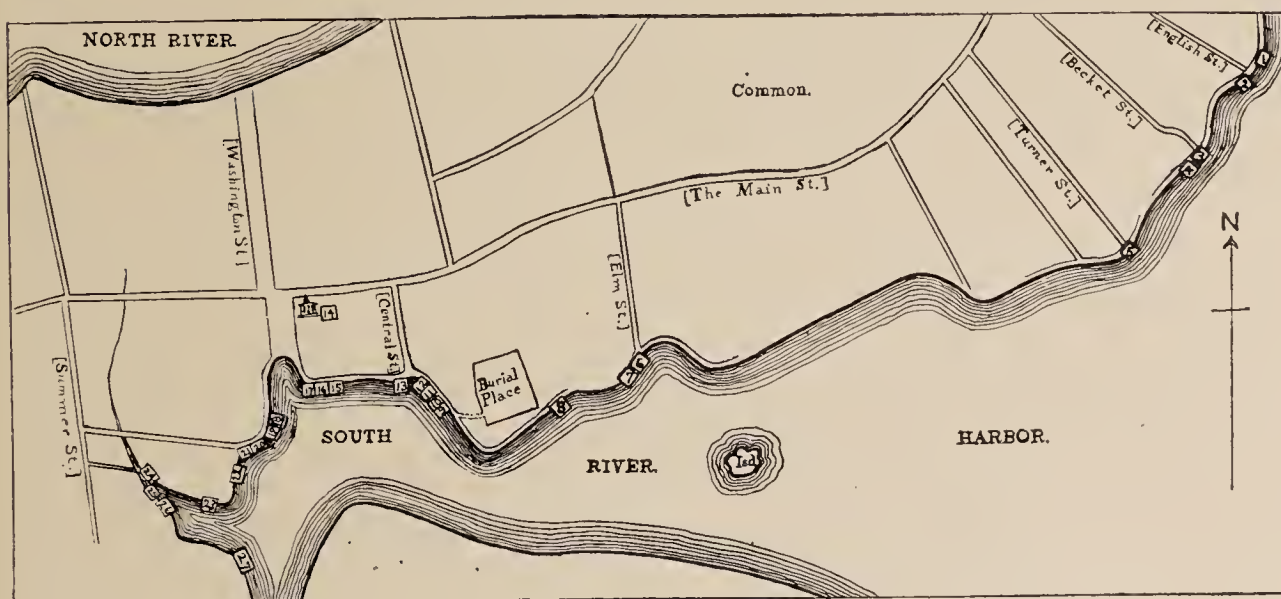


GRANTS AT BURYING POINT

March 3, 1661-2, the town "ordered that the select men with thofe maft^{rs} of vefells that are then in towne to joyne with them to advife with fuch as haue lande granted at the buryings poynt how that may acomodate them foe as that there may be a place left for grauinge of vefells and that all further proceedinge be fufpended vntill this be Done" Three days' later, the selectmen ordered that "thofe 3 shoppes¹ laide out together are so to wharf as that they leaue sufficient room before their wharves for grav- inge of vessels those that have ground laid out for warehouses have liberty to wharf so low as they please and it is further order- ed that it shall be in the liberty of any person inhabitant or stranger to land at any of those wharves and also to moor or fasten his boat skiff or other vessel at any wharf provided it is not in the liberty of any person to land any goods whatever at any wharf unless the owner of the goods doe first agree with the owner of the wharf."

¹Cole's, Hill's and Lake's.

Front Street at this time followed the high-water mark, and soon had so many wharves along its water front that it was known as Wharf Street. The wharves, in that direction, were soon extended to Creek Street, and then up Creek Street nearly to Summer Street. The town landing was on the southwesterly corner of what are now Lafayette and Front streets.



LOCATION OF WHARVES

The following is a list of known wharves of this period. The numbers after the name of each wharf's or warehouse's name is that of each wharf or warehouse as shown on the accompanying map.

Hollingworth Wharf (1). At the foot of English Street, on the easterly side, was Hollingworth wharf, on which was a warehouse as early as 1661. This was in front of the ancient Blue Anchor Tavern, and was the property of Mrs. Hollingworth, widow of William Hollingworth, who was lost at sea in 1677. He had owned the property as early as 1661. Mrs. Hollingworth conveyed the estate to her daughter Mary, wife of Philip English Feb. 17, 1684-5. Mrs. English died in 1694, and the title descended to her son Philip English, who conveyed it to Richard Derby Feb. 24, 1748. The wharf and warehouse were then in use.

Pinson Wharf (2). On the westerly side of and at the foot of English Street was a wharf owned by William Pinson, a fisherman, as early as 1686. He conveyed the property to John Carter, who was, also, a fisherman, in the same year.

Becket Shipyard and Wharf (3). In front of the old Becket house was the shipyard of the famous builders of vessels of that name from the early days to about 1816.

Bridges Wharf (4). Next westerly of the Becket shipyard was a wharf built by Edmund Bridges in 1680. He was a black-

smith, and conveyed one-half of the wharf to his son Edmund, who died June 24, 1682. The entire property was sold to widow Elizabeth Turner in that year. Before Oct. 28, 1699, the title had passed to John Turner, merchant, and at that date he conveyed the property to William Beckett, who owned and occupied the adjoining shipyard; and, Nov. 1, 1699, Mr. Beckett conveyed the estate to Abraham Purchase, a blacksmith. Mr. Purchase died in or before 1724, and the estate was divided in 1735, the wharf and old house being assigned to his widow Ruth Purchase.

Turner Wharf and Warehouse (5). John Turner, a mariner, built a wharf and two warehouses on his home lot about 1670, and died possessed of them Oct. 9, 1680. The estate descended to his son John Turner, a merchant, who died in 1692, possessed of the wharf and warehouse.

Higginson Wharf and Warehouse (6). This wharf and warehouse were built by John Higginson and Thomas Gardner in the spring of 1687. They divided the warehouse, June 6, 1687, Higginson had the northern end and Gardner the southern, and fifty feet of the wharf was to continue in common between them. Lieutenant Gardner died Nov. 16, 1695, and the administrator of his estate conveyed his portion of the wharf and warehouse to Capt. Benjamin Allen, a mariner, Sept. 3, 1697. Mr. Higginson died in 1719, and the executor of his will sold his portion to Capt. Peter Osgood, who lived where the Salem Hospital was formerly located on Charter Street, in 1722.

Moore Wharf and Warehouse (7). This wharf and warehouse belonged to Capt. Richard Moore as early as 1659, and he conveyed it to John Higginson, jr., a merchant, Oct. 29, 1687. Mr. Higginson died in 1719; and the executor of his will conveyed it to Capt. Peter Osgood Feb. 26, 1721-2.

Bowditch Wharf and Warehouse (8). This wharf was probably built by William Bowditch, a merchant, in 1676; and he, also, erected a warehouse thereon. He had a brewhouse on the wharf, when he conveyed the property to Philip Cromwell Aug. 26, 1680. Mr. Cromwell died March 30, 1693, and the estate descended to his son John Cromwell, who died, possessed of it, Sept. 30, 1700. The wharf and warehouse were still there, but the latter was then called "old". The warehouse then had a leanto, which was usual.

Bartholmew Wharf and Warehouse (9). This wharf and warehouse were built by Henry Bartholmew in 1662. He removed to Boston before Feb. 7, 1679-80, when he conveyed the property to Timothy Lindall, a merchant. Mr. Lindall died Jan. 6, 1698-9, and the wharf and warehouse were then standing.

Sanders Wharf and Warehouse (10). John Sanders was a mariner, and built this wharf and warehouse in 1682.

Cole Wharf (11). Alexander Cole apparently built this wharf, which was in the ownership and possession of John Pilgrim in 1708.

Hill Wharf (12). This wharf was built by John Hill, a cooper, in 1686. He died in the spring of 1691, having devised it in his will to his wife Priscilla, who conveyed it to Philip Hill, a cooper, Nov. 22, 1692. Mr. Hill owned it in 1700.

Town Wharf (13). William Browne was granted an interest in this wharf by the town Aug. 29, 1681; and died possessed of it Jan. 20, 1687-7, when it descended to his son Benjamin Browne.

Corwin Warehouse (14). George Corwin had a warehouse as early as 1662; and this one in 1668. He called it the upper warehouse, and it measured $44\frac{1}{2} \times 18\frac{1}{2}$ feet, Jan. 3, 1684-5, when he died. It occupied the rear portion of what is now Hale's Block. The heirs of Mr. Corwin conveyed it to his daughter Mrs. Susanna Lyde Dec. 1, 1701.

Cole Wharf (15). John Cole built this wharf in 1662; and he conveyed it to Robert Wilkes, a shipwright, Feb. 22, 1675-6. Mr. Wilkes was taken sick on a voyage from Bristol to New England in the summer of 1677, and died on the way, having devised this property to his niece Mrs. Mary Woodbury, who conveyed it to Deliverance Parkman Feb. 19, 1693-4. He died in 1715, possessed of the wharf and warehouse.

Batter Warehouses (16). These two warehouses of Edmond Batter stood on the easterly side of Washington Street and northern side of Front Street, the westerly half of each of them standing in what is now Washington Street. The upper warehouse was gone before 1700, and the other was then standing.

Corwin Wharf (17). This was George Corwin's wharf. There was a dock and wharf fifty feet in length there April 24, 1695, when the administrator of the estate of George Corwin conveyed them to James Gillingham, and he sold the property to Edmond Batter Oct. 18, 1695.

Price Wharf and Warehouse (18). Capt. Walter Price owned this wharf and warehouse.

Corwin Wharf and Warehouse (19). In 1668, this wharf and warehouse was located at the northern entrance to the stone railroad station. The warehouse was of two stories in height; and George Corwin conveyed one divided half of the wharf and warehouse to Robert Kitchen in or before 1689, and the other half to Roger Derby, a shopkeeper, July 13, 1689.

Tawley Wharf and Warehouse (20). This wharf had a warehouse back of it, and, in 1680, it belonged to John Tawley, a mariner, who died in 1690.

Marston Wharf (21): This wharf belonged to Benjamin Marston, and its western end was included in what is now Mill Street.

Ruck Wharf and Warehouse (22). The Rucks carried on shipbuilding where Mill Street now runs, and had their wharf and warehouse here. They owned the property as late as 1702.

Felt Wharf (23). This wharf was probably built for the use of Jonathan Felt, an anchor smith, who had come from Falmouth. His smith's shop was adjoining the wharf. The land was a portion of the large Ruck estate and owned by Thomas Ruck of Boston and then by his son John Ruck, who let it to Mr. Felt.

Lambert Shipyard (24). This was the shipyard of Daniel Lambert from 1686 for about ten years, when he died.

Rix Wharf (25). This wharf was built by James Rix, a carpenter, in 1685, and he became a shipwright. He removed to Preston, Conn., in 1703, and conveyed the estate to Ebenezer Lambert, a shipwright, June 12, 1705.

Marston Wharf (26). Capt. Manasseh Marston was a blacksmith and bought this lot of land Jan. 7, 1669. He died in 1704; and the estate came into the hands of Charles King, who conveyed it to James King, a blockmaker, Oct. 10, 1761.

Gedney Wharf (27). This was the property of Eleazer Gedney in 1665, and he built vessels here, launching them near this wharf, which was called "the Lower wharf." He died April 29, 1683, and his widow and administrator of his estate conveyed it to his eldest son Eleazer Gedney Oct. 23, 1690.

The location of ancient wharves and landings are very difficult of determination, as they were of a transitory nature and situated upon worthless flats and unowned water. This was especially true in the early days. Besides those wharves and warehouses above mentioned were others here whose location is unknown to the writer. William Browne and Edmond Batter had a warehouse as early as 1662, and Joseph Grafton, jr., and Nathaniel Grafton had warehouses at the time of their decease in 1671. Capt. Walter Price had a warehouse in the town at his death, in 1674, which was valued at forty-five pounds. Richard Prince, sr., had one when he died in 1675.

VESSELS

Now, as to the vessels themselves. They were very small, and most of them were the two-masted ketches. These strong and firm vessels rode out wind and wave, though tossed about in both storm and pleasant weather.

An agreement for the construction of a ship, made with William Stevens, who was formerly a shipbuilder in Salem, but then of Gloucester, with John Browne, on behalf of himself and

Nicholas Balhach and John Balhach, all then of Jersey, merchants, dated June 6, 1661, shows something of the size and construction of vessels at this early period of our commerce. Mr. Stevens agreed to build a new ship of sixty-eight feet in length by the keel and twenty-three feet broad from outside to outside, to be nine and one-half feet high in the hold under the beam, with two decks, forecastle, quarter-deck and round house, the deck from the main mast to the forecastle to be five feet high, with a fall at the forecastle of fifteen inches, and a raise at the main mast to the quarter-deck of six inches, the great cabin to be six feet high, Stevens was to find timber, plank, trunnells, pitch, tar and oakum, and the hull was to be finished and the vessel launched by the last of July, 1662. "Said Browne and Company" were to find all iron work, carved work and joiner's work in due time, and were to pay said Stevens three pounds and five shillings per ton of the said ship's burthen,—that is, fifty pounds in goods at Mr. Brown's, Mr. Corwin's or Mr. Price's in Salem, one hundred and fifty pounds in Muscovadus sugar, at two pence per pound, at Barbadoes and one hundred pounds in New English money. As to the charge for building the vessel, at that time the ordinary price was four pounds a tun.

A vessel belonging to Philip English of Salem, Captain Bavage, master, was at Cape Sables Sept. 12, 1688.

The following is a list of the vessels that belonged in Salem, with a few connected with Salem, which, for the time, were practically Salem vessels. This list does not include vessels from other ports and trading or otherwise in Salem.

Abigail. Ship. She sailed from Weymouth, England, June 20, 1628, Henry Gauden, master, having been hired by the Massachusetts Bay Company to take over Endecott and some colonists, and arrived at Naumkeag Sept. 6, 1628.

On another voyage, she sailed from Plymouth, England, July —, 1635, with Hugh Peter, John Winthrop, jr., Harry Vane and others on board, and arrived Aug. 6, 1635.

Adventure. Ketch. This vessel was owned by William Payne of Boston in October, 1657, Stephen Talby, master. The owner purposed to send it on a voyage to England, on account of Simon Bradstreet, on an adventure to London, with sugar consigned to Peter Cole of London, merchant, Dec. 17, 1657.

Alligator. Ketch. At the time of his death, in 1652, John Hardy owned one-fourth of this vessel, which one-fourth was appraised at that time at thirty pounds. This would make the value of the vessel one hundred and twenty pounds.

Ambrose. Ship. This vessel belonged to Gov. Matthew Cradock, and was commanded by John Lowell. It sailed from Southampton, England, March 22, 1630, and arrived at Salem about the middle of June.

Arbella. Ship. 350 tuns burthen. For its figurehead, it had the effigy of an eagle; and it was originally called the Eagle. The name was changed to *Arbella*, probably because the funds of Lady *Arbella* Johnson, who came to Salem in her, undoubtedly purchased the vessel. She sailed from Southampton, England, Peter Milborne, master, March 22, 1630, and arrived in Salem on Monday, June 14th. It carried three hundred passengers. She was manned by a crew of fifty-two seamen, and carried twenty-eight pieces of ordnance. Governor Winthrop and Maj. William Hathorne came in this vessel at that time. The ship sailed from Salem to Charlestown about two months later.

Beginning. Ketch. 24 tuns burthen. At the time of his death, in 1674, Capt. Walter Price owned five-eighths of this vessel, which five-eighths was appraised at that time at sixty pounds, that is, at a valuation of ninety-six pounds for the whole.

Betty. Ketch. 26 tuns burthen. William Bowditch of Salem, a merchant, conveyed this vessel to Philip Cromwell of Salem Nov. 20, 1679. The vessel was commanded by Pasco Foot, and was then at sea.

Betty. Lighter. John Dodge of Salem sold to John Roberts of Gloucester, boatman, three-eighths of this shallop Nov. 10, 1677.

Blessing. Ship. The vessel belonged in London, England, was owned by James Reed and Thomas Carrick, and commanded by Thomas Carrick. Edward Prescott, freighter of the ship, agreed to lade and dispatch the vessel out of New England by July 1, 1652, to carry goods for William Browne, George Corwin and Walter Price, merchants, of Salem, but the ship was not rigged nor graved, nor ready to receive the cargo, for Barbadoes. Her bows were weak and leaky and the sails insufficient.

Blessing. Ketch. In this vessel, Job Hillard was in Maryland in 1669, with a cargo of tobacco.

John Blackleach and Richard Lord were partners in an adventure of fish, bought in Salem, or elsewhere, for the full lading of this vessel, Nov. 21, 1672. The voyage was to be first to Bilboa, then to France, etc.

Benjamin Ganson was master of this vessel in 1677, when he brought wines from Madeira, for its owner, Capt. John Corwin.

Blossom. Ketch. 35 tuns burthen. At the time of his death, in 1680, John Turner owned this vessel, which was then appraised at one hundred and seventy pounds. It carried a crew of five men, and was commanded by William Pride in 1699.

Bonetta. Ketch. 25 tuns burthen. It carried a crew of five men, and was commanded by Martin Masury in 1699.

Charles. Ship. This vessel sailed from Southampton, England, for Naumkeag, after March 22, 1630, and anchored at Salem July 5th.

Coach. Pinnace. On her course to New Haven, this vessel sprang a leak in our bay. The seamen and passengers took to the skiff, which was too small to accommodate them, when the wind was nearly a gale, but John Jackson, who seems to have been in command, remained, and prevailed on them to return on board and endeavor to stop the leak and get her into port. They did so, and finally reached Salem in safety.

Content. Ketch. 38 tuns burthen. April 1, 1682, this was a new vessel, and, at that time, Bartholmew Gedney, Esq., of Salem, for one hundred and seventy-one pounds, sixteen shillings and ten pence, conveyed to John Tawley of Salem, mariner, one-half of this vessel, with one-half of its masts, sails, anchors, boat, etc. This would show that the entire value was three hundred and forty-three pounds, thirteen shillings and eight pence.

Crickett. Ketch. 18 tuns burthen. At the time of his death, in 1674, Capt. Walter Price owned one-half of this vessel, which was then appraised at twenty-five pounds. This would make the entire value of it fifty pounds.

Daniel and Elizabeth. Ship. 200 tuns burthen. Daniel Jeanverin of the Island of Jersey, now resident in New England, conveyed to Thomas Mudgett of Salisbury, New England, shipwright, for two hundred pounds sterling, one-eighth of this vessel, which then belonged in Jersey, and then riding at anchor in the harbor of Salem, with one-eighth of her masts, sails, yards, anchors, cables, boat, etc., Oct. 20, 1681. The consideration for this one-eighth would make the entire value of the vessel sixteen hundred pounds sterling.

Desire. Ship. 120 tuns burthen. This vessel was built at Marblehead in the summer of 1636. It was fitted with three falcons and one falconet, of the weight of three thousand, eight hundred and seventy pounds, taken from the bark Warwick. The commander was Capt. William Peirse.

In the summer of 1637, Captain Peirse went on a cruise to the West Indies, with a cargo of dry fish and strong liquors. He made Providence Isle. The return cargo consisted of cotton, tobacco, negroes, etc., from Providence, and salt from Tortuga.

In the summer of 1640, she made a trip from Marblehead to England, arriving at Gravesend, in the Thames, in twenty-three days.

She also made a trip to England in the spring of 1641.

Diligence. Ketch. 20 tuns burthen. It carried a crew of six men, and was commanded by Gamaliel Hawkins Dec. 14, 1688, when it received a pass from Governor Andros to go on a voyage to Antigua.

Sept. 17, 1689, when it was commanded by Gilbert Peters it was taken by two French frigates. See Thomas and Mary.

Dolphin. Ship. 100 tuns burthen. Sept. 14. 1685, William Browne, sr., and William Browne, jr., merchants, for themselves and the other owners of this good ship or pink called ye Dolphin of Salem, Alexander Cole of Salem, master, now riding in the port of Boston, let it to Thomas Pilgrim, Edward Hunt and Joseph Grove of the Island of Barbadoes, merchants, freighters, for twelve months certain and three months uncertain, for a voyage from Boston to the Island of Barbadoes and from thence to Virginia and from thence to England, Ireland or Holland, or from Virginia to ye Island of Madeira and so to Barbadoes and from thence to Boston, for twenty-five pounds in current money of New England per month, from Aug. 20, 1685, when this charter party commenced.

Dolphin. Ketch. John Ruck hired three-fourths of this vessel of James Underwood of Salem, and William Hollingworth claimed to own it in June, 1655.¹

James Underwood and Alexander Seares, owner and master of this vessel, agreed with Thomas Stegge, hirer of it, to sufficiently fit out and man it with all expedition for the use of said Stegge for four months certain or six months uncertain, Sept. 2, 1658, in Boston. Stegge agreed to pay for the use of the vessel and men's wages, etc., eighteen pounds and ten shillings per month in "the Manhattas," and the vessel was to trade between Virginia and "Manhattoes".

This vessel sailed from Boston to Thomas Woodbury's point, in Beverly, in 1677, with a parcel of sail for Richard Stackhouse.

Sept. 18, 1689, the vessel, then commanded by Isaac Woodbury of Salem, was taken by two French frigates. See Thomas and Mary.

Dove. Ketch. 40 tuns burthen. Nathaniel Grafton of Salem owned one-eighth of this ketch, which was appraised at fifty pounds at the time of Mr. Grafton's death, in 1671. The whole value, therefore, was four hundred pounds.

This vessel was called a pink March 27, 1689, when the governor gave a pass for it to go to Barbadoes, under the command of Zebulon Hill, and with a crew of six men.

Elizabeth and Margaret. Ship. This ship was "lately" built by John Becket (May 4, 1671). It was owned by John Corwin and partners, and commanded by John Browne, jr., at that time.

Endeavor. Bark. This vessel was of Salem, and was commanded by Joseph Grafton on a voyage to the Isle of Sables in 1641.

Endeavor. Ketch. 30 tuns burthen. This vessel was owned by William Hirst, and went on a fishing trip in 1682. It was

¹See Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex, volume I, page 391.

commanded by Stephen Daniell. They sailed from Winter Island, and took two barrels of bait mackerel, two barrels of pork, five bushels of peas, eighty-eight pounds of butter, one gallon of vinegar, one pound of pepper, a cord of wood, etc. The men shipped on shares, which was the ordinary way.

In 1699, she again was given a pass on a fishing voyage. She was then commanded by Thomas Mascoll, with a crew of five.

Flower. Ketch. John Hardy of Salem bequeathed one-eighth of this vessel, in his will, to his son Joseph Hardy March 30, 1652.

Four Sisters. Ship. 30 tuns burthen. This vessel sailed from Gravesend, England, for Naumkeag, June 3, 1629. It belonged in London, and was a "fair ship." It was commanded by Roger Harmon; and brought passengers, cattle and provision.

Frances and Elizabeth. Ketch. Mark Hascall hired (owner of?) one-half of this vessel for thirty months; and he was sued by Henry Russell (owner of one-half?) for one-eighth of the hire or profit of it, Nov. 26, 1661, in Salem court.

Frances and Mary. Ketch. 31 tuns burthen. This vessel belonged in Salem, where she was riding at anchor in the South River, by the wharf of David Phippen of Salem, shipwright, who had (May 17, 1679) "lately built and launched" it. Its hull, finished and fitted for the sea, with all carpenter work, boat, masts and yards, Phippen conveyed, for one hundred and twenty-five pounds sterling, to Robert Hodg, mariner, Nehemiah Willoughby, merchant, Eleazer Gedney, shipwright, and Francis Skerry, all of Salem, May 17, 1679.

Fraternity. Ketch. John Turner of Salem owned one-eighth of this vessel, which was valued at his death, in 1680, at forty pounds. The value of the whole at that rate would have been three hundred and twenty pounds. The commander of it, March 16, 1681-2, was Deliverance Parkman of Salem.

Friendship. Ship. 130 tuns burthen. Early in August, 1674, this vessel, which belonged in Salem, was out of New England. It was built in Salem, and carried six guns.

April 2, 1687, Governor Andros gave it a pass to go on a voyage to London. It was then commanded by John Ware.

Friendship. Ketch. 36 tuns burthen. Walter Price of Salem owned this vessel at the time of his death, in 1674, having bequeathed one-third of it in his will to his son John Price as a part of what was promised to him upon his marriage. At the time of Walter Price's death, in 1674, the ketch was appraised at one hundred and sixty pounds. Mr. Price bequeathed the residue of his estate to his wife Elizabeth for her life and then to his son William Price, if she think meet, "according as he shall behave himself."

John Turner of Salem owned one-fourth of this ketch when he died in 1680, which was then appraised at sixty-five pounds, or two hundred and sixty pounds for the whole.

April 1, 1683, the ketch *Friendship*, Richard Ingersoll, master, on his return from a voyage to "Saltatudos," was cast away on Cape Cod, and his brother Nathaniel Ingersoll, one of the crew, perished.

George Bonaventure. Ship. 300 tuns burthen. This vessel was hired by the Massachusetts Bay Company to transport colonists to Naumkeag, in 1628-9, and came to Naumkeag in the following summer. It was a strong vessel, and carried twenty pieces of ordnance. It was manned by about thirty mariners, and commanded by Thomas Cox. Rev. Samuel Skelton and his family came on this voyage, sailing from England about the middle of April and from the Isle of Wight May 4th, and being anchored at Naumkeag June 22d. The *George* returned to England by way of Newfoundland. The charter and seal of the Massachusetts Bay Colony were brought in this vessel on this voyage by Samuel Sharp.

Gift. Ketch. John Hardy of Salem, in his will, dated March 30, 1652, gave one-fourth of his "new ketch" *The Gift*, to his son Joseph Hardy. In the inventory of his estate his three-fourths of the ketch was appraised at sixty pounds. This would make eighty pounds the value of the whole vessel. In his will, Mr. Hardy gave the residue of his estate to his wife Elizabeth. She died in the autumn of 1654, having given in her will, which was declared invalid, one-half of the ketch *Gift* to her son Joseph Hardinge.

Hannah. Ketch. 35 tuns burthen. The governor issued a pass for her to go on a voyage to Fayal and Barbadoes in 1686. She then carried six men, and was commanded by John Ingersoll.

Hannah and Elizabeth. Ship. Nov. 18, 1679 this vessel arrived from Dartmouth with forty-seven passengers.

Hope. Ketch. 70 tuns burthen. Richard Hollingworth of Salem, mariner, conveyed to David Morgan of the Isle of Barbadoes, merchant, one-eighth of this vessel, which was then riding at anchor in the harbor of Salem, together with one-eighth of her masts, yards, sails, anchors, cables, tackle, boat and other furniture, Oct. 20, 1668.

Oct. 10, 1670, Edmund Henfield was its master on a voyage to Virginia.

This was undoubtedly the same vessel, Edmund Henfield, master, which, April 20, 1681, picked up a boat with Captain Andrew and six of his crew, one hundred and fifty leagues from Cape Cod. These persons, so rescued, belonged to a Dublin ship, bound to Virginia. She had sunk on the eighteenth, with sixteen men and three women passengers, who perished.

Hope. Ketch. 27 tuns burthen. Capt. Walter Price of Salem owned one-half of this vessel at his decease, in 1674, when it was appraised at sixty pounds, that is, one hundred and twenty pounds for the whole.

Hopewell. Ketch. 30 tuns burthen. Richard Rayment of Salem, mariner, conveyed to Walter Price of Salem, merchant, one-fourth of this vessel, which belonged to Salem, now riding at anchor in the harbor of Boston, with one-fourth of her masts, yards, sails, anchors, cables, tackle, boat and furniture, warranted "one whole year and a day next after the date hereof, according to the laws of Oleron, perils of the seas and enemies only excepted," Aug. 27, 1660. Captain Price conveyed this interest in the vessel to John Gedney, sr., and John Gedney, jr., in 1661-2.

Industry. Ketch. 45 tuns burthen. The governor gave a pass for her to take a voyage to St. Christophers, Nov. 18, 1687. She was commanded by Lewis Hunt, and carried a crew of six men.

Mary Batter of Salem, for ninety-five pounds, conveyed one-half of this vessel to Nathaniel Dummer of Southton, England, mercer, with one-half of her tackle and apparel, Jan. 5, 1688-9. She was then commanded by Captain Hunt.

James Bonaventure. Ketch. 30 tuns burthen. She received a pass from the governor to go on a voyage to Barbadoes March 30, 1689. She was then commanded by Philip Prance, and carried a crew of five men.

Jewell. Ship. This ship sailed from Southampton, England, for Salem March 22, 1630, Nicholas Hurlston, master. It was the property of Matthew Cradock. It arrived in Salem in June.

John. Ship. 20 tuns burthen. John Chadeyne, Peter Arondas and Peter Roles, mariners, came from France to Dublin, Ireland, by reason of the persecution, and were admitted inhabitants and citizens of Dublin, July 6, 1682. They came in this vessel, which was foreign built, but no foreigner then had any interest in it. It was registered in Dublin and was reputed a ship belonging to Dublin, July 17, 1684. Peter Bowdouin, was a denizen of Dublin, being a Protestant stranger at the latter date. Bowdouin was a merchant, and May 6, 1686, he had laded this ship, Alic Lambert, master, for a voyage to Pennsylvania, with nineteen barrels of beef, two tuns of ship beer, two hundred pounds of butter, two hundred pounds of cheese, fifty pounds of candles, one barrel of peas, one barrel of beans, two thousand pounds of bread and forty yards of frieze, his majesty's duties having been paid. During the summer, Mr. Bowdouin became the owner of three-fourths of the vessel, and, for forty pounds, conveyed his three-fourths and the one-fourth which belonged to said John Chadwine, for whom Bowdouin acted as attorney to make the transfer, they being both

late of the City of Wexford, Ireland, but then of Salem, to Capt. John Price, John Ruck, Lt. Thomas Gardner and Charles Redford, all of Salem, merchants, equally, this barque or small ship, called the John, lately of Dublin, Ireland, and there recorded, together with her hull, masts, sails, rigging, anchors, etc., Nov. 2, 1686.¹

John and Eliza. Ketch. This vessel was commanded by Ezra Lambert Sept. 17, 1689, when she was taken by two French frigates. See Thomas and Mary.

John and Elizabeth. Pink. This vessel was owned by John Ruck and commanded by Joshua Ward, and belonged to Salem. Mr. Ward was agent of the owner as well as master, and one of the crew was Michael Chappleman of Salem, a fisherman, on a voyage to Bilboa of about seven months time, with a cargo of fish. Chappleman brought a suit for his services, the writ being dated June 18, 1679. He shipped Oct. 10, 1678, and returned May 15, 1679.

John and Mary. Sloop. John Neale owned one-eighth of this vessel at the time of his death, in 1679, when it was appraised at thirty-four pounds, fifteen shillings and ten pence. At this rate the whole value of the vessel would be two hundred and seventy-eight pounds, six shillings and eight pence.

John and Thomas. Ketch. At the time of his death, in 1680, John Turner of Salem owned this vessel, which was appraised at that time one hundred pounds.

John Adventure. Ship. Bartholmew Gedney of Salem, shipwright, conveyed to Capt. Walter Price, John Gedney, sr., John Corwin and John Gedney, jr., equally, as joint owners or partners therein, the hull of the ship called the John Adventurer, with her masts, yards, boat, etc., Sept. 7, 1699.

Lion. Ship. This ship, commanded by Capt. William Pierce, sailed from Bristol, England, and was in the harbor of Salem when the fleet arrived in the summer of 1630. It sailed again, from Bristol, Dec. 1, 1630, with Roger Williams on board, and duly arrived at Salem. March 29, 1631, it was at Salem, and sailed for England two days later, arriving at London April 29, 1631. The next year this vessel was cast away near Virginia, but Captain Pierce and his men were saved.

Lion's Whelp. Ship. 120 tuns burthen. This was a well-proportioned and fast ship, carrying eight pieces of ordnance. It was bought by the Massachusetts Bay Company to go to Naumkeag, in 1629, and was commanded by John Gibbs. It sailed from Gravesend, England, April 25, 1629, and arrived at Naumkeag June 29th. It returned to England, and was waiting to be unloaded Sept. 19, 1629.

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 7, leaves 90 and 91.

Lord's Increase. Ship. This ship was afterwards called the Recovery, which see.

Lucy. Ketch. This vessel belonged to John Curwen in 1676; and made a fishing voyage, Gilbert Peters, master, in 1677.

Man-of-War. Ketch. This was the Supply. See page 370.

Margaret. Ketch. This vessel, commanded by Daniel Gyles, was taken by two French frigates Sept. 17, 1689.

Martha and Mary. Ketch. 58 tuns burthen. Eleazer Gedney of Salem, shipwright, conveyed the hull of this new ketch, "being built and finished with all builders' work according to the custom of builders in this country," Nov. 26, 1676.

Mary. Ketch. 15 tuns burthen. John Browne of Jersey, in England, merchant, conveyed to Mordecai Creford of Salem, seaman, one-half of this barque or ketch, called the Mary, with one-half of her masts, sails, yards, anchors, cables, tackle and furniture, July 4, 1661.

Mary. Ketch. This fishing vessel, Allen Chard, master, when about nine miles from Half-way rock, in Massachusetts Bay, was captured by pirates, together with the crew of about five men and the cargo, on Friday, Aug. 9, 1689. Oct. 4th following, sloop Mary of Boston, Capt. Samuel Pease, master, went in pursuit of the pirates, and engaged them immediately in Martyn's Vineyard Sound. Several of Pease's crew were wounded and the captain mortally. The pirates were taken, however. They sailed under a red flag.¹ The pirates that were taken numbered ten: Thomas Hawkins, Thomas Pound and Thomas Johnston, all of Boston, mariners, Richard Griffin of Boston, gunsmith, Eleazer Buck, mariner, and John Sickterdam, William Dun, Daniel Lander, William Warren and Samuel Watts. They were all indicted for piracy, and all but the last named were convicted. The indictment was as follows: For that, on Friday, Aug. 9, 1689, upon the high seas, about three leagues from Half-way rock in Massachusetts Bay, upon the ketch Mary of Salem, Hellen Chard, master, and upon said master and men, being in number about five of their Majesty's liege people, assaulted and as a felon and a pirate with guns and swords entered and said ketch with all her appurtenances and lading of fish, of the value of sixty pounds, took and carried away. The jury found nine of them guilty of piracy, and they were sentenced to "be returned to the place from whence they came and from thence be carried to the place of execution and there be hanged by the neck until they be dead." The court ordered John Green, the marshal-general, to execute them on Monday, Jan. 27, 1690.

¹For an interesting account of the capture of these pirates, see New England Historical and Genealogical Register, volume II, page 393.

Mary Anne. Ship. Thomas Payne of Salem owned an interest in this vessel, which belonged to Salem, April 10, 1638, when he made his will, in which he ordered that his interest be sold for the payment of his debts. His will was proved in July, 1644. Mr. Payne came to America in the ship *Mary Anne* of Yarmouth, England, in 1637.

Mayflower. Ship. This vessel was of Yarmouth, England, William Pierce, master, and sailed from Gravesend, England, June 3, 1629, for Salem. It came again in 1630, arriving at Charlestown Harbor July 1st.

Patient Betty. Ketch. 23 tuns burthen. Capt. Walter Price of Salem owned one-half of this vessel at the time of his death, in 1674, when it was appraised at forty-seven pounds and ten shillings. The value of the entire boat would therefore be ninety-five pounds.

Pelican. Sloop. The governor gave a pass to this sloop to go to Pennsylvania June 6, 1687, when it was commanded by George Deane.

Penelope. Ketch. 35 tuns burthen. It was commanded by Edward Hilliard, and carried a crew of six men. The governor gave it a pass to go on a voyage to St. Christophers Dec. 12, 1687.

Pink. The *Pink* of Salem belonged to John Corwine and Eleazer Hathorne in 1671, and John Browne was master. David Anderson hired the vessel that year.

Prosperous. Ketch. John Turner owned this vessel at the time of his death, in 1680, when it was appraised at one hundred and twenty pounds. In the summer of 1682, Philip English was about making a fishing voyage in it, with Thomas Jeggles, jr., as master.

Providence. Ship. 140 tuns burthen. Bartholomew Gedney of Salem, shipwright, conveyed to Andrew Boune of the Parish of Stepney, Middlesexshire, England, and now resident in Salem, mariner, the hull of a new ship, called the *Providence* of London, being built and finished with all carpenter's work, according to the custom of builders in this country, May 13, 1672. Mr. Boune sold three-fourths of the vessel, one-eighth each, for one hundred and ninety-seven pounds and eleven shillings for each one-eighth, to George Cole, Edward Merriweather, Thomas Burchet, George Shaw and Thomas Bodly, all of London, merchants, May 15, 1672, and one-eighth to William Antelby of London, merchant, and partners, on the next day.

Providence. Ketch. Sept. 16, 1669, this vessel, which was then commanded by Capt. John Grafton, while on a voyage from Salem to the West Indies, was cast away on a rock in a dark and rainy night. Of the crew of ten, six were drowned, and the master, mate and one seaman, who was badly wounded, remained

on the rocks until morning. With difficulty, they succeeded in reaching an island about half a mile off, where they found another of their company. They remained on this island eight days, living on salt fish and the last four days on cakes made of flour, a bushel of flour having washed ashore. Four days after the wreck occurred, they found a piece of touchwood, which the mate formerly had in his chest, and a piece of flint, with which, having a small knife, they struck a fire. They framed a boat with a tarred mainsail and some hoops, and then fastened pieces of boards to them. In this improvised boat, they sailed thirty miles to Anquilla and St. Martin's, where they were kindly received. Joshua Ward was one of the shipwrecked.

Recovery. Ship. This was formerly called Lord's Increase. In 1658, it was commanded by Augustine Lyndon. John Ruck of Boston was the owner of one-fourth of the vessel in 1658, another one-quarter was owned by Edward Lassell of Barbadoes and one-eighth by William Becks. The ship was ready to set sail for Barbadoes in November of that year.

Return. Ship. Thomas Coddington shipped on board ye good ship Return, Adam Westgate, master for this voyage, now riding at anchor in Carlisle Bay, bound for Boston, namely, five hogsheads of Muscovado sugar, two hogsheads of rum and four hogsheads of molasses to be delivered to Nathaniel Cary (or in his absence to Richard Russell), dated in Barbadoes May 18, 1670.

For account of Niklis Fulgin, Joseph Hardy shipped on board the good ship Return, Abraham Lewis, master, now riding at anchor in the road of Barbadoes and bound for James River, rum, sugar, etc., Nov. 14, 1683; and also on the same day, rum, etc., on account of John Walin.

Return. Ketch. John Hardy of Salem owned three-fourths of this vessel at the time of his death, in 1652, one-half being appraised at thirty pounds, making the value of the whole sixty pounds. It was then called an "old catch." In his will, he gave one-fourth of it to his son Joseph Hardy, and the remainder of his estate to his wife Elizabeth.

Sept. 18, 1656, the Return, Henry True, master, was about sailing from Barbadoes, being then in Carlisle Bay, bound for Boston, with molasses.

April 5, 1658, she was again at Barbadoes, John Marston, master, then in the Bay of Carlisle, bound for Boston, with wine. John Archer sailed in this ketch.

Habakkuk Turner was master of this vessel in 1670 and 1672, and in the latter year John Herbert of Salem was mate.

Stephen Sewall of Salem, merchant, bought of his brother Capt. Samuel Sewall of Boston one-half of the ketch Return and one-half of her tackling and furniture May 10, 1688.

Society. Ketch. John Turner died owning three-eighths of this vessel, in 1680, when it was appraised at one hundred and fifty pounds. That would be four hundred pounds for the whole.

Speedwell. Ketch. 80 tuns burthen. John Turner of Salem, mariner, conveyed to Capt. John Turner of Barbadoes one-fourth of the good ketch called the Speedwell of Salem, being newly built and riding at anchor in the harbor of Salem, with one-fourth of its furnishings, etc., Jan. 9, 1668.

Speedwell. Pink. One-half of this vessel belonged to John Turner at the time of his decease, in 1680, when it was appraised at one hundred and fifty pounds. That would be three hundred pounds as the value of the whole vessel.

Dec. 30, 1686, Governor Andros gave a pass for this vessel to go on a voyage to Barbadoes. The vessel was then commanded by Thomas Beadle.

Success. Ship. This vessel came to Salem in 1630, arriving July 26th.

Supply. Ketch. This vessel sailed between Salem and New York, trading with the Dutch at New York, contrary to orders, and Dec. 12, 1673, the council ordered her capture. She was seized on the fifteenth and ordered for trial at Boston.

The next that is heard of her is in 1677, when she appears as a man-of-war, being fitted out in Salem for a vessel of war to go out against the pirates. She carried forty men, and was commanded by Capt. Nicholas Manning. She carried the benediction of Rev. John Higginson: "The Lord give them good success." Thirteen guns were allowed upon the vessel. The following named persons were paid for this purpose the sums following their names. The vessel was fitted out for the use of the country, and these expenditures were to be satisfied out of the colonial treasury. In 1677, there was paid to John Turner £13, 4s., 4d; William Browne, sr., £12, 15s.; Timothy Lindall £9, 14s., 1d; John Higginson, jr., £9; John Hathorne £6, 15s.; Thomas Gardner, Samuel Gardner, Edmond Batter and William Hirst £6, 7s., 6d each; John Ruck £5; William Browne £4, 19s., 5d; Capt. William Browne £4, 11s., 4d; and Capt. John Price £3, os., 4d; in 1678 to Capt. George Corwin £12, 15s.; Capt. John Price £11, 7s., £11, 16d, and £3, os., 6d; Timothy Lindall £8, 11s., 6d; Capt. William Browne £5, 6s.; John Ruck £1, 17s., 6d, and £1, 17s., 6d; John Higginson, jr., £1, 10s.; March 6, 1678-9, to Capt. John Curwin, for the man-of-war and the Eastern poor, £14, 17s.; Captain Price £16; John Higginson £4, 4s.; Robert Stone £2, 5s.; and Timothy Lindall 16s., 5d; and Robert Stone £2, 5s.; and April 2, 1679, to Timothy Lindall £8, 11s., 6d.; and Capt. John Ruck £3, os., 6d; making in 1677 £94, in 1678 £58 and in 1679 £67, in all about £219.

The next year, she appears as a merchant vessel, and Feb. 26, 1678-9, she was waiting in the harbor of Salem for a fair wind to start on a voyage to the Southward.

Susan. Ketch. Capt. Richard Moore of Salem, mariner, owned one-half, at least, of this vessel in 1659.

Susannah. Ketch. 25 tuns burthen. Dec. 23, 1687, the governor gave a pass that she might go on a voyage to Virginia, under the command of Peter Brateler, with a crew of six.

The next year this vessel picked up a boat with three men, which was blown out of Cheasapeake Bay March 30, 1687. They were brought to Salem.

Swallowe. Ketch. 60 tuns burthen. This vessel was commanded by Joseph Hardy, June 9, 1663, when they set sail for the northward. Later, she was in the service of the colony, as Edward Rawson, the colonial secretary, wrote to the governor and council of Connecticut, in March, 1674, that the ketch *Swallow* of Salem, with twelve guns and sixty men, with another vessel were ready to sail "to cruise up and down the Sound," "on the service of the colonies."

Talbot. Ship. 300 tuns burthen. This ship was strong, with nineteen pieces of ordinance and manned by thirty mariners. It brought about one hundred planters to Naumkeag in 1629. It was under the command of Thomas Beecher, and sailed from Gravesend, England, on Saturday, April 25, 1629.¹ It had been hired by the Massachusetts Bay Company for this purpose, and again the next year it came with the Winthrop fleet and was the vice-admiral of the fleet. It sailed down the harbor of Southampton March 22, 1629-30, and arrived at Salem, July 2, 1630.

Thomas and Mary. Ketch. Off Torbay, near Cansir, this vessel, which belonged in Salem, and was commanded by Joshua Conant, was taken by three French vessels, two of which were frigates and the other a merchantman, Sept. 17, 1689.

Trial. Ketch. This vessel belonged in Salem, and was commanded by Edward Hilliard. A cargo had been placed in the vessel, for a voyage to Virginia, Feb. 5, 1667-8. The owners of the cargo were Eleazer Hathorne and John Corwin, merchants, and it consisted of four mares, with eight hundred weight of hay to feed them on, wine, shoes for men, women and children, women and boys' stockings and a variety of cloth. The following is the note of orders given to the master:—

Salem 5th february 1667.

M^r Edward Hilliard:

S^r You are to take the first optunity of wind & weather Conuenient to Sayle hence in the Katch Tryall (wherof yⁿ are Mast^r) and Direct

¹See volume I, pages 110-114, for an account of the voyage.

yo^r Course for Virginia And when it shall please god to send y^u thether vpon yo^r first Ariuall Enquir wth place there is most plenty of Tobb: and thether goe to dispose of o^o goods aboard, make Sale of o^r goods for redy Tobacco, if it may possibly be pcured make noe Debts, but sell y^e Cheaper for redy Goods Either Porke o^r Hyds y^u may sell for, if Tobacco may not be had: if y^u should find o^r goods Low and Tobacco not to be got take aduice whether it may not mor: pbably Conduce to o^r pfitt to goe to Roanocke, and if y^u should find good Encoradgment you may Act as y^u shall judge most for o^r Aduantage make wth Dispatch y^u possibly can And returne hether to us: Thus wth o^r prayers for yo^r psperous voyadge we Remaine

Yo^r Loueind Friends

JOHN CORWIN

ELEAZER HATHORNE¹

William Hollingworth of Salem, mariner, for two hundred pounds, conveyed to Philip Cromwell of Salem the good ketch Trial of Salem with all her masts, yards, sails, tackle, blocks, rigging, boat, etc., June 6, 1672.

Mary Batter, administratrix of the estate of Edmond Batter, lately deceased, for sixty-five pounds, conveyed to Nathaniel Dumer of Southton, England, one-half of this ketch which the deceased bought of John Hubbard of Boston, and one-half of her sails, anchors, cables, boat, etc., April 23, 1686.

Daniel Webb of Salem was master of this vessel in 1678 and 1679, when he twice sailed from Kingsale, Ireland, to Salem.

Unity. Ketch. July 29, 1671, this vessel belonged to Eleazer Hathorne of Salem, and on that day he let it to freight to Richard Wharton of Boston. The ketch, being insufficiently caulked and fitted, sprang a leak at sea, and the goods on board were injured and some of them lost.²

Virgin. Ketch 30 tuns burthen. The governor gave a pass to this vessel to go on a voyage to Antigua Dec. 14, 1688, when she was commanded by John Allen, and carried a crew of four men.

Visitation. Ship. 100 tuns burthen. This vessel belonged in Boston. William Hollingworth of Salem, merchant, hired Zachariah Gillum, master therof, to carry a cargo of one hundred hogsheads of tobacco from the Potomac River, in Maryland, Dec. 20, 1663, to Plymouth, England, where said ship and master are to stay four days at the pleasure of said Hollingworth, for his advantage for a market, thence to sail to the Island of Jersey and to any one port in Holland as said Hollingworth shall decide, the ship staying four days at the Island of Jersey. This charter party was dated Sept. 10, 1663.³ The vessel was then riding at anchor in the river of Boston.

¹Files of Salem Quarterly Court, volume XVI, leaf 93.

²See Essex Registry of Deeds, book 3, leaf 144.

³See the charter party, Registry of Deeds, book 2, leaf 72.

William. Ketch. This ketch was owned by William Jeggles, at the time of his decease, in 1659, which, with its appurtenances, was then appraised at fifty pounds.

William. Ketch. 26 tuns burthen. William Bowditch of Salem, merchant, conveyed to Philip Cromwell of Salem this vessel, which now lies at said Bowditch's wharf in Salem, Nov. 20, 1679.

William and John. Ship. John Turner owned one-third or three-eighths of this vessel at the time of his death, in 1680, when his part was appraised at five hundred pounds.

William and John. Ketch. 22 tuns burthen. Capt. Walter Price owned this ketch at the time of his death, in 1674, when it was valued at one hundred pounds. In his will, he gave it to his son John Price.

William and John. Ketch. John Turner owned three-eighths of this vessel at the time of his death, in 1680, when it was appraised at one hundred pounds. This would make the whole value of the vessel two hundred and sixty-six pounds, thirteen shillings and four pence.

William and Mary. Ketch. Richard Moore, jr., was the commander of this ketch while on a voyage to Barbadoes, landing at Spike's Bay, leaving Boston Dec. 9, 1670. John Necke, aged twenty, was the mate, and John Belcher one of the crew.

William and Sarah. Ketch. This vessel was sailed in fishing, and was commanded by Capt. Nathan Nixon in 1671. One of the fishermen was then John Williams, who brought suit for his wages for three and one-half months service, amounting to ten pounds and ten shillings.

Willing Mind. Ketch. John Turner owned this ketch at the time of his decease, in 1680, when it was appraised at ninety pounds.

CHAPTER XX.

THE PRISON.



THE selectmen, Jan. 19, 1665-6, ordered that Henry Kirk, the currier, and his man be warned by the constable to leave the town. Kirk was entertained by Mathew Price. The selectmen gave John Bartram leave to sojourn here until the "weather breaks up," but not more than two months.

April 21, 1666, the selectmen ordered that all wells between Thomas Cromwell's and Richard Gardner's, to the head of Mr. Brown's cove, so called, should have a curb two and a half to three feet high above the ground.

Shortly before the death of Capt. William Trask, he filed a petition with the general court, praying that some of the land taken from the Indians in the Pequot War, lying in the valley of the Connecticut, might be granted to him, as he understood that a portion of the land had been given to some "who it may be never sweat so much for it as some of us bled on it," and for his service in that conflict. Four hundred acres were granted to him.¹

Captain Trask died May 15, 1666, and three days later, the selectmen ordered that the soldiers which attend him to his grave should have an allowance of not more than twenty shillings to "make them drink at Mr. Gidney's, at the discretion of Walter Price, and cloth to cover the drum."

March 6, 1665-6, the selectmen ordered that Captain Corwin and Walter Price have the small field gun mounted fit for service.

May 23, 1666, as the town and harbor of Salem "lie too open and exposed to danger, and that due care and means have not been impowered for their defence and security," the general court ordered that the town of Salem, "erecting a work or battery upon some convenient place upon their harbor, by advice and direction of the major general, shall have the like encouragement, by

¹Massachusetts Archives, volume 30, leaf 89.

abatement of the country rate; . . . and for the orderly and better carrying on of the said work, Capt. George Corwin is hereby desired and impowered to improve all means for the speedy effecting of this work, and the committee of militia of Salem desired to advise and assist him in the business." The court promised to order them two or three guns, when a work to secure them should have been made.

William Curtis,¹ a blacksmith, came to Salem in 1659, and remained here as long as he lived.

William Curtis

James Hadlock² of Roxbury married Rebecca, daughter of Richard Hutchinson, and came to Salem to live in 1659. His

James Hadlock

house was on the western side of Pine Street, about midway between Holton and Hobart streets, in Danvers.

¹WILLIAM CURTIS¹ married Alice Rumball; she was his wife in 1708; he died before 1723; children: 1. Anna,² born Aug. 30, 165-; 2. Sarah,² born Oct. 13, 1660; died Oct. 25, 1660; 3. William,² born Dec. 26, 1662; 4. Abigail,² born about Aug. 15, 1664; married Thomas Mason; 5. John,² born May 14, 1666; 6. Elizabeth,² born Jan. —, 1668; married John Lowther; 7. Hannah,² born Aug. —, 1670.

WILLIAM CURTIS;² blacksmith and sawyer; married, first, Judith Needham March 22, 1687; second, Lydia (Anna?) before 1710; the latter was his wife in 1731; he died in 1741; children: 1. William,³ born Jan. 13, 1687-8; blacksmith and currier; lived in Lynn; married Elizabeth Scadlock (Scarlet?) May 4, 1709; died Sept. 22, 1730; she married, secondly, John Hawks of Lynn Sept. 4, 1735; had children; 2. Ruth,³ born July 5, 1690; married — Banter; 3. John,³ born Aug. 15, 1693; living in 1740; 4. Daniel³ (triplet), born Feb. 4, 1698-9; 5. James³ (triplet), born Feb. 4, 1698-9; 6. Jonathan³ (triplet), born Feb. 4, 1698-9; 7. Locker,³ born May 3, 1701; 8. Lydia,³ born July 24, 1702; married — Stillman; 9. Daniel,³ born April —, 170-; shipwright; married Rebecca Farrington March 29, 1729; living in 1740. JOHN CURTIS;² married Elizabeth —; child: 1. John,³ born Oct. 21, 1690, in Salem.

²JAMES HADLOCK¹; married Rebecca Hutchinson in May, 1658; died Dec. 3, 1687; she was his wife in 1680; children: 1. James,² born about 1659; 2. Rebecca;² living in 1678; 3. Hannah;² 4. Sarah,² born Sept. —, 1659; 5. Mary,² born March 2, 1661; married John Worthen Dec. 30, 1689; 6. Sarah,² born Dec. 6, 1670; married William Simons; 7. John.²

JAMES HADLOCK;² married Abigail Martin of Amesbury Dec. 3, 1679; died July 2, 1716; had children: 1. James,³ born Sept. 24, 1679, in Salem; 2. John,³ born in 1681; 3. Sarah;³ 4. Abigail;³ 5. —³ (son); 6. —³ (son); 7. Samuel,³ born March 18, 1688-9; 8. Damaris;³ 9. Hannah;³ 10. Mary;³ 11. Joseph,³ born Nov. 27, 1700, in Amesbury; 12. Ruth,³ born July 15, 1705, in Amesbury. JOHN HADLOCK;² yeoman; married Sarah Pasque Jan. 16, 1694-5; children: 1. Sarah,³ born June —, 1695; died Oct. 10, 1701; 2. Margery,³ baptized Sept. 27, 1696; 3. John,³ baptized Aug. 27, 1699; 4. Rebecca,³ baptized Nov. 30, 1701; 5. Marah,³ baptized Feb. 25, 1704; 6. Sarah,³ baptized March 24, 1705-6; 7. Pascho,³ baptized June 27, 1708.

John Upton¹ (called John Rupton at first) was a native of Scotland, and a prisoner taken in battle by Cromwell. He was

¹JOHN UPTON¹ came from Hammersmith to Salem in 1659; was a blacksmith; lived on Wood Hill, in the woods in Peabody, on what is now Lowell Street, until he removed to Reading about 1676; married Eleanor Stuart in America; she was living in 1697; he died July 11, 1699; children: 1. John,² born about 1655; lived in Reading; married Sarah Thompson of Reading Dec. 14, 1680; she died Oct. 12, 1719; he died in the summer of 1727; had children; 2. Eleanor,² born about 1656; died April 20, 1663; 3. William,² born about 1658; died April —, 1663; 4. James,² born Sept. —, 1660; lived in North Reading; died, unmarried, about 1702; 5. Mary,² born about 1661; died April 15, 1663; 6. William,² born June 10, 1663; 7. Samuel,² born Oct. —, 1664; 8. Ann;² married Samuel Fraile; 9. Isabelle,² born Jan. 3, 1666-7; died, unmarried, Dec. 6, 1689; 10. Ezekiel,² born Sept. —, 1668; husbandman; lived in North Reading; married, first, Rebecca Preston Dec. 28, 1693; second, Ruth (Marsh), widow of James Hardy Jan. 23, 1711-2; had children; 11. Joseph,² born April 9, 1670; lived in North Reading; married Abigail Phelps (?) Feb. 12, 1692; was living in 1753; had children; 12. Francis,² born July 1, 1671; died, unmarried, Dec. 9, 1694; 13. Mary; was unmarried in 1697.

WILLIAM UPTON;² yeoman; lived in the Danvers part of Salem; married Mary Maber May 27, 1701; died in the winter of 1739-40; children: 1. William,³ born July 17, 1703; lived in Reading; married, first, Lydia Burnap of Reading Jan. 4, 1726-7; second, Hannah Felton Dec. 9, 1755; was living in 1760; 2. Mary,³ born Sept. 28, 1705; married Thomas Rich of Wilmington Nov. 24, 1735; 3. James,³ born Jan. 5, 1707-8; 4. Paul,³ born Feb. 20, 1709-10; 5. Francis,³ born May 13, 1712; lived in North Reading; married, first, Phebe Swallow of Reading May 13, 1735; second, Edith Herrick Dec. 2, 1741; died in the winter of 1775-6; had children; 6. Edward,³ born April 16, 1714; glazier; married Eleanor Osborn Nov. 18, 1735; 7. Richard,³ born May 20, 1716; lived in Reading; married Rachel Rich June 26, 1746; had children; 8. Dorcas³ (twin), born Sept. 4, 1718; married Stephen Felton; 9. Timothy³ (twin), born Sept. 4, 1718; 10. Caleb,³ born Feb. 4, 1722. SAMUEL UPTON;² married Abigail Frost Jan. 14, 1702-3; lived in 1743; children: 1. Samuel,³ born June 30, 1704; 2. Abigail,⁸ baptized Aug. 3, 1707; married George Small; 3. Nathaniel³ (twin), baptized March 27, 1709; lived in Reading; married Mary Eaton of Reading Nov. 19, 1734; died Jan. —, 1788; she died in 1808, aged ninety-five; left no children; 4. Jemima³ (twin), baptized March 27, 1709; married Israel Eaton; 5. Anna,³ baptized April 6, 1712; living in 1740; 6. Benjamin,³ baptized May 10, 1713; yeoman; lived in Danvers; married Sarah Swinnerton Nov. —, 1736; died in the autumn of 1768; she died in 1773; no children; 7. Eunice,³ baptized April 24, 1715; married — Twist (Taft?); 8. Amos,³ baptized Oct. 20, 1717; deacon; lived in Reading; married Sarah Bickford Dec. 5, 1739; died Oct. 6, 1780; she died, his widow, Nov. 17, 1818, aged ninety-nine; had children; 9. Lois;³ married John McIntire in 1744; 10. Noah,³ baptized Sept. 17, 1721.

JAMES UPTON;³ lived in the Peabody part of Salem; cordwainer; married Susanna Dagget Nov. 2, 1732; died in Danvers July 22, 1778; she died April 20, 1796; children: 1. Tamisin,⁴ born Sept. 1, 1733; married Zachariah Felton Feb. 1, 1755; 2. Stephen,⁴ born April 23, 1735; died June 9, 1756; 3. Hannah,⁴ born June 26, 1737; married Ebenezer Sprague in 1759; 4. Mary,⁴ born March 11, 1738; died Aug. 4, 1746; 5. —,⁴ baptized March 11, 1743-4; 6. James,⁴ born March 29, 1744; died Dec. 6, 1764; 7. John,⁴ born Nov. 19, 1746; cordwainer; lived in Danvers; married Joanna Dodge of Beverly Dec. 3, 1767; she died May 1, 1821; he died April 11,

connected with the iron works at Hammersmith (Saugus), Mass.,

1824; had children; 8. Daniel,⁴ born April 6, 1749; died in Danvers May 30, 1773. ENS. PAUL UPTON;³ yeoman; lived in the Danvers part of Salem; married, first, Susanna Whipple Oct. —, 1732; second, Phebe Goodell Feb. 24, 1736-7; died in 1750; she died Feb. 7, 1795; children: 1. Susanna,⁴ baptized April 14, 1733; married Daniel Upton Feb. 18, 1756; 2. Ezra,⁴ born Oct. 11, 1738; 3. David,⁴ baptized April 26, 1741; husbandman; lived in Danvers; married Sarah Goodell March 5, 1771; died March 10, 1772; she survived him; had one child; 4. Hannah,⁴ baptized Sept. 25, 1743; married Jacob Goodell Dec. 19, 1763; 5. Mehitabel,⁴ born about 1745; died young; 6. Phebe,⁴ baptized Aug. 16, 1747; died young; 7. George,⁴ baptized June 3, 1750; innholder; lived in Danvers; married Eunice Upton of Reading May 20, 1773; died in 1804; she married, secondly, — Richardson; had children. TIMOTHY UPTON;³ cordwainer; lived in the Danvers part of Salem; married, first, Hannah Stacy Dec. 25, 1740; second, Ruth —; died in 1758; she married, secondly, Isaac Reed July 20, 1761; children: 1. Nathan,⁴ born Nov. 15, 1741; lived in Danvers; married Elizabeth Goldthwaite April 14, 1768; died March 17, 1795; she died Nov. 26, 1820; had children; 2. Timothy,⁴ baptized Aug. 7, 1743; 3. Dorcas,⁴ born in 175-. CALEB UPTON;³ tailor; lived in Amherst, N. H.; married — —; children: 1. Jeduthun,⁴ born about 1752, in Reading; 2. Oliver,⁴ born about 1753; 3. Abiel,⁴ born Oct. 20, 1755, in Amherst; 4. Robert,⁴ born May 12, 1758; 5. Edmund,⁴ born about 1760; 6. Paul,⁴ born Dec. 25, 1760. SAMUEL UPTON;³ lived in Danvers; married Ruth Whipple Nov. 8, 1726; probably removed to New Brunswick; children: 1. Mehitabel,⁴ born Dec. 10, 1727; married John Very of Danvers Feb. 10, 1746-7; 2. Anna,⁴ born Dec. 30, 1730; married John Russell of Danvers; 3. Asa,⁴ born Oct. 3, 1734; lived in Danvers; soldier in the expedition to Acadia in 1755; married Elizabeth Webber of Marblehead June 12, 1758; she died June 22, 1818; he died Oct. 4, 1824, aged ninety; had children: 4. Ruth,⁴ born Oct. 29, 1737; died, unmarried, Dec. 19, 1816; 5. Samuel,⁴ born April 22, 1740; married Rebecca Spinney of Marblehead April 1, 1765; removed to Maugerville, N. B., about 1765; 6. Sarah,⁴ born June 23, 1741; died in infancy; 7. Sarah,⁴ baptized March 6, 1743; married Jacob Barker of Boxford.

EZRA UPTON;⁴ lived in Danvers; innholder and yeoman; married Mehitabel Goodell Sept. 25, 1765; died Feb. 19, 1787; she married, second, Daniel Putnam; and, third, Joseph Putnam; she died March 28, 1827; children: 1. Jesse,⁵ born Nov. 22, 1765; 2. Ebenezer,⁵ born Feb. 15, 1768; 3. Andrew,⁵ born May 29, 1770; died young; 4. David,⁵ born Dec. 4, 1772; 5. Andrew,⁵ born April 4, 1775; 6. Mehitabel,⁵ born July 13, 1777; 7. Phebe,⁵ born May 31, 1780; 8. Betsey,⁵ born July 15, 1782; 9. Eben,⁵ baptized Jan. 29, 1785; 10. —⁵ (posthumous); died in infancy. CAPT. JUDUTHUN UPTON;⁴ baker, merchant and ship master; removed from Salem to Steuben, Me., about 1810; married, first, widow Mary (Brown) Austin Dec. 11, 1783; she died at Steuben April —, 1815; married, second, Rachel Gage March 17, 1816; died in Steuben June —, 1823; children: 1. William,⁵ born June 19, 1784; 2. Jeduthun,⁵ born Sept. 6, 1785; 3. Sally,⁵ born Feb. 19, 1787; married Samuel Hemenway Nov. 13, 1803; 4. Betsey,⁵ born July 20, 1788; died in Salem, unmarried, Nov. —, 1810; 5. John,⁵ born May 14, 1790; lived in Cherryfield, Me.; died May —, 1832; his widow married, secondly, Rufus Hill; had children; 6. Polly,⁵ born Oct. 11, 1791: ROBERT UPTON;⁴ soldier in battles of Lexington and Bennington; lived in Reading and Salem from 1784 to 1792; removed to Cavendish, Vt., and finally to Harrington, now Millbridge, Me.; married Anna Wheelock in 1784; died in 1824; she died in Salem Feb. 10, 1835; children: 1. Samuel,⁵ born in 1784, in Middleton;

in 1658, came to Salem the next year; and removed to Reading

2. Anna,⁵ born in 1786; married; 3. *Robert*,⁵ born Feb. 16, 1788, in Salem; 4. Jonathan,⁵ baptized Feb. 14, 1790, in Salem; lived in Millbridge; married Nancy Woodworth; died Feb. 8, 1851; had children; 5. Nancy,⁵ born in 1794, in Cavendish; 6. Mary,⁵ born in 1797; 7. Sally,⁵ born in 1798; 8. Lucy,⁵ born in 1800. CAPT. EDMUND UPTON;⁴ ship master; married Priscilla Gardner Sept. 11, 1791; freemason; she died Jan. —, 1823; he died in 1836; children: 1. Edmund,⁵ born in 1792; mate of ship *Columbus* of Boston; married Mary Southard April 24, 1822; died at Matanzas July 8, 1827; 2. William,⁵ died Feb. —, 1803; 3. —;⁵ married — Stone. PAUL UPTON; superintendent of Salem almshouse; of great strength; married, first, Rebecca Peirce Oct. 5, 1785; she died Nov. 4, 1799; married, second, Elizabeth Peirce April 9, 1801; died July 24, 1830; she died Jan. 12, 1857, aged ninety-five; children: 1. *Benjamin*,⁵ born Jan. 17, 1786; 2. Joseph,⁶ born Jan. 27, 1788; 3. *John*,⁵ born Dec. 26, 1789; 4. *Samuel*,⁵ born Dec. 6, 1791; 5. *Henry*,⁵ born Sept. 6, 1794; 6. *Edmund*,⁵ born May 9, 1797; 7. Rebecca,⁵ born Oct. 21, 1799; died Dec. 19, 1799.

JESSE UPTON;⁵ lived in Danvers; yeoman; kept tavern; married, first, Polly Upton; married, second, widow Elizabeth (Eliza) (Wyman) Wood of Woburn Nov. 22, 1798; died in Troy, Ind., Dec. —, 1824; she died Oct. —, 1857; children: 1. *Ebeneser*,⁶ born Jan. 10, 1794; 2. *Esra*,⁶ born July 12, 1795; 3. Jesse,⁶ born Oct. 30, 1796; farmer; died, unmarried, Jan. 8, 1860; 4. Eliza,⁶ born in 1798; died young; 5. Polly,⁶ born Dec. 26, 1800; died June 25, 1805; 6. Eliza,⁶ born Sept. 6, 1802; 7. George,⁶ born July 5, 1805; 8. Polly,⁶ born April 27, 1810; 9. Andrew.⁶ CAPT. WILLIAM UPTON;⁶ commander of schooner *Hero*; married Martha Brooks Feb. 1, 1807; died at Laguira Nov. 7, 1809; she died March 27, 1830; children: 1. Martha,⁶ born May 13, 1808; married Joseph Small; 2. Elizabeth B.,⁶ born in 180-; married William B. Patterson Feb. 28, 1830. CAPT. JEDUTHUN UPTON;⁵ ship master; mate of brig *Samuel* of Boston; merchant; married Sally Smith May 12, 1807; died at Havana Aug. 21, 1815; she died June 10, 1835; children: 1. —;⁶ died April —, 1809; 2. Sally,⁶ born Aug. 16, 1812; married Nathan Stevens in 1834; 3. Mary Elizabeth,⁶ born Sept. 14, 1814; died Feb. —, 1815; 4. Mary Elizabeth,⁶ born April 26, 1816; married George B. Ricker Jan. 30, 1837. SAMUEL UPTON;⁵ merchant; moved to Castine, Me., in 1816, and afterwards lived in Bangor, Me., Boston, Mass., and Washington, D. C.; married Rebecca Allen Peirce March 20, 1810; died March 3, 1842; she died at Cambridge, Mass.; children: 1. Wheelock Samuel,⁶ born Jan. 17, 1811, in Salem; lawyer; lived in New Orleans, La.; married Mary Elinor Waters; died at Carrollton, La., Oct. 18, 1860; had children; 2. Charles Horace,⁶ born Aug. 23, 1812, in Salem; Bowdoin College, 1834; lived in Virginia; United States consul at Geneva, Switzerland; married Martha Ellen Page May 18, 1836; had children; 3. Francis Henry,⁶ born May 25, 1814, in Salem; lawyer; lived in New York and Washington, D. C.; married Sarah Foster Carr of Bangor Sept. 1, 1836; had children; 4. Edward Peirce,⁶ born July 22, 1816, in Castine; 5. Rebecca Peirce,⁶ born June 3, 1818, in Castine; 6. Rufus Allyn,⁶ born Jan. 18, 1821, in Boston; 7. Helen Augusta,⁶ born Dec. 5, 1822; unmarried; in Europe in 1866. ROBERT UPTON;⁵ merchant; in West India trade; married Lucy Doyle of Sedgwick Sept. 17, 1811; she died Feb. 3, 1859; he died Sept. 9, 1863; children: 1. *James*,⁶ born March 31, 1813; 2. *Luther*,⁶ born March 16, 1815; 3. *George*,⁶ born Dec. 14, 1817; 4. Franklin,⁶ born Jan. 28, 1819; merchant; lived in South Danvers; married Sarah Augusta Felton of Danvers Jan. 28, 1840; died in Boston Oct. 21, 1869; had children; 5. Lucy Ann,⁶ born Nov. 12, 1822; married — Poole of Wakefield; 6. *Charles*,⁶ born May 28, 1824; 7. *Edwin*,⁶ born Feb. 18, 1826; 8. Harriet,⁶ born Sept. 9,

about 1676. The family has been numerous and widely scat-

1827; died, unmarried, in Wakefield, May 16, 1874; 9. *Stephen*,⁶ born Oct. 23, 1831. CAPT. BENJAMIN UPTON;⁵ ship master and merchant; married, first, Priscilla Ropes Sept. 4, 1808; she died June 8, 1828; married, second, Eliza Willis Oct. 11, 1831; died Nov. 4, 1853; she died Feb. 23, 1870; children: 1. Benjamin,⁶ born in 1809; lived at Para and Rosario, Brazil, and New York; United States consul at Buenos Ayres; married Maria Francisca Corea Bulhao of Para; had children; 2. Daniel Ropes,⁶ born in 1811; lost at sea, unmarried, in 1832 or 1833, on his passage from Para to Salem; 3. Alice Rebecca,⁶ married Francis Putnam in 1842; 4. George F.,⁶ United States consul on Rio Grande, Brazil; resided at Buenos Ayres; 5. *Henry Paul*,⁶ 6. Priscilla Lambert,⁶ married George Nathan Ropes; 7. Anna M.,⁶ teacher; 8. *Edward*,⁶ born April 22, 1837; 9. Daniel,⁶ baptized May 7, 1839; book keeper; served in the Civil war; lived in Salem in 1873; 10. Francis,⁶ baptized May 7, 1839; music teacher; living in 1870. CAPT. JOHN UPTON;⁵ ship master; served in the war of 1812; commanded privately-armed schooners Cossack and Helen; freemason; married Mercy Townsend Dec. 6, 1812; while in command of ship Maine he died at Batavia Aug. —, 1824; she died May 4, 1855; children: 1. —,⁶ born May —, 1814; died Sept. 25, 1815; 2. John Pierce,⁶ born Sept. 8, 1816; printer in San Francisco, Cal.; wife Mary Ann in 1858; 3. Eliza M.,⁶ born about 1820; 4. *Moses Townsend*,⁶ born Jan. 7, 1822. CAPT. SAMUEL UPTON;⁵ master mariner; married Mary Fabens Jan. 22, 1818; she died June 4, 1863; children: 1. *Samuel F.*,⁶ born March 1, 1821; 2. Paul,⁶ born Dec. 26, 1827; 3. William F.,⁶ ship master; lived in South Danvers; 4. Charles H.,⁶ born in 1833; ship master; married Abby M. Brown June 30, 1864; 5. *Horace G.*,⁶ born in 1839; 6. Harriet Maria,⁶ married William Serls Howard of Beverly, Dec. 7, 1865; 7. Rebecca Gray Peirce,⁶ born Sept. —, 1844; died May 9, 1846; 8. Mary Rebecca,⁶ born in 1846; died Feb. 2, 1849. CAPT. HENRY UPTON;⁵ master mariner; toll keeper of Beverly bridge; freemason; married Eliza Peele Needham Aug. 14, 1823; she died Dec. 27, 1863; he died at Taunton March 22, 1873; children: 1. Mary Bell,⁶ born March —, 1824; died Jan. 15, 1825; 2. Thomas Needham,⁶ born about 1835; died July 12, 1841. CAPT. EDMUND UPTON;⁵ master mariner; married Sally Stone Larrabee Feb. 20, 1825; died Sept. 21, 1860; she died, his widow, Jan. 20, 1900, aged ninety-one; children: 1. *Joseph*,⁶ born in 1825; 2. Edmund Augustus,⁶ born July 14, 1828; ship master; died June 8, 1881; 3. *George Larrabee*,⁶ born Oct. 7, 1832.

EBENEZER UPTON;⁶ wood wharfinger; married Sarah Sanborn; died May 17, 1860; she died, his widow, Sept. 1, 1887; children: 1. *Eben*,⁷ born Feb. 11, 1817; 2. Daniel King,⁷ born about 1820; married Eliza Jane Keller in 1842; died at sea; 3. Maria Louisa,⁷ born in 1822; married Jacob Barker; 4. Edwin Augustus,⁷ born in 1824; mariner on brig Gen. Brooks; died at sea on his passage from Santiago to Trinidad May 1, 1841; 5. *Franklin*,⁷ born in 1828; 6. Sarah Elizabeth,⁷ born about Dec. —, 1828; died Feb. 24, 1832; 7. Jesse⁷ (twin), born Nov. 27, 1831; died March —, 1832; 8. *Warren Augustus*,⁷ born Nov. 27, 1831; 9. —,⁷ died Oct. —, 1834; 10. *William Mudgett*,⁷ born in 1836; 11. *Henry Orlando*,⁷ born in 1839. EZRA UPTON;⁶ provision dealer; of Danvers in 1836; victualer in Salem in 1847 and 1854; married, first, Elizabeth Upton of Danvers June 17, 1821; she died Aug. 5, 1822; married, second, Mary Ann Bowditch Sept. 12, 1836; died Aug. 4, 1869; she died Dec. 11, 1883; children: 1. Mary Elizabeth,⁷ born July 29, 1822; married Alfred Burley; 2. *William Bowditch*,⁷ born Oct. 22, 1837; 3. George Washington,⁷ born Aug. 5, 1839; clerk, married Sarah E. Richards; died March 5, 1890; she died Sept. 16, 1898; no children; 4. Eliza Ann⁷ (twin), born Feb. 23, 1841; married Josiah Mayo of

tered, and engaged in the ordinary business of life, as mechanics,

Beverly; 5. Caroline Bowditch⁷ (twin), born Feb. 23, 1841; died March 10, 1847; 6. Sarah Ellen,⁷ born March 10, 1843; died April 24, 1847; 7. Charles,⁷ born Sept. 23, 1845; died Nov. 4, 1846; 8. Caroline,⁷ born Oct. 14, 1847; married Warren P. Patch of Lynn Jan. 1, 1868. JAMES UPTON,⁶ merchant; married, first, Emily Collins Johnson Oct. 27, 1836; she died Nov. 12, 1843; married, second, Sarah Sophia Ropes Oct. 9, 1845; she died Feb. 12, 1865; he died March 30, 1879; children: 1. Emily Caroline,⁷ born June 19, 1838; lived in Amherst, Mass., unmarried, in 1879; 2. James Henry,⁷ born Aug. 8, 1840; died March 15, 1841; 3. Lucy Houghton,⁷ born Nov. 25, 1846; died Jan. 13, 1919; 4. Henry Fitch,⁷ born April 18, 1848; died May 18, 1848; 5. Elizabeth Ropes,⁷ born June 27, 1849; married Robert Mills; 6. James Frederic,⁷ born Aug. 3, 1851; died Nov. 13, 1869; 7. Winslow,⁷ born Oct. 13, 1853; lived in Cambridge in 1879, and later in Providence; professor of astronomy in Brown University; married Cornelia A. Babcock of Lebanon Springs, N. Y., Feb. 8, 1882; died Jan. 8, 1914; 8. Ernest Ropes,⁷ born Dec. 13, 1857; died Feb. 16, 1859; 9. Grace,⁷ born Oct. 20, 1860; living in 1879; 10. Herbert Wheelock,⁷ born July 31, 1863; died Aug. 30, 1864: LUTHER UPTON,⁶ merchant; went to Springfield after 1863, and was living in Lynn in 1869 and 1874; married Helen Maria Bowditch Sept. 29, 1839; children: 1. Helen Maria,⁷ born in 1845 or 1846; married William H. Porter June 19, 1869; 2. Joseph Bowditch,⁷ baptized March 31, 1847. CAPT. GEORGE UPTON,⁶ ship master; commanded barque Chalcedony; merchant; married, first, Harriet Maria Perkins May 28, 1839; she died Jan. 22, 1842; married, second, Ellen M. Bowditch April 30, 1850; she died Nov. 6, 1856; married, third, Olive A. Goldsmith Feb. 7, 1866; she died Feb. 16, 1885; he died April 23, 1894; children: 1. Lucy Ann,⁷ born April —, 1840; died March 18, 1842; 2. Ellen F.,⁷ born in 1841; died Oct. 17, 1842; 3. Robert,⁷ born Jan. 15, 1842; living in 1894; 4. Walter B.,⁷ born March 26, 1854; lived in St. Louis, Mo., in 1885; 5. Ellen Maria,⁷ born April 22, 1855; married Harry L. Kelly of Boston; 6. Ollie G.,⁷ born July 4, 1871; unmarried in 1894. CAPT. CHARLES UPTON,⁶ merchant; ship master; married Isabel Emeline Cameron of Beverly Dec. —, 1844; died Feb. 17, 1865; she died in Santa Clara, Cal., Jan. 24, 1870; children: 1. Isabel Francisca,⁷ born March 28, 1847; died in Philadelphia, Pa., Oct. 21, 1868; 2. Arthur Jackson,⁷ born Jan. 8, 1851; died Jan. 22, 1872; 3. Clarence Webster,⁷ born March 21, 1856; lived at Santa Clara in 1877; 4. Ellen,⁷ born Dec. 28, 1856; 5. Carl Frank,⁷ born June 23, 1858; lived in Santa Clara; died June 17, 1876. EDWIN UPTON,⁶ merchant; lived in Buenos Ayres; married Ellen Celia Stafford of Buenos Ayres Dec. 7, 1867; died Oct. 14, 1871; she died April 24, 1907; children: 1. Mary Cecilia,⁷ born Oct. 31, 1868, in Buenos Ayres; married — Sevigne; 2. Alice Dolores,⁷ born Jan. 25, 1872 (posthumous); unmarried in 1893. CAPT. STEPHEN UPTON,⁶ morroco dresser and master mariner; married Olive —; lived in New York City, where he died June 18, 1880; child: 1. Arthur,⁷ born Nov. 12, 1868, in Salem. HENRY PAUL UPTON,⁶ merchant; married Harriet Ellen Savory Oct. —, 1840; she died Aug. 29, 1877; he died June 20, 1887; children: 1. Richard Henry,⁷ born Jan. —, 1843; died Aug. 24, 1844; 2. Ellen Francisca,⁷ born in 1844; died Oct. 15, 1845; 3. Elizabeth Lewis,⁷ born in 1848; music teacher; died, unmarried, Jan. 30, 1916; 4. George N.,⁷ born Oct. 24, 1857; 5. Georgiana T.,⁷ born in 1859; died, unmarried, in Boston, June 27, 1900. EDWARD UPTON,⁶ served in the Civil War; tanner and currier; married, first, Emily L. Buf-fum Jan. 5, 1860; she died Dec. 25, 1889; married, second, Annie M. Wyman March 13, 1893; he died June 3, 1908; children: 1. Martha,⁷ born Nov. 22, 1860; 2. Sumner W.,⁷ born about 1873. MOSES TOWNSEND UPTON,⁶ car-

tanners, farmers, innholders and druggists, but many of its mem-

penter; married, first, Sarah A. Jackson in 1845; second, Sarah Ellen Jackson; died Sept. 11, 1870; she died April 5, 1914; children: 1. Catherine J.,⁷ born July 22, 1850; 2. Moses T.,⁷ born Nov. 14, 1852; died Nov. 16, 1852; 3. Catherine J.,⁷ born July 22, 1856; married Thomas J. Fenno of Boston Nov. 18, 1878; 4. Edmund T.,⁷ born May 2, 1862; grocer; married Mary G. Downes Sept. 18, 1888; died May 7, 1899; she survived him. SAMUEL F. UPTON;⁶ lumber dealer; lived in Chelsea; married Mary R. Brown March 26, 1845; died July 13, 1869; children: 1. Mary E.,⁷ died Sept. 26, 1846; 2. William H.,⁷ born Aug. 31, 1850, in Salem; died in Chelsea Oct. 29, 1856. CAPT. PAUL UPTON;⁶ master mariner; married Sarah F. Smith June 16, 1853; died Jan. 18, 1884; she died in Beverly July 24, 1890; children: 1. Frederick D.,⁷ born in 1859; banker in 1882; lived in Newmarket, N. H., in 1890; married Lizzie H. Varney Oct. 10, 1882; she died May 16, 1913; he died April 24, 1914; 2. *Colcord*,⁷ 3. Charles P.,⁷ born March 25, 1867; married and divorced; died, suddenly, in the public gardens, in Boston, July 14, 1917. HORACE G. UPTON;⁶ tanner and currier; married Margaret Ellen Moulton March 5, 1863; children: 1. Horace Frederick,⁷ born Dec. 16, 1866; 2. Howard Emerson,⁷ born Aug. 27, 1868. CAPT. JOSEPH UPTON;⁶ ship master; lived in Boston; married Sarah B. Safford Aug. 17, 1852; she died in Boston Sept. 7, 1865; married, second, Mary Jane Sumner; he died Nov. 28, 1884; she married, second, Winfield S. Mitchell Jan. 15, 1898; children: 1. Joseph Marshall,⁷ born Dec. 3, 1868, in Beverly; lived in Boston in 1900; 2. Annie L.,⁷ born March 20, 1870, in Salem; married Charles W. Rice June 21, 1894; 3. Henry Roberts,⁷ born May 3, 1875, in Salem; died Aug. 24, 1876. GEORGE LARRABEE UPTON;⁶ carpenter; married Hannah J. Walton; died Aug. 10, 1909; children: 1. *Edmund Augustus*,⁷ born April 15, 1863; 2. Alice R.,⁷ born Oct. 14, 1865; married Rev. Joseph Wheelwright of Byfield Jan. 22, 1884; 3. Grace,⁷ born March 14, 1868; married Arthur M. Root of Byfield Nov. 13, 1889; 4. *George*,⁷ born Aug. 10, 1870; 5. Sally Stone,⁷ born Sept. 5, 1873; unmarried in 1909.

EBEN UPTON;⁷ musician; married Lucy Maria Carey of Danvers April 21, 1839; died May 6, 1885; she died Jan. 21, 1896; children: 1. Lucy Maria,⁶ born in 1840; married Charles B. Fowler; 2. Helen A.,⁸ born Sept. —, 1845; married William R. Weeks Sept. 2, 1869; 3. Francis E.,⁸ born May 30, 1850; 4. Florence Louisa,⁸ born Sept. 8, 1851; died Feb. 16, 1853; 5. *Francis Torrey*,⁸ born Sept. 7, 1855. FRANKLIN UPTON;⁷ married Laura Ann Titus Sept. 17, 1851; children: 1. Laura A.,⁸ born Feb. —, 1852; died Aug. 24, 1852; 2. Eva F.,⁸ born Feb. 12, 1853. WARREN AUGUSTUS UPTON;⁷ served in the Civil War; tin smith; married Caroline H. Pratt April 2, 1854; died March 26, 1898; she died Nov. 7, 1917; children: 1. Susan A.,⁸ born about 1855; married Charles N. Walton April 29, 1875; 2. Alice;⁸ 3. *Jesse F.*,⁸ born Jan. 15, 1859, in Danvers; 4. *Warren G.*,⁸ 5. *George F.*,⁸ (twin), born March 16, 1867; died July 28, 1867; 6. *Jacob Barker*,⁸ (twin), born March 16, 1867; died July 28, 1867; 7. *Ella C.*,⁸ born July 25, 1870; died Nov. 21, 1878; 8. *Walter Pratt*,⁸ born June 4, 1872. WILLIAM MUDGETT UPTON;⁷ cooper and musician; married, first, Lucretia Derby Mansfield May 8, 1855; she died Oct. 9, 1873; married, second, Mary E. Kenny March 19, 1876; he died Nov. 29, 1905; she died Aug. 17, 1922; children: 1. Mary L.,⁸ born Sept. 19, 1855; died Nov. 7, 1861; 2. Susan T.,⁸ born in 1857; died Nov. 2, 1861; 3. William H.,⁸ born Nov. 3, 1859; died Nov. 9, 1861; 4. Martha E.,⁸ (twin), born Dec. 29, 1861; died May 20, 1868; 5. Mary,⁸ (twin), born Dec. 29, 1861; died May 20, 1868; 6. Mary Stocker,⁸ born Aug. 8, 1863; opera singer; married George R.

bers are best known as musicians. Integrity and firmness are its principal characteristics.

Richard Hide¹ worked in Marblehead about 1638, and was living in Salem as late as 1698.

Miner of New York City June 10, 1886; 7. Willie,⁸ born Nov. 23, 1866; 8. Laura Titus,⁸ born July 28, 1868; married Henry Osgood Oct. 8, 1890; 9. William F.,⁸ 10. *Herbert A.*,⁸ born about 1879. HENRY ORLANDO UPTON;⁷ mechanic and musician; leader of Upton's quadrille band; married Elizabeth Ann Cate; she died Dec. 1, 1909; he died March 30, 1919; children: 1. Ida F.,⁸ born May 25, 1860; married Frank M. Paine Nov. 26, 1895; 2. Henrietta F.,⁸ born Dec. —, 1861; musician; unmarried; 3. Henry,⁸ born Sept. 14, 1862; 4. *Eben Albert*,⁸ born Sept. 15, 1863; 5. Sarah M.,⁸ born about 1865; married Joseph Henry Arey March 30, 1882; 6. John Henry,⁸ born May 7, 1870; musician; married, first, Anna S. Porter of Marblehead Dec. 9, 1895; she died July 22, 1904; second, Sadie A. (Porter) Watson May 23, 1906. WILLIAM BOWDITCH UPTON;⁷ served in the Civil War; dealer in crockery, china and glass ware; married Ellen A. Rider May 30, 1866; lived in Montrose, Cal., in 1883; she died, his widow, in Denver, Col., Dec. 18, 1925; children: 1. Charles Rider,⁸ born Dec. 31, 1866; bookkeeper; lived in Montrose; died, unmarried, Sept. 6, 1894; 2. Mary Atwood,⁸ born April 15, 1868; 3. Walter Conant,⁸ born April 22, 1871; 4. Albert Ezra,⁸ born Dec. 26, 1872. SUMNER W. UPTON;⁷ druggist; married Margaret A. Splaine of Danvers Jan. 15, 1890; died Sept. 26, 1916; children: 1. Sumner Mortimer,⁸ born June 28, 1890; died Oct. 4, 1896; 2. Emily Augusta,⁸ born June —, 1891; died May 30, 1896; 3. Alice Louise,⁸ born Sept. 27, 1894; 4. Frances E.,⁸ born Feb. 15, 1899; 5. Charles S.,⁸ born May 28, 1901. COLCORD UPTON;⁷ steamboat manager; married Lillian S. Towne; child: 1. William Mack,⁸ born Feb. 15, 1889. EDMUND AUGUSTUS UPTON;⁷ married Alice F. Morse of Beverly Oct. 27, 1887; child: 1. Ednah Marguerite,⁸ born April 15, 1892. GEORGE UPTON;⁷ salesman; married, first, Edith E. Dorr of Sharon June 27, 1893; second, Ethel Dora Getchell April 20, 1904; child: 1. Grace L.,⁸ born Oct. 5, 1904.

FRANCIS TORREY UPTON;⁸ musician; married Alice M. Phippen July 20, 1896; child: 1. Wallace Carey,⁹ born Feb. 26, 1899; died in Chelsea Naval Hospital Nov. 26, 1918. JESSE F. UPTON;⁸ druggist; married Lillie E. Hatheway Oct. 23, 1883; children: 1. Clarence Hatheway,⁹ born July 22, 1885; married Katherine B. Anderson June 19, 1912; 2. George Augustus,⁹ born July 7, 1888; superintendent; married Mary Patterson Sept. 18, 1912. WARREN G. UPTON;⁸ provision dealer; married Etta M. Fowler Nov. 20, 1883; died Oct. 31, 1892; children: 1. Charles Oliver,⁹ born June 25, 1884; died July 17, 1912; 2. Sarah Ella,⁹ born May 30, 1886; living in 1898. WALTER PRATT UPTON;⁸ druggist; married Lillian M. Clark Oct. 5, 1898; children: 1. Caroline,⁹ born Aug. 25, 1901; 2. Warren C.,⁹ born June 6, 1905. HERBERT A. UPTON;⁸ printer; married, first, Ethel R. Waters Nov. 4, 1908; second, Mildred A. Thompson of Hamilton Oct. 1, 1921; child: 1. Grace W.,⁹ born Feb. 11, 1910. EBEN ALBERT UPTON;⁸ mason and musician; married, first, Ida Dow Aug. 31, 1883; second, Annie Tyler of Danvers Dec. 22, 1888; died March 17, 1894; she survived him; children: 1. Edna Annie,⁹ born about 1885; married Patrick Henry Tumulty of Peabody June 8, 1908; 2. *Eben Albert*,⁹ born in Danvers Nov. 26, 1895.

EBEN ALBERT UPTON;⁹ married Alma Baldwin May 15, 1915; child: 1. Eben Albert,¹⁰ born Dec. 3, 1919.

¹RICHARD HIDE,¹ born about 1614, was a carpenter; children: 1. *Isaac*,² baptized July 17, 1642; 2. Rebecca,² baptized March 31, 1644; married

Henry Silsbee,¹ who is mentioned on page 70, removed to Ipswich and subsequently to Lynn. His son Nathaniel remained

Jonathan Eager; 3. Ephraim,² baptized April 12, 1646; 4. Mary,² baptized Jan. 2, 1647-8; 5. Hannah,² baptized April 7, 1650; married Arthur Gray; 6. Richard,² baptized June 6, 1652; 7. Christian,² baptized July 20, 1654.

ISAAC HIDE,² mariner; married Susanna Baxter July 12, 1665; died in 1680; she married, second, Stephen Daniel Dec. 3, 1680; children: 1. Christian,³ born Nov. —, 1668; died Dec. —, 1668; 2. Elizabeth,³ born July 27, 1671; died young; 3. Isaac,³ born April 6, 1674; died July —, 1674; 4. Richard,³ born March 6, 1676-7; married Barbara Weld July 3, 1702; made his will at Hell brook Sluice, Holland, on board ship Samuel, Aaron Beal, master, Jan. 21, 1703-4; administration upon his estate was granted to his widow May 24, 1704; she married, second, Edmund Batter.

¹HENRY SILSBEE¹ (Silsby) married, first, Dorothy —; she died Sept. 27, 1676; married, second, Grace, widow of Jonas Eaton of Reading Nov. 18, 1680; she died before 1699; he died in 1700; children: 1. Mary,² married Zachariah Marsh; 2. Nathaniel,² born about 1651; 3. John;² 4. Jonathan;² lived in Lynn; married Bethiah Marsh Jan. 1, 1673; had children: 5. Samuel;² lived in Lynn; married Mary Biscoe July 4, 1676; died Oct. 16, 1687; had a daughter; 6. Hannah;² married Thomas Laughton Dec. 2, 1680; 7. Sarah² (?); probably married Joseph Collins Feb. 25, 1682; 8. Ephraim;² lived in Lynn; married Rachel Bassett Jan. 23, 1693; had children.

NATHANIEL SILSBEE,² married, first, Deborah Tompkins Nov. 5, 1671; second, Elizabeth Pickering before 1697; died in 1717-8; children: 1. Henry,³ born April 12, 1674; 2. Nathaniel,³ born April 11, 1676; died April 21, 1676; 3. Nathaniel,³ born Oct. 23, 1677; 4. Samuel,³ born Jan. 30, 1679; 5. John,³ born March 20, 1682-3; 6. Margaret,³ born March 20, 1684-5; married Ephraim Skerry; 7. Elizabeth,³ born about 1689; married John Cavis of Ipswich Feb. 10, 1720-1; 8. Mary;³ 9. Sarah;³ 10. Jonathan;³ married Abigail White April 12, 1720; 11. Hannah;³ married Jonathan Felt July 26, 1721; 12. Jane;³ married John Flint Jan. 2, 1734-5; 13. Ann;³ died Dec. —, 1723; 14. Abigail;³ 15. Benjamin;³ 16. William;³ 17. Joseph.³ JOHN SILSBEE,² married Bethiah Pitman Feb. 15, 1673-4; died in the spring of 1676; she married, secondly, Alexander Cole of Marblehead Dec. 15, 1680; child: 1. John,³ born Feb. 7, 1674-5.

NATHANIEL SILSBEE,³ married, first, Hannah Pickering May 27, 1703; second, Martha —; died Jan. 2, 1769, aged ninety-one; children: 1. Nathaniel, born Aug. 11, 1705; 2. Hannah;⁴ married, first, Joseph Prince; second, John Mascoll; 3. William,⁴ baptized Aug. 14, 1715. BENJAMIN SILSBEE,³ married Mary Manning (published Nov. 21, 1730); died before 1754; children: 1. Mary,⁴ born Oct. 25, 1733; 2. Benjamin,⁴ born June 26, 1738; 3. Sarah,⁴ born June 8, 1742. JOSEPH SILSBEE,³ married, first, Mary Pain Dec. 23, 1735; second, Margaret Abbott Jan. 25, 1743; child: 1. Elizabeth,⁴ baptized Nov. 28, 1736.

NATHANIEL SILSBEE,⁴ married Mary Daniels Oct. 24, 1730; fell off a staging and died Aug. 4, 1734; children: 1. Samuel,⁵ born Nov. 15, 1731; 2. Nathaniel,⁵ born Dec. 26, 1733; died young. WILLIAM SILSBEE,⁴ carpenter; married Joanna Fowles Oct. 17, 1735; died July —, 1783; she died April 16, 1793; children: 1. Nathaniel,⁵ born Nov. 9, 1748; 2. Martha;⁵ married, first, William Emerton Oct. 27, 1761; second, Christopher Babbadge; 3. Joanna;⁵ married Mansfield Burrill Dec. 1, 1764; 4. Hannah;⁵ married Elijah Haskell Nov. 27, 1764; 5. William⁵ (?), born about 1749; died July —, 1794.

here, and had a large family, who have been wealthy, prominent and influential.

SAMUEL SILSBEE;⁵ carpenter; married Martha Prince Jan. 22, 1756; died Dec. 14, 1803; she died Sept. 15, 1817; children: 1. Nathaniel;⁶ died in New York, unmarried; 2. Mary;⁶ died unmarried; 3. Hannah,⁶ born about 1761; married John MacGregor Nov. 1, 1781; 4. Samuel,⁶ born about 1763; 5. Deborah,⁶ born April 19, 1767; married Daniel Sage; 6. Sarah;⁶ died young; 7. Sarah, born about 1774; married, first, David Patten Aug. 14, 1803; he died Nov. 1, 1805; married, second, Haffield White Read Jan. 28, 1808. CAPT. NATHANIEL SILSBEE;⁵ master mariner, commanded the Grand Turk; married Sarah Becket Nov. 1, 1770; died at New York June 25, 1791; she died April 30, 1832; children: 1. Nathaniel,⁶ born Jan. 14, 1773; 2. Sarah,⁶ born May 4, 1775; died Aug. 4, 1776; 3. Sarah,⁶ born Aug. 28, 1777; married Timothy Wellman; 4. William,⁶ born March 21, 1779; 5. Joanna,⁶ born Sept. 21, 1780; died Aug. 16, 1782; 6. Polly,⁶ born Aug. 28, 1781; died Sept. 16, 1782; 7. Zachariah Fowle,⁶ born Aug. 9, 1783; 8. Joanna,⁶ born Sept. 22, 1789; died Oct. 5, 1789.

SAMUEL SILSBEE;⁶ carpenter and farmer; married Rebecca Read of Danvers Oct. 1, 1786; died June 7, 1822; she died July 9, 1857, aged ninety-four; children: 1. Martha,⁷ born March 22, 1787; married, first, David Beadle; second, Asa Hood; 2. Mary,⁷ born May 10, 1789; died June 25, 1794; 3. Rebecca,⁷ born March 13, 1791; married John M. Peck July 14, 1811; 4. Nathaniel,⁷ born Dec. 29, 1793; drowned at sea from the brig Mary and Eliza Sept. 14, 1816; 5. Mary,⁷ born May 22, 1796; died March 4, 1797; 6. Samuel,⁷ born May 27, 1798; married Mary Sullivan; had a daughter; 7. John,⁷ born July 13, 1800; died Sept. 28, 1815; 8. Sarah,⁷ born Dec. 12, 1802; married Thomas R. Peck of Boston June 10, 1821. HON. NATHANIEL SILSBEE;⁶ merchant; member of congress and United States senator; married Mary Crowninshield Dec. 12, 1802; she died Sept. 30, 1835; he died July 15, 1850; children: 1. ———⁷ (daughter), born Sept. 13, 1803; died Sept. 15, 1803; 2. Nathaniel,⁷ born Dec. 28, 1804; 3. Mary Crowninshield,⁷ born April 10, 1809; married Rev. Jared Sparks of Cambridge, president of Harvard College, May 21, 1839; 4. Georgiana Crowninshield,⁷ born Jan. 29, 1824; married, first, Francis Henry Appleton of Boston March 30, 1846; second, Henry Saltonstall Sept. 12, 1855. WILLIAM SILSBEE;⁶ merchant; married Mary Hodges Nov. 14, 1808; died Jan. 15, 1833; she died Aug. 31, 1851; children: 1. Margaret Hodges,⁷ born July 24, 1810; died July 7, 1829; 2. Benjamin Hodges,⁷ born Oct. 23, 1811; 3. William,⁷ born May 17, 1813; 4. John Henry,⁷ born July 17, 1814; 5. Mary,⁷ born Sept. 8, 1816; married Manuel Fenollosa; 6. Hannah Hodges,⁷ born April 20, 1818; died Feb. 16, 1895; 7. Harriet Elizabeth,⁷ born June 29, 1819; married John N. Mott of Mobile June 21, 1853. ZACHARIAH FOWLE SILSBEE;⁶ merchant; president of the Salem Savings Bank; married Sarah Boardman Nov. 27, 1810; she died April 16, 1852; he died July 3, 1873; children: 1. Francis Henry,⁷ born Sept. 6, 1811; H. C., 1831; lawyer; cashier of Merchants Bank; died, unmarried, Nov. 19, 1848; 2. John Boardman,⁷ born April 10, 1813; 3. Sarah Ann,⁷ born June 18, 1814; married Jonathan Willard Peele; 4. Zachariah,⁷ born Sept. 4, 1815; died Sept. 27, 1815; 5. Elizabeth,⁷ born Nov. 29, 1816; died Sept. 15, 1817; 6. Elizabeth,⁷ born Dec. 5, 1817; died Jan. 3, 1821; 7. Caroline,⁷ born Aug. 24, 1819; married William Dudley Pickman June 13, 1849; 8. Mary Boardman,⁷ born Jan. 3, 1821; married Rev. Dexter Clapp June 17, 1861; 9. George Zachariah,⁷ born Jan. 23, 1822; 10. Edward Augustus,⁷ born Dec. 18, 1823; died Oct. 31, 1825; 11. Edward Augustus,⁷ born Feb. 19, 1826.

Robert Follett¹ was in Salem in 1655; and was a fisherman, shoreman and husbandman.

Samuel Beadle lived in Charlestown as early as 1656, and, in 1661, came to Salem, where he lived a little more than two years, when he died. The

Samuel Beadle

HON. NATHANIEL SILSBEE;⁷ H. C., 1824; merchant; mayor; treasurer of Harvard College; removed to Boston in 1862; married Mary Ann C. Devereux Nov. 9, 1829; died in Milton July 9, 1881; children: 1. Nathaniel Devereux,⁸ born Oct. 22, 1830; H. C., 1852; lived in Boston; married Mary S. Hodges Oct. 22, 1856; had children; 2. George Devereux,⁸ born Oct. 29, 1832; died Aug. 18, 1843; 3. Eliza Devereux,⁸ born Oct. 23, 1835; died March 20, 1837; 4. Mary Ann Devereux,⁸ born Sept. 11, 1837; died March 10, 1838; 5. Mary Crowninshield,⁸ born April 7, 1840; married Frederick Augustus Whitwell of Boston June 10, 1861; 6. —, ⁸ stillborn March 17, 1841; 7. William Edward,⁸ born Sept. 27, 1845. BENJAMIN HODGES SILSBEE;⁷ H. C., 1831; merchant; president of the East India Marine Society, Merchants National Bank, Salem Lead Company, Old Ladies Home and Salem Savings Bank; married Elizabeth Jane White of Dedham Oct. 22, 1840; died Feb. 22, 1880; she died Aug. 19, 1904; children: 1. Elizabeth White,⁸ born Oct. 11, 1841; 2. Margaret,⁸ born March 2, 1850; died, unmarried, Jan. 14, 1901; 3. Francis H.,⁸ born April 7, 1852; 4. Martha,⁸ born Nov. 4, 1858. REV. WILLIAM SILSBEE;⁷ H. C., 1832; Congregationalist clergyman; married, first Charlotte Lyman March 21, 1838; she died Nov. 29, 1848; second, Maria Porter Woodward March 30, 1858; he died Jan. 8, 1890; she died April 2, 1911; children: 1. Annie Jean,⁸ born Aug. 4, 1839; died Dec. 2, 1920; 2. Henry Bellows,⁸ died in infancy; 3. Joseph Lyman,⁸ born Nov. 25, 1848; married Anna B. Sedgwick June 5, 1875. JOHN HENRY SILSBEE;⁷ H. C., 1832; merchant; married Rebecca Ann Dodge May 15, 1838; died Sept. 19, 1891; children: 1. William Henry,⁸ born Jan. 26, 1841; died March 18, 1900; 2. Alice Dodge,⁸ born Oct. 31, 1843; married Dr. Hall Curtis of Boston Dec. 1, 1864; 3. Walter J.,⁸ died July —, 1868. JOHN BOARDMAN SILSBEE;⁷ H. C., 1832; merchant; married Martha Mansfield Shepard May 10, 1849; died April 1, 1867; children: 1. Emily Fairfax,⁸ born June 7, 1850; married Amory A. Lawrence June 1, 1871; 2. Arthur Boardman,⁸ born Jan. 19, 1854; 3. Martha,⁸ born Nov. 4, 1859; 4. Thomas,⁸ born Oct. 10, 1861. GEORGE ZACHARIAH SILSBEE;⁷ merchant; married Elizabeth Sanders Saltonstall Dec. 16, 1852; she died Aug. 9, 1887; children: 1. George S.,⁸ born Aug. 21, 1854; 2. Catherine E.,⁸ born Sept. 14, 1856; 3. Frank Boardman,⁸ born May 28, 1867.

¹ROBERT FOLLETT¹ lived here as late as 1703; married Persis Black Nov. 29, 1655; children: 1. Mary,² born March 16, 1656; married John Herbert; 2. Robert,² born Sept. 20, 1659; 3. Susanna,² born June 1, 1662; married Joseph Sibley Feb. 4, 1683; 4. Hannah,² born Dec. 23, 1664; married John Southwick; 5. Ruth,² born Dec. 17, 1667; died May 1, 1668; 6. John,² born July 10, 1669; 7. Abraham,² born Dec. 23, 1671; married Sarah Callum March 30, 1697; 8. Isaac² (twin), born July 30, 1674; 9. Rebecca² (twin), born July 30, 1674; 10. Benjamin,² baptized Sept. 10, 1687; husbandman; married Patience Doute March 13, 1706-7.

JOHN FOLLETT;² married Martha —; children: 1. John,³ born July 29, 1695; 2. Ruth,³ born Dec. 9, 1696; 3. Joseph,³ baptized May 21, 1699. ISAAC FOLLETT;² husbandman; married Hannah Starr April 13, 1699; child: 1. Isaac,³ baptized Oct. 17, 1703.

Beadle family¹ has never been numerous, prominent or wealthy

¹SAMUEL BEADLE¹ married Susanna —, who died Feb. 13, 1661-2; he died March 10, 1663-4; children: 1. *Samuel*,² born about 1643; 2. *Elizabeth*; 3. *Thomas*; ²4. *Nathaniel*; ²5. —; ²drowned in a well Sept. 6, 1661; 6. *Dorothy*,² born March 8, 1659, in Charlestown; married William Lord Aug. 10, 1693; 7. *Abigail*,² born Sept. 24, 1661; died Oct. 14, 1661.

SAMUEL BEADLE;² served in King Philip's War; turner; being wounded in the war he was licensed to keep an inn; married Hannah Lemon June 10, 1668; died in 1706; she died in 1736; children: 1. *Nathaniel*,³ born March 29, 1669; 2. *Samuel*,³ born Oct. 11, 1671; 3. *Thomas*,³ born Nov. 28, 1673; died May 10, 1676; 4. *Susannah*,³ born April 20, 1676; married Henry Herrick July 23, 1694; 5. *Mary*,³ born May 21, 1678; married Samuel Phippen; 6. *Lemon*,³ born July 30, 1680; 7. *Hannah*,³ born Dec. 18, 1682; unmarried in 1729; 8. *Robert*,³ born Nov. 14, 1684; mariner; lived in London, England; died there, unmarried, in 1710; 9. *Jonathan*,³ born July 24, 1687; died May 16, 1688; 10. *Caleb*,³ born Feb. 24, 1688-9; 11. *Sarah*,³ born Sept. 24, 1690; married Richard Elvins July 14, 1715; 12. *Ruth*,³ born April 17, 1693; died Oct. 5, 1696. CAPT. THOMAS BEADLE;² sea-captain, trading with Barbadoes; tavern keeper; married Elizabeth Drake Sept. 18, 1679; died at Gloucester May 23, 1700; she married, secondly, Capt. Thomas Dean Dec. 9, 1701; children: 1. *Elizabeth*,³ born July 9, 1681; probably died before 1701; 2. *Mary*,³ born April 5, 1683; probably died before 1701; 3. *Thomas*,³ born March 16, 1685-6; died in 1686; 4. *Benjamin*,³ born Sept. 7, 1687; 5. *Thomas*,³ born Feb. 10, 1689-90; 6. *John*,³ born Feb. 14, 1691-2. NATHANIEL BEADLE;² cordwinder; married Mary Hicks April 20, 1671; died in 1704; children: 1. *Thomas*,³ born Jan. 21, 1671-2; *Mary*,³ born Nov. 20, 1673; married Benjamin Gray; 3. *Nathaniel*,³ born Dec. 17, 1675; 4. *John*,³ born April 29, 1678; died young; 5. *Elizabeth*,³ born Oct. 25, 1679; married Peter Henderson Nov. 10, 1701; 6. *John*,⁶ born Aug. 12, 1683; 7. *Abigail*,³ born Oct. 2, 1685; married Benjamin Henderson July 22, 1706; 8. *Joseph*,³ born Dec. 14, 1687; 9. *Jonathan*,³ born Jan. 2, 1689-90; 10. *David*,³ born April 18, 1692.

NATHANIEL BEADLE;³ cordwainer; married Elizabeth Sharp; died about 1713; she married, second, Samuel Cooke of Wallingford, Conn., Jan. 26, 1715-6; children: 1. *Susannah*,⁴ born Nov. 13, 1695; probably died young; 2. *John*,⁴ 3. *Eunice*,⁴ under age in 1718; 4. *Lois*,⁴ under age in 1718; 5. *Nathaniel*,⁴ born Dec. 15, 1703; married Elizabeth Hitchcock Nov. 10, 1726; died Feb. 10, 1762; had children; 6. *Mary*,⁴ born Sept. 18, 1708; living in 1718; 7. *Josiah*,⁴ born Aug. 3, 1711; living in 1718. JOSEPH BEADLE;³ cordwainer; married Elizabeth Evans June 9, 1708; died in 1715; she was his widow in 1722; children (baptized Oct. 9, 1715): 1. *Jonathan*,⁴ master mariner; died Dec. 16, 1750; *Sarah*, daughter of Jonathan Beadle, baptized in St. Peter's Church Oct. 9, 1757; 2. *Joseph*,⁴ 3. *Thomas*,⁴ cordwainer; lived in Smithfield, R. I., in 1740; 4. *Sarah*,⁴ 5. *David*.⁴ DAVID BEADLE;³ cordwainer and mariner; married Rebecca Gillingham Dec. 6, 1716; died in 1723; she married, secondly, John Stearns Oct. 27, 1726; children: 1. *Rebecca*,⁴ born Sept. 27, 1717; 2. —;⁴ 3. —⁴ (posthumous). NATHANIEL BEADLE;³ mariner; married Mary —; died in 1702; she survived him; child: 1. *Hannah*,⁴ born July 5, 1702; unmarried in 1729. LEMON BEADLE;³ carver; married Rebecca Atwater Jan. 4, 1709-10; died Nov. 17, 1717; she married, secondly, Samuel Phippen March 20, 1718; children: 1. *Samuel*,⁴ born Sept. 18, 1711; cooper; married Katherine Blaney Oct. 27, 1733; died in 1739; she married, secondly, Jonathan Tuexbury Dec. 14, 1740; 2. *Rebecca*,⁴ born Jan. 31, 1713-4; married John Becket. BENJAMIN BEADLE;³ cordwainer; married Abigail Hammond April 9, 1713; she was living in 1729, and he in 1752; children: 1. *Benjamin*,⁴ born Nov. 11,

locally. They have been connected with commerce as shipbuilders and mariners, a number of them having been master mariners.

1713; died young; 2. Abigail,⁴ born Jan. 8, 1714-5; died Feb. 19, 1714-5; 3. Abigail,⁴ born Jan. 28, 1715-6; married David Beadle; 4. Elizabeth,⁴ born March 12, 1718; married Stephen Daniel March 18, 1739-40; 5. Ruth,⁴ born March 4, 1720; living in 1727; 6. Benjamin,⁴ born Aug. 1, 1722; living in 1727. THOMAS BEADLE;³ mariner; married Margaret Ingersoll June 19, 1712; died in 1734; children: 1. Margaret,⁴ born Jan. 22, 1712-3; married, first, Benjamin Swinerton; second, William Owen of Marblehead Dec. 9, 1755; third, Benjamin Nurse; 2. Thomas,⁴ baptized March 2, 1717-8; mariner; died in 1745; 3. Sarah;⁴ married, first, Stephen Welcome Nov. 25, 1739; second, James Coady.

JOHN BEADLE;⁴ mariner; married Mercy English Oct. 11, 1722; died before 1764; she died in 1777; children: 1. Mary;⁵ married William Symonds; 2. Susanna,⁵ born Aug. 7, 1729; died, unmarried, Jan. 20, 1810, suddenly; 3. Sarah; married Richard Masury Nov. 29, 1754; 4. Mercy;⁵ married John Dove Dec. 8, 1768; 5. Josiah;⁵ 6. David;⁵ 7. John.⁵ JOSEPH BEADLE;⁴ mariner; married Lydia Bates Aug. 17, 1738; died before 1750; she was his widow in 1760; children: 1. Sarah,⁵ baptized Oct. 21, 1739; married William Carrill June 5, 1761; 2. Joseph,⁵ baptized June 20, 1742; died Oct. 3, 1818. DAVID BEADLE;⁴ mariner; married Abigail Beadle Oct. 22, 1736; children: 1. Abigail,⁵ born Dec. 29, 1737; 2. Elizabeth,⁵ born Jan. 30, 1739.

JOSIAH BEADLE;⁵ mariner; married Susanna Batten Jan. 26, 1762; died in 1775; she married, secondly, Henry Seward April 27, 1780; she died Jan. 8, 1817; children: 1. Mercy;⁶ married Thaddeus Gwinn; 2. Susannah;⁶ married John Elliott Dale Sept. 21, 1787. DAVID BEADLE;⁵ mariner; married Lydia Wiley Dec. 17, 1769; died in 1783; she died Oct. 15, 1792; children: 1. Lydia;⁶ married Joshua Webb; 2. Joseph,⁶ born in 1776: merchant; master mariner; married Tabitha Hitchings Jan. 19, 1804; she died Sept. 5, 1845; he died Oct. 2, 1848; 3. David;⁶ 4. Josiah,⁶ born May 2, 1780; shoemaker and mariner; died, unmarried, May 9, 1869; 5. John,⁶ born Jan. 20, 1782. JOHN BEADLE;⁵ married Mary West Aug. 9, 1745; she married, secondly, Thomas Eden July 11, 1751; child: 1. Mary;⁶ probably married Edmund Henfield April 25, 1772.

DAVID BEADLE;⁶ mariner; married Martha Silsbee Jan. 5, 1806; died at West Indies July —, 1811; children: 1. David;⁷ baptized Feb. 1, 1807; mariner, on ship Two Brothers, lost overboard Dec. 27, 1828; 2. Josiah,⁷ baptized May 21, 1809; died Feb. 16, 1842. JOHN BEADLE;⁶ shipwright; a builder of privateers; married Lucy Robbins of Ipswich April 30, 1805; she died Jan. 15, 1859; he died Oct. 14, 1863; children: 1. Lucy;⁷ married Ephraim Felt; 2. Lydia;⁷ married Jonathan Osborn of Danvers June 26, 1832; 3. John,⁷ born Oct. 14, 1813; 4. Joseph;⁷ 5. Josiah,⁷ born in 1819; died Nov. —, 1821; 6. Josiah;⁷ shipwright and caulker; married Mary Gregory; lived in Boston; died about 1908.

JOHN BEADLE;⁷ shipwright; married Mary Masury Brown March 27, 1838; lived in South Danvers; died Aug. 31, 1889; children: 1. John,⁸ born Jan. 26, 1839; shipwright; lived in Galena and Chicago, Ill.; married Emma Anna Partridge of Galena June 28, 1871; died in Chicago about 1923; she survived him; had a daughter; 2. Charles,⁸ born Dec. 31, 1839; master mariner; married Mary J. Page; died Jan. 11, 1910; no children; 3. William,⁸ born June 20, 1841; master mariner; married; died in Duxbury Sept. 12, 1912; no children; 4. Francis,⁸ born Aug. 7, 1846; master mariner; lived in Boston, 1873-1924; since then in Salem; married Caroline E. Elwell of Boston June 4, 1876; no children. JOSEPH BEADLE;⁷ shipwright and caulker; married Lucy Ann Ottignon April 2, 1842; died about 1875; child: 1. Lucy Annah,⁸ born in 1844; died Feb. 11, 1847.

Richard Croade¹ of Boston, merchant, purchased a house and lot of land in Salem, on the northerly side of Essex Street, midway between Beckford and Monroe streets, July 9, 1664;² and removed to Salem. He lived in this house until his death, in 1689.

Richard Croade

The town voted, June 18, 1666, that the work to be done at the fort should be carried on by a day's work of each man in the town above sixteen years of age, "and so round the town from one day to another until the whole work be done and finished." Captain Corwin gave notice when each man should work, with the assistance and advice of the selectmen.

May 19, 1669, the general court "as there hath been a considerable sum laid out upon fortification at Salem, which may prove of good use, yet, for want of some little further work, it is rendered for the present unserviceable, this Court doth therefore order, that Capt. George Corwin take care that the said fortification be forthwith completed, and he is hereby impowered to grant warrants to the constables to impress workmen, if need be, for the finishing of the said fortification, the charge whereof to be defrayed by the selectmen, who are hereby impowered to rate the inhabitants for that end and purpose."

Nicholas Manning,³ a gunsmith and anchor-smith, came from England to Salem in 1663, at the age of nineteen. He became a sea-captain and in a vessel, which he

Nicholas Manning

¹Richard Croade, born about 1628, was son of Richard and Anstice Croade of Frampton, Dorsetshire, England; married Frances —, who survived him; children: 1. Sarah, born Feb. 3, 1665-6; baptized in Hingham the eighteenth; married Philip Hill Dec. 23, 1689; 2. William, born Feb. 9, 1667-8; living in 1686; 3. Hannah, born Nov. 14, 1671; married Joseph Crow March 19, 1716-7; 4. John, born Feb. 25, 1672-3; mariner; married Mary —; died in 1719; lived in the Parish of Stepney, Middlesexshire, England, in 1717; in 1722, his widow lived in Bartlett's buildings, in the Parish of St. Andrews, Holborn, in the city of London; two years later, she was late of the Parish of Stepney alias Stebenheath, Middlesexshire; and later of Salem; their son, John Croade, born in 1717, lived with his mother at St. Andrews in 1722; 5. Richard; living in 1686; 6. Elizabeth; married, first, Edmund Bridges; second, Daniel Lambert; third, Moses Gilman of Exeter, N. H.; 7. Judith; married Joseph Neale.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 6, leaf 7.

³RICHARD MANNING¹ was baptized in St. Patrick's (Petrox) Parish, Dartmouth, Devonshire, England, in 1622; married Anstice Calley; he never came to America; she came to Salem in 1679, with five of their children, in the Hannah and Elizabeth, their son Nicholas having lived in Salem seventeen years; children: 1. *Nicholas*,² born June 23, 1644; 2.

hired, among other immigrants he brought to Salem his widowed mother and his brothers and sisters.

Richard,² born June 22, 1646; probably remained in England; 3. Anstice,³ born Jan. 8, 1650-1; married James Powling; 4. Margaret,² born Oct. 9, 1657; married Walter Palfrey; 5. *Jacob*² (twin), born Dec. 25, 1660; 6. *Thomas*² (twin), born Dec. 25, 1660; 7. Sarah,² born Aug. 28, 1667; married John Williamson Dec. 8, 1686.

CAPT. NICHOLAS MANNING;² gunsmith and anchor-maker; captain, 1677-1681; served in King Philip's War; lived in Salem, New York, and Sheepscott, Me.; was of Stratton Island, N. Y., gunsmith, in 1709; married Elizabeth, widow of Robert Gray June 23, 166-; his wife was Mary in 1709; children: 1. Thomas,³ born May 2, 1664; died in six months; 2. Nicholas,³ born Sept. 15, 1665; died June 16, 1667; 3. Margaret,³ born Feb. 25, 1666-7; died in a few days; 4. John,³ born May 28, 1668; gunsmith and blacksmith; lived in Boston; married Joanna Lash May 9, 1695, in Boston; she died; he died in 1727. LT. JACOB MANNING;² gunsmith; married Sarah Stone May 4, 1683; died May 24, 1756; she died June 24, 1756; children: 1. Robert,³ born Feb. 10, 1683-4; died, unmarried, about 1715; 2. Jacob,³ born Feb. 7, 1685-6; died, unmarried, in 1714; 3. Elizabeth,³ born Aug. 15, 1689; died, unmarried, about 1720; 4. Sarah,³ born Dec. 15, 1691; died, unmarried, Jan. 15, 1780; 5. Richard,³ born March 1, 1694; mariner; died, unmarried, in 1725; 6. *Benjamin*,³ born May 12, 1696; 7. *Samuel*,³ born June 19, 1698; 8. Katherine,³ born April 22, 1701; married John Berry Oct. 26, 1722; 9. Mary,³ born July 6, 1706; married Benjamin Silsby. THOMAS MANNING;² gunsmith; lived in Ipswich; married Mary Giddings June 19, 1681; died May 14, 1737; she died Feb. 24, 1738-9; children: 1. Anstice,³ born Oct. —, 1695; 2. Thomas;³ died young; 3. Richard,³ born about 1700; 4. Mary,³ born about 1702; 5. *John*³ (twin), born March 16, 1703; 6. Joseph³ (twin), born March 16, 1703; H. C., 1725; physician; lived in Ipswich; Dr. John Manning of Ipswich was his son.

CAPT. BENJAMIN MANNING;³ cordwainer, shopkeeper and master-mariner; married Hannah Lambert Dec. 25, 1718; died Jan. 8, 1768; she died Sept. 27, 1771; children: 1. —,⁴ born June 21, 1720; died in infancy; 2. Elizabeth,⁴ born July 18, 1721; died July 20, 1726; 3. Hannah,⁴ born Sept. 7, 1723; died June 28, 1738; 4. Mary,⁴ born July 14, 1725; married John Hodges; 5. Benjamin,⁴ born June 12, 1727; died Jan. 7, 1740; 6. Elizabeth,⁴ born July 12, 1729; died, unmarried, Feb. 27, 1801; 7. Richard,⁴ born Aug. 2, 1731; master-mariner; member of Provincial Congress; died, unmarried, Jan. 8, 1811; 8. Margaret,⁴ born July 22, 1733; died Feb. 10, 1734-5; 9. Margaret,⁴ born Jan. 31, 1734-5; died, unmarried, Aug. 26, 1813; 10. Jacob,⁴ born Feb. 4, 1736-7; cordwainer; died, unmarried, Feb. 28, 1815; 11. Hannah,⁴ born June 18, 1739; died, unmarried, April 23, 1817. SAMUEL MANNING;³ gunsmith and farmer; removed to Oxford, Mass., in 1748; married Margaret —; she was living in 1750; he died Sept. 19, 1774; children: 1. Robert,⁴ 2. Jacob.⁴ JOHN MANNING;³ yeoman; lived in Ipswich; married, first, Jane Bradstreet July 2, 1728; he died July 13, 1732; married, second, Elizabeth Wallis Feb. 20, 1733-4; she died Dec. 21, 1738; married, third, Ruth Potter June 14, 1739; died in 1775; she died July 13, 1791; children: 1. John,⁴ born June 19, 1732; 2. Elizabeth,⁴ baptized Oct. 20, 1734; 3. Mary,⁴ baptized Oct. 19, 1735; 4. Rebecca,⁴ baptized Nov. 20, 1737; 5. Anna,⁴ baptized Dec. 17, 1738; 6. Ruth,⁴ baptized April 13, 1740; 7. *John*,⁴ baptized June 14, 1741; 8. Anstice,⁴ baptized Dec. 19, 1742; 9. Jane,⁴ baptized Dec. 15, 1745; 10. Sarah,⁴ baptized Jan. 10, 1747; 11. Thomas,⁴ born Jan. 23, 1750; 12. Richard,⁴ born May 29, 1755.

The Salem court, June 26, 1666, licensed Eleazer Hathorne to retail strong water for a year.

The general court appointed November 8th, of this year, as a day of thanksgiving for "God's continuance of our civil and spiritual liberties, in preserving us from invasion of the common enemies of our nation, in sparing such a portion of the fruits of the earth as may be for necessary sustenance, notwithstanding the threats of his displeasure against us the summer past, in the drought, blastings, and mildews." The court also appointed November 22d as a fast, on account "of the growth of sin and prophaneness, as pride, oppression, sensuality, carnal security,

SERG. JOHN MANNING;⁴ farmer; lived in Ipswich; married Mary Proctor Feb. 16, 1764; died Feb. 5, 1814; she died May 28, 1827; children: 1. John,⁵ born Feb. 15, 1765; 2. Joseph,⁵ baptized May 31, 1767; 3. Mary,⁵ baptized Sept. 17, 1769; 4. Thomas,⁵ baptized May 7, 1775; 5. *Richard*,⁵ baptized May 4, 1777; 6. Sarah,⁵ baptized July 15, 1787; 7. William,⁵ baptized May 20, 1793. RICHARD MANNING;⁴ blacksmith; lived in Salem; established the Salem and Boston Stage Company; married Miriam Lord in 1776; died April 19, 1813, when on a journey to Maine; she died Oct. —, 1831; children: 1. Mary,⁵ born June 1, 1777; died, unmarried, Oct. 25, 1841; 2. William,⁵ born Nov. 27, 1778; merchant; died, unmarried, Sept. 5, 1864; 3. Elizabeth Clarke,⁵ born Sept. 6, 1780; married Capt. Nathaniel Hathorne; 4. Richard,⁵ born July 31, 1782; lived in Raymond, Me.; married Susan Dingley of Raymond in 1816; died in 1830; she married, secondly, Francis Radoux; had no issue; 5. *Robert*,⁵ born July 18, 1784; 6. Maria Miriam,⁵ born June 18, 1786; died, unmarried, May 20, 1814; 7. John,⁵ born Feb. 10, 1788; 8. Priscilla Miriam,⁵ born Jan. 10, 1790; married John Dike Oct. 17, 1817; 9. Samuel,⁵ born Dec. 17, 1791; died, unmarried, Nov. 17, 1833.

RICHARD MANNING;⁵ lived in Ipswich; married, first, Abigail Lane; second, Judith Brown Jan. 10, 1821; died May 22, 1821; she died June 22, 1856; children: 1. *Daniel Cogswell*,⁶ born Dec. 27, 1805; 2. *George*,⁶ born about 1807; 3. Richard,⁶ born in 1809; lived in Salem; lost overboard at sea in Zanzibar Dec. 30, 1830; unmarried; 4. Francis Brown,⁶ born about 1820. ROBERT MANNING;⁵ broker and pomologist; married Rebecca Dodge Burnham Dec. 20, 1824; died Oct. 10, 1842; she died Dec. 24, 1869; children: 1. Maria,⁶ born Feb. 7, 1826; died, unmarried, Dec. 24, 1917, aged ninety-one; 2. Robert,⁶ born July 6, 1827; pomologist; secretary of the Massachusetts Horticultural Society; died, unmarried, Feb. 17, 1902; 3. *Richard Clarke*,⁶ born Jan. 8, 1830; 4. Rebecca,⁶ born Sept. 4, 1834; unmarried at the age of ninety-one.

DANIEL COGSWELL MANNING;⁶ lived in Salem; married Louisa Massey June 12, 1827; died April 30, 1882, at Winchendon; she was living in 1896; children: 1. Anna Louisa,⁷ born June 12, 1828; married James Augustus Farless; 2. Mary Elizabeth,⁷ born July 9, 1836; married Benjamin Webb Russell. GEORGE MANNING;⁶ lived in Salem, Mass., Washington, D. C., and Brooklyn, N. Y.; married Frances Wilkins Ropes Dec. —, 1833; died in Brooklyn March 12, 1861; she died June 11, 1866; children, born in Salem: 1. George Francis,⁷ born about 1835; drowned at Salem June 26, 1841; 2. Marcellina R.,⁷ born about 1836; died, unmarried, at Yonkers, N. Y., March 30, 1867; 3. —⁷ (son); died in infancy. RICHARD CLARKE MANNING;⁶ coal dealer; married Sarah Elizabeth (Yeaton), widow of Oliver H. Gould Oct. 11, 1865; died May 2, 1904; she went to San Diego.

formality and heresy; . . . the small pox, mildews, drought, caterpillars, grasshoppers, with the effects thereof, whereby many of our outward comforts have been shortened, . . . the low estate of the true professors of Christian religion in all parts; and, in particular, that the Lord . . . will please to preserve the fleet of ships lately gone from hence, and give them a safe arrival at their desired ports."

Henry Colburn¹ was a mariner, and lived in Salem from 1665 until his death in 1676, apparently while on a voyage to Virginia. Jeremiah Meachum² was a husbandman and weaver, and lived here as early as 1650. William

Henry Colburn

Powell, a seaman, was of Salem in 1666. He made his will March 18, 1666-7, when he was bound for Virginia, and, as he says, the "times being troublesome and dangerous." He was cast away in 1669. Thomas Searle,¹ aged about twenty-eight, fisherman, was

Cal.; child: 1. Richard Clarke,⁷ born Aug. 7, 1867; H. C., 1888; professor in Hobart College, Geneva, N. Y.; now of Gambier, O.

¹Henry Colburn married Sarah Golt Dec. —, 1665; died in the spring of 1676; children: 1. Christian, born Dec. 25, 1666; died Aug. 1, 1667; 2. Henry, born Jan. 26, 1668; died June 17, 1669; 3. Sara, born April 2, 1671; 4. Johanah, born Sept. 20, 1673; died Sept. 24, 1673; 5. Mary, born Dec. 17, 1674.

²JEREMIAH MEACHUM¹ married, first, Margaret —; she died before 1694; married, second, Alice — in or before 1694; he died in the autumn of 1695; she survived him; children: 1. *Jeremiah*;² eldest son; 2. *Isaac*;² 3. Rebecca;² married John Macarter; 4. Bethia;² married George Hacker; 5. Rhoda;² married — West before 1694; 6. Sarah;² married Joseph Boyce; 7. Hannah;² married, first, William Gill; second, John Priest.

JEREMIAH MEACHUM;² had a fulling mill in Salem; fuller in 1680; of Enfield, in 1696; married Mary Trask Jan. 3, 1672-3 (wife Deborah in 1708); child, born in Salem: 1. Jeremiah,³ born Dec. 21, 1673. CAPT. ISAAC MEACHUM;² husbandman, weaver and fuller; moved to Enfield before or in 1693; married Deborah (Browning), widow of John Perkins of Topsfield Dec. 28, 1669; they were living in Enfield in 1698; children: 1. Deborah,³ born Dec. 15, 1670; died in 1671; 2. Isaac,² born Nov. 13, 1672; 3. Jeremiah,³ born Nov. 13, 1674; 4. Israel,³ born Sept. 18, 1676; 5. Ebenezer,³ born Feb. 21, 1677; 6. Ichabod,³ born Aug. 11, 1679; 7. Deborah,³ born April 8, 1681; married Daniel Marckham; 8. *John*,³ born June 11, 1682; (9. Jonathan; of Salem; died in the autumn of 1728?).

JOHN MEACHUM;³ weaver; in Enfield in 1711; in Salem, 1712-1719; of Enfield 1724-1733; of Salem, 1733-1739; of New Salem in 1742; married Priscilla (Chatwell), widow of Nathaniel Pope May 25, 1711; she was his wife in 1724; children: 1. Isaac;⁴ blacksmith; married Lydia Layton of Oyster River, N. H., Feb. 17, 1724; died in 1738; she was his wife in 1734; 2. Joseph,⁴ born — 8, 1712; (of Coventry, Conn., clerk, in 1740?); 3. Israel,⁴ born July 18, 1715; (4. Mary;⁴ married Thomas Jones of Enfield in 1740).

¹Thomas Searle married Damaris —; died between 1682 and 1686; she married, secondly, Joseph Phippen April 14, 1686; children: 1. John, born Oct. 30, 1666; 2. Mary, born May 6, 1668; married William Smith

in Salem in 1666. Abraham Toppan,¹ born in 1608, tailor, came from Newbury, remained here during the year 1666, and returned to Newbury.

Nov. 27, 1666, the Salem court ordered that the goods or "rack" lately secured by Maj. William Hathorne and left by him in the possession of John Devorix should be remanded and made use of for the erecting of a cage in Salem, and to be accountable for the remainder of it and "what is done herein" to the court. This prison was made and set on the westerly side of the meeting house in what is now the street.

A new prison was built on the same site in 1669, at an expense of thirty-seven pounds. Samuel Archer was the carpenter and did the felling, sawing, framing and finishing for sixteen pounds. Mr. Batter was paid seven pounds for boards; John Devorex, for seventeen trees and drawing them to the water side, received four pounds; Bartholmew Gidney was paid a pound for the timber by water; William Flint, for carting timber, stones and gravel, was paid two pounds; Eleazer Hathorne furnished nails, one hundred and fifty feet of boards and iron work and was paid three pounds; John Baker was paid seven shillings for ground-silling the building, three shillings for a day's work in leveling the floor and five shillings for a lock; and Marshall Skerry furnished twelve hundred shingles and laid them, at an expense of one pound and five shillings. Major Hathorne superintended the construction of the building, and toward the payment of the bills received from John Deverex eighteen pounds, Mr. Parlett five pounds, county treasurer ten pounds, and the marshall of the county one pound; leaving about two pounds due.² Benjamin Felton, who lived on the southwest corner of Essex and Washington streets, was the keeper of the prison; and he permitted prisoners to leave the prison to work for him on his own account, and some ran away.

And, although the prison was new and presumably up-to-date in its security, June 28, 1670, the Salem court sentenced John Baker to be whipped ten stripes for twitching the prison lock of Salem at noonday.

July 31, 1722; 3. Joseph; slaughterer; married Sarah Knights July 15, 1701; 4. Thomas, born Aug. 5, 1674; married Elizabeth Bush April 14, 1697; 5. Elizabeth; married William Frost April 5, 1706.

¹Abraham Toppan married Susan —; died Nov. 5, 1672; she died March 20, 1689; children: 1. Elizabeth; married Samuel Mighill of Rowley Nov. 21, 1657; 2. Abraham; living in 1670; 3. Peter, born in 1644; 4. Jacob, born in 1645; 5. Isaac; living in 1670; 6. Susanna, born June 13, 1649; 7. John, born April 23, 1651; living in 1670.

²Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, volume IV, page 213.

Nov. 10, 1674, the selectmen "Agreed that the town house shall be set up by the prison," and the next April voted to remove the latter and the settling of it in another place was left to the selectmen. June 8, 1676, the selectmen agreed with Benjamin Felton to set the prison in his garden, which is now included in Washington Street, between the Price block and the tunnel, to stand there as long as the town should see meet, or as long as the prison shall last. For the use of the land the town agreed to pay him forty shillings. When it was moved a new floor was laid in it; and Jan. 2, 1676-7, the selectmen paid William Dounton one pound and seven shillings for plank and work upon the prison.

An interesting incident occurred in the old prison, just before its removal into Felton's garden. A prisoner was confined in it, and in the night of June 18, 1675, he broke prison and escaped. John Clifford, constable of Salem, Mr. Hathorne not being at home, issued three "hues and cries" and sent them three several ways. They were addressed to the constables of Reading, Woburn, Billerica, Chelmsford, Concord and so from constable to constable to the utmost limits westward of this colony; to the constables of Marblehead, Lynn, Malden, Charlestown, Cambridge, Watertown, Sudbury, etc.; and to the constables of Beverly, Wenham, Ipswich, Rowley, Newbury, Salisbury, and so to the several constables of the towns east of this colony, for the constables "to make diligent search in your several towns for one James Booth or Garritt, who broke prison this last night at Salem and made an escape, who was committed for a criminal offence, he is of a middle stature, brownish hair and complexion, a blemish—one of his eyes, of a drawling speech, a tailor by trade."¹ This incident shows the alertness, expediency and sagacity of the official in attempting to retake the fugitive.

Another instance of breaking out of the new prison occurred in May, 1679. A negro, who was charged with attempting the life of a young woman in the woods, was confined with a great chain about one of his legs. He made his escape with the chain about his leg. He was of middle stature, called John, and wore a light-colored serge coat and sad-colored breeches. A warrant for his arrest was issued, and addressed to the constables of Salem, Marblehead, Lynn, Malden, Cambridge, Watertown and Dedham.

In a hearing on the sufficiency of the prison, the next year, Josiah Gatchell testified that he knew the prison was insufficient, for any man without any instrument, except his own hands, could go out as he pleased. John Haskins also escaped from it in November of that year.

¹Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, volume VI, page 103.

Dec. 11, 1666, the selectmen granted to Capt. Thomas Lauthrop the swamp meadow, adjoining to that commonly called Cromwell's meadow, running towards Will's Hill, in lieu of the eight or ten acres of meadow formerly granted to him.

Jan. 15, 1666-7, the selectmen granted to Joseph Huchison forty acres of land on the north side of Ipswich River, "near Wilkins' way" over that river.

Feb. 12, 1666-7, the selectmen agreed with John West "at the Creek," that while he should maintain "the Caseway over the marsh at the farm which was Mr. Blakleech's in Salem bounds a sufficient highway to the town of Gloster and the Manchester men's use: he shall enjoy the use and benefit of: all such ground as lieth in Common: between the said farm and the farm of Nicho: Woodbery with pond and beach: and hath liberty to set up a gate: thereon for his use." This causeway is on West Street, near Hale Street, at Beverly Farms.

Upon his purchase of the Bellingham and Denison grants in what is now Middleton, in 1660, Bray Wilkins erected a dwelling house and, with John Gingell, who owned the territory with him, immediately offered to annex his extensive territory to the town of Salem, as it was then without any local jurisdiction. This was done in a petition to the General Court, dated May 23, 1661. In the petition, they say that their lands lie nigh to the territory of Salem and that the petitioners had been of the Salem society for many years, that there was a highway thereto, and they have had their spirits well satisfied "in the ministry of God" there, etc. The request was immediately granted. This was also accepted by the town of Salem. Wilkins came to Salem by a path, which was the original of King and Maple streets, to the Indian ford over Ipswich River near Howes' station. From thence the old path ran by the old road, Preston and Nichols streets, to Beaver brook, and from thence to Salem.

There was a way to Andover (North Andover) very early from Salem through what is now Danvers Highlands, where Center Street now runs, passing over Ipswich River at the old log bridge, on River Street to the Andover turnpike whence it continued in a crooked path past Bray Wilkins' house in Middleton, through Middleton Square, Park Street and at the three roads passing to the right toward the present center of North Andover. All these roads still exist, and are in excellent condition. The log bridge was built originally of logs very early. Some fifteen years ago, the old logs with their renewals, were removed, and the present steel girders took their places.

"The inhabitants about Will's Hill" requested the town of Salem to locate a way to town, and, Dec. 25, 1666, the selectmen agreed to make provision for such a road that winter. The same



LOG BRIDGE.

"inhabitants" informed the selectmen that the people of Andover also desired a way to Salem, and Thomas Putnam and Sergeant Fuller were appointed to speak and treat with the selectmen of Andover about it. The matter of building a bridge over the river soon came into the discussion.

May 3, 1667, the selectmen appointed Edmond Batter, William Flint and Richard Leech "to meet with Andover men at Lieut: Tho: Puttnam: and are Impowered to settle the country highway betwixt us and Andover: so as near as they can best accommodate: them and our neighbors both at Will's Hill and our farmers." June 7, 1667, the selectmen appointed Edmond Batter and Nathaniel Putnam to "perfect the agreement with Goodman Fuller about the highway betwixt Salem and Andover: as also to treat with the Court at Salem about the bridge: and to do all things necessary for the completing, furnishing and recording all that is required to be done with respect to ye said way." This is the ancient log bridge which was built over Ipswich River.

March 19, 1667-8, the Salem selectmen appointed Edmond Batter to treat with the county at the next Salem court; and, Nov. 24, 1668, the local court allowed to Salem six pounds, thirteen shillings and four pence, for encouragement in building a bridge over Ipswich River, the new way between Salem and Andover, the entire highway to be completed before the next Salem court. The next February, the town voted that the payment be suspended.

In September, 1670, the town appointed Captain Corwine, Henry Bartholmew, Lt. Thomas Putnam and William Hollingwood as a committee to meet with some Andover men to see whether a better way could be found; and view the way already laid out. This vote was practically repeated by the town March 25th following, the committee being the same, except that Hollingwood was not put on it, and Major Hathorne appointed in his stead. The same committee, the next July, were appointed "to take care about the Andover highway, and appoint the place where a bridge shall be made over the river, and agree with some men to do it that it may be done before the next court held at Salem." June 27, 1671, the Salem court ordered that a bridge should be built over Ipswich River, and a highway to it partly on Topsfield land. The selectmen of Salem petitioned the general court, stating that they had been prevented the last two summers by miserable rains: that the proposed new way is shorter, cheaper to maintain, "having as we conceive above a hundred rod of meadow and swamp in not much more than two miles and some of it very deep," and praying that a committee be appointed to see it done. The committee so appointed consisted of William Hathorne, George Corwin, Thomas Putnam and Henry Bartholmew for Salem; and, before December 1st, the bridge and way were fully completed.

The new way left the Wilkins road at what is now Liberty Street, in Middleton, and followed the present street northerly to North Andover Center through meadow, wood, swamp and ledgy hilly ground, for many miles. Beyond the Andrew Nichols house, the road ran through the territory of Topsfield to the river, and through Rowley (Boxford) and Andover (North Andover). Bridges were erected at Beaver brook and, in Rowley, at Beachy (Stony) brook.



EXERCISE CONANT HOUSE

William Oxman, born about 1633, fisherman, lived here from 1667 to 1669. George Thomas¹ lived in Salem from 1667 to 1680. He was born about 1640, and had his gunsmith's shop at 95 Essex Street. Elisha Kebee² came to Salem, at the age of nineteen, in 1667. Peter Audley was here a short time, being gone in 1672.

Elisha Kebee

¹George Thomas married Mary Graves in Salem Dec. 28, 1667; children: 1. Richard, born Dec. 6, 1668; 2. George, born April 14, 1670; 3. Mary, born Dec. 3, 1671; 4. Elizabeth, born Jan. 4, 1672-3; married Isaac Pease; 5. Hannah, born June 6, 1674; 6. Ruth, born Feb. 8, 1675.

²Elisha Kebee was born about 1648; joiner; removed to Enfield between 1681 and 1701; married Rachel Cooke Dec. 12, 1667; they were living in

Exercise Conant built his house at what is now 634 Cabot Street, in Beverly, in 1667, and lived in it until May 25, 1695, when he conveyed it to his "cousin" John Conant.¹ The purchaser lived here from 1695 to Sept. 6, 1715, when Rev. John Chipman, pastor of the then new North Beverly church, bought it for a parsonage.² Mr. Chipman lived here until his decease, March 23, 1775, a period of sixty years. The title remained in the Chipman family until June 24, 1891, when it passed to Frank A. Woodbury, who is its present owner.

The Salem church adopted the Bay Psalm Book in 1667, not to take the place of the old singing book which had been in use here since Salem was first settled, but as supplementary to Ainsworth's.

In 1672, the weekly lecture of the church was held at eleven o'clock throughout the year.

In September, 1667, the town voted to pay two pounds each for killing wolves, and during the next year forty-six pounds was paid under that vote. Wolves must have been common and troublesome at that period. Feb. 21, 1667-8, the selectmen ordered that "John Edwards and Company" be paid for killing three wolves.

The general court appointed Nov. 5, 1667, to be kept as a day of thanksgiving, "as it hath pleased the Lord graciously to continue our peace and liberties, and kept off the common enemy of our nation from infesting our coasts and habitations, and hath also blessed the fruits of the earth this last summer in a plentiful increase thereof."

Dec. 4, 1667, was appointed a fast day by the general court, "as the churches and people of God, in all parts, at this day are in trouble and perplexity, and in particular our dear native country: . . . the state and condition of our countrymen in the Caribby Islands, and other parts of America, in respect of the wars, troubles, and devastations among them, by terrible tempests of late; . . . and taking away sundry of our vessels abroad by the common enemy."

March 19, 1667-8, the town gave liberty to Mordechai Cravat to sell beer and victuals; and, on the thirty-first, the Ipswich court licensed him to keep an ordinary for the year ensuing.

Jan. 24, 1667-8, the selectmen ordered that Mr. Thorndike should have satisfaction in land on Cape Ann Side for the highway laid out through his land to the Creek road.

Enfield in 1709; children: 1. John, born Feb. 1, 1667-8; 2. Edward, born Feb. 2, 1669-70; 3. Elisha, born March 28, 1673; 4. James, born Dec. 27, 1675.

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 22, leaf 192.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 30, leaf 3.

March 19, 1667-8, the town prohibited the selectmen from giving, selling or exchanging any land belonging to the town.

At the town meeting, June 1, 1668, Edmond Batter requested a small parcel of land next to Elias Stileman's warehouse, "and the whole cove," and it was referred to a committee.

March 10, 1667-8, the freemen of Salem elected Edmond Batter one of the deputies to the general court. He was not acceptable to that body, and they immediately expelled him. He refused to retire, and, May 1st following, petitioned the court "to know why he was expelled." Three days later, John Higginson, five selectmen and sixteen freemen made a statement that the court does not accept Mr. Batter, yet show no legal bar to him, and orders the freemen of Salem to choose another in his stead. This was signed by Richard Moore, sr., Roger Conant, William Hollingworth, Hilliard Veren, John Horne, John Gedney, sr., William Lord, sr., and others. The freemen of Salem voted not to proceed to a new choice for deputy. The reason why he was not desired to represent Salem was because he had signed and besought others to sign a petition which endangered the government. This petition was probably that which was signed by thirty-four Salem men in 1666, and presented to the court, which occasioned the king's displeasure. Mr. Batter was elected to the same position in subsequent years, and it is probable that nothing further came of the flurry which was caused by the desire of the governing body by their official acts to ostensibly show the king that the court did not countenance the acts of individuals in their criticism of the throne¹.

Jacob Pudeator,² a blacksmith, came to Salem about 1666. He was then twenty-four years old. He lived in a small house which stood on the western corner of Winter Street and Washington Square, and which he bought of Thomas Watson in 1672.

The dismembered body of Edward Yard was found floating in North River, near Bass point, and the constable of Salem summoned a jury, consisting of Richard Hollingworth, Joseph Phippen, Joseph Hutchinson, Edward Hillerd, William Lake, Samuel Williams, John Massey, John Robinson, Henry Keny, John West, William Cash and John Norman, to hold an inquest thereon, May 4, 1668, and they reported that they conceived that he "was drowned and so throw his long Continuance in the water

¹Massachusetts Archives, volume 106, leaves 169, 170, 174, 175, 178, 187-191.

²Jacob Pudeator married Isabel Mosier Oct. 28, 1666; she was a brawler, railer and drunkard, pawning nearly everything in the house for rum; she died suddenly March 3, 1676-7; married, secondly, Ann, widow of Thomas Greenslett, a neighbor; died in 1682; and she was his widow in 1685, when she disposed of the homestead. He devised property, in his will, to his "cussin" (nephew?) Isaac Pudeator.

was dismembered his head being off and his hands and body much putrified." The body was buried by Samuel Harris and John Green, by whom apparently it was found. The charge for the burial was thirty shillings, one-half of which was paid by the town of Salem and the other half by Moses Maverick.

Joshua (Joseph?) Rogers was drowned while going in a birch canoe to a fishing ketch, being somewhat under the influence of liquor. When he entered the canoe, in which were Edward Calcott and an Indian, he laid down on one side and when he was turning over the canoe was upset. His body was washed ashore, where it was found. A jury, consisting of Benjamin Felton, Thomas Oliver, Joseph Miles, William Dounton, William Lake, Thomas Rix, Mathew Price, John Baxter, Alister Macmillyon, John Wedge, John Horn and

Alister Macmillyon

Edmond Counter, held an inquest on the body, and, June 8, 1668, reported that "by the providence of God Joshua Rogers came to an untimely end being taken up dead on the shore, . . . we do find that according to the best of our understanding that the said Josuah Rogers came to an untimely end being taken up dead on the shore, . . . we do find that according to the best of our understanding that the said Josuah Rogers was drowned going aboard a fishing Cach in a Burching Canoe Edward Callcott's Ingen being in the Canu with him doth inform us that when he entered into the Canu that he laid down on his side and being something in drink not minding the tickleness of the Canow turn himself and over set the Canow."

June 10, 1668, the selectmen requested the people to donate toward the freight of some masts which were to be sent to the king, but, at the time and place, two weeks later, at Mr. Gidney's, no one appeared to give anything.

On the same day, the selectmen ordered that William Flint and Serg. Richard Leach lay out a highway, "beginning at Richard Huchenson's field and so to run to the beaver dam near to Serg. Porter's meadow and so to the extent of the bounds." This road ran from the junction of Maple and Pine streets, in Danvers, up Maple, Nichols, Preston and Maple streets towards Howes station, beyond the Danvers-Middleton line. The return of the committee is as follows:—

By an order of the selectmen dated the 10 4mo 68 Sergeant lech & Willum flint were to laye out a hiewaye from Richard hutchsones feeld to the extent of the boundes the way is layed out as foleth: from a great whit oak stump be twixt the said hutchsons feld where the waye turnes to beuer dam we apoynt the waye to Rune where it is to the top of the hill neare where free mens hous was & so by the side of the fil

to two trees at beuer dam: the trees be one on one side the brouk & the other on the other sid neare the bound tree betwixt Tho Putnam & Robert Prince & from there to the uper end of Thomas Putnams feld two pole with out the fence to a bound tree that be longes to Tho Putnam Robert Princ Jo Putnam & henry keney the stump to be in the midel of the hieway & the way to Run straight from thenc betwixt two walenut trees marked entring in to a ualea on the East sid of Tho Putnams bound tree: & from the north end of the ualea to a rock neare mr Rukes boundes that is in the way with a litel tre marked on the south East sid the waye neare the Rock from thenc Cros mr Ruckles land as the waye Runes to a Red oake marked neare to a great whit oake burned at the bottom that stands neare about the line be twixt nath Putnam & mr. Ruck & thi's hiway to be tow pole wid from one end to the other witnes our handes 22th 8 mo 68

WILLIAM FLINT
the mark of
RICHARD LEACH

The Topsfield and Rowley Village (Boxford) people crossed Nichols brook, and came down the Ferncroft road to Nichols Street, at the Leopold Morse estate, and thence in the new road to Maple Street, and on to Salem town.

The governors of the Massachusetts Bay Colony who lived in Salem during the colonial period were John Endecott, who served in 1629, 1644, 1649-53, 1655-1664, and Simon Bradstreet, who was governor from 1679 to the end of the colonial government, except during the regime of Sir Edmund Andros. John Endecott was the only deputy-governor, serving from 1641 to 1643 and in 1650. The service of the Salem assistants was as follows: John Endecott, 1629-1634, 1636-1640, 1645-1648, 1654; John Humphrey, 1629, 1635-1637, 1639-1641; John Winthrop, jr., 1638, 1639; William Hawthorne, 1662-1679; Simon Bradstreet, 1676-1678; William Browne, 1680-1683; Bartholmew Gidney, 1680-1683; John Hawthorne, 1684-1686.

The commissioners to end small causes, belonging to Salem, so far as the records have revealed, are as follows: Lt. Thomas Lathrop, Captain Hawthorne, William Browne and Edmond Batter appointed in 1655; William Hawthorne, William Browne and Edmond Batter in 1656, 1658-1661; William Browne, sr., Edmond Batter and Bartholmew Gedney, 1679. The marshall of the Salem court in 1647 was Samuel Archard, and he was succeeded by Henry Skerry June 26, 1666. The annual salary of the marshall was four pounds.

The following is a list of the clerks of the Salem quarterly court during the colonial period: Ralph Fogg, 1636-1647; Henry Bartholmew, 1647-1653; Elias Stileman, 1653-1658; Hillard Veren, 1658-1683; Benjamin Gerrish, 1683-1692.

The selectmen of the town from 1650 to 1688 inclusive, serving in the years stated, were as follows: Daniel Andrew, 1685; Jacob Barney, 1654-1658; Henry Bartholmew, 1650-1652, 1662-1664, 1666, 1667, 1671, 1673, 1674; Edmond Batter, 1650, 1654-1670, 1672, 1673, 1676, 1677, 1681; Joseph Boyce, 1658; William Browne, 1650-1652, 1656-1673, 1676, 1677, 1679-1682; Roger Conant, 1650-1655, 1658, 1660, 1661; George Corwin, 1650-1656, 1658-1665, 1669, 1670, 1672, 1674-1676; John Corwin, 1657, 1669, 1670, 1673-1677, 1679-1683, 1685; Jonathan Corwin, 1680; Philip Cromwell, 1675, 1678-1680; Emanuel Downing, 1651, 1652; Edward Flint, 1675, 1678; George Gardner, 1655, 1663, 1669, 1671; Joseph Gardner, 1673; Samuel Gardner, 1677, 1678, 1681-1688; Thomas Gardner, 1650, 1651, 1657, 1685, 1687; Bartholmew Gedney, 1669, 1670, 1673, 1677, 1680, 1685, 1686; John Gedney, 1655, 1666; Joseph Grafton, 1671, 1674, 1678; John Hathorne, 1679-1684; William Hathorne, 1650-1654, 1656, 1659, 1661-1667, 1671-1675; John Higginson, 1678, 1679, 1683, 1684, 1686, 1688; William Hirst, 1686-1688; Robert Kitchen, 1688; Thomas Lathrop, 1650, 1658, 1660, 1664-1667; John Leach, 1678, 1687; Timothy Lindall, 1686, 1687; Nicholas Manning, 1675; Jeffrey Massey, 1650-1658; John Pickering, 1668-1670, 1673, 1676, 1677, 1682-1684; Israel Porter, 1680-1684, 1686; John Porter, 1650-1658, 1660-1662, 1668, 1671; John Price, 1676, 1677, 1679, 1682-1685, 1687, 1688; Walter Price, 1651-1654, 1657-1667, 1672, 1674; Richard Prince, 1655, 1657, 1658, 1674; John Putnam, 1668, 1670, 1672, 1673, 1676, 1681; Nathaniel Putnam, 1666-1668; Thomas Putnam, 1665; John Ruck, 1685-1688; William Trask, 1678; John Turner, 1679; Daniel Weld, 1675; Humphrey Woodbury, 1668.

The following is a list of the constables of Salem from 1650 to 1689; Jonathan Ager, 1682; Daniel Andrew, 1677; Samuel Archer, 1665; Christopher Babbidge, 1673; Benjamin Balch, 1661; Thomas Barnes, 1662; Jacob Barney, 1668; John Batchelder, 1680; Nathaniel Beadle, 1677; Samuel Beadle, 1677; William Beckett, 1689; Edward Bishop, 1660; William Browne, 1668; Edward Bush, 1688; John Bottolph, 1667; John Buxton, 1680; Peter Cheevers, 1679; John Clifford, 1674, 1675; Abraham Cole, 1676; Isaac Cook, 1678, 1684; Samuel Corning, 1658; John Corwin, 1668; Jonathan Corwin, 1686; Philip Cromwell, 1658; William Curtis, 1665, 1678, 1689; Roger Darby, 1689; William Downton, 1684; Philip English, 1683; John Felton, 1686; Nathaniel Felton, 1657; Richard Flinder, 1684; Edward Flint, 1679; Thomas Flint, 1674, 1680; William Flint, 1660; Samuel Gardner, 1671, 1677; Thomas Gardner, 1680; Eleazer Gedney, 1671; Eliezer Giles, 1676; Thomas Gould, 1685; Thomas Gouldthwait, 1659; Edward Grove, 1670; Joseph Hardy, 1680; Roger Haskell, 1657;

Stephen Haskett, 1670; John Hawthorne, 1677; Thomas Haynes, 1682; Henry Herrick, 1656; William Hirst, 1683; John Hoames, 1684; John Horne, 1682; Joseph Horne, 1681; Nathaniel Howard, 1683; Edward Humber, 1666; Joseph Huchinson, 1677; Richard Huchinson, 1658; Nathaniel Ingerson, 1671; Thomas Ives, 1680; William Jeggles, 1655; Elizer Keysor, 1686; George Keisour, 1669; Henry Keney, 1686; Daniel King, 1685; John King, 1688; William Lake, 1674; Daniel Lambert, 1687; John Lambert, 1683; John Landor, 1684; John Leach, 1682; Richard Leach, 1666; Nicholas Manning, 1672; John Marston, 1673; Manasseh Marston, 1675; John Maskoll, 1687; John Massey, 1663; Thomas Maule, 1688; Thomas Mould, 1686; John Norman, 1678; Deliverance Parkman, 1687; John Patch, 1664; John Pease, 1673; Christopher Phelps, 1683; Samuel Phelps, 1685; David Phippeny, 1678; Joseph Phippeny, 1669; John Pickering, 1663, 1689; Nathaniel Pickman, 1664; Thomas Pickton, 1662; James Poland, 1679, 1685; Joseph Pope, 1683; John Porter, 1669; Joseph Porter, 1688; Nicholas Potter, 1660; Robert Prince, 1670; Richard Prithritch, 1681; John Procter, 1675; Edward Putnam, 1687; John Putnam, 1667; Nathaniel Putnam, 1656; Thomas Putnam, 1655, 1689; Daniel Rea, 1684; Joshua Ray, 1678; John Rayment, 1659; Charles Redford, 1687; Henry Rinolls, 1667; Thomas Rix, 1666; Thomas Robins, 1661; Jeremiah Rogers, 1682; John Rogers, 1681; Thomas Roots, 1659; George Ropes, 1664; John Ruck, 1661; Daniel Rumball, 1662; Thomas Searle, 1678; Samuel Shattock, 1685; Nathaniel Silsbee, 1686; James Simons, 1679; Henry Skerry, 1656, 1676; John Southwick, 1672; John Stone, 1655; Nathaniel Stone, 1667; Robert Stone, 1688; Job Swinerton, 1679; Gilbert Tapley, 1681; John Trask, 1685, 1689; James Underwood, 1657; Jonathan Walcott, 1681; Uzall Wardell, 1681; Ezekiel Waters, 1682; John Waters, 1687; John Williams (cooper), 1672; Nehemiah Willoughby, 1679; Humphrey Woodbury, 1663; Nicholas Woodbury, 1666, 1668; Josiah Woolcott, 1688.

The town clerks were first chosen as follows: Walter Price, 1666; William Browne, jr., 1671; Bartholmew Gedney, 1673; John Curwin, 1674; John Price, 1676; John Higginson, jr., 1678; John Hathorne, 1679.

The clerks of the writs were chosen as follows: Jeffry Massey in 1647, and Hilliard Veren in 1658.

The following list of freemen is a continuation of the first list in volume I: 13:3:1640, Edward Norrice, Thomas Ruck, William Stevens, John Fairfield, James Standige, John Bachlor, Robert Elwell, Thomas Watson, Mark Formais. 2:4mo:1641, Daniel Weld, William Woodberry, William Geares, Philemon Dickenson, Esdras Reade, John Robinson, Thomas Gardner, John Marston,

Robert Fuller, Miles Ward, Samuel Corning, Jonathan Porter, Richard Pattingell, William Browne, Thomas Davenish, Philip Veren, Francis Lawes, John Baker, John Jackson, Austen Kilham, Thomas Payne. 18:3:1642, Robert Button, Benjamin Vermaes, Thomas Antrum, Michael Shaflin, Thomas Putnam, John Cooke, Phineas Fiske, William Fiske, George Byam, Richard Bishop, Allen Kenniston, Elias Stileman, John Tomkins, Ananias Conkling, John Neale, John Bulfinch, Joseph Boyce, George Right, Thomas Wheeler, 27:10:1642, Walter Price, Robert Gutch, George Gardner, Richard Prence, Robert Leoman, Thomas More, Thomas Tresler, William Robinson. 28:12:1642, Thomas Edwards, John Kitchen, Henry Harwood, Richard More, Hugh Stacye, Thomas Avery, Edward Beachamp. 10:3mo.1643, William Vincen. 29:3:1644, Joseph Phippen, John Black, Allen Convers. —3mo:1645, Thomas Barnes. 26:3:1647, Richard Curtice. July 1, 1657, Henry Rennolds. May 27, 1663, John Croade, John Stratton. May 3, 1665, Capt. George Corwin, John Endecott, Zerubbabel Endecott, Eliezer Hauthorne, John Corwin, William Browne, jr., John Putnam, Joseph Porter, Richard Leach, Samuel Eburne, sr., John Rucke, James Browne, Philip Cromwell, Richard Hollingsworth, Edward Humber, Joshua Rea, Christopher Babbidge. April 29, 1668, Thomas West, Henry West, Samuel Archard, John Massey, William Dounton, John Ingersoll, John Pease, John Dodge, sr. (of Bass River), Nathaniel Stone, Peter Woodbury, Ephraim Herrick. May 19, 1669, John Gidney, Bartholmew Gidney, John Pickering, Joseph Grafton. May 31, 1671, John Corwin, John Marston, Eliazer Gidney, John Maskol, Joseph Gardner. May 7, 1673, Charles Nicholate. May 12, 1675, Samuel Gardner. May 23, 1677, John Price, John Higginson, jr., John Hathorne, Manasses Marston, Henry Keny, jr. May —, 1678, Timothy Lindall, Isaac Foot, Peter Cloyce. May 19, 1680, John Grafton, Resolved White, Robert Fuller, Zacke Marsh, Thomas Putnam, jr., William Stacy, Joseph Phippen. May 11, 1681, Benjamin Gerrish, Ezekiel Cheever, John Leech. May 24, 1682, Peter Prescott, John Foster, Anthony Buxton.

June 24, 1668, the selectmen admitted Michael Coombs¹ as an inhabitant of the town. He was a mariner, and about thirty-six years old. Na-

Michael Coombs

¹Michael Coombs was in Salem as late as 1671. He married Joane —; children: 1. Michael, born March 22, 1668-9; probably married Ruth Roads in Marblehead July 12, 1694; and lived in Marblehead; 2. Joshua, born Feb. 23, 1670-1.

thaniel Hadlock,¹ Walter Skinner² and William Shaw³ were in Salem in 1668. William Adams, at this time, was at Clifford's, and was left to the care of the selectmen.

Edmond Counter

Edmond Counter was in Salem from 1668 to 1675.

June 30, 1668, the Salem court granted to John Corwin a license to retail strong waters out of doors, and the license was renewed from time to time until 1681.

At a meeting of the selectmen, July 8, 1668, "upon the complaint of several persons about the North neck concerning Indians residing thereabouts its ordered that if the inhabitants desire a watch there the constable shall set the watch there" by them.

Sept. 12, 1668, the town granted to Jonathan Walcut a strip of about fifteen acres of land running along Cantlebury's farm, bought of Captain Corwine; and to Samuel Cutler thirty acres near the farms of John Ingerson and Francis Nurse.

At a meeting of the selectmen, Oct. 12, 1668, it was ordered that a highway be laid out from the country road beyond Frostfish River at the most convenient place for landing at the salt water, and Sergeant Leech and William Flint were appointed to lay it out. This road was not laid out at that time; and May 27, 1671, the selectmen "ordered that there shall be a highway laid

¹Nathaniel Hadlock married Remember Jones May 1, 1673; and led a vagabond life. Savage says that he moved to Gloucester, where he had a son John born Feb. 27, 1682.

²Walter Skinner lived in Reading in 1661 and in Salem after 1667; aged about fifty in 1680; wife Hannah survived him and was his widow in 1705; children, all of Salem and living in 1705: 1. Samuel; 2. Hannah; married, first, Judah Rogers May 3, 1694; second, Thomas Fortune Aug. 5, 1702; 3. Elizabeth; married Joseph Whitefoot Oct. 2, 1706.

³WILLIAM SHAW¹ was a planter in Salem from 1668 to 1726; married, first, Elizabeth Fraile of Lynn Nov. 23, 1668; second, Mary — before 1692; he died in 1726; children: 1. Samuel,² born Feb. 19, 1669-70; died in March, 1670; 2. William,² born Sept. 25, 1672; 3. Margaret,² unmarried in 1722; 4. Elizabeth,² born Jan. —, 1679; 5. Israel,² born July —, 1680; 6. Daniel,² born Nov. 5, 1692; 7. Ebenezer,² born April —, 1693; 8. Benjamin,² born March —, 1703-4.

WILLIAM SHAW;² husbandman; married Johanna Pudney in 1683; children: 1. Elizabeth,³ born Nov. 1, 1695; 2. William,³ born April 30, 1696; 3. Johanna,³ born Sept. 9, 1700; 4. George,³ born April 23, 1703; 5. Jonathan,³ baptized Nov. 13, 1709; 6. Mehitabel,³ baptized Nov. 13, 1709. ISRAEL SHAW;² married Elizabeth Booth Dec. 26, 1695; children: 1. Israel,³ born Feb. 16, 1698; living in 1722; 2. Susanna,³ born Sept. 20, 1703. DANIEL SHAW;² husbandman; married, first, Hannah Foster April 13, 1727; second, Elizabeth Cook March 14, 1733-4; child: 1. Daniel,³ baptized Jan. 28, 1727-8. EBENEZER SHAW;² married Hannah Southwick March 17, 1720; child: 1. Hannah,³ baptized Dec. 29, 1723; married Joseph Pope of Mortlake, Conn., Oct. 26, 1743. BENJAMIN SHAW;² husbandman; married Hannah Goodale (published Nov. 8, 1729); children: 1. Margaret,³ baptized July 11, 1731; 2. Hannah,³ baptized June 3, 1733;

out from the country way that cometh down to the head of Frost-fish brook into Jacob Barny, sr's land to go to his bars and so down to the river, it being the same way that hath been to cart to the river, the which way is to be laid out two rod wide until it cometh within four rods of the river and so to be four rod from high water mark which is to be so from the water, taking in both the points where wood is usually laid and the cove between them." Farmer Porter and Richard Leach were appointed to lay out the way. This landing place of four rods square can still be seen on the easterly side of Frost-fish River about two hundred feet southerly of Conant Street, in Danvers. The road to it was laid out in 1671, two rods wide, over land of Jacob Barney, from a point on Conant Street about a hundred rods easterly of the river, and it ran diagonally to the river. The bounds were not established until 1704, and it was in use as late as 1774.¹

Nov. 10, 1668, the town granted liberty to Mathew Woodwell to make bricks near Richard Adams' fence, near where Thomas Trusler made bricks formerly, the place to be appointed by Maj. William Hawthorne and William Flint.

Edmund Bridges,² blacksmith, came from Topsfield in 1668.

Robert Starr³ was in Salem as early as 1650. He was born about 1626, and lived in the ancient house which had occupied the site of the Philip English house on the northeastern corner of Essex and English streets.

3. Mary,³ baptized July 25, 1736; 4. —³ (son), baptized July 15, 1739; 5. Benjamin,³ baptized Nov. 4, 1744; married Priscilla Prichard of Wenham Dec. 7, 1765; 6. William,³ baptized Nov. 4, 1744.

¹Beverly Town Records, volume V, page 405.

²Serg. Edmund Bridges, born about 1637, was son of Edmund and Alice Bridges; lived in Ipswich, Topsfield and Salem respectively; married Sarah Towne of Topsfield Jan. 11, 1659-60; died June 24, 1682; she married, secondly, Peter Cloyes; children: 1. Edmund, born Oct. 4, 1660, in Topsfield; married Elizabeth Croade; died about 1682; she married, secondly, Daniel Lambert; thirdly, Moses Gilman of Exeter, N. H.; had a son; 2. Benjamin, born Jan. 2, 1664-5, in Topsfield; captain; lived in Framingham; married Elizabeth —; died Aug. 28, 1725; 3. Mary, born April 14, 1667, in Topsfield; 4. Hannah, born June 9, 1669, in Salem; 5. Caleb, born June 3, 1677, in Salem; lived in Framingham; brick mason; married Sarah Brewer Nov. 26, 1700.

³Robert Starr married, first, Susanna Hollinworth Nov. 24, 1650; she died May 17, 1665; married, second, Mary, widow of Jeremiah Conckling Dec. 30, 1669; was "slain by the barbarous heathen" in the winter of 1677-8; she married, third, William Nick of Marblehead Sept. 8, 1680; children: 1. Susanna, born March 23, 1651-2; died young; 2. Robert, born Feb. 29, 1653-4; died young; 3. Robert, born April 8, 1655; living in 1681; 4. Richard; cooper in 1683; 5. Susanna, born Dec. 31, 1661; living in 1681; 6. Mary, born Oct. 9, 1670-1; married John Holton; 7. Hannah (twin), born June 22, 1673; married Isaac Follett; 8. Sara (twin), born June 22, 1673.

CHAPTER XXI.

BEVERLY.

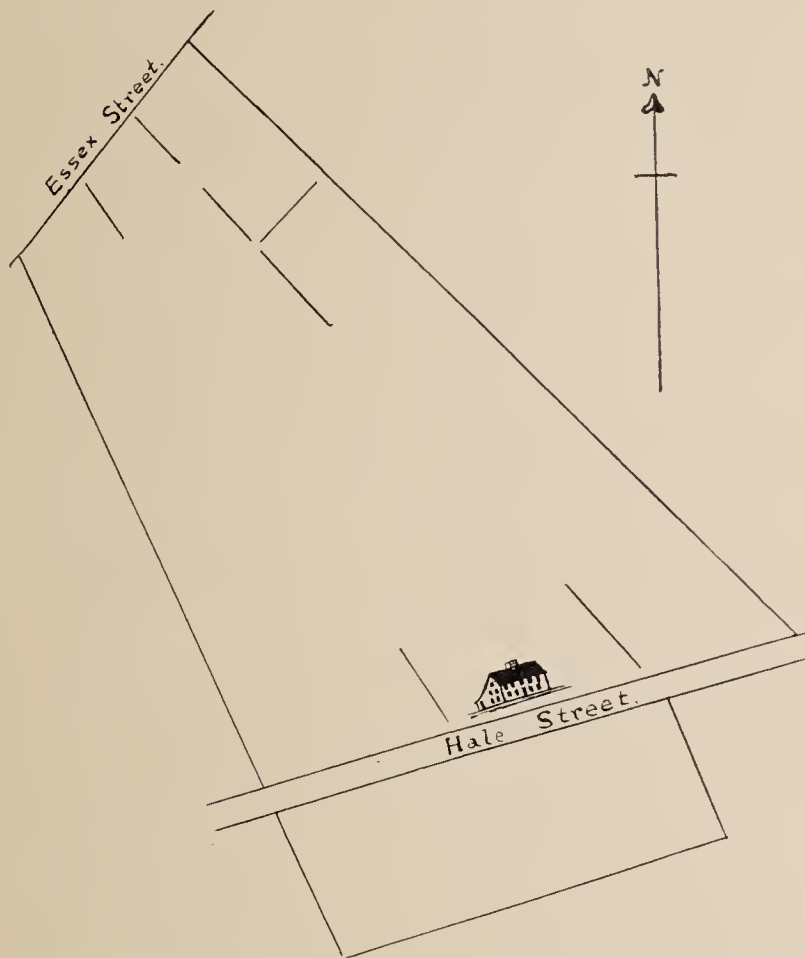


UNTIL 1650, the people living on Cape Ann Side (now Beverly) attended and belonged to the church in the town (Salem). The inconvenience of crossing the river was the most forceful fact which caused the people living on that side of the river, which was also called Bass River Side, to think of having religious services among themselves. As soon as their number was sufficiently large to make the plan feasible, the Salem church was approached in the matter, but at first it was not met with favor. Sept. 22, 1650, the church was again consulted and, October 2d, it authorized the Cape Ann Side residents to procure the service of an able and approved minister to serve them, but not to sever their connection with the church. Josiah Hobart (Hubbard), son of Rev. Peter Hobart of Hingham, was so employed. He preached there awhile, and, in 1656, removed to Southold, L. I. His brother Jeremiah Hobart succeeded him here the same year. The new minister was then twenty-four years old. He lived in the house of Lt. Thomas Lothrop for four years, being there in 1660.

A meeting house was built on the southerly corner of Cabot and Hale streets, opposite the present meeting house of the Unitarian Church. The meeting house was used for a school-room and for the transaction of secular business, wrote Edwin M. Stone, in his *History of Beverly*, in 1842.¹ It had a pulpit and a gallery, but its size is unknown. A fort was built about it in the autumn of 1675, the time of the Indian war. As the population increased, the building became too small, and, in 1682, a new building, fifty feet long and forty wide was erected where the present meeting house now stands, on the other side of Hale

¹Page 205.

Street. The old meeting house, with the exception of the pulpit, was sold in 1684, and "the stones around it" (the remains of the fort, probably) were used in making a wall about the adjoining burialplace.



PARSONAGE LOT

"The company of Bass River" secured from Thomas Pickton of "Bass River in Salem, planter," a conveyance of that part of the lot of land shown on the accompanying plan which lies within the dashes, about 1657; and at or about the same time the southeasterly part of the lot was bought of John Gally and Henry Bailey of Bass River, planters, but no deed was given of that part of the parsonage lot until John Gally conveyed it to "the Inhabitants of Bass river now Beverly" April 22, 1674.¹ That part of the lot lying southerly of the highway was conveyed by Thomas Pickton to Rev. John Hale Feb. 28, 1667-8;² and, on the same day, the little piece of land lying at the northerly corner of the parsonage lot was conveyed by John Gally and Henry Bailey to Mr. Hale, for "an outlet into ye highway by Mr. Livermore's corner, a pole wide, and thence running about twenty rods east-

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 4, leaf 58.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 3, leaf 34.

erly from said outlet.”¹ The southwesterly portion of the lot was conveyed by Mr. Pickton to Mr. Hale April 21, 1674.²

Upon the Hale Street end of that part of the lot first mentioned, a parsonage house was built by John Norman of Manchester. Lt. Thomas Lothrop appears to have been the moving spirit in the enterprise; and with him and James Patch, John Norman made an agreement to build the house, March 23, 1656-7. It was to be thirty-eight feet long, seventeen wide and with eleven feet post, with three chimneys, two below and one in the chamber; to find boards and clapboards for finishing, with a shingle covering; a porch eight feet square; “jetted over,” one foot each way; to lay the floors, both below and above, and one garret chamber; to make doors and windows, four below and four above, and one in the study; to make the stairs, draw the clapboards and “short” their edges, smooth the boards of one of the chamber floors, and to bring up the frame to the bar or the ferry at his own charge; for which he was to have forty-five pounds, one-half in corn and cattle at or before the house was raised and the remainder at the next wheat harvest. A year went, and the house (“appointed for Mr. Jeremiah Hubbard to live in”) was not done. Nov. 2, 1659, Lieutenant Lothrop brought a suit against Norman for breach of his contract; but the house was not completed until 1660. In answer to the court case, Norman said that he was hindered in regard to “the removal of the house”; for want of nails; and that the boards and joist were unlawfully taken away.³

A petition was sent to the general court, praying that Cape Ann Side be made a town; and, May 28, 1659, the court referred the petitioners to the town of Salem, providing that, if they should agree thereto, the court would be ready to answer their just desires, and ordered the town of Salem to give a speedy meeting “to effect the same.” Thereupon, August 15th, the town chose Maj. William Hawthorne, the selectmen, Mr. Bartholomew and Jeffery Masey “to meet with o^r Brethern of Cape An Side the next second day to Consider & draw up some ppositions to answer the desires of o^r Bretheren ther & to present it at the next towne meeting.” Whether or not the proposed conference was held is unknown.

At a town meeting, Dec. 14, 1659, however, it was agreed that “our brethren and neighbors of Cape Anne Side are thus bounded in reference to the maintenance of the ministry, viz. first, from the east side of the river commonly known by the name of Bass River and so to the swamp that runneth out of

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 3, leaf 34.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 4, leaf 58.

³Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, volume II, page 186.

Lawrence Leech meadow where it will meet with Wenham line and so unto Manchester bounds provided they maintain their poor and make and maintain the highways within the said limits: and so to be free from all charge about our poor or highways and all levies or rates which concern them and all things about ordering of fences shall be made by the select men in being and if there be no select men or man on their side then they have liberty to make choice of two or three of themselves to join with the select men in the premisses above said."

April 5, 1672, the selectmen ordered that Major Hathorne, Henry Bartholmew, Joseph Gardner and Corp. John Putnam meet "our neighbors of Beverly," and perambulate their line and settle the bounds according to the above agreement.

Mr. Hobart remained with the people on Cape Ann Side until 1664. He then went to Amesbury, and subsequently to Topsfield, where he was ordained Oct. 2, 1672. There, he had a rough time in many ways, being accused of immorality. He had difficulty in collecting his salary at both Cape Ann Side and Topsfield. He brought two suits against the selectmen of Beverly for his pay Nov. 19, 1670; and the court appointed Maj. William Hathorne to settle the matter. Mr. Hobart also brought a petition in the court for the same purpose June 26, 1672. No satisfaction appears in any of the proceedings. He remained in Topsfield until Sept. 21, 1680, when he resigned, and was thereupon dismissed. Beginning in 1683, for several years, he served the church at Hempstead, L. I. He then went to Haddam, Conn., in 1691. He was born April 6, 1631, in England, probably at Haverhill, Suffolkshire. He received the sacrament in his church on Lord's Day, Nov. 6, 1715, and expired immediately, sitting in his chair, at the age of eighty-four. He had four children born in Topsfield.¹ He was grandfather of Rev. David Brainard, the celebrated missionary.

After the removal of Mr. Hobart, the people of Cape Ann Side unanimously invited Rev. John Hale to become their pastor. He was son of Dea. Robert and Rebecca Hale, and was born in Charlestown June 3, 1636. He graduated at Harvard College in 1657. Upon entering on his duties of the position at Cape Ann Side, he married Rebecca, daughter of Henry Byles of Sarum, England, but at the time of the marriage she was of Salisbury, Mass.

¹The children of Mr. Hobart, born in Topsfield, were as follows: Jeremiah, born Dec. 16, 1672; Elizabeth, born Feb. 8, 1674-5; Margaret, born Jan. 16, 1677-8; and Dorothy, born Aug. 21, 1679.

Mr. Hale was offered seventy pounds per annum salary and his firewood. The parsonage was not wholly completed at that

John Hale

time, and the people there had to finish it. They also gave the use of some land for his planting, and later more land was procured by and for him. They agreed that if he remained in that place and in their service, the parsonage should be absolutely his. Later, they also built for his cattle, a house eighteen feet long, ten feet wide and seven or eight feet stud. William Dodge, sr., and John Patch were appointed to look after the supply of Mr. Hale's wood. In 1667, the parish was divided into four parts, namely, from the house of Goodman West to Cedar Stand, from the house of Humphrey Woodbury to the ferry and so to the meeting house, from the house of Ensign Corning to Mr. Conant's bridge, and the rest of the place to be looked after by Mr. Conant. These four named in their respective sections had the supply of the wood to attend to.

Mr. Hale accepted the conditions of the offer, and entered upon his labors at once. The leading men there before the people were instituted a town were Capt. Thomas Lothrop, John Thorn-dike, Roger Conant, Samuel Corning, Joseph Rootes, Lieutenant Dixey, Humphrey Woodbury, Farmer William Dodge, Henry Bailey, John Patch, Robert Morgan, Richard Brackenbury, William Rayment, John Dodge, John West and John Rayment.

At a meeting of the people, Nov. 9, 1667, it was voted that the highways to the meeting house and mill be laid out where it was most convenient. This was a year before Cape Ann Side became a town.

They now had a parish and a pastor, but a church organization was wanting to formally establish the pastoral religion. Nearly three years had elapsed since Mr. Hale began his service among the people there, when the question of their becoming a church was presented anew, and the following petition was presented to the church in Salem June 23, 1667: "Wee whose names are vnder written the brethren & sisters belonging to Basse Riuier doe present our desires to the rest of the Church of Salem that with their consent wee and our children may be a church of our selues. W^{ch} wee also present vnto m^r Hale desiring to joine with vs and to be our Pastor with the approbation of the rest of the Church: Rodger Connant, Thomas Lathrop, William Dixsy,¹ Richard Dodg, Samuell Corning, Henry Herrick, William Woodberry, Sen^r, William Dodg, Sen^r, Humphrey Woodberry, Sen^r,

¹The children of William Dixie were baptized in Salem as follows:
1. Abigail, Dec. 25, 1636; 2. Anna, June 17, 1638; 3. John, Dec. 19, 1639;
4. Elizabeth, Oct. 17, 1641; 5. Sarah, July 2, 1643.

Robert Morgan, Peter Woolfe, Richard Brakenbury, Hugh Woodbury, John Black Sen^r, Josias Rootes, Sen^r, John Stone Sen^r, Nicholas Patch, Lott Conant, Exercize Conant, John Dodg, Sen^r, John Hill, Ralph Ellingwood, Edward Bishopp, Sarah Conant, Bethiah Lathropp, Anna Dixsy, Mary Dodge Sen^r, Elizabeth Dodge, Elizabeth Corning, Anna Woodberry Sen^r, Anna Woodberry Jun^r, Mary Louitt, Elizabeth Woodberry, Elizabeth Woodberry, Ede Herricke, Elizabeth Haskell, Ellen Brakenbury, Martha Woolfe, Mary Dodge Jun^r, Mary Woodberry, Hannah Woodberry, Hannah Baker, Abigaile Hill, Sarah Leach, Elizabeth Patch, Mary Herrick, Lidea Herrick, Freegrace Black, Hannah Sallowes, Bridgett Louffe. Such as are members but not in full Communion desire to be dismissed with their parents, Peter Woodberry, John Dodge Jun^r, John Black, Samuel Corning J^r, Nathaniell Haward, Thomas Woodberry, John Woodberry J^r, Isaack Woodberry, Humphrey Woodberry Ju^r, William Dodg, Ju^r, Ephraim Herrick, Henry Herrick Ju^r, John Herrick, Edward Bishopp Ju^r, Josiah Rootes Ju^r, Joseph Lovet, Remember Stone, Elizabeth Haward, Bethiah Lovett, Abigaile Stone, Hannah Raiment, Sarah Conant, Susanna Woodberry, Elizabeth Herrick." July 21st following, the church answered that "ther was a vnanimous consent of the brethren present vnto their desire, only it was left to the Sacrament day after when in the fullest assembly the consent of the whole church was signified by their votes & so they have their liberty to be a church of themselves, only they continue members hear vntill then. being a Church the Lord graunt his gracious presence with them."

After this gracious consent to the wishes of the people of Cape Ann Side, the people had a meeting, August 28th, and renewed their call to Mr. Hale that he would be pleased to accept of the office of pastor. He accepted in the following answer:—

When I looke att the weight of the worke you call mee vnto of wch. Paul cried out (who is sufficient for theise things) I then looking vppon my owne manifold Infirmities & indisposition of spiritt therunto I see many discouragements: butt when I duly consider the Lords soueraignty ouer mee & all sufficiency for my succor I desire wheare I see his worke and call to say with Esaiah heare I am send mee; and in perticular when I obserue the remarkable prouidences of God in bringing me hither and pauiug out our way hitherto and the roome the Lord hath made for mee in their hearts (w^{ch} I acknowledg with thankfullnesse to God & yo^r selues: I doe look att the Call of God in the present call to mee beeing the more confirmed hearin by the concurrence of our apprehensions, which hath appeared in those things wee have hadd occasion to conferr about, conserning our entringe into & proceeding ou^r Church affaires, which I hope the Lord will enable mee to practice accordingly.

Wherefore while you walke according to Gods order of the gospell, & in the stedfastnesse of the faith in Christ, and I see that with a good Conscience and freedome of spirritt I can carry on my worke and dischargdge my duty to God and man & those that are vnder my care according to the respectiue relations I may beare vnto them: soe long as the Lord is calling mee to labour in this part of his Vineyard; I desire to giue vpp my selfe to the Lord & his seruice in the worke of the Ministry in this place; Requesting you to striue together with me in yo^r praiera to God for mee that it may redound to his glory, yo^r Edifinge & of Euery soule that shall dwell amongst vs for ou^r Joyfull accoumpt in the day of Christs appearance.

By mee:

JOHN HALE.

September 20th following, the above named members of the church in Salem united together in a distinct society; and Mr. Hale was dismissed from the church in Charlestown, and recommended to the work in the new parish. The people then made confession of their faith in a solemn manner, and renewed their covenant, which was publicly and unanimously owned by them. The following was the confession of faith:—

Wee beleue in one God the Eternall Jehouah Infinite in wisdome, power, holinesse, justice, goodnesse, and truth, the maker, preseruer, & gouernour of all things, distinguished into the Father beggetting the Sonne & the Sonne begotten of the Father, & the holy ghoast proceeding from the Father, and the sonne, three persons yett one god: And that the Lord made man att the first in his owne Image, in holinesse, knowledge, & righteousnesse, wherby hee hadd ability perfectly to obey God for life according to the tennour of the Couenant of workes, w^{ch} hee lost by transgressing gods Command bringing himselfe & all his posterity into a state of sinne and misery, whereby wee are by nature Children of wrath as well as others, liable to all miseries in life & death & to Eternall Destruction:

That God out of his meere mercy sent his only begotten Sonne Jesus Christ for mans redeemer—who is truly God & truly man in one person—who as man was conceived by the holy Ghoast, borne of the Virgin Mary, made like vs in all things (yett without Sinn) hee suffred death to ransom the elect, Rose againe from the dead & assended into heauen with his body wherwith hee now sitts att the right hand of God to make intercession for the faithfull; And shall thence returne to Judge the whole world together att the Last Day.

That the Lord hath giuen vs the Scriptures of the old and new testament for the only perfect and perpetuall Rule of ou^r Faith and Life.

That all that truly beleue in Jesus Christ & repent of all their sinnes haue by faith a right to all the benefitts of Christs purchase as the only Righteousnesse of Christ imputed to them for their Justification the priuiledges of addoption, & sanctification by the spirritt, man being vtterly vnable by any worke or righteousnesse of his owne or light from within himselfe to please God.

Also that those who in this life walke before the Lord in the faith of the gospell & sincere obedience to the Law (the rule of holinesse) wherin euery true beleeuers ought & certainly shall perseuere vnto death, when their soules being then & not before made perfect in holinesse, shalbe receiued into glory, till the resurrection when their bodies being vnited to their soules & raised vp againe immediatly before the gennerall Judgment they shall there be openly acquitted & so be eternally glorified in heauen.

That then allso all that beleeued not in Christ shall be publicly Condemned & cast into hell for euer.

Allso wee beleue that all true beleiuers make vpp that one body the Church of wch. Christ is the head who for the gathering in and perfecting of his saints hath appointed his Word, prayers, singing of psalms, Sacraments of baptisme & the Lords Supper: Church officers & discipline in particular churches, and that it is the Duty of euery Christian orderly to attend thereunto.

The covenant was as follows:—

Wee doe in the presens of the Eternall God & for ou^r owne comfort renew ou^r couenant with God, Joyning ou^r selues to the Lord in a perpetual couenant that shall not be forgotten wherin wee doe hartily accept & Auouch the Lord this day to be ou^r God, & to walke in his waies, desiring to turne to him by vnfeignd repentance for all our sinns, & by faith receiuinge Jesus Christ for ou^r only Lord and Sauour, and his spiritt for our comfort, doe take him for ou^r portion according to the tennour of the couenant of grace wherein hee hath promised to be a god to the faithfull & their seed after them in their generations, promising through the grace of God a constant & sincere endeauor of obedience to all Gods commands deliuered vs in his written Word, and to resist the temptations of Sathan, the world, and ou^r owne deceitfull harts: and this vnto the death:

Wee doe allso in the feare of the Lord and presens of his people, ingage to giue vpp ou^r selues, & ou^r seed to the Lord, and to one another by the Will of God in ou^r Fellowship together as a particular church of Christ: or congregation of the faithfull: promising each of vs to continue faithfull & stedfast in ou^r communion together in the publique worship of God, & to submit to the order, discipline & gouernment of Christ in this his church, and to the ministeriall, Teaching, guidance & ou^r sight of the Elder, or Elders therof, and to the brotherly watch of fellow members: promising to walke towards them in loue & faithfullnesse, and in all offences to follow the rule of Christ, to beare and forbear, giue and forgiue as hee hath taught vs, so long as by the rules of Gods Word wee shall continue in this ou^r relation together, desiring allso to walke with all regular & due communion with other churches of Christ, for the Glory of God, ou^r furtherances & growth in Christ: and mutuall Edification:

And all this not by any Strength of ou^r owne but by ou^r Lord Christ assisting vs, whose blood wee desire may sprinkle this ou^r couenant made in his name. Amen.

In Testimony of ou^r Consent to this Confession of faith and Couenant wee subscribe ou^r names,

JOHN HALE
 RICHARD DODGE Senio^r
 WILLIAM WOODBERRY Senio^r
 RICHARD BRACKENBURY
 JOHN STONE Senio^r
 JOHN DODGE Senio^r
 RODGER CONNANT
 ELIZABETH DODGE
 MARY LOVETT
 ELIZABETH HASKELL
 MARY WOODBURY
 SARAH LEACH
 FREEGRACE BLACK
 ELIZABETH CORNING
 ELIZABETH WOODBERRY
 ELLEN BRACKENBURY
 HANNAH WOODBERRY
 ELIZABETH PATCH
 HANNAH SALLOWS
 THOMAS LATHROPP
 SAMUELL CORNING
 ROBERT MORGAN
 JOHN BLACKE Senio^r
 LOTT CONNANT
 RALPH ELLENWOOD
 WILLIAM DIXSY

WILLIAM DODGE Senio^r
 HUMPHRY WOODBERRY Senio^r
 HUGH WOODBERRY
 NICKOLAS PATCH
 JOHN HILL
 REBECKAH HALE¹
 SARAH CONNANT deceased
 HENRY HERRICKE Senio^r
 PEETER WOOLFE
 JOSIAS ROOTES Senio^r
 EXERCIZE CONNANT
 EDWARD BISHOPP
 BERTHIA LATHROPP
 ANNA DIXSY
 ANNA WOODBERRY Senio^r
 ELIZABETH WOODBERRY
 MARTHA WOOLFE
 HANNAH BAKER
 MARY HERRICKE
 BRIDGETT LUFF
 MARY DODGE Senio^r
 ANNA WOODBERRY Junio^r
 EDEE HERRICKE
 MARY DODGE Junio^r
 ABIGAILE HILL
 LIDIA HERRICKE

After this confession of faith and covenant was signed, the assembly proceeded immediately to the ordination of Mr. Hale² as pastor of the church. This was performed by the laying on of hands of Rev. John Higginson, pastor of the Salem church, Rev. Thomas Cobbett, pastor of the Ipswich church and Rev. Antipas Newman, pastor of the Wenham church. This people was then "owned" to be a distinct orderly Congregational church by the elders and messengers of the neighboring churches who gave their approval and right hand of fellowship.

Within two years, about thirty more of the people had united with the new church. Feb. 24, 1667-8, Humphrey Woodbury, sr., was chosen deacon.

¹Cancelled.

²Rev. John Hale remained in this pastorate as long as he lived. His wife Rebecca died April 30, 1683, at the age of forty-five. He married, second, Sarah Clark of Newbury March 31, 1684; and she died May 20, 1697, at the age of forty-three. He married, third, Elizabeth Clark of Newbury Aug. 8, 1698. He died in Beverly May 15, 1700, at the age of sixty-three. His children were born in Beverly as follows: Rebecca, born about 1666; died May 7, 1681, aged fifteen; Robert, born Nov. 3, 1668; physician; died Jan. 12, 1718-9; James, born Oct. 14, 1685; Samuel, born Aug. 13, 1687; Joanna, born June 15, 1689; and John, born Dec. 24, 1692.

May 27, 1668, the people of the new parish of Cape Ann Side again petitioned the general court that they might be incorporated as a town. As early as 1661, the town of Salem had recognized the separation of the people of Bass River Side, as is shown by a vote of the town, November 18th, of that year: "Granted to Will Mappor so much land as the inhabitants on Cape Ann Side shall be willing to give out of the common on the east side of Bass River"; and this position of Salem is again recognized by the vote, at the previous annual meeting, in March, upon the motion of the petitioners, "that we think it the best expedient for them to be a township of themselves; if they desire it, and there-to do consent if content with ye present bounds already set them." On said May 27th, the general court, "In ans^r to the petition of the inhabitants of y^t part of Salem comonly called Basse Riuer, humbly craving the favour of this Court to invest them wth power to choose yearely wthin themselues a fit number of persons who may haue power, as selectmen haue in other places, to rajse those charges that are to be defraied by & wthin themselues, & for the admission of those poore or others y^t desire to inhabitt wth them, (they being to mainteyne them if they fall into want, & ffor what other Smale causes and buisnesses, arising properly wthin themselues, fall vnder the cognizance of selectmen; also, that they may choose their constable & surveyo^rs for the highway, & what other officers or persons the afares abouesayd may necessitate & occasion them to imploy; yet they would be vnderstood that their desire is still to continue with y^t part of the towne of Salem, viz^t, in bearing wth them, & they wth us, comon toune & country charges in comon interests & concernements, as chojce of deputjes for the Generall Court, & such like, as hitherto they have proceeded together. The Court, on perysall of their petition, & hauing heard w^t Salem deputjes sajd, judge meet to grant their request, prouided the towne of Salem doe fully concurr therewth & agree thereto, w^{ch} if they shall not, the Court judgeth it meet that they manifest the same at the next session of this Court." The town of Salem did not see cause to vary their former vote, stating "that wee doe not see cause to consent ffurther. Wee say, that if our brethren & neighb^rs of Basse Riuer desire to be a touneship by themselues, & are content wth the lands already set out to them, wee consent to that." Nov. 7, 1688, "The Court, on perusall of this returne, judge it meete to grant that Basse Riuer be henceforth a touneship of themselues, referring it to Salem to accomodate them wth lands & bounds suitably for them, & that it be called Beverly."

Who suggested the name of Beverly is unknown, but it was not by the people who were most interested. Just three years later, Roger Conant presented to the general court a peti-

tion requesting that the name of Beverly be changed to that of Budleigh, in the parish of that name he having been born. This petition wrought no change in the name of this new town, and Beverly it is called to-day. The following is a copy of the petition:—

To the honorabel generall Court, consisting of magistrates & deputies.

The humble petition of Roger Conant of Basfriuer, alias Beuerly, who haue bin a planter in new England, fortie eight yeers and vpward, being one of the first if not the very first that resolued and made good my settelment vnder god, in matter of plantation wth my family in this colony of the massachusetts bay, and haue bin instrumentall, both for the founding and carrying on of the same, and when in the infancy thereof, it was in great haffard of being deserted, I was a means, through grace assisting me, to stop the flight of those few that then were heere wth me, and that by my vtter deniall, to goe away wth them, who would haue gon either for England or moitly for Virginia, but thereupon stayer to the haffard of our liues. Now my vnable sute and request is vnto this honorable Court, onlie that the name of our towne or plantation may be altred and changed from Beuerly, and be called Budleigh. I haue two reasons that haue moued me vnto this request the first is the great dislike and discontent of many of our people for this name of Beuerly, because (wee being but a smale place) it hath caused on vs, a constant nickname of beggarly being in the mouths of many; and no order was giuen or consent by the people heere to their agent for any name vntill they were shure of being a town granted in the first place.

Secondly, I being the first that had house in Salem, (and neuer had any hand in naming either that or any other towne,) and myselfe wth those that were there wth me, being all from the western part of England, desire this western name of Budleigh, a market town in Deuonshire, and neere vnto the sea as we ar heere in this place, and where myself was borne. now in regard of our firstnesse and antiquity in this soe famous a colony, we should request this littell priuelidge wth your fauors and consent, to giue this name abouesaid vnto our town. I neuer yet made sute or request vnto the Jenerall Court, for the least matter, tho I thinke I might as well haue done, as many others haue, who haue obtained much without haffard of life, or p^rfering the publick good before theire own interest, w^{ch} I praise god, I haue done. Ife this my sute may find acceptation wth your worships, I shall rest vmbly thankfull, and my prairs shal not cease, vnto the throne of grace for gods guidance and his blessing to be on all your waightie pceedings, and that iustice and righteoufnes may be euerie where administred, and sound doctrine truth and holiness euery where taught and practised throughout this wildernes to all posterity, w^{ch} god grant. Amen.

your worships vnable petitioner and seruant

ROGER CONANT

The 28 of the third moneth 1671



It is likewise the vnable desire and request of vs whose names ar heervnder written, that the name of our town may be changed as abouesaid.

WILLIAM DODGE sen ^r	CURNELIES BAKER	HENRY HERRICK
WILLIAM DODG iun ^r	EXERCISE CONANT	JOHN BLACK
PETER WOODBERY	EDMOND GROUER	BLACK HULL
JOHN DODG	JOHN HILL	RICHARD HAYNS
EPHRAIM HERRICK	JOHN GROUER	JOHN LEECH iun ^r
EDWARD BISHOP	JOHN CHEEUER (?)	JOHN GALLY
LOT CONANT	ROBERT MORGAN	THO: WOODBERY
THOMAS BAYLY	OSMOND TRAFKE	ZACKARIE HERRICK
JOHN RAMONT	JOHN SAMPSON	JOHN BENNET
JOHN LOUET	WILLIAM RAYMONT	JOHN CONANT
WILLIAM DODG	ROBERT HIBBARD	JOHN LOUET iun ^r
BENIAMIN BALCH		

1st June 1671.

The magis^{ts} hauing Pervied & Confidered this Request see no caufe to alter the name of the place as desired their brethren the deputjes Consenting

EDW: RAWSON Secre^{ty}

Consented to by the deputies

WILLIAM TORREY Cleric¹

The lots on the map of Beverly which are marked by numbers were each owned by the persons given in the following list, those having houses upon them at the date of the incorporation of Beverly being so marked. This list is probably not entirely accurate as the records in several cases do not furnish sufficient information to identify every owner or lot at that early date. 1. William Dixsy; 2. Nicholas Patch (house); 3. Richard Dodge; 4. Roger Conant; 5. Isaac Hull; 6. Henry Herrick; 7. John Rayment (house); 8. Benjamin Balch; 9. Exercise Conant (house); 10. Henry Herrick; 11. Roger Conant (house); 12. One thousand acres (and some other lots); 13. Benjamin Balch (house); 14. William Dodge; 15. David Thomas; 16. David Thomas; 17. Robert Hibberd; 18. Nathaniel Wallis; 19. William Dodge; 20. Richard Haynes; 21. Henry Herrick; 22. John Dodge; 23. Mark Haskell; 24. Edmund Grover; 25. Andrew Elliot; 26. Robert Hibbert; 27. John Lambert; 28. William Hoare; 29. Richard Haynes; 30. Richard Stackhouse (house); 31. Ralph Ellenwood (house); 32. William Dixie; 33. Josiah Roots; 34. Hugh Woodbury (house); 35. Thomas Tuck; 36. John Porter; 37. William Woodbury (house); 38. Christopher Croe; 39. Thomas Roots; 40. Josiah Roots; 41. John Lambert (house); 42. William Hoare (house); 43. Unknown owner; 44. Thomas Pickton; 45. Parsonage of Rev. John Hale (house);

¹Massachusetts State Archives, volume 112, leaf 217.

46. Thomas Savage; 47. Henry Bayley (house); 48. Jeremiah Butman (house); 49. John Solas (house); 50. John Sollas; 51. Samuel Beadle; 52. Z. and J. Hill (house); 53. John Black (house); 54. Thomas Lathrop (house); 55. Z. and J. Hill; 56. Peter Wolfe; 57. Humphrey Woodbury; 58. Paul Woodbury (house); 59. John Thorndike; 60. Nicholas Patch (house); 61. Jeffry Thissell; 62. William Woodbury (house); 63. William Dixie; 64. Nicholas Woodbury; 65. Jeffry Thissell (house); 66. Mary Lemon; 67. Nicholas Woodbury (house); 68. John West; 69. William Pitt and Moses Maverick; 70. John West (house).



WADSWORTH BURYING GROUND.

CHAPTER XXII.

NEW MEETING HOUSE.



ANUARY 4, 1668-9, the selectmen allowed Joseph Houghton seven acres of land next his own, in consideration of a highway laid out through his planting ground.

Jan. 28, 1668-9, the Salem court licensed John Horne, sr., to sell strong water at retail for the ensuing year; and the same court renewed his license the following November.

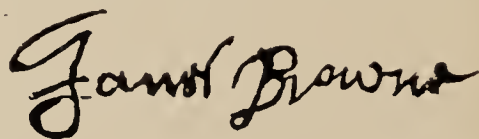
The incorporation of Wenham, Manchester, Marblehead and Beverly reduced the population as well as the area of Salem greatly; and now, immediately after the loss of a large part of the town by the establishment of Beverly, the attention of the people of Salem was turned to the institution of burial places in what is now Danvers and in what is now Peabody. March 9, 1668-9, the town considered the "Conveniency for a burying place about the glass house and what charge is needful to be allowed the town to pay for it, and also for the farmers about Ipswich River." The first burial place intended, near the glass house, is the old Trask burial ground on Boston Street, in Salem, though the cemetery is in Peabody, the bounds of the two cities running along the inner side of the sidewall the whole length of the burial place. This was then common land. The other cemetery, for a burial place for the Farmers, is the old Wadsworth burying ground, on Summer Street, in Danvers. The northerly portion of the latter was practically the old Salem Village parish burial place; and at the time of this town meeting the land belonged to Serg. John Porter, with whom there was at least a tacit agreement with the neighbors for its use as a cemetery. It may be that it was first used by the Porters as a private burial place before that time. The title to the cemetery remained in the Porter family and their successors until it was purchased with the adjoining land on its south and west sides by Rev. Benjamin Wadsworth April 8, 1825, and the same day he conveyed the

present area, which contains in the whole one acre and nine square rods, to the inhabitants of the North Parish of Danvers. In his deed he provided that it should be called "the Wadsworth burying ground."¹

The Trask burial ground was so called because it was next the Trask homestead, and Capt. William Trask was probably buried in it. Reverends Nathan Holt, Samuel Walker and Jones Very are also buried there. This cemetery is most famous for its being the resting place of Elizabeth Whitman, who, under the name of Eliza Wharton, came to the old Bell Tavern, on Main Street, now in Peabody, a stranger, and kept her identity a secret, finally fading away in 1788, at the age of thirty-six. Friends erected a gravestone at the head of the mound under which her remains were placed, but little is left of the stone, as visitors have broken off pieces of it as souvenirs, and a worn path to her grave indicates how many feet must have trod it in the old days. Her story is told in the famous novel of the olden time, entitled, "Eliza Wharton, or the Coquette," of which she is the heroine. The mystery of her life, which was then wholly unknown, but which has since been partially revealed, wrought a veil of romance about her history.

In the old burial place on Summer Street, lie the remains of Reverends Joseph Green, Peter Clark and Benjamin Wadsworth. The oldest stones, whose inscriptions are intelligible, are those of Mrs. Elizabeth Putnam, who died in childbirth, Aug. 24, 1682, at the age of twenty-two, and her son Samuel who survived her, and died in the latter part of November following, aged fifteen weeks.

James Brown,² a glazier, born about 1604, came from Newbury to Salem about 1668, having bought a house and lot of Christopher Waller, at 28 St. Peter Street, in 1664, and lived there until his death in 1676.



¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 238, leaf 27.

²JAMES BROWN¹ married Sarah Cutting of Newbury; died Nov. 3, 1676; she married, secondly, William Healy of Cambridge; children: 1. James;² 2. Abraham;² living in 1682; 3. Anna;² under eighteen in 1674; 4. Sarah;² married — Beazely; 5. John;² died Dec. 8, 1690; 6. Samuel;² died at sea Nov. 15, 1690; 7. Mary;² born May 25, 1663; living in 1674; 8. Abigail;² born Oct. 24, 1665; living in 1674; 9. Martha;² born Dec. 22, 1667; married John Tappan Sept. 3, 1688, in Andover.

JAMES BROWN;² glazier; lived in Charlestown in 1672 and 1673, in Salem 1677-1679, in Newbury 1680-1707; married Hannah —; died in Newbury Feb. 26, 1707; she died there Nov. 18, 1713; children: 1. James;³ glazier; lived in Newbury; married, first, Mary Edwards April 28, 1695; she died in Newbury May 5, 1700; married, secondly, Rebecca Kelly Jan. 1, 1701-2; he died in Newbury May 17, 1745; 2. Sarah;³ born Aug. 10, 1678, in Salem;



TRASK BURYING GROUND.

March 19, 1668-9, the selectmen granted to John Burton a small plot of land near Colonel Read's meadow, to improve in his trade of tanning, as long as the town should please.

On the same day, the selectmen granted to Jonathan Pickering liberty to build shipping next beyond the causeway at the end of the town, provided that he does not hinder the highway nor cattle from coming to the salt water. This land was a piece of marsh, lying on the easterly side of Grove Street, between the railroad crossing and Boston Street.

July 21, 1669, the selectmen appointed John Pickering, Josiah Southwick and William Traske to repair the bridge at Strong-water brook, to make a foot bridge at the brook near Thomas Gouldthwait's and about Mr. Gardner's. The latter is the brook which runs around the South Church meeting house. Strong-water brook bridge was repaired by John Smith, the tailor, in 1673.

Aug. 27, 1669, at the town meeting, "The Town house and ground next to Edward Wharton's is left to the select men to dispose of to Capt. Corwine or else to buy Capt. Corwine's"; and, October 7th, the selectmen sold it to Mr. Wharton.

Aaron Reade was accidentally shot by Joseph Small, two young men of the Farms (Danvers Highlands), while they were gunning, each being about twenty years of age. While fitting his gun to shoot at fowl, Small's gun went off suddenly before he was aware of it, and shot Reade in the back. This was the verdict of the jury of inquest, before whom several witnesses appeared. Just before he died, Reade was questioned by Samuel Eborn as to whether they went forth as two brothers, and he replied, "Yea, yea"; and also whether there was at any time any private grudge between Small and himself, and whether or not Small did not shoot him wilfully, and Reade answered with a voice indicating great affection, "Oh, no, no, no!" These were some of the last words he spoke. The verdict was returned Oct. 5, 1669. The jury consisted of Edmond Batter, John Browne, Joseph Grafton, William Flint, Richard Prince, Samuel Gardner, Eleazer Hathorne, Joseph Hardy, Hilliard Veren, sr., Edward Mowle, Samuel Pickman and John Pickering.¹

Oct. 7, 1669, the selectmen appointed John Corwine, Bartholmew Gidney, Serg. John Pickering and Edmond Batter "to settle and bound out the highway at the head of the River and what ground either of upland or salt marsh that lyeth at the Cow house River of the town Comons."

married Richard Lowle April 8, 1695; 3. Benjamin,³ born March 21, 1680-1, in Newbury; 4. Abraham,³ born March 17, 1682-3; died Jan. 13, 1683-4; 5. Joseph,³ born May 19, 1685; 6. Hannah,³ born Nov. 16, 1687.

¹See Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, volume IV, page 211; and Essex Registry of Deeds, book 3, leaf 99.

Salem was summoned into court Nov. 2, 1669, for not having a convenient watchhouse.

Nov. 17, 1669, was appointed by the general court as a thanksgiving day, "The Lord having been very gracious unto us, hearing our prayers when we cried unto him this last summer, for his sparing and pardoning mercy and compassions to be towards us in stopping the bottles of heaven, that by excessive rains that seemed to threaten a grievous famine among us, and together therewith hath mercifully lengthened out the harvest season."

Nov. 19, 1669, the town appointed Lieutenant Gardner and John Corwine to lay out "the small spot of land that doth belong to the widow Reade lying without the North Neck fence near to Samuel Ebourne sen house."

The Salem court granted, Nov. 30, 1669, licenses to William Hollingworth and Samuel Gardner to retail strong waters out of doors to their customers for the year ensuing; and John Gidney, sr., had his license for retailing strong waters renewed.

Dec. 20, 1669, the town granted to Eleazer Hawthorne two acres of swamp land, lying near John Keyney's, in consideration "of the land which now maketh the highway from the said Hawthorne's house to the burying place" (now Liberty Street); and also to Samuel Ebourne, jr., about ten rods of ground lying near his house.

Jan. 7, 1669-70, the selectmen allowed John Best to be in the town to make use of his trade of burring so long as he lives busily.

The general court appointed June 16, 1670, as a fast on account of "a selfish spirit, minding more our own things than the things of Christ, and of private before public good: too much slighting and negligence in prizing and improving the government and order, both civil and sacred, in church and commonwealth; a great and general neglect of instructing and governing the rising generation, both in families and churches: a cooling of former life and heat in spiritual communion; too great neglect in some places, of a comfortable upholding and providing for the outward subsistence of sundry faithful ministers; too much decay of love to God and one to another, and harboring groundless jealousies."

At the Salem court, June 28, 1670, Theodore Price was licensed to still and retail strong waters out of doors; Thomas Gardner, sr., had his license for retailing strong waters out of doors renewed; John Gedney, sr., John Ruck, Eleazer Hawthorne,

NOTE. On page 109, a line was inadvertantly omitted between lines twelve and thirteen from the bottom of the Putnam footnote, namely: "March 26, 1657; 4. Joseph,³ born Oct. 29, 1659; 5. Elizabeth,³ born"

William Browne, jr., John Corwin and Stephen Haskett had their licenses renewed for the year ensuing; and Henry Skerry was licensed to draw wine and liquors and retail it out of doors for the ensuing year.

John Keyney died in the autumn of 1670, leaving a wife Sarah. Peter Harvey¹ came to Salem in 1670.

Peter Harvey



GEORGE GARDNER HOUSE

The ancient Gardner house on Bow Street, in West Peabody, was probably built by George Gardner about 1670. Originally, the house was a plain two-story building, and the leanto was probably added about seventy-five years later. Mr. Gardner died Aug. 20, 1679, having devised the estate to his son Samuel. The farm was leased to Thomas Gould by George Gardner, and Mr. Gould continued to occupy it until after 1685. The house remained in the possession of the Gardner family until Oct. 18, 1871, when Mary A. Gardner, widow of Asa Gardner conveyed

¹Peter Harvey was a shipbuilder, according to Savage; married Hannah, daughter of Humphrey Gilbert Jan. —, 1670; children: 1. Peter, born Feb. 10, 1670; 2. David, born Sept. 20, 1672; 3. Hannah, born July 1, 1674; 4. John, born April 14, 1676; 5. Mary, born March 25, 167-; 6. Sarah, born April 15, 1680; married John Burton of Topsfield Feb. 7, 1704-5.



MANSFIELD HOUSE

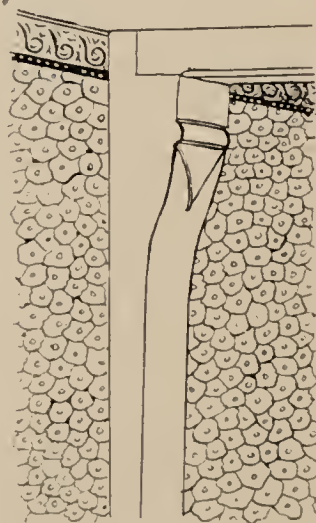
it to Bowman Viles, in whose family the title and possession remain.

The old Narbonne house, as it is popularly called, at 71 Essex Street, was probably

Thos^d Ives:

built by Paul Mansfield who conveyed the house and lot to Thomas

Ives about 1670. He died in 1695, and the administratrix of his estate conveyed it to Capt. Simon Willard March 27, 1699. Captain Willard conveyed it to his son Josiah Willard of Salem, innholder, Jan. 6, 1728-9. Soon afterward the house became divided, and its title was united in Capt. Joseph Hodges in 1757. He conveyed it to Jonathan Andrew March 6, 1780. Mr. Andrew died April 18,



POST

1844, having, in his will, devised the house and land to his niece Mrs. Sarah Narbonne, in whose family the title has since remained. Mr. Ives¹ lived here until his decease. The picture of

¹THOMAS IVES¹ first appeared in Salem in 1668; slaughterer; married, first, Martha Withe April 1, 1672; second, Elizabeth Metcalf of Ipswich about 1679; died in 1695; she married, secondly, John White Jan. 16, 1695-6; children: 1. Elizabeth,² born Feb. 12, 1672-3; died July 21, 1673; 2. Thomas,² born March 31, 1674; settled in Marblehead; had children; 3. Deborah,² born Dec. 8, 1675; living in 1683; 4. Joseph,² baptized March —, 1683; 5. John,² baptized March —, 1683; 6. Elizabeth,² baptized Dec. 4, 1687; married John Philpot Dec. 11, 1718; 7. Benjamin,² born about 1692.

CAPT. BENJAMIN IVES;² tanner and master mariner; married Anne Derby Jan. 2, 1717-8; died in 1752; children: 1. Anne,³ born March 20, 1719; living in 1752; 2. Benjamin,³ born Nov. 2, 1720; 3. Samuel,³ born Dec. 22, 1722; 4. Elizabeth,³ born July 5, 172-; married, first, Richard Lee May 31, 1761; second, Josiah Gilman of Exeter, N. H.; 5. Mary,³ born about 1728; married John Crowninshield; 6. Abigail;³ living in 1752; 7. John,³ born about 1732; 8. Martha;³ married Daniel Cheever Nov. 23, 1760; 9. Margaret;³ married Peter Cheever.

CAPT. BENJAMIN IVES;³ master mariner; lived in Beverly and Salem; married Elizabeth Hale of Beverly Oct. 12, 1743; died Dec. 26, 1757; children: 1. Robert Hale,⁴ born in Beverly July 18, 1744; master mariner; lived in Beverly; married Sarah Bray March 20, 1766; died at sea on a passage from the West Indies Oct. 19, 1773; she died in Beverly Sept. 27, 1782; had children; 2. Rebecca,⁴ born in Beverly June 23, 1745; married Joseph Gilman of Exeter, N. H., Sept. 22, 1763; 3. Benjamin,⁴ born in Salem in 1749; died Feb. 27, 1762. SAMUEL IVES;³ shoreman and mariner; married Mary Berry July 4, 1745; died Oct. 15, 1750; she survived him; children: 1. Benjamin;⁴ 2. Anna;⁴ living in 1752. JOHN IVES;³ married Sarah Ward March 13, 1755; both died Oct. 18, 1801; children: 1. William,⁴ born Nov. 25, 1755; 2. Sarah,⁴ baptized Oct. 2, 1757; married William Brewer Sept. 30, 1777; 3. John,⁴ baptized July 22, 1759; married Elizabeth Newhall May 19, 1781; she married, secondly, Jeremiah Emmerton Aug. 11, 1785.

CAPT. BENJAMIN IVES;⁴ master mariner; married Elizabeth Giles March 17, 1768; died in 1801; she moved to Beverly; children: 1. Hannah,⁵ baptized April 2, 1770; married Thomas Woodbury Ober Jan. 20, 1793; 2. Elizabeth,⁵ baptized Nov. 15, 1772; married Hezekiah Lovett (published Dec. 9, 1792); 3. Mary;⁵ married John Adams of Beverly Feb. 11, 1798; 4. Charlotte,⁵ born Feb. 17, 1784; married Benjamin Larcom of Beverly Jan. 10, 1804; 5. Samuel,⁵ born Aug. —, 1786; shipmaster; lived in Pepperell, Mass., and Mobile, Ala; married Mary Dyson of Beverly April 20, 1817; 6. Sarah;⁵ died, unmarried, in Pepperell April —, 1852; 7. Benjamin;⁵ died young; 8. Benjamin;⁵ died young; 9. Benjamin;⁵ died young.

CAPT. WILLIAM IVES;⁴ sea captain; married Mary Bradshaw Sept. 12, 1790; died at Savannah, Ga., April —, 1814; she died Dec. 3, 1820; children: 1. William,⁵ born Feb. 15, 1794; 2. John Mansfield,⁵ born July 8, 1799; 3. Stephen Bradshaw,⁵ born April 12, 1801; 4. Mary,⁵ born May 14, 1803; died Jan. 31, 1887; 5. Benjamin Hale,⁵ born Nov. 7, 1806.

WILLIAM IVES;⁵ with his brother Stephen he established the Salem Observer in 1823; married Lucy Gardner May 12, 1824; died Dec. 12, 1874; she died at Riverside, Ill., Oct. 19, 1882; children: 1. Mary Bradshaw,⁶ born Feb. 4, 1825; married Jesse Mayne Richards Dec. —, 1854; 2. Lucy Gardner,⁶ born Oct. 15, 1826; married William Porter March 7, 1849; 3. William Hale,⁶ born Jan. 17, 1829; married Mary Walker of Chicago.

the house presented herewith was photographed in 1925. The in-

Ill., Jan. 17, 1854; lived in Taylorville, Ill.; had children; 4. Susan Shillaber,⁶ born Feb. 3, 1831; married Emmons Raymond Spear March 17, 1854; 5. Franklin Gardner,⁶ born Jan. 26, 1834; died at the age of nine months; 6. Anne Warren Brazer,⁶ born April 27, 1836; married, first, Thomas Palfray Cole; second, Samuel Pierpont Richardson of Assumption, Can.; 7. Benjamin Franklin,⁶ born Dec. 3, 1837; married, first, Sarah L. Boerstler; second, Emma J. Boerstler; lived in Riverside, Ill., in 1886; had children; 8. Helen May,⁶ born July 26, 1843; married Edward Augustus Saunders June 2, 1866. JOHN MANSFIELD IVES;⁵ horticulturist; married Lois Alley Southwick Sept. 23, 1827; she died March 24, 1873; he died Aug. 29, 1883; children: 1. Rebecca Southwick,⁶ born Oct. 14, 1828; married Gilbert Lewis Streeter; 2. Mary Louisa,⁶ born May 7, 1830; died June 20, 1830; 3. Mary Ellen,⁶ born Jan. 23, 1832; married George Lathrop Hawkes of Wakefield Jan. 19, 1858; 4. *John Southwick*,⁶ born Dec. 25, 1833; 5. Harriet Vaughn,⁶ born Oct. 17, 1835; died Nov. 14, 1839; 6. Louisa Mansfield,⁶ born Feb. 26, 1838; married Lewis Pierce Sept. 19, 1872; 7. *Charles Frederic*,⁶ born Sept. 4, 1848. STEPHEN BRADSHAW IVES;⁵ printer and bookseller; with his brother William he established "The Old Corner Bookstore;" married, first, Mary Perkins May 16, 1826; she died July 4, 1873; married, second, Harriet Perkins March 31, 1876; he died July 31, 1883; she died in Philadelphia, Pa., Dec. 23, 1886; children: 1. *Stephen Bradshaw*,⁶ born March 9, 1827; 2. David Perkins,⁶ born July 13, 1828; married Sarah Shreve Calef Dec. 21, 1854; living in 1887; no issue; 3. Henry Perkins,⁶ born April 15, 1830; 4. Edward Perkins,⁶ born Oct. 13, 1832; died Sept. 8, 1834; 5. Mary Elizabeth,⁶ born April 7, 1835; unmarried in 1887; 6. Margaret Perkins,⁶ born Aug. 26, 1836; married Charles Sewall; 7. George Augustus,⁶ born Sept. 13, 1839; lived in Boston in 1886; married Clara Thorndike Rand Oct. 10, 1866; had children; 8. Cornelia Allen,⁶ born July 27, 1844; married Frederick Manton Osborne; 9. Caroline Louisa,⁶ born Oct. 27, 1847; married Frank Augustus Langmaid; 10. Edward Lang,⁶ born April 19, 1849. BENJAMIN HALE IVES;⁵ bookseller and stationer; married Lydia Ann Harraden Oct. 29, 1833; died Oct. 27, 1837; she died Feb. 23, 1881; children: 1. Sarah Ellen,⁶ born Nov. 17, 1834; married William Cleveland Henderson; 2. *Benjamin Hale*,⁶ born Sept. 18, 1837. JOHN SOUTHWICK IVES;⁶ married Mary Buttrick Jan. 24, 1855; died June —, 1915; children: 1. *Charles Edwin*,⁷ born Oct. 6, 1855; 2. *Alfred Southwick*,⁷ born Nov. 7, 1857; 3. *John Southwick*,⁷ born June 22, 1860; 4. *Samuel Buttrick*,⁷ born May 25, 1862; 5. *Henry Merritt*,⁷ born March 29, 1865; 6. Mary Ellen,⁷ born April 16, 1867; living in 1888; 2. *William Lincoln*,⁷ born Jan. 29, 1871; 3. *Emily Ashby*,⁷ born Jan. 1, 1873; living in 1895. CHARLES FREDERICK IVES;⁶ lived in Malden in 1887; married Ida Marion Washburn Aug. 24, 1876; children: 1. Frederick Washburn,⁷ born July 26, 1877; 2. Lois Southwick,⁷ born Aug. 1, 1880. STEPHEN BRADSHAW IVES. Esq.;⁶ H. C., 1848; lawyer; married, first, Mary Elizabeth Burnham Jan. —, 1848; she died Jan. 4, 1870; married, second, Mrs. Constance (Telford) Farmdale, in England; he died Feb. 8, 1884; children: 1. Edward Lang,⁷ born April 19, 1849; lived in Calcutta, India, in 1886; married Sophie De Terreno Feb. —, 1879; had a child; 2. Mary Perkins,⁷ born Oct. 17, 1850; married Charles Patterson Abbot April 12, 1874; 3. Arthur Burnham,⁷ born in 1854; died in 1855; 4. *George Burnham*,⁷ born Oct. 18, 1856; 5. David Otis,⁷ born Nov. 28, 1858; unmarried in 1886; 6. Alice Peirce,⁷ born Dec. —, 1862; died July —, 1863. HENRY PERKINS IVES;⁶ bookseller; married Ada Simes Jones Oct. 2, 1856; living in 1887; children: 1. Etta Molineux,⁷ born Dec. 24, 1857; married Charles Francis Quincy Oct. 20, 1878; 2. Augustine Perkins,⁷ born April 17, 1859; died Sept. 12, 1859; 3.



JOSEPH HOULTON HOUSE

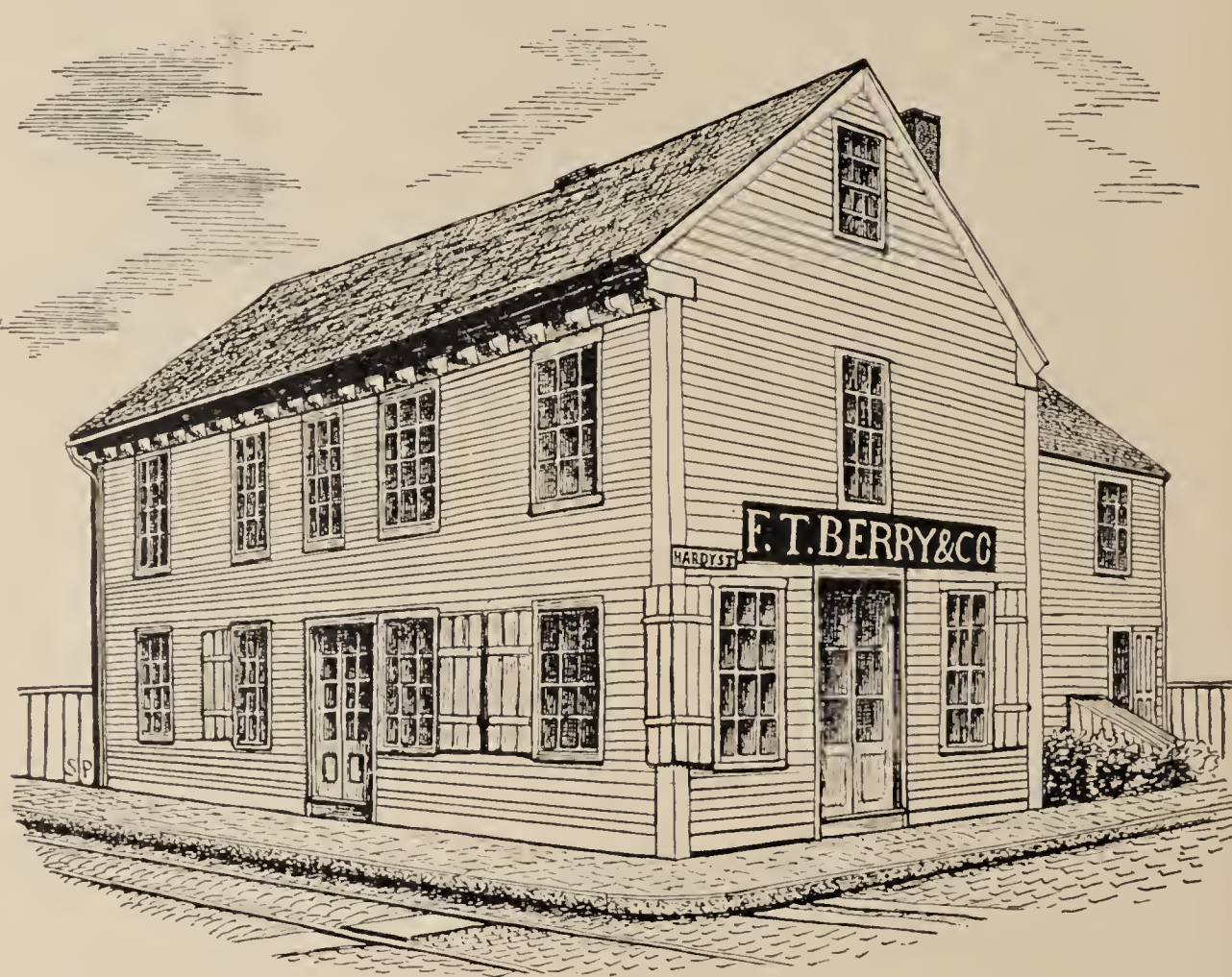
set cut shows the ornamentation of the shoulder of the posts which support the summer beams.

The house built by Joseph Houlton upon land of his wife, on Center Street, in Danvers, nearly opposite Walnut Street, about

Augustine Perkins,⁷ born May 31, 1861; married Katherine Cowan Browne Jan. 27, 1886; 4. Nathan Frye,⁷ born Aug. 5, 1863; 5. Richard,⁷ born Sept. 30, 1867; 6. Lucy Perkins,⁷ born Dec. 7, 1872. BENJAMIN HALE IVES,⁶ married Sarah Elizabeth Safford Kimball June 6, 1865; children: 1. ———⁷ (son), stillborn June 6, 1867; 2. Francis Safford,⁷ born Dec. 12, 1869; died Sept. 18, 1870; 3. Benjamin Hale,⁷ born June 20, 1874; died April 13, 1877; 4. Mabel,⁷ born May 17, 1878.

CHARLES EDWIN IVES,⁷ moved to Malden in 1887; married Catherine Augusta Allen May 13, 1880; children: 1. Charles Allen⁸ (twin), born April 17, 1882; 2. Mary Ashby⁸ (twin), born April 17, 1882; 3. George Wilkins,⁸ born July 26, 1883; 4. Edith Lynwood,⁸ born July 13, 1887. ALFRED SOUTHWICK IVES,⁷ married Anna Maria Connacher Nov. 25, 1880; died May 6, 1916; she died May 11, 1921; child: 1. Samuel Southwick,⁸ born Aug. 17, 1884; married Martha D. ———; living in 1911. JOHN SOUTHWICK IVES,⁷ married Anna Gardner Symonds Dec. 16, 1884; child: 1. Chester Symonds,⁸ born April 4, 1887. SAMUEL BUTTRICK IVES,⁷ cabinet maker; married Lillian Morse Feb. 11, 1885; moved to Lynn in 1888, and to Revere in 1908; child: 1. Lillian Gower,⁸ born Nov. 13, 1885. HENRY MERRITT IVES,⁷ married Florence Alice Rogers Oct. 13, 1884; child: 1. Jessie St. Clair,⁸ born Dec. 20, 1884. WILLIAM LINCOLN IVES,⁷ married Laura Brown; died May 20, 1922; children: 1. Leonard B.,⁸ born Sept. 26, 1898; gardener; living in 1922; 2. Esther M.,⁸ born June 9, 1902; unmarried in 1922; 3. Richard M.,⁸ 4. Emily Bertha,⁸ born March 8, 1907. GEORGE BURNHAM IVES,⁷ lawyer; married Mary Manley Creamer April 10, 1879; children: 1. Frederick Manley,⁸ born Jan. 10, 1880; lawyer; lives in Winchester; 2. Oscar Jackson,⁸ born May 28, 1881.

1671, remained in the possession of the family until April 4, 1732, when Joseph Houlton conveyed the estate to Bartholomew Rea. It was in the possession of the Rea family until 1805, when Daniel Rea sold it. Since then it has been owned and occupied by Samuel Small, 1805 to 1826, and Moses Gould, 1826-1828. It was bought by Isaac Dempsey in 1832, and remained in the family until 1911. Edwin Dutcher now owns and occupies the house.



JOHN DAY HOUSE

John Day¹ built the ancient house, which was lately the grocery store of Francis T. Berry, 43 Essex Street, about 1671; and conveyed it to Joseph Grafton before April 2, 1679, when the latter sold it to Pasco Foot. On the next day, Mr. Foot conveyed it to Zachariah White, who lived here a while, and the house was occupied by Capt. Zachariah Fowles and his family. He probably conducted an inn in the house. He conveyed the title to the estate to Josiah Willard March 3, 1710-1, but continued the inn in the house until his death, July 10, 1718. Captain Willard then con-

¹John Day, son of Thomas Day, married Ann Colman July 16, 1668; died in the spring of 1680; children: 1. Ann, born Oct. 18, 1669; 2. John, born Jan. 24, 1670-1; 3. Stephen, born Oct. 16, 1672.

tinued the business, the house being called "The Crown Tavern." He died in 1731, when the upper rooms of the house were called the best chamber, east chamber, west chamber and south old chamber. His widow removed to Boston, and sold the estate to Richard Bethel of Salem in 1735. Mr. Bethel conveyed the house to Osman Trask of Beverly in 1747. The next owner was Sarah, wife of Edmund Whittemore. She died before July 2, 1788, when her heirs began to dispose of the estate; and the title had become fully possessed by George E. Berry in 1853. It has been in the Berry family ever since. Doctor Bentley, in his Journal, July 9, 1790, called it "The Old Tavern, alias College, alias Becket's House." The house is now greatly changed, the great chimney and partitions of the body of the first story of the house having been removed.

THE SAWMILL AT BEAVER DAM, IN DANVERS.

This mill was on Beaver brook on the easterly side of Nichols Street, on land of John Porter, who agreed with John Hutchinson and Joseph Hutchinson that they might construct a sawmill there, provided that the meadow should not be injured by flowing and the dam should not be allowed to flow back the water except from the first of November to the tenth of April; and the mill men agreed that as long as they continued a mill there, they would maintain and preserve the dam and sluice at their own charge, etc. This agreement was dated Dec. 1, 1670.

The mill was built immediately, and the water was raised so much by the dam that the highway became submerged and unsafe and impassable for travelers. The gravel on the causeway on either side of the bridge was so washed away that Lieutenant Putnam's horse fell in with his hind legs, and he could not pass over it with a cart as a part of the bridge had been carried out of place. There was no foot path over it, except by wading, as the water was nearly a foot above the timber of the bridge. Those persons living above the mill had to go to Salem to have their grists ground past John Putnam's (through Putnamville) as there was no other way to go. Complaint was made at the Ipswich quarterly court, and, after a hearing, March 26, 1672, the court ordered that the dam be pulled down, so as to make the way passable, or else sufficiently repair it.¹ The mill was probably removed down stream about thirty rods at this time or soon after.

March 27, 1674, the selectmen engaged Henry Kenny to make a sufficient cartway over the bridge at Beaver dam, and to make the way sufficient at both ends of the bridge.

¹Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, volume V, pages 25-29.

NEW MEETING HOUSE

After the addition was made to the first meeting house, in 1638, it had received numerous repairs, the largest sum expended at one time being in 1657, when, under the direction of the town, William Browne spent fifty pounds for that purpose. A new bell was also added that year, at an expense of eighteen pounds, and for the raising of it five pounds. March 2, 1666-7, the selectmen voted that Edmond Batter "order who shall sit in the seats at the south end: both above and below the gallery, where the chimney was formerly." So, the chimney had been removed.

In the call of the annual meeting held March 7, 1669-70, the selectmen inserted a clause to consider the building of a new meeting house; and at that meeting the town voted that it is left to the selectmen to "consider and prepare their thoughts in order to the building of a new meeting house or to fit up the old," and to at once make necessary repairs upon the present building. At an adjourned meeting of the town, April fifth, it was ordered "that there shall be a new meeting house built for the worship and holy service of God in public, and that it be about sixty feet long, fifty feet wide and about twenty-feet high in the stud and to be set up at the west end of the old meeting house towards the prison"; and William Browne, sr., Capt. George Corwine, Edmond Batter and Mr. Bartholmew were empowered to agree with carpenters and other workmen to build the house and finish it, but not to exceed in expense one thousand pounds. Two weeks later, the town voted that the cost of the meeting house should be raised by taxation. John Fiske of Wenham, a carpenter, contracted to build the meeting house. Nothing was done the next year toward taking the old house down or building a new one; and, Nov. 20, 1671, the town ordered the selectmen to repair the old building.

The call of a special meeting of the town, held Aug. 17, 1672, gave notice that the meeting was called to consider whether the old meeting house should be taken down or sold as it stood; and at the meeting the town voted that it should be taken down, and the lumber saved for the town's use, to build a schoolhouse and watchhouse; and that every family in town, and which belong to the town, should send one man of each family to help take it down, and to carry the materials into some convenient place. When to begin to do it and the number of men to work each day was left to the selectmen to appoint. The old pulpit and the deacons' seat were given to the Farmers,¹ and the stones of the underpinning and the clay of the old building were given to John Fiske, the contractor.

¹Residents of Salem Village.

On the same day, the selectmen ordered that the work of demolition of the old meeting house should commence two days later (nineteenth); and they ordered the constables to warn thirty men a day, to appear to help take it down, beginning to warn them at Strongwater brook, and so downward to the lower end of the town. The liquor bill was quite large in the case of this razing of the meeting house as well as in the raising of the new one. John Gedney, who kept the tavern a little way down Essex Street, was paid five pounds and three shillings for "expenses" in taking down the old meeting house, and in this was included the selectmen's "expenses"; and his bill for "provisions" in raising the new meeting house was seventeen pounds.

The rate for the payment of the new meeting house amounted to four hundred and sixty-nine pounds and twelve shillings.

The new meeting house stood north and south, the eastern side being on the old site and the western side extended into Washington Street. It faced on Essex Street.¹ The bell was put into the new meeting house.² The contractor also agreed to make a flight of stairs up to the scuttle in the roof of the meeting house, finish the plastering and point the underpinning with white lime. This matter of finish was agreed to be done, in a subsequent agreement dated Jan. 22, 1673-4.

Now came the matter of pews and sittings in the new edifice. It was agreed by the selectmen and Rev. Mr. Higginson, the pastor, Jan. 13, 1672-3, that William Browne, sr., Capt. George Corwin, William Browne, jr., and Dr. Daniel Weld should, each of them, have liberty to build a pew for each of their families between the east door and the south corner of the meeting house; that Major Hathorne, Edmond Batter, Capt. Walter Price and John Corwine might build, each of them, a pew for their families on the south side of the west door; that Mr. Vearen, sr.,

¹March 28, 1676, the town voted "that there is as much land granted upon ye common or pen at ye upper end of W. Bartholmew's or Thomas Root's land for to build a new meeting house for ye worship of God—And it is left to ye selectmen to lay out ye said land."

March 7, 1674-5, the selectmen "Laid out in ye pen or common at ye upper end of Thomas Roots his fence for ye setting of a new meeting house about one hundred feet each way leauing a way of one pole wid between ye meeting house and Thomas Roots his ditch." This lot was in the common, opposite nearly midway between Briggs and Boardman streets. At the time these votes were passed the new meeting house was already erected. Why it was thus voted is unknown.

²The contractor, John Fiske, engaged James Brown, the glazier, to furnish and set the glass in the new edifice, at eleven and one-half pence per square foot, it measuring in all four hundred and twenty-four square feet, and amounted to twenty pounds, six shillings and four pence. Nov. 18, 1672, Mr. Browne sued Mr. Fiske for the unpaid balance of eight pounds, and recovered judgment. His son Samuel Browne, aged seventeen, did the glazing.

a pew for his wife to sit in at the southwest corner of the meeting house, and Mrs. Emery and Mrs. Norrice to sit in the said pew if they were willing. Two weeks later, they agreed that Mr. Endecott should have liberty to build a pew in the first place on the north side of the east door for himself and his family; James Browne a pew for himself and his family next to Mr. Endecott's on the north side; John Turner a pew for himself and family next to James Browne's on the north side of the east window; the widow of Joseph Grafton, John Grafton's wife and the widow of Nathaniel Grafton a pew from the northeast corner to the middle of the next window on the north side of the meeting house; Samuel Gardner a pew from the middle of the north window to the stairs on the east side of the north door; Mr. Higginson a pew for his family and relations the first place on the west side of the north door next to the stairs; Farmer Porter a pew the first place on the north side of the west door; John Ruck a pew to the north side of Farmer Porter's; Mr. Gedney, sr., a pew for himself and wife and John Gedney's wife and his son Bartholmew Gedney and wife next to Mr. Ruck's pew. April 15th, it was agreed by the selectmen that Joseph Gardner hath allowed him room for a pew next to Mr. John Higginson. Capt. George Corwin was given liberty to take in the pew in the corner next to him, and Eleazer Hawthorne and his wife were given liberty to sit there and Doctor Weld was given liberty to build a pew between that and the pulpit stairs. April 21st, the town voted that the selectmen and the undertakers for the meeting house, with Mr. Higginson, be empowered to seat the people in the meeting house. June 3d, the selectmen gave permission to Benjamin Garish and company to build a seat over the stairs in the meeting house. Sept. 8, 1673, as Mr. Gedney, sr., and his wife were placed otherwise, the seat is granted to Mr. Bartholmew Gedney for his family and his sister Susanna. Eleazer Gedney's wife was given liberty to sit in one of the pews in the west gallery. Serg. John Pickering's wife and Richard Hollingworth's wife were allowed to sit in one of the pews in the west gallery. September 24th, the selectmen ordered William Dounton to build up the west end of the two foremost women's seats, as he had begun the east end of those seats. May 18, 1674, Edmund Feberary's wife, John Sanders' wife, John Norman's wife, Robert Hodges' wife and John Sibley's wife were given liberty to build a small pew in one half of the hindermost seats of the women's seats below, provided the pew should be set at one end of that seat and for the breadth not to exceed the former seat; and Captain Curwin was ordered to widen the first of the men's seats below about one foot and finish it up well. Feb. 14, 1675-6, Mary English was given liberty by the selectmen to sit in the seat in the gallery where Jos Ward's wife then sat. April 28, 1676, the selectmen

ordered that Mrs. Bridge should sit in the next seat behind the women's pews, and the wife of Henry Scerry, jr., to sit with Goodwife Roots. Dec. 25, 1676, the selectmen gave liberty to Mr. Lindall to sit in the fore gallery, where he now usually sits, and his wife in the fore pew where her mother was formerly placed. The selectmen agreed to pay William Dounton nine pounds for building the women's two fore pews. March 25, 1676-7, the selectmen appointed John Proctor to sit in the fourth seat below in the meeting house, and his wife with the wife of Francis Nurse in the women's seats. March 9, 1676-7, the selectmen ordered Goodwife Dounton to sit in the seat with Goodwife Gaskin. Sept. 8, 1677, the selectmen ordered that Samuel Phippeny's wife should sit in the southermost of the women's pews in the west gallery; and, November 5th, that Daniel Eppes' wife should sit in the westernmost fore pew. Jan. 7, 1677-8, the selectmen ordered that Richard Rowland's wife should sit in the second seat behind the women's great seat. Oct. 17, 1678, the selectmen gave liberty to Capt. George Corwin to build a pew between the pulpit and Capt. John Corwin's pew he making a door out into the street (the pew to range with Capt. John Corwin's), provided that Jonathan Corwine may have the pew which is now Capt. George Corwin's. November 6th, the selectmen gave liberty to Mr. Daniel Eps to build a seat for his wife between Capt. John Corwin's pew door and the next short seat, provided there was convenient room. May 13, 1679, the selectmen consented that Edmond Bridges should sit in that seat in the gallery where Sergeant Lake, lately deceased, used to sit; and, August 4th, Goodman Beachum was desired to sit behind the pulpit, and Thomas Flint, son of William Flint, deceased, in the seat where Goodman Beachum sat.

April 20, 1676, the selectmen ordered that all the boys of the town should sit upon the three pairs of stairs in the meeting house on the Lord's day; and appointed William Lord to look after the boys who sit upon the pulpit stairs; and for the other stairs Reuben Guppy "is to look to and order so many of the boys as may be convenient, and if any are unruly to present their names."

A visitor might have taken a look in, as one of the earliest services in the new meeting house was in progress. As the north door was entered, on the left were the gallery stairs, and next, between them and the north window, was the ancient square pew of Samuel Gardner. Between Gardner's pew and the northeast corner of the meeting house was the pew of the Grafton women, two widows and John's wife. On the eastern side, between the Grafton pew and the east window, was the pew of John Turner. On the other side of the window was the pew of James Browne, and between Browne's pew and the east door was that of Zerub-

babel Endecott. Still on the east side, between the east door and the southeast corner of the meeting house were the four square pews of William Browne, sr., Capt. George Corwin, William Browne, jr., and Dr. Daniel Weld. At the middle of the rear end was the elevated pulpit, which was reached by stairs on its eastern side. Near the western side, on the other side of the pulpit, was a pew occupied by Mrs. Verrin, Mrs. Emery and Mrs. Norris. On the western side, between the southwestern corner of the meeting house and the west door were four pews, belonging to Maj. William Hathorne, Edmond Batter, Capt. Walter Price and John Corwin. Between the west door and the northwestern corner of the meeting house was, first, next the door, the pew of Farmer Porter, next, that of John Ruck, and next that of John Gedney and his sons John and Bartholmew. Glancing up at the west gallery, the visitor could see Eleazer Gedney's wife, Serg. John Pickering's wife and Richard Hollingworth's wife sitting in a women's pew. Thus far only, the records permit the view.

In 1677, stone steps were provided for the meeting house at an expense of one pound. These were furnished by Eleazer Giles. In 1679, "a wicket door" was made in each of the west and east doors. The floor was lowered, and there was an extra charge for work done at the pillars.

William Seagraves was the sexton in 1671 and 1672, being paid five pounds yearly for ringing the bell; and Thomas Maule in 1673. March 29, 1673, the town chose Benjamin Felton to ring the bell and take care of the meeting house, for seven pounds yearly, but the owners of the pews were to look after them. April 26, 1673, the selectmen "Agreed with wiliam lord to Ring the bell boath on Saboath dayes and all other publicke oca-tions on Coart daies and alsoe to Ring the nine a clocke bell and to Sweep all the Seats and pews both aboue and below in y^e metinghouse And likewise to Call m^r Higinson At his house both morning and afternoone Evry Saboath day and also to dig the graves for all Such as he is desired and to be paid by those that Imploy him In It." He was hired for one year, with a salary of seven pounds, and served also the next year. Manasseh Marston was paid three pounds for ringing the bell for the year 1675. Mr. Lord was the bellringer and janitor of the meeting house for 1676 and 1677. He rang the bell at five and nine o'clock daily.

April 20, 1676, the three constables were ordered to attend at the three great doors of the meeting house every Lord's day, at the end of the sermon, both forenoon and afternoon, and to keep the doors fast and suffer none to go out before the whole exercise was ended, unless there was necessary occasion. Reuben Guppy was engaged to keep the dogs out of the meeting house.

CHAPTER XXIII.

SALEM VILLAGE PARISH



AS the first settlers of Danvers were all yeomen, that part of Salem was early called the "Farms," and the people the "Farmers." Later, when a little hamlet was gathered at what is now the Center, or the Highlands, it became known as Salem Village, in distinction from the town of Salem, which was generally applied to the neck of land lying easterly of the bridge on Boston Street, being the thickly settled part of Salem, and whose citizens were merchants and mechanics.

Most of the residents of the Farms lived some five miles from the meetings of the church at Salem, and the distance and poor roads made it in the winter an impossibility and always a task to meet the requirements of church attendance. The establishment of religious services at Beverly probably caused them to consider their isolated position, but the discussion of building a new meeting house in Salem town brought the matter directly and forcibly to them and called them to action. They did not wish to help pay for two meeting houses.

There were other cogent reasons, and as early as 1667 the people living westerly and northerly of what are now Peabody and Danvers squares became cognizant of the danger they were in from their frontier and scattered situation. The town of Salem was protected by a watch each night, and this watch was drawn from every section of Salem. Each of the families of the Farms was isolated, rarely more than one cabin or small house and barn being found in a clearing in the woods. When the men were at home, the protection was meager, but when they were away all night, the women and children were indeed stouthearted and courageous. Stories of incursions of the Indians not far away must have been told to them, and the red men were often in the neighborhood. Some of them, who were punished by whippings, were not adverse to wreaking their

vengeance upon the unprotected planter or his family. Strong water had immediate and radical effect upon the brain of an Indian, and led him into stupidity or assault and murder.

Realizing the necessity of the planters of the woods staying with their families nights for company as well as protection, the men of that section objected to serving on a watch in a thickly settled community so far away, especially when the town was so much protected by water, they applied to the Salem court in June, 1667, praying that their liability to serve on military watches in Salem town, under the circumstances, might be determined. The court did not decide the matter, but advised that it was a case for the general court. The following petition was thereupon prepared, signed and presented to the general court Oct. 10, 1667:—

To the honord Gen^l Court at Boston

The humble petition of y^e Inhabitants of the farms belonging to Salem most humbly, sheweth

Whareas yor petitioners, have been required, by or Commanders, to attend y^e Millitary watch, at Salem Towne, which confidering, how remote our Dwellings are from y^e Towne, we did, & doe still, conceiue Law doth not, require it of vs, But becaufe we are men, Subject to be partiall in or owne cafe, and might not be acquainted, with all y^e Lawes, we did P^rsent or request, to ye Countie Court at Salem, last June to giue vs their Judgment therin, Namely whither it weare, or duty by Law, to attend the fd watch, or not, And y^e judgment, or y^e fd Court, as far as we pceiued was, y^t wee weare, neither bound by Law, nor reason, to attend y^e fd watch Except) in case of an Exegence, which we do fully, consent too: if our dwellings wear many miles, further from ye Towne, then they are, in case they wanted helpe, and or Selues in safety, yet notwithstanding the Judgment of the Court, they did againe require vs, by exprefs warrant in his Majesties name, & p order of y^e Malitia, to attend y^e watch, and most of vs did obey, rather to auoyde, any occasion, of trouble. becaufe the spirits of men, Seemed to be very high, then y^t we thought it, or duty by Law, Since wee p^rented or Cafe, to Major Denison, whoe being ye Major, of this Regament, wee thought was ye next P^rson, to seeke to for helpe, whoe did write in or behalfe, to diswade them, from any further troubling of vs, But all tooke no effect, but still they warned vs, to watch by y^e Authority, aforesd, vntell y^e watch was ended, yor petitioners did allso, request ye last County Court, at Ipswich, to relieve vs, but y^e Court was pleased, not to determine, y^e matter, but willing vs, rather to P^rsent it to this hon^r Court, which we doe, as briefly as wee can humbly refeecheing this Hon^r Court to confider of or reasons which are as foloweth

Imp^r The remotnefs of or habitations from y^e Towne Some of vs liue 10 miles Some 8 or 9 ye neerist are at least fve miles from Salem Meeting Houfe vpon y^e Rhode and then tis neer a mile farther to y^e Centry place and both Horfe & foote required to goe with Armes & Amunition euery way fixt according to Law so that some of vs

muſt trauell Armed ii miles to watch which is more then a Soldiers march that is vnder pay and yet not excuſſed from paying or pt to all charges both Eccleſiaſticall & Ciuill beſides ye maintenance of or families theſe hard times when the hand of God is heavy vpon y^e Huſbandman

2ly The diſtance of or Houſes, one from another, Some a mile, ſome further that it is difficult, ſending one neighbour, to another, in dark nights, in a wilderneſſe, y^t is ſo little cleared, & wayes ſo vnpaſſable

3ly The weakneſs, or many of or families, when one man is taken away, the reſt are ſome young, ſome ſickly, & weake, not able, to help them ſelues much leſs to make reſiſtance, if violence, be offered, that y^e newes that wee are to watch, Strikes like darts, to y^e Hearts of Some, of or Wiues that are weake, that one man was forced to goe 4, or 5 miles to get a man, to ſtay wth his familie, whilſt him ſelfe, went to Salem Towne to watch.

4ly The oportunity, & aduantage that Indeans and other, ill affected Pſons haue by knowlidg before, that ſuch and ſuch families, are Such nights left deſtitute of helpe, for two, or three miles about, for warning of y^e watch, & watching is no priuet thing, ffor Example, there was 29 warned for one night, as will plainly appeare, by warrants, vnder the Capt^s owne hands, & by testimony, had they all gone, it would haue cleared y^e ſtrength of 2 or 3 miles, about. If it be pleaded the number is altered, & but 4 warned for a night, for Anſwer as ſome times it falls, 4 will cleare two miles about. It may alſo bee Queſtioned, whether it bee not, a profanation of y^e Lords day, for Pſons to traull ſo far Armed, as is before expreſſed, on y^e Sabbath, to watch a populous Towne, in times of peace, conſiſting of neer 300, able pſons wthin y^e limmits of the Watch, and or ſelues left out.

whereas y^e Cap^t pleaded an exegence, at Salem Court, becauſe, a Jarſie or Gernſy Ship, came in as they ſd, in y^e night vndiſcoured. To which we anſwer there weare ſeuerall of vs, in company with or Capt, at y^e ffort, & wee Saw the ſhip, ſome howers before night, & was diſcoured before night, in y^e Towne, to be a ſtranger, for how can it bee thought, poſſible, y^t a ſhip could come in, in a cleare day, & non ſee her, conſidering how many boats are dayly out, a fiſhing, and Cape pan, & Marblehead, lye before y^e harbor and many men, at worke at ye ffort y^t day, beſides a populous Towne, they further pleaded, theſe weare dangerous times, & they weare not able, to keep a watch without vs. For anſwer if wee ſhould grant, that theſe times, are more dangerous then former yet not ſoe much to Salem Towne, as to or ſelues, & other places in this Collony, for wee know no obligation, vpon ye Enemy, firſt to Affault Salem Towne, when they may come a ſhore at diuers places & come vpon vs, & other places alſo by Land, and meet neither with fforte, nor 400 men vnder y^e warning of an Alarm to opoſe them. Tis probable if the French, or Dutch ſhould come, they will haue a convoy of Indeans, from Eaſt or weſt, & come firſt vpon remote dwellers. The conſideration whereof, is able to ſtrike terror, in to ye Hearts of women, & weake ones; eſpecially conſidering what dreadfull examples, former times hath afforded, in that reſpect, in this Country from Indeans, and from others alſo,

in the night season, when their husbands have been absent If what hath been sd may be granted, as it may in euery pt be proued Then whether Salem Towne, hath not more cause, to send vs help, to watch amongst or selues, then wee haue to go to them, we consisting of Not 50 psons able to watch, they a compact Towne, wee so scattred Six or 8 watches will not secure vs, or Dwellings are so, Scattred & remote one from another, & so far from y^e Towne, That Cambridge village, or Milton, may as easy go to Boston, to watch as wee may to Salem Towne and leaue their families, in a great deale more safty, because they haue Townes near to helpe them.

Yor petitioners humble request to this Hon^r Court is that you would be pleased to releue & ease vs from this burden of watching which is too heauy for vs, or or Children to beare, Yor petitioners fhall all wayes pray for you

JOB SWINERTON SENY^r
 ROBERT GOODELL
 PHILIP KNIGHT
 JONATHAN KNIGHT
 ISAACH GOODELL
 ZACHARY GOODELL
 ROBERT PRINCE
 JOSEPH HOULTON
 JONATHAN WALCUTT
 NATHANIEL INGERION
 ROBERT MOULTON
 JOHN SMITH
 NATH¹ CARRILL
 JOB SWINERTON JUNER
 THOMAS FLINT
 GILES GORY
 THOMAS SMALL
 BENJAMIN WOODROE
 JOHN LEACH
 JOSEPH REA
 JAMES HADLOCK¹

JOHN PORTHER
 RICHARD HUTCHINSON
 IACOB BARNET SEN.

RICHARD LEACH;

NATHANIEL PUTNAM.
 IACOB BARNET JUN.
 JOSEPH HUTCHINSON
 HENRIE KEINE

JOSEPH PORTER

JOHN PUTNAM

Upon receipt of this petition, on the fifteenth, a hearing was ordered for "the next 6th day at 9 o'clock"; and the court ordered that "henceforth all farmers dwelling above four miles from the meeting house shall be exempt from constables watches, any law or custom notwithstanding."

A movement for religious services among the Farmers was precipitated by the action of the town at a town meeting, March 7, 1669-70, when the selectmen were requested to consider the matter of building a new meeting house in the town. Immediately, the Farmers signed the following statement:—

¹Massachusetts Archives, volume 112, leaf 175.

We whose names are here subscribed taking into consideration the motion that is now on foote concerning the building of a new meeting house now at Salem haue with one consent agreed not to contribute to the same at all (not knowing how long it may bee beneficiall to us) unles you likewise of the towne will beare share with us when wee shall build one for our selues.¹

This statement was signed by John Porter, sr., Thomas Putnam, Richard Leach, Nathanill Putnam, Thomas Fuller, John Putnam, Joshua Rea, Robert Prince, Joseph Hutchinson, Joseph Holton, Nathaniel Ingersoll, James Hadlock, John Wilkins, Zerobabel Endecott, Henry Kenney, John Leach, Thomas Small, Bray Wilkins, John Gingell, Thomas Wilkins, Philip Knight, Richard Hutchenson, John Buxton, Jonathan Walcot, Jobe Swinerton, jr., Edward Bishop, Joseph Herick, Jeremiah Watts.¹

The Farmers first applied to the general court for the liberty of having religious services among themselves, as follows:—

To the honor^d Gener^l Court Asembled at Boston

The humble Petition of the Inhabitants of the ffarmes belonging to Salem whose names are hereunto Subscribed most humbly Sheweth.

That whereas o^r habitations are so remote from o^r publicke Meeting house at Salem Towne, or four miles the neereft, and the furthrest eight or nine miles vpon the road, that besides many other inconveniences &^s distracting in leauing o^r ffamilyes, we judge it too far if it may be lawfully remeded, to trauell on the Lords day. This o^r Condition many of us, have seuerall times p^rented to Salem Towne by way of petition some years ago, in which we did request the Towne, that we might haue a Minister amongst o^r selues (either) to maintaine in Common with them, o^r that we might have such a number of ffamilyes allotted to us, as dwell at such a distance from Salem as is before exprefed (that is to say) from Beuerly to Lynn bounds that so we may maintaine A Minifter o^r selues to which petition the Towne haue giuen us no answer although we haue used all the meanes we could. This our condition, we humbly p^rsent to the wise & Christian confideration of this hon^r Court hoping if o^r bodies were in an afflicted state, you would according to equity relieue us how much more the condition of Souls humbly entreating you to relieue us, here in, as being o^r last means under God, from whom we hope to haue reliefe Your petitioners fhall all wayes pray for you

Dated October 6th (70).

Oct. 26, 1670, the deputies consented to it, but the magistrates would not, and the matter was referred to the town for its determination. The next year, application was made to the town for this purpose. At a town meeting held March 22, 1671-2, after several postponements, it was voted "That all Farmers (that now are, or hereafter shall be willing to join to-

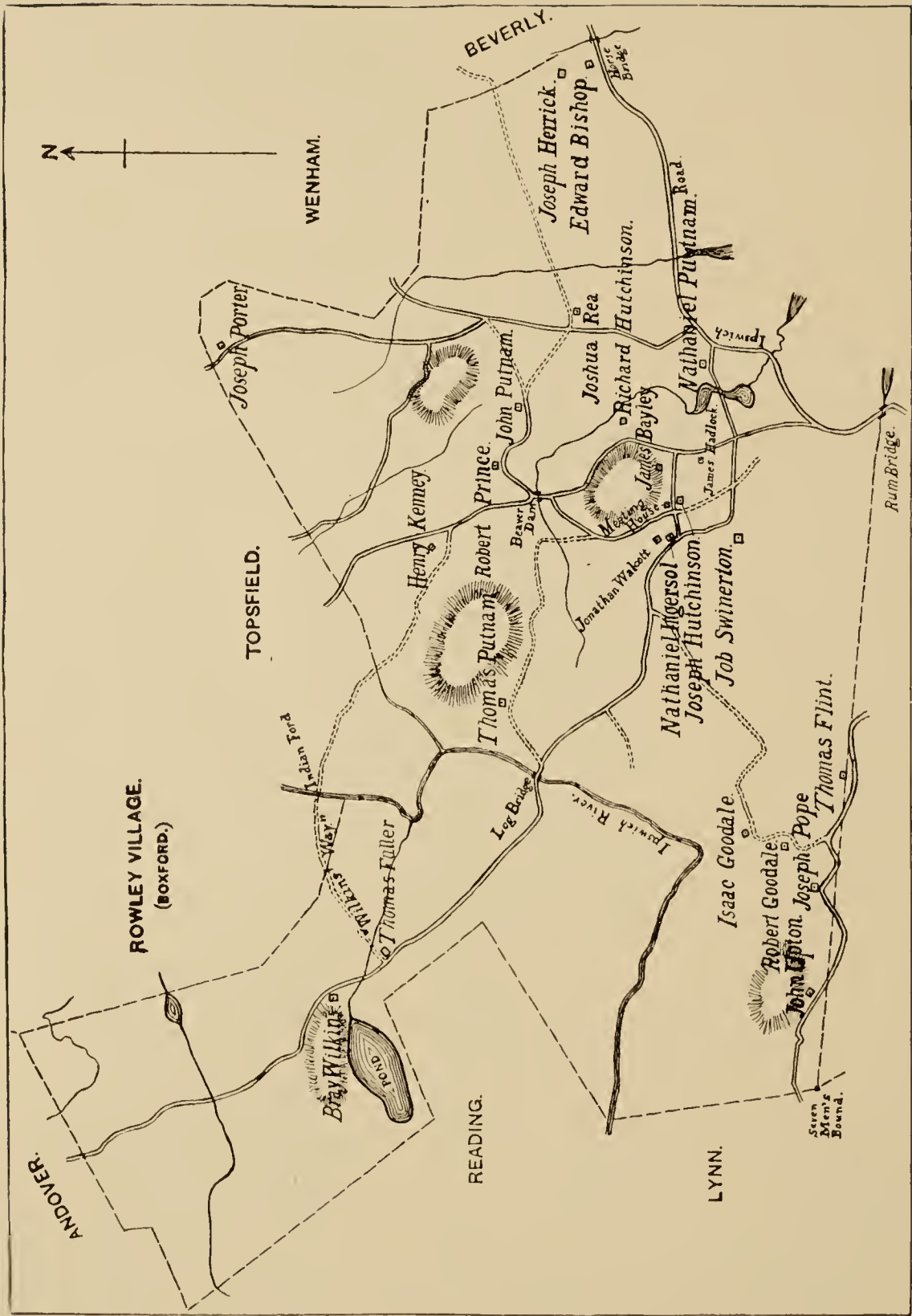
¹Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts, of Essex County, volume V, page 273.

gether for providing a minister among themselves, whose habitations are about Ipswich highway from the horse bridge to the wooden bridge at the hither end of Mr. Endecott's plain, and from thence upon a west line) shall have liberty to have a minister by themselves, and when they shall have procured one, and pay him maintenance, that then they shall be discharged from their part of Salem's minister's maintenance and this to continue so long as the minister abides with them, and is maintained by them; provided always that they shall bear all other charges whatsoever, amongst themselves, both with respect to their meeting house and minister's house or otherwise whatsoever, in carrying on this work, and also bear their proportion of all other public charges in the town.

Richard Hutchinson, Thomas Fuller and others next proceeded to petition the general court to establish the Farmers into a legal religious parish. The selectmen of the town authorized Capt. Walter Price to appear at the session of the court and answer the petition. Oct. 16, 1672, the court adjudged "it meet that all persons living within the tract of land mentioned in the town's grant of land to the petitioners together with all lands and estates lying within the said bounds shall contribute to all charges referring to the maintenance of a minister and erecting a meeting house there and that they shall have liberty to nominate and appoint persons among themselves or town of Salem not exceeding the number of five who are empowered from time to time for the making and gathering of all rates and levies for the ends above expressed — and that in case of refusal or non-payment of the same by any person or persons amongst them that then the constables of Salem shall and hereby are empowered to make distress upon the goods of any that shall so neglect or refuse to afford their help in that use. And the same to deliver to the persons aforesaid to be improved accordingly and that when a minister shall be settled amongst them they shall be freed from contributing to the ministers of Salem."

May 7, 1673, the general court explained this grant by declaring "that neither the common or other unimproved lands belonging to any inhabitant living without the precincts of the village within the town of Salem shall henceforth be liable to assessments as to the village of Salem." Two suits were brought to collect the assessments made,—one for the cost of the new meeting house in the town of Salem, and, second, for cost of the meeting house at the Village. The first suit was against Nathaniel Putnam who lived within the territory of the Village, March

¹See petition of Capt. Thomas Lawthrop, to the general court, dated May 12, 1675, requesting further explanations as to the meaning of the grant.



SALEM VILLAGE.

11, 1673-4, which was decided in favor of the town;¹ and the other, June 11, 1675, was against John Upton² who lived on the line of the parish, in West Peabody.

The accompanying plan shows the territory which constituted the parish limits. This included the Bellingham and Denison grants, which are now wholly within the town of Middleton. Besides the families named on the map, Thomas Small and Benjamin Woodrow lived just easterly of Log bridge. There were two or three families living in Rowley Village (Boxford), and attended religious meetings here. Philip Knight and one or two other families lived over the line in Topsfield, and attended church here.

A church was not intended to be organized in the Village at this time, as the Salem church was reluctant to part with any more of her members.

The first meeting of the Farmers after obtaining the act of the general court was held Nov. 11, 1672, when Lt. Thomas Putnam, Thomas Fuller, sr., Joseph Porter, Thomas Flint and Joshua Rea were chosen to conduct their affairs and to levy necessary taxes. It was also voted to raise by taxation the salary of their minister, namely forty pounds and wood, or seven pounds more without the wood.

The preacher was Rev. James Bayley,³ son of John and Eleanor (Emery) Bayley of Newbury, where he was born Sept. 12, 1650. James Bayley graduated from Harvard College in 1669; and came to Salem Village to preach when only twenty-two. The parish voted to build a house for him to live in, but they did not do so, and in 1673 he erected a house for himself upon land of Richard Hutchinson. This house stood on the northerly side of Hobart

James Bayley.

¹Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, volume V, pages 271-275.

²Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, volume VI, pages 45 and 46.

³Rev. James Bayley removed to Killingly, Conn., in 1682, and, in 1692, to Roxbury, Mass., where he became a physician; married, first, Mary Carr of Salisbury Sept. 17, 1672; she died in Killingly Oct. 28, 1688; married, second, Mary —; he died at Roxbury June 18, 1707; she died Oct. 23, 1717; children: Mary, born July 6, 1673, in Newbury; died Aug. 10, 1673; James, born April 12, 1675, in Salem; saddler; lived in Roxbury; John, born Sept. 29, 1676, in Salem; died Dec. 29, 1677; John, born May 10, 1678, in Salem; physician; lived in Killingly and Roxbury; Samuel, born March 2, 1679-80, in Salem; Isaac, born Oct. 2, 1681, in Newbury; H. C., 1701; lived in Stonington and Lebanon, Conn.; Sarah, born Sept. 3, 1683; died in 1683; Joshua, born in 1685; physician in Newbury and Haverhill.

See The Essex Antiquarian, volume V, page 123.

Street, some distance from the road, and easterly of the burial place.¹

At a public meeting, June 23, 1673, it was voted that Mr. Bayley should continue in the work of the ministry in the Village; while some objected that he was never called, and that his standing with them was upon sufferance.

Feb. 16, 1678, sixteen of the Farmers agreed to support a minister among them, and a year later the same sixteen agreed to ask the Salem church for their help and advice. At the meeting of the inhabitants, on that day, Mr. Bayley sent a letter to them, stating that he had been informed that Nathaniel Putnam and Bray Wilkins had publicly charged that he was not qualified for the work of the ministry, adding that "The great thing that I desire and pray for is that we may know and do the will of God." The Salem church advised that Mr. Bayley should stay at the Farms, and the minority should "fall in" with the majority and support him.

July 31, 1679, Mr. Bayley wrote to the people that he was "seriously thinking" of removing from the parish; and in September following his salary was increased to fifty-five pounds.

A number of the inhabitants of Salem Village petitioned the general court, Oct. 15, 1679, relative to the continuance and maintenance of the minister, representing that he had been there in service six years and the Salem church had certified that he was orthodox and competent, of a blameless and selfdenying conversation, and that the majority (some thirty house-holders) were desirous of his continuance among them as their minister, and praying that comfortable maintenance be allowed him for the support of himself and his wife and children. The inhabitants were authorized to call a minister to preach the Word of God to them. The court also ordered that he be continued, and settled as the minister of that place, at the annual salary of sixty pounds, one-third in money and two-thirds in provisions and fuel for himself and family, which should be paid by the inhabitants, who were to choose two or three men to make assessment therefore. This settlement was to continuance for one year, or until further order of the court, or there should be a church of Christ orderly gathered and approved in the place.

Mr. Bayley discontinued his service there in the spring of 1680; and in 1682 removed to Killington, Conn., where he remained for ten years. He removed to Roxbury, Mass., in 1692, and became a physician. He died at Roxbury June 18, 1707, at the age of fifty-six. During his service in Salem Village, a great

¹See Historical Collections of the Essex Institute, volume 54, pages 225 and 233.

lack of unity constantly caused trouble, yet he remained for seven years and performed faithful service. The uncertainty of his position there was undoubtedly the occasion of many of the disagreements. There were about fifty householders and only about eleven or twelve members of the Salem church. Criticism of his ability on the part of some and lack of support by others were common.

Dec. 26, 1672, the Farmers voted to build a meeting house thirty-four feet long, twenty-eight feet wide and sixteen feet between joints. The building committee consisted of the above committee and Nathaniel Putnam, Henry Kenny, Joseph Hutchinson and Joseph Putnam. The money to pay for it was to be raised by taxation.

Nathaniel Ingersoll conducted a tavern on the northeasterly side of what is now Center Street, about midway between Hobart and Ingersoll streets; and he was authorized by the selectmen of the town to sell beer and cider by the quart while the Farmers were building their meeting house and on Lord's days afterwards. This he continued to do until 1681.

In 1684, the meeting house was incomplete, as it was then voted that it "shall be filled and daubed where it wants below the beams and plates and that six casements shall be hung in the meeting house and that there be a canopy set over the pulpit." Galleries were added a little later. The meeting house was built on the northerly side of Hobart Street about one hundred and fifty feet easterly of Forest Street, on land of Joseph Hutchinson who conveyed an acre of it to the "inhabitants of the Farms," "for the meeting house and ministry amongst them."

After Mr. Bayley had ceased to be the pastor, the parish voted, Feb. —, 1680-1, to build a parsonage house forty-two feet long, twenty feet wide and thirteen feet stud, with four chimneys and no gable ends, and that a rate of two hundred and twenty-one pounds, nine shillings and six pence should be made to meet the expense. It was completed within about a year.

The Salem court ordered, June 26, 1677, that the town of Salem should choose a committee to order highways for the convenience of the Farmers or Villagers.

The general court had directed that although there was no church, two men should be chosen each year to act as deacons, especially to collect money and settle with the minister. The first deacons, Lt. John Putnam and Nathaniel Ingersoll, were chosen in December, 1679. The next year, they were Lt. Thomas Putnam and Serg. Jonathan Walcott. In 1683, Nathaniel Ingersoll was elected in place of Walcott, and, in 1686, Walcott was elected in place of Thomas Putnam.

Mr. Bayley's successor was Rev. George Burroughs, who came to the Village to preach in November, 1680. It was voted to give him a salary of sixty pounds a year. He graduated from Harvard College in 1679; and after preaching in Casco (now Portland), Maine, awhile he came to Salem Village. His wife died in 1681, but he had received but little, if any, of his salary, and had no money to pay her funeral expenses. The next year, he gave up the pastorate, as the disputes and contentions were too dispiriting to him in his loneliness. He returned to Maine early in 1683. He was there in 1690, when the Indian raid occurred, and went to Wells, where he preached a year. He was a small, black-haired man, with a dark complexion and possessed of quick passions and great strength.

Daniel Epps, the Salem schoolmaster, preached there between Burroughs and Lawson, the next minister, for many weeks.

Rev. Deodat Lawson of Boston succeeded Mr. Burroughs in the Village in the winter of 1683-4. He had been thoughtful of going there since the preceding May. His salary was sixty pounds. He left in 1688. The old factions continued with increasing bitterness among young and old.

Then came Rev. Samuel Parris, who was ordained Nov. 19, 1689, the day of the organization of the church and of his induction as its pastor. He was born in London, and was then thirty-five. He had attended Harvard College, but did not graduate. He was then a merchant in the West Indies and in Boston. He was a year in coming,—a year in bargaining.

The following is a copy of the covenant of the church, which was adopted at its establishment:—

We whose names (tho unworthy of a name in this church) are hereunto subscribed, Lamenting our own great unfitness for such an Awful and solemn approach unto the Holy God and deploring all the miscarriages committed by us, either in the Days of our unregeneracy or since we have been brought into acquaintance with God, in the communion of his churches which we have heretofore been related unto: And yet apprehending ourselves called by the Most High to Embody ourselves into a different society, with a sacred covenant to serve the Lord Jesus Christ and Edifie one another according to the Rules of his holy word, Being persuaded in matters of Faith according to the Confession of Faith owned and consented unto by the Elders and Messingers of the churches assembled at Boston in New-England. May—12—1680 which for the substance of it, we now own and profess

We, do, in some measure of sinceritie, this day give up our selves unto God in Christ, to be for him and for another, at the same time renouncing all the vanities and Idols of this present evil world.

We give up ourselves, and offspring, unto the Lord Jehovah, the one true and living God, in three Persons, Father, Son, and Holy

Ghost. To God the Father of our Lord Christ, as to our Reconciled God and Father in Christ Jesus; and unto Christ Jesus as our King, Priest and Prophet, and only Mediator: And unto the Holy Ghost as our only Sanctifier and Comforter: As to our Best good and Last End: promising, (with divine help) to live unto, and upon, this one God in three Persons: hoping at length to live forever with him.

We do likewise give up ourselves one unto another in the Lord, engaging, (with divine aid) as a church of God to Submit to the order, Discipline and Government of Christ in this his church, and to the Ministerial teaching, guidance, and oversight of the Elder (or Elders) thereof, as to such as watch for our Souls; And also to a mutuall brotherly watchfulness according to Gosple Rules, so long as by such Rules we shall continue in this Relation to each other: And promise also to walk with all regular and due communion with other churches of our Lord Jesus, and in all cheerful endeavor to support and observe the pure Gospel institutions of our Lord Redeemer so far as He shall graciously reveal unto us his will concerning them.

In order hereunto:

We resolve uprightly to study what is our duty, & to make it our greif, & reckon it our shame, whereinfoever we find our selves to come short in the discharge of it, & for pardon thereof humbly to betake our selves to the Blood of the Everlasting Covenant.

And that we keep this Covenant, & all the branches of it inviolable for ever, being sensible that we can do nothing of our selves,

We humbly implore the help & grace of our Mediator may be sufficient for us: Beseeching that whilst we are working out our own Salvation, with fear & trembling, He would graciously work in us both to will, & to do. And that he being the Great Shepherd of our Souls would lead us into the paths of Righteousness, for his own Names sake. And at length receive us all into the Inheritance of the Saints in Light.

- | | |
|---------------------------------|--|
| 1. Samuel Parris, Pastor. | The women which embodied |
| 2. nathanell Putnam | with us by their severall |
| 3. John putnam | Names as followeth Viz. |
| 4. Bray Wilkins. 79. | 1. Eliz: (wife to Sam:) Parris |
| 5. Joshua Rea: | 2. Rebek: (wife to John) Putnam. |
| 6. Nathaneil Ingerfoll | 3. Anna (wife to Bray) Wilkins. |
| 7. peter Cloyes | 4. Sarah (wife to Joshuah) Rea. |
| 8. Thomas putnam | 5. Hannah (wife to Jn ^o (jun ^r) Putnam. |
| 9. John Putnam Jun ^r | 6. Sarah (wife to Benj ^a) Putnam. |
| 10. Edward Putnam | 7. Sarah Putnam. |
| 11. Jonathan putnam | 8. Deliverance Walcott |
| 12. Benjamin putnam | 9. Persis (wife to William) Way. |
| 13. Ezekiel Cheever | 10. mary (wife to Sam:) Abbie. |
| 14. Henry Wilkins | |
| 15. Benj ^a Wilkins | |
| 16. william way | |
| 17. Peter Prescott | |

Illi quoru nominibus hoc Signum præfigitur
+ è vivis cefferunt.

INDEX

- ABBE (Abbey, Abby, Abys),
 John, 60, 65, 135, 151, 155.
 Mary, 445.
 Mercy, 277.
 Samuel, 445.
 Abbott (Abbot), Abigail Rich-
 ardson, 106.
 Charles Patterson, 426.
 James, 225.
 Margaret, 383.
 Mary Perkins, 426.
 Sarah, 332.
 Abigail (ship), 139, 359.
 Aborn (Aborne, Eaborne), Han-
 nah, 299.
 Joseph, 143.
 Lydia, 143.
 Mary, 55.
 Samuel, 6, 8, 10, 61, 131, 158-
 160, 177, 215, 403, 421, 422.
 Thomas, 71.
 Abree, Thomas, 166.
 Acadia, 170, 349, 377.
 Expedition to, 349, 377.
 Adams, Abraham, 47.
 Charles, 102.
 Eleanor, 47.
 Elizabeth, 47.
 Hannah, 47.
 Isaac, 47.
 Jacob, 47.
 Joanna, 47.
 John, 47, 160, 282, 317, 425.
 Martha, 102, 324.
 Mary, 47, 425.
 Richard, 4, 13, 158, 159, 168, 228,
 303, 324, 405.
 Robert, 47, 51, 77, 107, 157, 252,
 253.
 Sarah, 47.
 William, 404.
 Aden, 225.
 Address to Charles II, 283.
 Admiralty, 347.
 Adventure (ketch), 52, 359.
 Africa, 25.
 Agawam, 14.
 Agawam, *continued*,
 Sagamore of, 241.
 Ager (Eager), Ann, 327.
 Anne, 143.
 Benjamin, 143, 327.
 Jonathan, 7, 383, 401.
 Rebecca, 382.
 Alden, Helen M., 118.
 Alderman, John, 8, 10, 212.
 Aldrich, Daniel, 56.
 Tamson, 56.
 Alewife brook, 42.
 Alexander, Lydia, 280.
 Samuel, 280.
 Alexandria, 123.
 Alford, Mr., 145, 206, 215.
 Allen (Allin, Allyn), Benjamin,
 356.
 Caroline, 225.
 Catherine Augusta, 427.
 Ebenezer, 56.
 Elizabeth, 56.
 Ellen Sophia, 104.
 Hannah Wier, 115.
 John, 303, 372.
 Mary, 76.
 Otis, 225.
 Rebecca, 328.
 Robert, 13, 61, 151, 173, 328.
 Sarah, 23, 303.
 Timothy, 197, 201.
 William, 8, 12, 151, 158, 172-174,
 180.
 William Henry, 104.
 Allerton, Isaac, 65, 166, 170, 197,
 200.
 Alley, Anna, 76.
 John, 41.
 Mercy, 41.
 Rebecca, 57.
 Alligator (ketch), 359.
 Allsaebrook, Elizabeth, 57.
 Alms house, 220.
 Alsbee, Sarah, 134.
 Amagansette, L. I., 53.
 Ambrose (ship), 359.
 Ames, Elizabeth, 148, 150.

- Ames, *continued*,
 Joanna, 148-150.
 John, 148.
 Ruth, 148.
 Susanna, 148.
 William, 148, 150.
 Amesbury, Mass., 226, 375, 409.
 Amherst, Mass., 380.
 Amherst, N. H., 55, 113, 225, 377.
 Anabaptists, 142.
 Anderson, Cornelius, 347.
 David, 368.
 Katherine B., 382.
 Andover, Mass., 21, 39, 41, 112,
 113, 120, 134, 187, 209, 277,
 298, 300, 306, 332, 394, 396,
 420.
 Andrews (Andrew), —, 348, 364.
 Anna, 116.
 Daniel, 8, 10, 93, 161, 307, 401.
 Elizabeth, 162.
 Eunice, 340.
 Hephzibah, 162.
 John, 162.
 Jonathan, 286, 424.
 Joseph, 162.
 Rebecca K., 225.
 Richard, 166, 167.
 Sarah, 161.
 Andros, Edmund, 10, 352, 361, 363,
 364, 370, 400.
 Angier, Edmund, 148.
 Ruth, 148.
 Samuel, 148.
 Animals, Domestic, 14, 51, 65, 98-
 100, 132, 157, 167, 212, 221.
 Wild, 25.
 Anniball, Martha, 43.
 Anquilla, 369.
 Antelby, William, 368.
 Antigua, 361, 372.
 Antrum, Hannah, 234.
 Obediah, 347.
 Thomas, 10, 165, 192, 194, 213,
 229, 403.
 Apothecary, First, 306.
 Apparel, 72, 215, 290.
 Appleton, Elizabeth, 103, 118.
 Francis Henry, 384.
 Georgiana Crowninshield, 384.
 John, 97.
 Mary, 137.
 May, 138.
 Nathaniel, 103.
 Rebecca, 97.
 Arbella (ship), 29, 360.
 Archer (Archard), Bethiah, 65, 103.
 Charlotte Lane, 331.
 Archer, *continued*,
 Elizabeth, 82.
 Elizabeth C., 140.
 Hannah, 43, 213.
 John, 65, 82, 369.
 Mary, 280.
 Mary Pickman, 137.
 Nathaniel, 43.
 Samuel, 8, 48, 61, 158-160, 172-
 174, 180, 182, 226, 247, 280, 308,
 314, 392, 400, 401, 403.
 Sarah, 252, 332.
 Susanna, 314.
 William, 137.
 William H., 331.
 Arden, Thomas, 205.
 Arey, Joseph Henry, 382.
 Sarah M., 382.
 Argonaut (ship), 315.
 Arms, King's, 326.
 Arondas, Peter, 365.
 Asbury, N. J., 39.
 Ashby, Abigail, 318-320.
 Anthony, 6, 8, 10, 189, 318, 327.
 Benjamin, 280, 318-320.
 Benjamin Fitch, 320.
 Charlotte, 320.
 David, 319, 320.
 Elizabeth, 305, 318-320.
 Esther, 320.
 Fanny, 320.
 George, 319, 320.
 Gershom, 318.
 Hannah, 319, 320.
 Hester, 320.
 Hetty, 320.
 Jemima, 319.
 John, 319, 320.
 Jonathan, 305, 319, 320.
 Lucy, 320.
 Lydia, 320.
 Margaret, 320.
 Martha, 320.
 Mary, 319, 320.
 Nancy, 320.
 Patience, 319.
 Rebecca, 280, 320.
 Sally, 320.
 Samuel, 320.
 Sarah, 320.
 Sarah Fitch, 320.
 Thomas, 320.
 Thomas White, 320.
 William, 320.
 Ashton, Rebecca, 144.
 Asiatic Bank, 124.
 Aslebee, Sarah, 134.
 Assistants, 400.

- Assumption, Can., 426.
 Aston Abbotts, England, 109.
 Athens, Ga., 104, 106.
 Athol, Mass., 331.
 Attleborough, Mass., 324.
 Atwater, Rebecca, 386.
 Atwill, Betsey F., 105.
 Audley, Peter, 396.
 Auger, Goodman, 71.
 William, 182.
 D'Aulnay, Monsieur, 170, 171, 350.
 Aunt Betty's Cove, 227.
 Austin, Mary, 377.
 Averill, Amme, 328.
 Israel, 188.
 John, 328.
 Mary, 188, 328.
 Avery, Thomas, 176, 403.
 Ayers, Deborah, 306.
- BABBIDGE** (Babbage, Bavage),
 Abba Elizabeth, 315.
 Abigail, 313.
 Agnes, 313.
 Amelia P., 315.
 Ann Maria, 315.
 Annie, 313.
 Anstiss, 314.
 Augustine L., 315.
 Benjamin, 280, 313-315.
 Carrie J., 315.
 Charles, 315.
 Christopher, 7, 10, 78, 160, 309,
 310, 312-315, 327, 359, 401, 403.
 Eliza A., 315.
 Elizabeth, 102, 280, 313-315.
 Elizabeth P., 315.
 Emma C., 315.
 Eunice, 315.
 Frances A., 315.
 Francis, 315.
 Hannah, 313.
 Hester, 178, 313.
 James, 313.
 John, 224, 313-315.
 John Laurens, 315.
 John Phinon, 315.
 Lydia, 78, 313, 315.
 Lydia B., 315.
 Margaret, 315.
 Margaret E., 315.
 Margaret Lockhart, 315.
 Maria Ruth, 315.
 Martha, 105, 314.
 Martha Silsbee, 315.
 Mary, 313-315.
 Mary Adelaide, 315.
 Mary Ann, 315.
- Babbidge, *continued*,
 Mehitable, 313.
 Nancy, 315.
 Nancy Ann, 315.
 Nehemiah, 313.
 Richard, 313.
 Roger, 313.
 Ruth, 313, 315.
 Sarah, 224, 315.
 Susan, 314.
 Susan Beckett, 315.
 Susanna, 224, 313, 314.
 Susanna Archer, 315.
 William, 314, 315.
 Babcock, Cornelia A., 380.
 Bacon, Mr., 194, 203.
 Benjamin, 123.
 Elizabeth, 113.
 Eunice, 123.
 Isaac, 98.
 Margaret, 268.
 Mehitable, 318.
 Mial, 268.
 Rebecca, 98, 291.
 Samuel, 317, 318.
 William, 98.
 Bailey (Balie, Bayley, Baylie, Bayl-
 lis), David, 110.
 Eleanor, 441.
 Elizabeth, 109, 161.
 Experience, 110.
 Grace, 210.
 Guido, 161, 194, 217.
 Henry, 47, 61, 407, 410, 418.
 Isaac, 441.
 James, 441-443.
 John, 50, 181, 441.
 Joseph, 109, 161.
 Joshua, 109, 441.
 Mary, 161, 162, 295, 296, 441.
 Priscilla, 109.
 Ruth, 161.
 Samuel, 441.
 Thomas, 417.
 William, 210, 212, 231.
 Bakeman's Precinct, N. Y., 76.
 Baker, Abigail, 133.
 Anna, 277.
 Anne, 133.
 Cornelius, 283, 417.
 Hannah, 411, 414.
 John, 15, 277, 392, 403.
 Priscilla, 113, 322.
 Robert, 65.
 Tabitha, 15.
 Baker's Island, 103, 113, 240, 241,
 348.
 Balcam, Hannah, 23.

- Balcam, *continued*,
 John, 23.
- Balch, Benjamin, 6, 99, 158, 282,
 330, 401, 417.
 John, 5, 8, 10, 48, 77, 100, 152,
 182, 308.
 Joseph, 133.
 Lois, 330.
 Sarah, 133.
- Bald Hill, 70, 205, 234, 312, 322.
- Baldwin, Alma, 383.
- Balhach, John, 359.
 Nicholas, 359.
- Ballard, Elizabeth C., 140.
 James Crawford, 140.
- Baltimore, Md., 83.
- Bancroft, Sarah, 137.
- Bangor, Me., 378.
- Banks, Lydia, 189.
- Banter, Ruth, 375.
- Barbadoes, W. I., 3, 257, 267, 271,
 347, 348, 359, 360, 362, 364,
 365, 369, 370, 373, 386.
- Barber (Barbar), John, 61, 165, 213.
 William, 77, 176, 177, 179, 197,
 202.
- Barker, Elizabeth, 198.
 Jacob, 377, 379.
 Maria Louisa, 379.
 Sarah, 377.
- Barkville Parish, England, 271.
- Barlow, Emeline C., 225.
 John, 225.
- Barnard, Elizabeth, 45.
 Leonard, 45.
 Martha, 45.
 Rachel, 299.
 Samuel, 45, 299.
 Thomas, 299.
- Barnard Castle, 31.
- Barnes, Eunice, 315.
 Michael, 315.
 Thomas, 158, 216, 228, 301, 401,
 403.
- Barnet, Jacob, 438.
- Barney, Hannah, 142.
 Jacob, 4, 6, 8, 10, 25, 97, 155,
 165, 185, 205-207, 213, 215, 221,
 223, 227, 231, 233, 401, 405.
- Barnstable, Mass., 78.
- Barr, Mary Eliza, 41.
 Priscilla, 38.
- Bartholomew, Abraham, 3.
 Elizabeth, 127.
 Henry, 3, 4, 6-8, 10, 62, 66, 67,
 75, 127, 156, 159, 161, 169, 186,
 191, 194, 203, 207, 208, 212, 213,
 232, 239, 302, 308, 315, 323, 337.
- Bartholomew, *continued*,
 343, 344, 351-353, 356, 395, 400,
 401, 408, 409, 430.
 Richard, 3.
 Sara, 3.
 Thomas, 3.
 William, 3, 431.
- Bartlett, Chloe, 56.
 Elizabeth, 82.
 John, 166.
 Joseph, 121.
 Meribah, 227.
 Nicholas, 311, 325.
 Sarah, 121.
 Walter Price, 82.
- Bartoll, Hannah, 299.
 Joan, 107.
 John, 107, 124, 176, 179, 196, 197,
 299.
 Mary, 107.
 Parnell, 107.
 Robert, 223.
 Sarah, 141, 223.
 William, 107.
- Barton, Margaret, 331.
 Marmaduke, 30.
 Mary, 136.
 Patience, 178.
 Samuel, 136.
 Thomas, 340.
- Bartram, John, 374.
- Bass, Abigail, 102.
 John, 102.
- Bass River, 6, 15, 61, 140, 145, 151,
 156, 158, 159, 161, 180, 187,
 189, 191, 227, 261, 283, 301,
 403, 407, 408, 415.
- Bassett, Elizabeth, 22.
 Rachel, 40, 383.
- Batavia, Java, 314, 379.
- Batchelder (Batcheler, Batcheller),
 Abigail, 162.
 Bethiah, 162.
 Elizabeth, 178.
 John, 4, 8, 65, 75, 167, 178, 206,
 211, 218, 227, 234, 303, 401,
 402.
 Joseph, 8, 77, 153.
 Lydia, 163.
 Mary, 162, 163.
- Bateman, Mary, 315.
- Bates, Lydia, 387.
- Bath, William, 321.
- Batten, Christopher, 332.
 Mary, 332.
 Susanna, 387.
- Batter, Barbara, 383.
 Edmond, 4, 5, 8, 10, 77, 94, 107,

Batter, continued,

126, 142, 158, 159, 165, 180, 181,
207, 212, 221, 226, 227, 229, 237-
239, 245, 247, 248, 257, 263, 264,
279, 307, 319, 324, 344, 351-353,
357, 358, 365, 370, 372, 383, 392,
395, 398, 400, 401, 421, 430, 431,
434.

Martha, 102.

Mary, 365, 372.

Baxter, Abigail, 323.

Daniel, 31, 61, 177.

Elizabeth, 61, 235, 323, 324.

John, 236, 323, 399.

Margaret, 324.

Mary, 323.

Priscilla, 61, 295.

Rebecca, 61.

Samuel, 323.

Sarah, 323.

Susanna, 61, 383.

William, 323.

*Bay Psalm Book, 397.**Beachy brook, 396.**Beadle (Bedell), Abigail, 386, 387.*

Benjamin, 386, 387.

Caleb, 386.

Caroline, E., 387.

David, 384, 386, 387.

Dorothy, 386.

Elizabeth, 386, 387.

Emma Anna, 387.

Eunice, 386.

Francis, 387.

George, 98.

Hannah, 386.

John, 386, 387.

Jonathan, 386.

Joseph, 386, 387.

Josiah, 386, 387.

Katherine, 386.

Lemon, 386.

Lois, 386.

Lucy, 387.

Lucy Ann, 387.

Lucy Annah, 387.

Lydia, 387.

Margaret, 387.

Martha, 384, 387.

Mary, 328, 386, 387.

Mary J., 386, 387.

Mary Masury, 386.

Mercy, 387.

Nathaniel, 8, 386, 401.

Rebecca, 224, 328, 386.

Robert, 386.

Ruth, 386, 387.

Beadle, continued,

Samuel, 8, 189, 301, 385, 386, 401,
418.

Sarah, 386, 387.

Susanna, 386, 387.

Tabitha, 387.

Thomas, 321, 370, 386, 387.

William, 387.

Beal, Aaron, 383.

William, 199.

Bean, Martha, 4.

Rachel, 40.

Sarah, 39.

William, 4, 39, 40.

*Beare, Philip, 3, 13, 48.**Beauchamp, Edward, 64, 140, 403,
433.**Bearemont (Beaumont), John, 99,
203.**Beaver brook, 71, 396, 429.**Beaver dam, 399, 400, 499.**Beaver Pond, 140, 205, 222.**Beazely, Sarah, 420.**Becket, Abigail, 224.*

Alfred H., 225.

Benjamin, 223, 224.

Caroline, 225.

Charles Henry, 225.

Daniel C., 225.

David, 224, 225.

David Augustus, 225.

David Beadle, 224.

Deborah, 224.

Edward C., 225.

Elizabeth, 223-225.

Ellen Augusta, 225.

Ellen M., 225.

Emeline C., 225.

Eunice, 224.

Fannie E., 225.

Hannah, 223, 224, 226, 329.

Imogene, 225.

James, 224, 225.

Jane Hyland, 225.

John, 223-225, 228, 240, 304, 333,
362, 386.

John Ingersoll, 225.

John W., 225.

Jonathan, 224, 225.

Joseph L., 225.

Lucia C., 225.

Lydia, 224.

Margaret, 223, 224.

Martha, 224.

Mary, 178, 223-225.

Mary Elizabeth, 225.

Mary Jane, 225.

Priscilla I., 225.

- Becket, *continued*,
 Rebecca, 224, 386.
 Rebecca C., 225.
 Rebecca K., 225.
 Retire, 223-225.
 Sarah, 223-225, 315, 384.
 Sarah A., 225.
 Susanna, 224, 313.
 Tamson S., 225.
 William, 178, 223-226, 356, 401.
 William M. J., 225.
- Beckford (Bickford), Benjamin, 82.
 Bethiah, 98.
 Elizabeth, 45, 305.
 Eunice, 44.
 George, 44.
 Hannah, 123.
 John, 98.
 Joshua, 45.
 Lydia, 82.
 Mary, 305.
 Priscilla, 329.
 Rebecca, 98.
 Sarah, 376.
- Becks, William, 369.
- Bedde, James, 283.
 Sarah, 283.
- Bedford, Mass., 111, 162.
- Bedfordshire, England, 228.
- Beecher, Thomas, 371.
- Beginning (ketch), 360.
- Begoe, Lydia, 82, 123.
- Belcher, John, 373.
- Bell, Elizabeth, 325.
 Katherine, 133.
 Mary, 211.
 Rebecca, 295.
 Samuel, 325.
- Bell Tavern, 36.
- Bell, Ringing the, 64.
- Bellingham, Richard, 119, 266, 294, 296, 441.
- Bellingham, Mass., 56.
- Bellona Arsenal, Va., 38.
- Belpre, O., 112.
- Bennett, John, 2, 13, 48, 197, 417.
 Margaret, 2.
 Mary, 2.
 Samuel, 336.
 William, 15, 61, 173.
- Bennington, Battle of, 377.
- Benson, Miriam, 55.
- Berry, Christopher, 107.
 Francis T., 428.
 George E., 429.
 John, 389.
 Katherine, 389.
 Mary, 425.
- Berry, *continued*,
 Sarah, 332.
- Berwick, Me., 40.
- Best, John, 62, 422.
 Mary, 143.
- Bethel, Hannah, 223.
 Richard, 223, 429.
- Bethune, Abigail, 42.
 Robert, 42.
- Betty (ketch), 360.
- Betty (lighter), 360.
- Beverly, Mass., 11, 15, 22, 42, 43, 69-71, 104, 111, 113, 114, 116, 117, 124, 125, 133-136, 138-140, 161-163, 179, 180, 183, 187, 188, 191-193, 203, 211, 217, 224, 237, 261, 268, 275, 282, 306, 317, 319, 329, 330, 352, 362, 376, 379-382, 394, 397, 406-418, 425, 429.
 Name of, 415-417.
- Beverly Academy, 306.
- Beverly bridge, 379.
- Beverly church, 406, 410.
- Beverly meeting house, 406.
- Beverly parsonage, 407, 408.
- Beverly rock, 205.
- Bilboa, Barbadoes, 360, 366.
- Bilboes, 13.
- Billerica, Mass., 32, 110, 111, 115, 277, 285.
- Billings, Hannah, 111.
- Birdsall (Birdsale), Henry, 8, 64.
 Judith, 43.
- Biron, Cecilia, 39.
- Biscoe, Mary, 383.
- Bishop, Anne, 187.
 Bridget, 181.
 Edward, 6, 109, 180, 181, 184, 401, 411, 414, 417, 439.
 Elizabeth, 181.
 George, 248.
 Hannah, 141, 180, 181.
 Humphrey, 19.
 John, 187.
 Joseph, 141,
 Mary, 30, 120, 181.
 Nabby, 117.
 Richard, 8, 10, 30, 61, 62, 75, 120, 158, 205, 217, 234, 403.
 Sarah, 181.
 Susanna, 109.
 Townsend, 4, 8, 75, 127, 150, 165, 168.
- Bixby (Bigsbe), Daniel, 32.
 George, 162.
 Mary, 162.
 Ruth, 32.
- Black, Freeborn, 193.

- Black, *continued*,
 Freegrace, 411, 414.
 John, 159, 172-174, 193, 323, 403,
 411, 414, 417, 418.
 Persis, 385.
 Black Point, Casco Bay, 266.
 Black rock, 104.
 Blackleach, John, 5, 8, 10, 60, 61,
 140, 204, 212, 213, 225, 303, 350,
 360, 394.
 Blackmer, Jemima, 187.
 John, 187.
 Blackstone, Mass., 55.
 Blake, Mary, 146.
 Blanchard, Jesse, 340, 341.
 Blancher, Widow, 47.
 Blaney (Blana), Mr., 67.
 Katherine, 386.
 Sarah, 40, 79.
 Blashfield, Abigail, 15.
 Thomas, 15.
 Blessing (ship), 60, 360.
 Blessing (ketch), 360.
 Blevin, John, 4, 7, 160.
 Mary, 4.
 Blossom (ketch), 360.
 Blubber hollow, 130.
 Blue Anchor Tavern, 355.
 Bly (Blyth), Benjamin, 45, 280.
 Edmond, 280.
 Hannah, 280.
 John, 30, 280.
 Mary, 280.
 Mehitable, 45.
 Rebecca, 30, 280.
 William, 280.
 Boardman (Borman), Alice
 Louise, 118.
 Elizabeth, 138.
 Hannah, 111.
 Martha, 92.
 Mary, 135.
 Sarah, 384.
 Thomas, 230.
 William Dorr, 118.
 Bodly, Thomas, 368.
 "Body of Liberties", 5.
 Boerstler, Emma J., 426.
 Sarah L., 426.
 Boiles, Elizabeth, 71.
 Jonathan, 71.
 Bolton, Mass., 112, 143.
 Bond, John, 187.
 Mary, 15.
 Bonetta (ketch), 360.
 Books, 126, 150, 243, 244, 290.
 Booth, Elizabeth, 404.
 James, 393.
 Bootman. See *Butman*.
 Borne (Boorne, Boren), John, 61,
 62, 151, 158, 160, 178.
 Boston, Sarah, 143.
 Boston, Mass., 8, 11, 14, 15, 17, 19,
 20, 27-29, 32, 33, 38, 41, 42, 45,
 46, 48-52, 62, 78, 79, 81-84, 92,
 93, 97, 98, 101, 103, 105, 112,
 114, 118, 119, 122, 123, 125, 135,
 136, 138-140, 143, 144, 155, 157,
 161, 162, 166, 170, 171, 174, 198,
 201, 214, 222, 224, 225, 230, 236,
 243-251, 255-257, 259-263, 265-
 269, 271, 279, 280, 283, 286-288,
 294, 299, 300, 303, 304, 308, 313,
 316, 317, 321, 324, 325, 327-329,
 331, 340, 346, 347, 349, 356, 358,
 359, 362, 365, 367, 369, 370, 372,
 373, 378, 380, 381, 384, 385, 387-
 389, 426, 429, 444.
 Boston Packet (ship), 137.
 Bott, Ruth, 103.
 Bound, William, 142, 213.
 Bounds, Town, 152, 154, 185, 207-
 209.
 Boune, Andrew, 368.
 Bow, N. H., 32.
 Bowd, Joseph, 202.
 Bowden, Alice Davenport, 332.
 Michael, 143.
 Sarah, 143.
 Bowditch, Andrew, 137.
 Ann, 137.
 Ann Hendfield, 137.
 Anna, 137.
 Annie E., 138.
 Anstiss, 138.
 Benjamin, 137.
 Bertha M., 138.
 Betsey Mansfield, 137.
 Caroline M., 138.
 Charles Ingersoll, 138.
 Clara H., 138.
 Daniel, 136, 137.
 Daniel C., 138.
 Deborah, 137.
 Deborah M., 138.
 Deborah Marsh, 138.
 Eben Stodder, 138.
 Ebenezer, 136, 137.
 Eliza, 138.
 Eliza A., 138.
 Elizabeth, 136-138.
 Elizabeth B., 138.
 Elizabeth Boardman, 138.
 Elizabeth Gilman, 138.
 Elizabeth Mylord, 138.

- Bowditch, *continued*,
 Ellen M., 380.
 Eugene, 138.
 Eunice, 136, 137.
 Francis Morse, 137.
 George, 137, 138.
 George F., 138.
 George Henry, 138.
 George Stodder, 138.
 Gertrude, 138.
 Gertrude A., 138.
 Habakkuk, 136, 137.
 Hannah, 137.
 Harriet, 138.
 Helen Maria, 137, 380.
 Henry Ingersoll, 138.
 Jane, 137.
 John, 136, 137.
 Jonathan Ingersoll, 138.
 Joseph, 136, 137.
 Joseph Henry, 137.
 Lois, 137, 138.
 Lucinda M., 137.
 Lucy, 137.
 Margaret S., 138.
 Mary, 136-138.
 Mary Ann, 138, 379.
 Mary Pickman, 137.
 Mary, 138.
 Nancy, 137.
 Nathaniel, 136-138.
 Nathaniel Ingersoll, 138.
 Polly, 137.
 Prudence S., 138.
 Rebecca, 137, 138.
 Rebecca C., 138.
 Richard, 137, 138.
 Richard F., 138.
 Samuel, 137.
 Samuel Ingersoll, 137.
 Sarah, 136-138.
 Sarah B., 138.
 Sarah Bancroft, 138.
 Sarah Morse, 137.
 Thomas, 136-138.
 William, 8, 135-137, 142, 193, 291,
 352, 356, 360, 373.
 William Appleton, 138.
 William B., 138.
 William Ingersoll, 138.
 Bowdoin, Peter, 365.
 Willard L., 96.
 Bowdoin College, 106, 378.
 Bowen, Elizabeth, 185.
 Thomas, 176, 177, 185, 197.
 Bowker, Charles, 310.
 Bowman, Betsey, 105.
 Boxford, Mass., 110-112, 114, 117,
 Boxford, *continued*,
 134, 145, 146, 162, 163, 277, 295,
 297, 377, 396, 400, 441.
 Boyce, Abigail, 76.
 Anna, 76.
 Benjamin, 76.
 Catherine, 76.
 Content, 76.
 David, 76, 123.
 Ebenezer, 76.
 Elizabeth, 76.
 Ellenor, 76.
 Esther, 54, 76.
 Eunice, 76.
 Isaac, 76.
 John, 76.
 Jonathan, 76.
 Joseph, 7, 8, 10, 59, 75, 101, 156,
 158-160, 234, 273, 391, 401, 403.
 Katherine, 123.
 Lydia, 76.
 Mary, 54, 76.
 Mathew, 174.
 Nicholas, 76.
 Patience, 76.
 Rebecca, 76.
 Samuel, 76.
 Sarah, 76, 391.
 Susanna, 76.
 William, 76.
 Boyd, Elizabeth, 140.
 Brackenbury, Elizabeth, 71.
 Ellen, 411, 414.
 John, 215.
 Richard, 5, 7, 8, 10, 97, 99, 173,
 175, 217, 410, 411, 414.
 Brackett, Thomas, 252, 253.
 Bradbury, Jane, 165.
 Bradford, Mass., 134, 224.
 Bradford, Mercy, 42.
 William, 1, 42.
 Bradshaw, Mary, 425.
 Bradstreet, Ann, 28.
 Anna, 277.
 Anne, 120.
 Dudley, 120.
 Jane, 389.
 John, 199.
 Priscilla, 110.
 Simon, 28, 107, 128, 167, 174, 225,
 248, 249, 255, 277, 359, 400.
 Brainard, David, 409.
 Braintree, Mass., 93, 162.
 Brampton, England, 71.
 Branding, 30, 227.
 Brateler, Peter, 371.
 Bray, Eunice, 224.
 John, 224.

- Bray, *continued*,
 Sarah, 425.
 Breadcake, Thomas, 237, 350.
 Breed, Asa L., 124.
 Eunice, 124.
 Hannah, 41.
 Brend, William, 243, 247-250, 258.
 Brett, Mr., 212.
 Brewer, Sarah, 405, 425.
 Thomas, 340.
 William, 425.
 Brewster, William, 1, 88.
 Briant, Richard, 277.
 Sarah, 277.
 Bricks, 221, 405.
 Bridgeport, Conn., 104.
 Bridges, 6, 130-132, 181-183, 186,
 187, 191, 206, 221, 394, 421,
 429.
 Butts, 182, 183.
 Cabot Street, 181, 183.
 Forest River, 191.
 Horse, 186, 187, 221.
 Log, 394, 395.
 Strongwater, 183.
 Town, 6, 7, 130-162.
 Bridges, Alice, 405.
 Benjamin, 405.
 Caleb, 405.
 Edmund, 160, 236, 355, 356, 388,
 405, 433.
 Edward, 8.
 Elizabeth, 236, 388, 405.
 Hannah, 405.
 Mary, 405.
 Robert, 169.
 Sarah, 405.
 Bridgewater, England, 86.
 Bridgewater, Mass., 70, 161.
 Bridgman, John, 166, 187, 193.
 Mary, 193.
 Briggs, Johnson, 103.
 Priscilla, 103.
 Brimblecom, Sarah, 332.
 Brimfield, Mass., 210.
 Brindley, John, 137.
 Sarah, 137.
 Bristol, England, 83, 120, 203, 357,
 366.
 Siege of, 83.
 Bristol, Mass., 298.
 Bristol, R. I., 83.
 Brite, Mary, 193.
 Britton, Edward, 20.
 Elizabeth, 20, 40.
 Rachel, 44.
 Broad field, Governor Endecott's,
 220, 337.
 Broad Street burial ground, 220,
 337.
 Broock, William, 75.
 Brookfield, Mass., 102, 134.
 Brookhaven, L. I., N. Y., 60.
 Brooklyn, Conn., 112.
 Brooklyn, N. Y., 25, 390.
 Brooks, Alfred B., 315.
 Elizabeth, 37.
 Martha, 378.
 Robert, 37.
 Susan Beckett, 315.
 Brooksby, 11, 108, 180, 302.
 Brown (Browne), —, 166, 302,
 374.
 Abby M., 379.
 Abial, 124.
 Abigail, 420.
 Abraham, 420.
 Anna, 420.
 Benjamin, 160, 357, 421.
 Caroline Matilda, 118.
 Catherine, 45.
 Dorcas, 55.
 Dorothy, 210.
 Eleazer, 110.
 Elizabeth, 228.
 Ellen M., 225.
 Ephraim, 318.
 Frederick, 124.
 Hannah, 37, 109, 113, 115, 117,
 420, 421.
 Henry, 109.
 Hugh, 119.
 James, 8, 323, 340, 403, 420, 431-
 433.
 John, 8, 97, 217, 228, 302, 346-
 348, 352, 353, 358, 359, 362, 367,
 368, 420, 421.
 Jonathan, 8, 114.
 Joseph, 139, 224, 225, 421.
 Judith, 390.
 Katherine Cowan, 427.
 Laura, 427.
 Lydia, 133.
 Margaret, 236.
 Margaret S., 138.
 Martha, 420.
 Mary, 139, 224, 377, 420.
 Mary Elizabeth, 225.
 Mary Masury, 387.
 Mary R., 381.
 Rebecca, 115, 420.
 Sally, 46.
 Samuel, 420, 431.
 Sarah, 11, 110, 114, 224, 225, 420.
 William, 4, 6, 8, 10, 11, 37, 65,
 133, 149, 158, 206, 210-212, 228.

Brown, *continued*,

- 237, 286, 336, 339, 344, 351-353,
- 357, 358, 360, 362, 370, 400-403,
- 423, 430, 431, 434.
- William B., 118.
- Brown University, 380.
- Brownfield, Me., 34.
- Browning, Deborah, 391.
- Thomas, 3, 77, 156.
- Bryan, Widow, 97.
- Bubier, Joseph, 120.
- Rebecca, 120.
- Buck, Eleazer, 367.
- Buckingham, Duke of, 14.
- Buckman, Sarah, 268.
- Budleigh, England, 416.
- Buenos Ayres, Brazil, 379, 380.
- Buffalo, N. Y., 331.
- Buffington (Buffinton), Abigail,
- 24.
- Hannah, 54.
- James, 24.
- Jonathan, 94.
- Prudence, 24.
- Sarah, 54.
- Thomas, 54.
- Zadock, 24, 95.
- Buffinton's Tavern, 95.
- Buffum, Abigail, 40, 211.
- Albert, 41.
- Alice, 41.
- Amy, 40.
- Ann, 41.
- Anna, 41.
- Anna Maria, 41.
- Anne, 40, 41.
- Annie, 42.
- Benjamin, 40.
- Caleb, 7, 39-41, 160, 273.
- Caleb Henry, 41.
- Charles Mason, 41.
- Charles S., 96.
- Damaris, 39, 40, 98.
- David Chase, 41.
- Deborah, 39, 40.
- Edward, 41.
- Edward Slade, 41, 42.
- Elizabeth, 40, 42, 56.
- Ellen C., 42.
- Emily F. M., 41.
- Emma L., 380.
- Emma Ropes, 41.
- Esther, 40.
- Eunice, 40, 41, 124.
- Ezekiel, 41.
- Frances K., 41.
- Franklin B., 41.
- George, 41.

Buffum, *continued*,

- Grace, 42.
- Hannah, 40, 41.
- Hannah Maria, 41.
- Henry, 41.
- Isaac, 40, 41.
- Israel, 41.
- Israel C., 42.
- James, 40.
- James Barr, 41.
- Jane, 40.
- John, 41.
- Jonathan, 40, 41, 56.
- Jonathan Chase, 41.
- Joseph, 40.
- Joshua, 6, 7, 39-41, 159, 160, 211,
- 249, 251, 254-257, 262, 263.
- Laura Peirce, 42.
- Lucretia, 40.
- Lucy Ellen, 41.
- Lydia, 39-41, 203, 204.
- Margaret, 39, 40.
- Maria, 41.
- Maria Adelia, 42.
- Martha J., 41.
- Martha Slade, 41.
- Mary, 39-41, 56, 122.
- Mary Chase, 41.
- Mary Eliza, 41.
- Mehitable, 40.
- Mercy, 40, 41.
- Nancy, 41.
- Peace, 40, 41.
- Phebe L., 41.
- Rachel, 40.
- Robert, 39-42, 193, 252, 253, 260.
- Ruth, 41.
- Samuel, 39-41.
- Sarah, 39-41.
- Sarah Lester, 41.
- Sarah Slade, 41.
- Susannah, 40.
- Sybil, 41.
- Tamosin, 39, 40, 54, 254, 264,
- 270.
- William, 41.
- William Penn, 41.
- William S., 41.
- Bulfinch, John, 8, 133, 135, 403.
- Katherine, 133.
- Bulflower, Henry, 134.
- Bulhao, Maria Francisca Corea,
- 379.
- Bullard, Jonathan, 325.
- Lydia, 325.
- Bullock, Abigail, 139, 140.
- Alice, 20, 139.
- Anna, 139.

- Bullock, *continued*,
 Barbara, 139.
 Benjamin, 139, 140.
 Betsey, 139.
 Elizabeth, 139, 140.
 Elizabeth C., 140.
 Eunice, 139.
 Francis, 139.
 George, 140.
 Hannah, 139, 140.
 Hasket Ulmer, 140.
 Henry, 20, 139.
 Horatio, 140.
 Isaac, 139, 140.
 James, 139.
 James Crawford, 140.
 John, 139, 140, 193.
 John Woolmore, 139.
 Joseph, 139.
 Martha, 140.
 Mary, 139, 140.
 Mary Ann, 140.
 Nathaniel, 139.
 Preserved, 139.
 Rosina Barbarina, 139.
 Sally, 140.
 Samuel, 139.
 Samuel Stileman, 140.
 Sarah, 139.
 Susan, 139.
 Thomas, 139.
 William, 140.
 Bunhill Fields, 258.
 Bunker, Georgianna M., 106.
 Bunker Hill, Battle of, 32.
 Buntin, Ruth, 188.
 Samuel, 188.
 Bunyan, John, 258.
 Burcham, Edward, 64.
 Burchen plain, 208.
 Burchet, Thomas, 368.
 Burchmore, Mary Townsend, 105.
 Stephen, 105.
 Burchstead, Charles F., 225.
 Lucia C., 225.
 Burgess, Mr., 150.
 Sarah, 305.
 Burial places, 2, 200, 202, 220, 273,
 337, 419.
 Broad Street, 219, 220.
 Charter Street, 2.
 Lawes Hill, 219, 220.
 Marblehead, 200, 202.
 Quaker, 273.
 Trask, 419, 420.
 Wadsworth, 419.
 Burley, Alfred, 379
 Mary Elizabeth, 379
 Burley's Cove, 61.
 Burlington, N. J., 123.
 Burnap, Annis, 234.
 Hannah, 234.
 Isaac, 234.
 Lydia, 376.
 Robert, 234.
 Burnet, Sarah, 53
 Burnham, Mary Elizabeth, 426.
 Rebecca Dodge, 390.
 Burns, Sarah, 330.
 Burnt hills, 205.
 Burrill, Alicia, 104.
 Elizabeth, 105.
 Hephzibah, 56.
 Joanna, 383.
 Lydia, 101.
 Mansfield, 383
 Nathaniel, 105.
 Burring, 422.
 Burroughs, George, 444.
 John, 158.
 Jonathan, 23.
 Martha, 23.
 Sarah, 97.
 Burt, Abigail, 54, 297.
 Esther, 38.
 Mary, 54
 Thomas, 54.
 Burton, Abial, 44.
 John, 159, 192, 246, 322, 421,
 423.
 Sarah, 423.
 Susannah, 44.
 Burwood, Thomas, 107.
 Burying Point, 336, 352.
 Busgutt, Peter, 60.
 Bush, Edward, 401.
 Elizabeth, 329, 392.
 Bushnell, Elizabeth, 65.
 Francis, 65.
 Hannah, 65.
 John, 65, 102.
 Martha, 65.
 Mary, 65.
 Rebecca, 65.
 Samuel, 65.
 Sarah, 65.
 Bussaker, Peter, 49.
 Butler, James, 136.
 Mary, 136.
 Olive, 328.
 Ruth, 116.
 Butman (Bootman, Boutman),
 Elizabeth, 211, 322.
 Hannah, 211.
 Hester, 211.
 Jeremiah, 211, 311, 418.

- Butman, *continued*,
 Mary, 211.
 Mathew, 211, 322.
 Mehitable, 211.
 Samuel, 211.
 Buttolph, Hannah, 303.
 Mehitable, 104, 303.
 John, 8, 303, 304, 401.
 Jonathan, 303.
 Priscilla, 303.
 Sarah, 303.
 William, 303.
 Button, Mr., 178.
 Robert, 403.
 Buttrick, Mary, 426.
 Butts bridge, 182, 183.
 Butts brook, 7, 62, 183.
 Buxton, Anthony, 6, 10, 158, 159,
 304, 322, 403.
 Elizabeth, 40, 43, 44, 54, 56, 99,
 299, 332.
 Esther, 54, 56.
 Hannah, 324, 325.
 Isaac, 110.
 James, 54, 56.
 John, 299, 401, 439.
 Jonathan, 44, 55, 56.
 Mary, 43.
 Rachel, 112.
 Susanna, 44, 110.
 Thomas, 75, 115.
 Byam, George, 403.
 Byfield, Mass., 381.
 Byles, Henry, 409.
 Rebecca, 409.
 Byram, Mary, 70.
 Nicholas, 70.
 Susanna, 70.

 CABOT, Abigail, 78.
 Edward C., 235.
 George, 78.
 Cahill, Daniel, 34.
 Cain, Hannah, 44.
 Calcott, Edward, 7, 399.
 Calcutta, India, 124, 137, 426.
 Calef, Sarah Shreve, 426.
 California, 124.
 Call, Hannah M., 83.
 Mary Ann, 315.
 Thomas S., 315.
 Calley, Anstice, 388.
 Callum. See *Killam*.
 Calvert, G., 88.
 Cambridge, England, 5, 29.
 Cambridge, Mass., 13, 92, 102, 111,
 118, 135, 148, 150, 185, 288, 378,
 380, 384, 420.
 Cambridge University, England,
 172.
 Cameron, Isabel Emeline, 380.
 Campbell, Eliza, 103.
 Jane Hyland, 225.
 Canada, 14, 349.
 Canady, Daniel, 43.
 Hannah, 43.
 Cannon, 165, 180, 187, 237, 238, 374.
 Cansir, 371.
 Canterbury, England, 62.
 Cantlebury (Canterbury), Bea-
 trice, 62.
 John, 62.
 Rebecca, 62.
 Ruth, 62.
 William, 62, 125, 192, 404.
 Canton, Conn., 330.
 Cape Ann, 107, 174, 175, 201, 346.
 Cape Ann Side, 6, 69, 101, 158, 159,
 161, 192, 204, 213-215, 219, 231,
 232, 276, 279, 282, 299, 301, 312,
 322, 397, 406, 408, 409, 411, 415.
 Cape Breton, 23.
 Cape Cod, 108, 364.
 Cape of Good Hope, 329.
 Cape Horn, 25.
 Cape Nawagon, 346.
 Cape Porpus, Me., 325.
 Cape Sable, 348, 349, 359.
 Capen, John, 92.
 Mary, 92.
 Capon, Elizabeth, 101.
 Carder, Mary, 141.
 Carey, Lucy Maria, 381.
 Carlisle, Thomas, 318.
 Carlisle Bay, 369.
 Carlton (Carleton), Edward, 300.
 Elizabeth, 45, 300.
 Fanny, 320.
 Hannah, 313.
 John, 313.
 Mary, 102, 137.
 Samuel, 320.
 William, 45.
 Carlyle, Mary, 139.
 Carr, Ann, 109.
 Mary, 441.
 Sarah Foster, 378.
 Carriage, Mary, 45.
 Carrick, Thomas, 360.
 Carrill (Carryl), Benjamin, 324.
 Elizabeth, 280, 295.
 Joseph, 324.
 Margaret, 324.
 Mary, 324.
 Nathaniel, 322, 438.
 Sarah, 387.

- Carrill, *continued*,
 William, 387.
 Carroll, John, 54.
 Provided, 54.
 Carrolton, La., 378.
 Carter, John, 313, 355.
 Carts, 5.
 Cartwright, Bethiah, 101.
 Carver, John, 1.
 Carwick, Henry, 104.
 Mehitable, 104.
 Carwithen, David, 157, 179, 197,
 200.
 Mary, 157.
 Samuel, 197.
 Cary, Nathaniel, 369.
 Casco, Me., 444.
 Case, Hannah, 297.
 Humphrey, 297.
 Margaret, 297.
 Mary, 188.
 Rachel, 297.
 Cash, Elizabeth, 181.
 William, 398.
 Cass, Mary, 54.
 Castine, Me., 378.
 Castle Hill, 13, 36.
 Cat Cove, 61.
 Cat Island, 237.
 Cat swamp, 205.
 Cate, Elizabeth Ann, 382.
 Catechism, 120.
 Catta Island, 237.
 Cattle, 5, 62.
 Cave, Mary, 47.
 Thomas, 47.
 Cavendish, Vt., 377, 378.
 Cavis, Elizabeth, 383.
 John, 383.
 Cedar Stand, 410.
 Chadwine, John, 365.
 Chalcedony (barque), 380.
 Chaloner, Mr., 85.
 Chamberlain, John, 263.
 Mary Elizabeth, 331.
 Sarah, 279.
 Chandler, Elizabeth, 114.
 Ellen Sophia, 104.
 Gardner Leonard, 104.
 Joseph R., 103.
 Mary, 103.
 Chang, Mei, 106.
 Chapel, John, 79.
 Margaret, 79.
 Chapin, Abiel, 328.
 David, 328.
 Chapman, Dorcas, 279.
 Edmond, 107.
 Chapman, *continued*,
 Elizabeth, 43, 235.
 Hannah, 136.
 Isaac N., 330.
 Joan, 107, 136.
 John, 43, 235.
 Lydia, 45.
 Sarah, 55.
 Stephen, 279.
 Ursula Symonds, 330.
 Chappleman, Michael, 210, 366.
 Rebecca, 210.
 Chard, Allen, 367.
 Charing Cross, England, 90.
 Charles (ship), 360.
 Charles, William, 2, 179, 197, 198.
 Charles I, 86.
 Charles II, 29, 265, 268, 274, 283.
 Charlestown, Mass., 15, 38, 56, 65,
 77, 97, 103, 109, 110, 133, 139,
 216, 229, 263, 280, 299, 303, 341,
 360, 368, 385, 386, 409, 412, 420.
 Charlestown, N. H., 110.
 Charter, 364.
 Chase, Mary, 41.
 Phebe L., 41.
 Sybil, 41.
 Chatham, England, 133, 315.
 Chatwell, Priscilla, 391.
 Chebacco Parish, Ipswich, 123.
 Cheever (Chevers), Benjamin, 295.
 Daniel, 79, 425.
 Eliza, 106.
 Ezekiel, 8, 46, 403, 445.
 James, 310.
 John, 417.
 Margaret, 21, 425.
 Martha, 425.
 Mercy, 295.
 Peter, 160, 321, 401, 425.
 Samuel, 349.
 Sarah, 79, 98, 211.
 Thomas, 46.
 Chelmsford, Mass., 62, 152, 181,
 235.
 Chelsea, Mass., 42, 83, 138, 381, 382.
 Chelsea Soldiers' Home, 225.
 Cherlcroft, Richard, 98.
 Cherokee (brig), 225.
 Cherry Hill farm, 180.
 Cherry Valley, N. Y., 116.
 Cherryfield, Me., 377.
 Chesapeake Bay, 371.
 Chester, Dorcas, 229.
 Chesterfield, Va., 93.
 Chicago, Ill., 118, 387, 425.
 Chichester, Alice, 232.
 James, 232.

- Chichester, *continued*,
 Jeremiah, 232.
 Mary, 78, 157, 232.
 William, 157, 197, 200, 232.
 Chickering, Henry, 77, 149, 150.
 Chilson, Walsingham, 179, 197, 201.
 Chimney sweep, 312, 313.
 Chin, Elizabeth, 48.
 George, 48, 197.
 China, 106.
 Chipman, Captain, 329.
 Hannah, 104.
 Joanna, 105.
 John, 397.
 Choate, Amos, 124.
 Mehitable, 124.
 Christ College, England, 148, 174.
 Christian (vessel), 140.
 Christison, Wenlock, 265, 267, 268.
 Christmas, 277, 327.
 Chubb, John, 4.
 Susannah, 4.
 Chuddington Manor, England, 172.
 Church, Sarah, 216.
 Church, 142, 165, 166, 170, 204,
 216, 246, 397.
 Sleeping in, 189.
 Church, First, 13, 38, 84, 85.
 Churchill, Benjamin K., 83.
 Elizabeth, 83.
 Sarah K., 83.
 City Mills, 341, 342.
 City Point, Va., 315.
 Civil War, 379-382.
 Clapp, Dexter, 384.
 Mary Boardman, 384.
 Clare, William, 317.
 Clark (Clarke), Bethiah, 183.
 Deborah, 183.
 Emanuel, 202.
 Esther, 55.
 Esther Orne, 118.
 Hannah, 92.
 Henry, 118.
 John, 272.
 Josiah, 280.
 Katherine, 183, 184.
 Lillian M., 382.
 Martha C., 331.
 Mary, 297.
 Nathaniel, 55.
 Peter, 93, 420.
 Priscilla, 118.
 Sarah, 55, 60, 279.
 Susanna, 183, 184.
 Walter, 60.
 William, 8, 13, 48, 106, 125, 140,
 Clark, *continued*,
 165, 169, 183, 184, 193, 194,
 290.
 Clay brook, 178, 221.
 Claybrook, England, 287.
 Cleaves, Elizabeth, 114.
 Joshua, 114.
 Margaret, 193.
 Mary, 114.
 William, 114, 193.
 Clerks of the market, 189.
 Clerks, Town, 402.
 Clerks of the writs, 122, 402.
 Cleveland, Dorcas H., 306.
 John, 123.
 Mary, 123.
 Clifford, Elizabeth, 308.
 John, 8, 160, 308, 324, 393, 401,
 404.
 Clifton, Benjamin, 45.
 Mary, 45.
 Clinton, N. Y., 55.
 Cloth making, 100.
 Clough, Anne, 45.
 Joseph, 141.
 Kezia, 236.
 Sally, 140.
 Susanna, 141.
 Cloutman, Elizabeth, 140.
 Hannah, 224.
 Joseph, 224.
 Cloyce, Mary, 21.
 Peter, 21, 403, 405, 445.
 Sarah, 405.
 Coach (pinnacle), 108, 361.
 Coady, James, 387.
 Sarah, 387.
 Coakley, —, 169.
 Coat of arms of George Corwin,
 39.
 Coats, John, 306.
 Margaret, 306.
 Cobb, Abigail, 296.
 Phebe, 56.
 William, 56, 296.
 Cobbett, Thomas, 414.
 Coburn, Edward, 135.
 Mary, 181.
 Robert, 181.
 Sarah, 135.
 Cock, Roger, 317.
 Sarah, 317.
 Cockquaine, Mr., 90.
 Coddington, Governor, 29.
 Thomas, 369.
 Coffin, Caroline M., 83.
 Cogswell (Coggeshall), Francis,
 138.

- Cogswell, *continued*,
 John, 65.
 Lois, 138.
 Patience, 65.
 William, 22.
 Cohasset, Mass., 277.
 Coit (Coitt, Coyte, Goyte), Han-
 nah, 135.
 John, 2, 47, 122, 197, 201.
 Joseph, 2.
 Martha, 2.
 Mary, 2.
 Coke, John, 90.
 Coker, England, 322.
 Cckraine, William, 122.
 Colburne (Colburn), Christian,
 391.
 Henry, 30, 391.
 Johanah, 391.
 Mary, 391.
 Sarah, 30, 391.
 Colby, Caroline Agnes, 83.
 William R., 83.
 Cole, Abraham, 8, 134, 352, 353,
 401.
 Alexander, 15, 353, 357, 362, 383.
 Ann, 134.
 Anna, 134, 279.
 Anne Warren Brazer, 426.
 Bethiah, 15, 383.
 Elizabeth, 134.
 George, 368.
 Hannah, 134.
 Isaac, 134.
 John, 134, 352, 357.
 Jonathan, 135.
 Mary, 134, 135.
 Mercy, 135.
 Peter, 359.
 Robert, 19, 188.
 Samuel, 134.
 Sarah, 134.
 Susanna, 134.
 Thomas, 134, 135, 194.
 Thomas Palfray, 426.
 Colever, John, 47.
 Collectors of the port, 351, 352.
 Collier, Mary, 23.
 Collins, —, 70.
 Adoniram, 101.
 Benjamin, 110.
 Elizabeth, 110, 141.
 Eunice, 300.
 Francis, 199, 228, 240.
 James, 224, 280, 348.
 Joseph, 383.
 Lucretia, 40.
 Lucy, 137.
 Collins, *continued*,
 Mary, 92, 101, 224, 280.
 Robert, 137.
 Samuel, 273.
 Sarah,, 138, 383.
 Zachariah, 40.
 Colman, Ann, 428.
 Colonial commissioners, 222.
 Columbia College, 39.
 Columbus (ship), 378.
 Comeston, Elizabeth, 114.
 Comet, 326.
 Commerce, 346-373.
 Commissioners, 400.
 Common lane, 205.
 Commons, 211.
 Commons, Beverly, 204.
 Compulsory attendance at town
 meeting, etc., 218.
 Comstock, Daniel, 56.
 Elizabeth, 56.
 Conant, Christian, 1.
 Exercise, 396, 397, 411, 414, 417.
 John, 397, 417.
 Joshua, 1, 371.
 Lot, 6, 8, 159, 411, 414, 417.
 Roger, 5, 8, 10, 30, 48, 61, 64, 77,
 97, 152, 175, 231, 398, 401, 410,
 414-417.
 Sarah, 411, 414.
 Conclin, Ananias, 53, 57, 58, 62,
 71, 192, 403.
 Benjamin, 53.
 Elizabeth, 57.
 Hannah, 53.
 Hester, 53.
 Jacob, 57.
 Jeremiah, 53, 405.
 John, 56-58, 192.
 Lewis, 53.
 Mary, 53, 405.
 Roscoe, 53.
 Sarah, 57.
 Susan, 53.
 Timothy, 57.
 Concord, Mass., 19, 295, 296, 304,
 325.
 Concord, N. H., 124.
 Congress, Members of, 300, 384.
 Connacher, Anna Maria, 427.
 Connaway, Sarah, 216.
 Connecticut, 14, 17, 34, 121, 128,
 185, 371.
 Connecticut River, 374.
 Conners, David J., 333.
 Constables, 180, 196, 327, 333, 401,
 404, 434.
 Content (ketch), 361.

- Convers, Allyn, 77, 109, 141, 403.
 Elizabeth, 77.
 Hannah, 77.
 Joseph, 77.
 Mary, 77.
 Samuel, 77.
 Sarah, 77.
 Theophilus, 77.
 Zachary, 77.
 Cook (Cooke), Widow, 304.
 Abial, 44.
 Abigail, 43, 44, 305.
 Anna, 45.
 Anne, 45, 330.
 Anstiss, 330.
 Benjamin, 43-46, 328.
 Catherine, 45.
 Charles, 43, 44.
 Daniel, 43, 44.
 Desire, 44.
 Ebenezer, 43-45.
 Edward, 44.
 Elizabeth, 43-45, 328, 386, 404.
 Eunice, 44.
 George, 43-45.
 George Trask, 45.
 Hannah, 43-46.
 Henry, 43, 44, 51, 60, 61, 99, 158, 203, 221, 234.
 Isaac, 7, 8, 43-45, 159, 160, 401.
 James, 43-45, 328.
 John, 43-45, 48, 77, 106, 141, 160, 403.
 John Morong, 45, 46.
 Jonathan, 43-45.
 Joseph, 43-45.
 Judith, 43, 46.
 Love, 45.
 Lucy, 45.
 Lydia, 43-45.
 Margaret, 43-45.
 Martha, 43, 45.
 Mary, 43-45, 210.
 Mary Ann, 46.
 Mary T., 45.
 Mehitable, 45.
 Mercy, 45.
 Nancy, 330.
 Orchard, 45.
 Polly, 137.
 Rachel, 43, 44, 328, 396.
 Rebecca, 224.
 Richard, 45, 101, 133.
 Robert, 43, 45, 46.
 Sally, 45, 46.
 Sally B., 46.
 Samuel, 43-45, 224, 386.
 Sarah, 43-45.
 Cook, *continued*,
 Stephen, 45.
 Susan, 46.
 Susannah, 44, 45.
 Thomas, 44.
 William, 43-46.
 Coombs (Cumbs), Abigail, 144.
 Bathsheba, 233.
 Hannah, 233.
 Humphrey, 233.
 Joane, 403.
 Joshua, 403.
 Michael, 403.
 Ruth, 403.
 Cooper, Benjamin, 71.
 Deliverance, 218.
 Sarah, 54.
 Thomas, 54, 218.
 Copeland, John, 243-246.
 Copley, John Singleton, 317.
 Corey, Deliverance, 193.
 Elizabeth, 193.
 Giles, 165, 193, 304, 438.
 Margaret, 193.
 Martha, 193.
 Mary, 193.
 Cork, Ireland, 225.
 Corn, 5, 12.
 Corney. See *Corning*.
 Cornhill, Samuel, 100.
 Corning (Corney, Cornish), Elizabeth, 11, 411, 414.
 Hannah, 11.
 John, 228.
 Remember, 11.
 Samuel, 8, 10, 11, 13, 145, 154, 189, 213, 226, 227, 231, 401, 403, 410, 411, 414.
 Cornishman, 247.
 Corwin (Corwine, Curwen), —, 272, 344.
 Abbie C., 39.
 Abigail, 37, 38.
 Ada L., 39.
 Anna, 38.
 Bartholomew, 38.
 Betsey Holman, 39.
 Caroline Endicott, 38.
 Caroline Rea, 39.
 Cecelia, 39.
 Charles Frederick, 39.
 Dorothy, 39.
 Elizabeth, 37, 38, 299.
 Ernest Worcester, 39.
 Esther, 38.
 George, 4, 37, 38, 61, 66, 67, 158, 180, 184, 188, 192, 193, 207-209, 212, 221, 228, 229, 232,

- Corwin, *continued*,
 237-239, 241, 286, 304, 311, 323,
 336, 347, 351, 357, 360, 370,
 374, 375, 388, 395, 401, 403,
 404, 421, 430-434.
 George Barr, 39.
 George Endicott, 38.
 George Rea, 38.
 Hannah, 37, 38.
 Helen, 39.
 Helen Haven, 39.
 Helen Marguerite, 39.
 Helen Mary, 39.
 Henry, 39.
 Herbert, 38.
 James Barr, 38.
 James Endicott, 38.
 James Henry, 39.
 John, 4, 8, 10, 14, 37, 38, 67, 92,
 301, 360, 362, 366-368, 370-372,
 401-404, 421-423, 431, 433, 434.
 Jonathan, 37, 38, 67, 401, 433.
 Lucy, 38.
 Lydia, 38.
 Margaret, 14, 38.
 Mary, 38.
 Mary Shepard, 38.
 Mary Smith, 39.
 Mehitable, 38, 102, 184.
 Penelope, 37.
 Priscilla, 38.
 Rebecca Hovey, 38.
 Richard Brown, 39.
 Robert Worcester, 39.
 Samuel, 38, 104, 184.
 Samuel Endicott, 38.
 Samuel Holman, 39.
 Samuel Ropes, 38, 39.
 Sarah, 38.
 Susanna, 38.
 Comins. See *Cummings*.
 Corwithen (Corwithey), Alice, 232.
 David, 8, 232.
 Cossack (schooner), 379.
 Cotta, Robert, 50, 167, 181, 213,
 316.
 Cotten, Elizabeth, 314.
 William, 314.
 Cotton, 348.
 Counter, Edmond, 399, 404.
 Courts, Local, 8, 10, 120, 204, 211,
 213.
 Clerks of, 400.
 Coventry, England, 98.
 Coventry, Conn., 391.
 Cow-House River, 218, 421.
 Cowen, Margaret, 223.
 Mary, 105.
 Cowen, *continued*,
 Philip, 223.
 Cowes, Mary, 324.
 Cowland (Couland), Alice, 260.
 Cows, 185.
 Cox, Edward, 44.
 Elizabeth, 332.
 George, 194.
 Hannah, 44.
 John, 332.
 Margaret, 43.
 Martha, 188.
 Mary, 194.
 Thomas, 364.
 Coy Pond lands, 26, 197, 345.
 Coy ponds, 25, 26.
 Crabtree, John, 323.
 Cradock, Matthew, 210, 359, 365.
 Rebecca, 201.
 Craford (Crafort, Cravat, Cre-
 vet), Edith, 226.
 Hester, 221.
 Judith, 221, 346.
 Mordechai, 6, 158-160, 221, 228,
 229, 239, 240, 289, 346, 367,
 397.
 Susanna, 222.
 Cram, Jonathan, 116.
 Rachel, 116.
 Sarah, 113.
 Cranch, Justice, 317.
 Richard, 317.
 Crane River, 6, 205, 206.
 Cranmer, Ruth, 54.
 William, 54.
 Crawley, Mary, 268.
 Creamer, Mary Manley, 427.
 Creasy, Mary, 324.
 Crediford, Mrs., 103.
 Creek Street ship building, 350.
 Cricket (ketch), 361.
 Crimean War, 106.
 Crimes, 8, 13.
 Croade, Anstice, 388.
 Deborah, 325.
 Elizabeth, 97, 120, 235, 236, 388,
 405.
 Frances, 388.
 Hannah, 235, 388.
 John, 97, 120, 235, 301, 312, 338,
 339, 346, 351, 388, 403.
 Jonathan, 235.
 Judith, 123, 388.
 Mary, 235, 388.
 Richard, 8, 160, 388.
 Ruth, 235.
 Sarah, 388.
 Thomas, 235.

- Croade, *continued*,
 William, 388.
 Crockett, Fannie E., 225.
 Crombie, Benjamin, 103.
 Sophia, 103.
 Cromwell, Ann, 143, 327.
 Anne, 142.
 Dorothy, 142.
 Hannah, 142.
 Jane, 143.
 John, 7, 142, 143, 160, 189, 220,
 333, 356.
 Margaret, 142, 223.
 Mary, 142.
 Oliver, 86, 87, 228, 376.
 Philip, 6, 8, 67, 142, 143, 158-160,
 189, 195, 223, 261, 263, 303,
 323, 356, 360, 372, 373, 401,
 403.
 Thomas, 7, 143, 302, 308, 333,
 374.
 Cromwell's meadow, 394.
 Cromwell's neck, 208.
 Crosby, Deliverance, 193.
 Henry, 193.
 Mary, 115.
 Cross, Amee, 144.
 Mary, 24.
 Peter, 24.
 Crow, Christopher, 417.
 Hannah, 388.
 Joseph, 388.
 Crown Tavern, 429.
 Crowninshield, Anstiss, 314.
 Benjamin, 238.
 John, 425.
 Mary, 238, 310, 384, 425.
 Cruff, Hannah, 20.
 Thomas, 20.
 Cummings (Comins), George, 141.
 Louisa, 125.
 Mehitable, 162.
 Sarah, 141.
 Thomas, 162.
 William, 217.
 William C., 125.
 Curtis (Curtice), Abigail, 146, 375.
 Alice, 156, 375.
 Alice Dodge, 385.
 Anna, 168, 375.
 Caleb, 168.
 Daniel, 375.
 Elizabeth, 146, 375.
 Ephraim, 146.
 Hall, 385.
 Hannah, 168, 295, 375.
 James, 375.
 Joanna, 145.
 Curtis, *continued*,
 John, 145, 168, 375.
 Jonathan, 375.
 Judith, 375.
 Locker, 375.
 Lydia, 375.
 Mary, 145, 146, 168.
 Rebecca, 375.
 Richard, 168, 197, 403.
 Ruth, 375.
 Samuel, 168.
 Sarah, 146, 168, 375.
 William, 7, 8, 156, 159, 160, 240,
 308, 375, 401.
 Zaccheus, 145, 146, 180, 194, 206.
 Curwen. See *Corwin*.
 Curwithin. See *Carwithen*.
 Cushing, James, 102.
 Mehitable, 106.
 Sarah, 102.
 Cut, The, 7.
 Cutler, Abigail, 216, 217.
 Amos, 217.
 Cornelius, 216, 217.
 Daniel, 216.
 Ebenezer, 216, 217.
 Elizabeth, 216, 217.
 Eunice, 216.
 Ezekiel, 217.
 Hannah, 110, 216.
 Jonathan, 216, 217.
 Katherin, 217.
 Martha, 217.
 Mary, 103, 216, 217.
 Samuel, 216, 279, 404.
 Sarah, 216, 277.
 Susannah, 216.
 Zachariah, 217.
 Cutting, Sarah, 420.
 DAGGETT, Mary, 143.
 Susanna, 376.
 William, 143.
 Dakin, Mary R., 331.
 Daland (Deland), Abigail, 24.
 Benjamin, 44.
 Catherine, 76.
 Eunice, 224.
 George, 24.
 Hannah, 44.
 Katherine, 123.
 Thorndike, 224.
 Dale, Betty, 113.
 John Elliott, 387.
 Susannah, 387.
 Dallee, Martha, 92.
 Peter, 92.
 Dana, Helen Haven, 39.

- Dane, Edith Whipple, 331.
 Danforth, Jonathan, 209.
 Daniel and Elizabeth (ship), 361.
 Daniels (Daniel), Elizabeth, 45, 98.
 Eunice Louise, 331.
 John, 45, 98.
 Mary, 78, 383.
 Stephen, 78, 363, 383, 387.
 Susanna, 383.
 Danvers, Mass., 22-24, 32, 34, 36, 41-45, 55, 56, 71, 76, 92, 93, 102, 103, 105, 112-117, 125, 137-140, 143-145, 151, 162-165, 187, 205, 210, 217, 230, 278, 286, 300, 324, 325, 329, 332, 333, 340, 376-379, 381-384, 387, 399, 405, 419, 420, 427, 429, 435.
 Danvers River, 15.
 Darby's fort, 156.
 Darby's fort side, 1, 145.
 Darling, John, 43, 44.
 Keziah, 23.
 Margaret, 43.
 Dartmoor prison, 125, 315.
 Dartmouth, England, 86, 325, 364.
 Davenish, Bethiah, 70.
 Mary, 70.
 Thomas, 70, 126, 403.
 Davenport, Addington, 28.
 Elizabeth, 28.
 Richard, 4, 8, 11, 48, 62, 69, 72, 104, 108, 113, 132, 140, 156, 294.
 Davis, Caroline Endicott, 38.
 Hannah, 280.
 Isaac, 283.
 Jacob P., 138.
 James Henry, 38.
 Lydia, 187.
 Mary, 277.
 Sarah, 134.
 Sarah Bancroft, 138.
 Thomas, 191.
 William, 62.
 Day, Abigail, 144.
 John, 428.
 Stephen, 428.
 Thomas, 428.
 Deacon, Nicholas, 282, 283.
 Deacons' marsh, 13.
 Deakins, Francis, 318.
 William, 318.
 Dean (Deane), Bethiah, 56, 70.
 Christina, 105.
 Elizabeth, 20, 386.
 Ezra, 70.
 Dean, *continued*,
 George, 98, 368.
 Hannah, 43, 98, 179.
 John, 70.
 Jonathan, 56.
 Joseph, 20.
 Mary, 305, 319.
 Sarah, 70, 224, 329.
 Thomas, 329, 386.
 Deare, Philip, 13.
 Dedham, Mass., 149, 150, 245-247, 257, 385.
 Deeds, Records of, 107.
 Registry of, 107, 220.
 Deerfield, Mass., 299.
 Dempsey, Isaac, 428.
 Denison, Daniel, 213, 248, 249, 255, 256, 295, 441.
 Dennis, Widow, 313.
 Denver, Col., 383.
 Deppler, Helen Marguerite, 39.
 Deputies, Meetings of, 193.
 Derby, Anne, 425.
 Elizabeth, 305, 321.
 Experience, 20.
 Hannah, 44, 102.
 Lucretia, 40.
 Martha, 321.
 Mary, 310.
 Richard, 310, 321, 355.
 Roger, 321, 356, 401.
 Samuel, 44.
 Desire (ship), 361.
 Devereux, John, 2, 196-198, 392.
 Mary Ann C., 385.
 Robert, 198.
 Devonshire, England, 47, 136.
 Dexter, Mehitable, 110.
 Richard, 110.
 Diamond, Edward, 43.
 Margaret, 43, 45.
 Dickinson, Elizabeth, 71.
 Mary, 71.
 Peter, 71.
 Philemon, 53, 71, 149, 192, 213, 402.
 Thomas, 71.
 Dighton, Mass., 54, 55, 76.
 Dike, Andrew, 15.
 John, 390.
 Priscilla Miriam, 390.
 Tabitha, 15.
 Diligence (ketch), 361.
 Dill, George, 70, 78, 79.
 Dingley, Susan, 390.
 Dix, Widow, 69.
 Sarah Addie, 331.
 Dixie (Dixey), Ensign, 158, 227.

Dixie, *continued*,

- Abigail, 410.
 - Anna, 135, 410, 414.
 - Elizabeth, 410.
 - John, 410.
 - Sarah, 410.
 - Thomas, 200.
 - William, 6, 8, 10, 61, 79, 154, 159, 161, 169, 172, 173, 175, 194, 199, 214, 231, 232, 410, 414, 417, 418.
- Doare, Eleanor, 110.
- Dodge, Aaron, 191.
- Andrew, 42.
 - Deborah, 42.
 - Deliverance, 42.
 - Ebenezer, 42.
 - Edith, 42.
 - Edward, 42.
 - Elizabeth, 411, 414.
 - Hannah, 161.
 - Joanna, 376.
 - John, 6, 8, 10, 42, 191, 360, 403, 411, 414, 417.
 - Joseph, 42.
 - Josiah, 42.
 - Mary, 42, 162, 411, 414.
 - Mary H., 164.
 - Michael, 40.
 - Rebecca Ann, 385.
 - Richard, 6, 39, 42, 47, 48, 60, 121, 154, 204, 212, 222, 410, 414, 417.
 - Ruth, 42.
 - Samuel, 42.
 - Sarah, 42.
 - William, 6, 8, 10, 39, 48, 60, 97, 121, 162, 178, 182, 189, 205, 206, 230, 279, 283, 302, 410, 411, 414, 417.
- Dog Pond, 194, 301.
- Doliber, Joseph, 97, 197, 219.
- Mary, 219.
 - Samuel, 196, 197, 202.
- Dolliver, William, 318.
- Dolphin (ship), 362.
- Dolphin (ketch), 362.
- Domesticity, 5, 183, 289.
- Donations, 167.
- Dorchester, Mass., 2, 36, 133, 294, 324.
- Dorman, Eleanor, 162.
- Elizabeth, 277.
 - Jesse, 162.
 - Mary, 163.
 - Phebe, 162.
 - Ruth, 162.
 - Thomas, 277.

- Dorr, Edith, E., 382.
- Dorsetshire, England, 161.
- Douglass, Elizabeth, 44.
- Douty, Elizabeth, 55, 143.
- Patience, 385.
- Dove (ketch), 362.
- Dove, Bethiah, 213.
- Daniel, 213.
- Deborah, 213, 216.
- Dorcas, 213.
- Elizabeth, 213.
- Hannah, 213.
- John, 387.
- Mathew, 213, 236.
- Mercy, 387.
- Ruth, 213.
- Sara, 213.
- Dover, N. H., 84, 266.
- Dow, Hannah, 31.
- Henry, 31.
- Ida, 382.
- Josiah, 329.
- Rebecca Maria, 329.
- Dowdridge, William, 187.
- Downes, Mary G., 381.
- Downing, Ann, 28.
- Charles, 25.
- Dorcas, 29.
- Ellen, 135.
- Emanuel, 4, 5, 8, 16, 18, 19, 22, 25-29, 61, 62, 66, 68, 69, 73, 78, 81, 87, 98, 107, 108, 122, 131, 140, 156, 162, 165, 194, 197, 198, 212, 218, 219, 230, 276, 282, 333, 401.
- Frances, 29.
- George, 25, 29.
- Hannah, 45.
- James, 29.
- John, 29.
- Lucy, 18, 21, 28, 29.
- Mary, 29.
- Nancy B., 306.
- Susan, 29.
- Theophilus, 135, 157.
- Downing College, 29.
- Downing Street, London, England, 29.
- Downton, England, 146.
- Downton, Elizabeth, 332.
- Joanna, 332.
- John, 332.
- Mary, 276, 332.
- Rebecca, 332.
- William, 10, 332, 333, 393, 399, 401, 403, 432, 437.
- Dowse, Margery, 110.
- Dowst, John, 124.

- Dowst, *continued*,
 Martha, 124.
 Mary, 124.
 Doyle, Lucy, 378.
 Drake, Elizabeth, 386.
 Draper, Nicholas, 132.
 Draper's point, 189, 190, 323.
 Drayton, England, 242.
 Dresser, Elizabeth, 55.
 Driver, Margaret, 329.
 Martha Silsbee, 315.
 Stephen, 34.
 William, 315.
 Drought, 69, 167.
 Drummers, 169, 170.
 Drunkenness, Degrees of, 8.
 Dryade (vessel), 138.
 Dublin, Ireland, 14, 98, 365, 366.
 Duck factory, 220.
 Dudley, Mass., 54, 55.
 Dudley, Lucy, 28.
 Mercy, 141.
 Paul, 28.
 Thomas, 128.
 Due (Dew), Elizabeth, 216.
 Dummer, Nathaniel, 365, 372.
 Richard, 167.
 Dun, William, 367.
 Dunchell, Silence, 115.
 Dungeons, The, 199, 343.
 Dunnel, Jonathan, 187.
 Mehitable, 187.
 Dunstable, Mass., 110.
 Dunster, Mr., 180.
 Dunton, John, 347.
 Durin, Jane, 133.
 Dutch, The, 331, 346, 347, 370.
 Dutch, Esther, 133.
 Samuel, 1.
 Susanna, 1.
 Thomas, 205.
 Dutcher, Edwin, 428.
 Duties, 351.
 Duxbury, Mass., 298, 387.
 Dwoifiell, Lydia, 76.
 Dyer, Mary, 259, 260.
 Rachel, 43.
 Thomas, 352.
 Dynn, Elizabeth, 321.
 William, 321.
 Dyson, Mary, 425.

 EABORNE. See *Aborn*.
 Eager. See *Ager*.
 Eagle (ship), 360.
 Earthquake of 1638, 12.
 East Hampton, L. I., 53.

 East India Marine Society, 124, 385.
 East Weare, N. H., 42.
 Eastern Railroad, 125, 342.
 Eastman, Mary, 116.
 Easton, Md., 278.
 Easton, Grace, 70.
 John, 31.
 Mehitable, 31.
 Easty, Jeffry, 13, 97, 181, 311.
 Eaton, Diadem, 136.
 Grace, 383.
 Hannah, 32.
 Ira, 103.
 Israel, 136, 376.
 Jemima, 376.
 Jonas, 383.
 Mary, 42, 134, 376.
 Sarah, 42.
 Sarah P., 103.
 Ebsen, Anna Maud, 331.
 Charles E., 331.
 Eddy, Lizzie, 83.
 Eden, Mary, 387.
 Mehitable, 124.
 Thomas, 387.
 Edinburgh, Scotland, 83.
 Edmands, Adelaide Martha, 118.
 Edson, Bethiah, 70.
 Elizabeth, 70.
 Joseph, 70.
 Josiah, 70.
 Mary, 70.
 Samuel, 70, 127, 145.
 Sarah, 70.
 Susanna, 70.
 Edwards, Abraham, 140.
 Anna, 300.
 Elizabeth, 303.
 Elnor, 140.
 John, 140, 303, 397.
 Joseph, 140.
 Joshua, 140.
 Mary, 140, 420.
 Mathew, 77.
 Rice, 140, 227.
 Thomas, 8, 10, 30, 158, 166, 200, 403.
 Egypt, Beverly, 205.
 Election week, 37.
 Elizabeth and Margaret (ship), 362.
 Elkins, Abigail, 102, 123.
 Henry, 123.
 John, 117.
 Sarah, 117, 233.
 Thomas, 233.
 Ellenwood, Patience, 319.

- Ellenwood, *continued*,
 Ralph, 411, 414, 417.
 Elliott (Eliot), Andrew, 268, 417.
 Benjamin, 89.
 Isaac B., 244.
 John, 86.
 Lewis W., 244.
 Lucy, 277.
 Mary, 124.
 Mercy, 268.
 Sarah, 283.
 Thomas, 277.
 William, 282.
 Ellis, Abbie M., 331.
 Francis, 184.
 Elliston, John, 38.
 Lucy, 38.
 Elson, Hannah, 123.
 Elvins, Richard, 386.
 Sarah, 386.
 Elwell, Alice, 133.
 Caroline E., 387.
 Christian, 133.
 Esther, 133.
 Isaac, 133.
 Jacob, 133.
 Jane, 133.
 Joan, 133.
 John, 133.
 Joseph, 133.
 Josiah, 133.
 Mary, 133.
 Mehitable, 133.
 Penelope, 133.
 Richard, 133.
 Robert, 133, 402.
 Samuel, 133.
 Sarah, 133.
 Susannah, 133.
 Thomas, 133.
 Emerson, Martha, 20.
 Emerton (Emmert), Elizabeth,
 425.
 James, 306.
 James Henry, 274.
 Jeremiah, 425.
 Martha, 314, 383.
 Martha Moseley, 306.
 Mary, 103.
 William, 314, 383.
 Emery, Mrs., 432.
 Edward, 226.
 Eleanor, 441.
 George, 3, 12, 37, 108, 140, 159,
 161, 195, 214, 217, 342.
 Sarah, 226.
 Emmanuel College, 5.
 Endeavor (bark), 362.
 Endeavor (ketch), 362.
 Endecott (Endicott), Elizabeth, 14,
 17, 216, 228.
 Eunice, 116.
 Hannah, 23, 144, 163.
 John, 4, 7, 25, 30, 36, 47-49, 61,
 62, 64, 66, 68, 69, 77, 84, 103,
 109, 114, 122, 123, 141, 150,
 155, 166, 169, 171, 178, 180,
 189, 191, 204, 215, 220, 222,
 223, 227, 237, 247, 250, 256,
 262, 263, 266-269, 285, 306,
 337, 359, 400, 403, 432.
 Lydia, 115.
 Margaret, 325.
 Martha, 114.
 Mary, 113.
 Rebecca Hovey, 38.
 Samuel, 113, 325.
 Zerubbabel, 8, 14, 17, 292, 323,
 403, 433, 434, 439.
 Endecott's plain, 7.
 Enfield, Mass., 391, 396, 397.
 England, 1, 20, 27-29, 85, 98, 101,
 107, 121, 148, 167, 170, 181,
 186, 198, 212, 215, 244, 246,
 257, 258, 261-264, 268, 269,
 271, 326, 351, 359, 362, 364,
 426.
 English, Benjamin, 327.
 Clement, 133.
 Elizabeth, 328.
 Margaret, 133.
 Mary, 355, 432.
 Mercy, 387.
 Philip, 8, 355, 359, 368, 401, 405.
 Sarah, 327.
 Enon, Mass., 11, 151, 152.
 Epes (Epps), Abigail, 92, 93.
 Benjamin, 93.
 Daniel, 8, 17, 92-95, 433, 444.
 Elizabeth, 24, 92.
 Francis, 92.
 Hannah, 92, 94.
 John, 92.
 Joseph, 92, 93.
 Judith, 93.
 Love Rawlins, 93.
 Margaret, 92.
 Martha, 92.
 Mary, 23, 92, 93.
 Ruth, 92.
 Samuel, 92-94.
 Sarah, 93, 112.
 William, 92, 93.
 William Isham, 93.
 Erith, England, 101.
 Essex County, Mass., 144.

- Essex Institute, 273, 275, 282, 303.
 Estee. See *Easty*.
 Eveleth, Edward, 92.
 Elizabeth, 92.
 Evans, Elizabeth, 386.
 William, 208.
 Exeter, England, 321.
 Exeter, N. H., 227, 388, 405, 425.
- FABENS, Margaret, 320.
 Mary, 379.
 Fairfield, Conn., 82, 185.
 Fairfield, Benjamin, 77.
 Elizabeth, 77.
 John, 77, 152, 402.
 Rebecca, 224.
 Sarah, 77.
 Walter, 77.
 William, 224.
 Fairmaids Hill, 42.
 Fairs, 35.
 Falmouth, Me., 327.
 Falmouth, Mass., 56, 162, 358.
 Farless, Adeline, 105.
 Anna Louisa, 390.
 Benjamin, 105.
 James Augustus, 390.
 Farndale, Constance, 426.
 Farmer, Mary, 102.
 Farrar, Elizabeth, 40.
 Farrington, Daniel, 104, 111.
 Elizabeth, 111.
 John, 300.
 Mary, 104, 210.
 Rachel, 104.
 Rebecca, 375.
 Sarah, 300, 332.
 William, 104.
 Fast Days, 52, 66, 69, 80, 121,
 125, 126, 167, 215, 218, 226,
 233, 278, 303, 312, 323, 326,
 349, 390, 397, 422.
 Faulkner, Dorothy, 143.
 Favor, Hannah, 24.
 Faxon, Anna, 162.
 Fayal, 364.
 Fearmayes. See *Vermais*.
 February, Edmund, 432.
 Federation of the colonies, 127.
 Felmingham, Francis, 3, 101, 147.
 Felt, David, 224.
 Elizabeth Mylord, 138.
 Ephraim, 387.
 Hannah, 383.
 Jemima, 319.
 John, 138.
 Jonathan, 141, 350, 358, 383.
 Lucy, 387.
- Felt, *continued*,
 Rebecca, 137.
 Sarah, 141.
 Susanna, 224.
 Felton, Mrs., 3, 97, 192, 234.
 Abigail, 44.
 Anne, 32.
 Benjamin, 8, 10, 64, 114, 247,
 392, 393, 399, 434.
 Daniel, 44.
 David, 300.
 Dorcas, 376.
 Exercise, 233.
 Hannah, 24, 376.
 John, 401.
 Jonathan, 210.
 Lydia, 325.
 Margaret, 141, 192.
 Mary, 55.
 Nathaniel, 6-8, 10, 158, 159, 192,
 234, 302, 322, 401.
 Rebecca, 210, 300.
 Remember, 218.
 Ruth, 300.
 Sarah, 300.
 Sarah Augusta, 378.
 Stephen, 376.
 Tamisin, 376.
 Timothy, 24.
 Zachariah, 376.
 Fences, Surveyors of, 158.
 Fenno, Catherine J., 381.
 Thomas J., 381.
 Fenollosa, Manuel, 384.
 Mary, 384.
 Ferguson, Archibald, 139.
 Mary, 139.
 Ferries, 16, 94, 189-191, 196, 215,
 276.
 Beverly, 16, 94, 189-191, 215,
 276, 323.
 Marblehead, 94, 196.
 Fessenden, Emily C., 306.
 Feveryear, Edward, 8, 15.
 Tabitha, 15.
 Field, Alexander, 127, 132, 229.
 Joanna, 82.
 Mary, 320.
 Finch, Goody, 281.
 Fire department, 157, 158, 312.
 Fireback, 281.
 Fires, 19, 42, 157, 164, 165, 168,
 171, 182, 187, 221, 229, 294.
 Fish brook, 234.
 Fisher, Maria Ruth, 315.
 Thorpe, 315.
 Fisheries, 14, 79, 179, 201, 240, 346.
 Fishermen, 179, 201, 240, 346.

- Fishkill, N. Y., 112.
 Fisk (Fiske), Bridget, 205.
 Eliza W., 235.
 Elizabeth, 118, 162.
 Emma C., 315.
 John, 4, 11, 65, 74, 77, 82, 91,
 152, 153, 329, 430, 431.
 Lydia, 329.
 Mary, 187.
 Phineas, 121, 151, 153, 403.
 Samuel, 46.
 Sarah, 118.
 Thomas, 154.
 William, 31, 71, 153, 187, 403.
 Fitch, Sarah, 320.
 Fitchburg, Mass., 116.
 Flag, 348.
 Fletcher, Joanna, 148.
 Flinder, Jane, 48.
 Richard, 48, 401.
 Flint, Abiah, 20.
 Abigail, 20, 21, 135, 276-278, 300.
 Alice, 20, 139.
 Ann, 276, 278.
 Anna, 276-279.
 Anne, 53.
 Benjamin, 20, 277.
 Bridget, 278.
 Christian, 277.
 David, 20.
 Deborah, 20, 277.
 Ebenezer, 276.
 Ede, 278.
 Edward, 6-8, 10, 20, 133, 159,
 160, 238, 277, 401.
 Elisha, 113, 277, 278.
 Elizabeth, 20, 109, 133, 276-278.
 Eunice, 277.
 Experience, 20.
 George, 109, 276.
 Gertrude, 276.
 Hannah, 20, 21, 101, 276-278, 300.
 Huldah, 20, 114, 278.
 Jacob, 277.
 James, 277.
 Jane, 21, 383.
 John, 7, 20, 21, 114, 276, 277,
 383.
 Jonathan, 20, 21, 23, 276-278.
 Joseph, 20, 21, 135, 179, 276-278.
 Joshua, 277.
 Kendall, 277, 278.
 Lucy, 277.
 Lydia, 20, 21, 23, 111, 112, 136,
 276-278.
 Margaret, 20, 21.
 Martha, 20.
 Flint, *continued*,
 Mary, 20, 21, 79, 110, 276-278,
 332.
 Mehitable, 278.
 Mercy, 20, 79, 277.
 Miriam, 113, 278.
 Moses, 277, 278.
 Nathaniel, 216, 277.
 Patience, 179, 277.
 Phebe, 278.
 Priscilla, 21, 162, 277.
 Rachel, 278.
 Rebecca, 20, 278.
 Ruth, 20, 111, 112, 117, 277, 278.
 Sally, 21, 278.
 Samuel, 111, 276-278.
 Sarah, 20, 97, 216, 276-278.
 Stephen, 277, 278, 300.
 Susannah, 21, 276.
 Thomas, 6-8, 19-21, 25, 66, 110,
 111, 160, 162, 232, 240, 276-
 278, 291, 332, 401, 433, 438.
 Timothy, 20.
 William, 6, 7, 10, 19-21, 66, 67,
 132, 136, 158, 159, 231-233,
 276-279, 315, 322, 344, 345,
 392, 395, 399-401, 404, 405,
 421, 433, 441.
 Flower (ketch), 363.
 Fogg, Mary, 31.
 Ralph, 65, 74, 100, 108, 120, 155,
 168, 180, 182, 204, 400.
 Samuel, 31.
 Follett, Abraham, 385.
 Benjamin, 385.
 Hannah, 54, 385, 405.
 Isaac, 385, 405.
 John, 385.
 Joseph, 385.
 Martha, 385.
 Mary, 385.
 Patience, 385.
 Persis, 385.
 Rebecca, 385.
 Robert, 385.
 Ruth, 385.
 Sarah, 385.
 Susanna, 385.
 Fones, Martha, 14.
 Foot (Foote), Isaac, 160, 403.
 Martha, 101.
 Mary, 238.
 Pasco, 101, 173, 360, 428.
 Forbes, Lord, 85.
 Ford, Peter, 100.
 Forest River, 26, 70, 178, 191, 343,
 344.
 Forest River bridge, 191, 343-345.

- Forest River Side, 11.
 Fort, Indian, 199.
 Fort Pickering, 36, 350, 388.
 Fort Saybrook, Conn., 287.
 Fortifications, 156, 350, 374.
 Forts, 156, 237, 350.
 Fortune, Hannah, 404.
 Thomas, 404.
 Foster, Abigail, 103, 105, 325.
 Amos, 325.
 Ann, 252.
 Anna, 295, 297, 324, 325.
 Anne, 324.
 Bartholomew, 324.
 Benjamin, 324, 325.
 Christopher, 273.
 David, 324, 325.
 Eben, 324.
 Ebenezer, 295, 297, 324, 325.
 Elizabeth, 324, 325.
 Eunice, 325.
 Hannah, 117, 324, 325, 404.
 James, 324, 325.
 John, 123, 324, 403.
 Jonathan, 23, 324, 325.
 Joseph, 45, 252, 324, 325.
 Joshua, 325.
 Laura Alicia, 104.
 Lydia, 324, 325.
 Margaret, 324, 325.
 Marjary, 325.
 Martha, 324.
 Mary, 24, 123, 283, 324, 325.
 Mehitabel, 325.
 Mercy, 324.
 Nathan, 324.
 Patience, 324.
 Patty, 325.
 Priscilla, 23, 324.
 Rachel, 325.
 Richard, 324, 325.
 Robert, 24, 114.
 Ruth, 324.
 Samuel, 324, 325.
 Sarah, 45, 114, 324, 325.
 Skelton, 325.
 Stephen, 325.
 Susanna, 55.
 Timothy, 324, 325.
 William, 325.
 William H., 104.
 Fountain, Mehitable, 178.
 Peter, 178.
 Sarah, 141.
 "Four Hundred Acres", Manchester, 172.
 Four Sisters (ship), 363.
 Fowle (Fowles), Ebenezer, 299.
 Fowle, *continued*,
 Hannah, 163, 299.
 Joanna, 383.
 Joseph, 163, 299.
 Mary, 32.
 Sarah, 299.
 Zachariah, 428.
 Fowler, Charles B., 381.
 Etta M., 382.
 Lucy Maria, 381.
 Sarah, 56.
 Susanna, 224.
 Fox, George, 242.
 Fraile, Ann, 376.
 Elizabeth, 404.
 Eunice, 70.
 Samuel, 376.
 Framingham, Mass., 21, 112, 143,
 284, 405.
 Frampton, England, 388.
 France, 170, 360, 365.
 Francestown, N. H., 93.
 Francis (ship), 57.
 Frances and Elizabeth (ketch),
 363.
 Frances and Mary (ketch), 363.
 Franeker, University of, Holland,
 148.
 Franklyn, Good, 170.
 Fraternity (ketch), 363.
 Free trade, 171.
 Freeman, 327, 402.
 French, The, 187, 216, 322, 348,
 349, 371.
 French and Indian War, 112, 325.
 French frigates, 171, 349, 361, 362,
 366, 367.
 French protestants, 14, 348.
 French War, 117.
 Frettee, Mary, 178.
 Friend, Anna, 168.
 John, 8, 30, 61, 98, 155, 173, 189,
 190, 198, 217.
 Richard, 168.
 Samuel, 191, 200.
 Friends. See *Quakers*.
 Friendship (ship), 213, 363.
 Friendship (ketch), 363, 364.
 Frohock, Helen Mary, 39.
 Frost, Abigail, 92, 376.
 Elizabeth, 392.
 Hannah, 75.
 Lydia, 45.
 Mary, 92, 93.
 William, 392.
 Frost-fish brook, 11, 405.
 Frost-fish River, 6, 47, 279, 404,
 405.

- Fryar, Thomas, 61.
 Frye, Anna, 41.
 Martha Ann, 331.
 Tamson, 56.
 William, 41, 56, 340, 341.
 William A., 331.
 Fulgin, Niklis, 369.
 Fuller, Sergeant, 7, 395.
 Abigail, 110, 300.
 Anna, 110.
 Benjamin, 75.
 Elizabeth, 110.
 Eunice, 188.
 Jacob, 300.
 John, 8, 109.
 Jonathan, 75.
 Joseph, 110, 188.
 Joseph M., 41.
 Margaret, 75, 192.
 Mary Chase, 41.
 Phebe, 32.
 Rachel, 117.
 Rebecca, 109.
 Robert, 10, 74, 75, 156, 160, 174,
 192, 219, 403.
 Ruth, 111.
 Sarah, 75.
 Susanna, 110.
 Thomas, 10, 439-441.
 Fullington, Abiah, 124.
 John, 124.
 Funerals, 292.
 Furbush, John, 177.
 Furgeson, Abigail, 141.
 Furneux, Abigail, 328.
 William, 328.
 Furnishings, 183, 289.
 Furs, 170, 186.

 GAFFORD, Mr., 13.
 Gage, Addison, 151.
 John, 152.
 Rachel, 377.
 Gahtman, Francis, 30.
 Gainford, England, 174.
 Gale, Abigail, 23.
 Ambrose, 201.
 Bartholomew, 240.
 Mary, 305.
 Galena, Ill., 387.
 Gallison, John, 201.
 Joseph, 201.
 Gallows Hill, 273.
 Gally, John, 173, 407, 417.
 Gambier, O., 391.
 Game preserve, 25-27.
 Gamlangay, England, 29.
 Ganson, —, 113.

 Ganson, *continued*,
 Abigail, 277.
 Benjamin, 360.
 John, 277.
 Gardner, Abel, 162, 339.
 Abigail, 93.
 Abigail Phippen, 306.
 Ann, 28.
 Anna, 112.
 Asa, 423.
 Daniel, 112, 339.
 Deborah, 112.
 Elizabeth, 104, 339.
 George, 8, 10, 192, 217, 234, 252,
 253, 309, 312, 323, 333, 338,
 401, 403, 423.
 Hannah, 300, 303.
 John, 9, 66, 112, 139, 231, 302,
 305, 337-341.
 Jonathan, 112, 339-341.
 Joseph, 9, 28, 124, 192, 207, 208,
 302, 353, 401, 403, 409, 432.
 Lucy, 425.
 Mary, 53, 136, 161.
 Mary A., 423.
 Miriam, 203.
 Priscilla, 378.
 Richard, 104, 139, 156, 174, 264,
 268, 306, 374.
 Ruth, 117.
 Samuel, 4, 7, 9, 66-68, 157, 159,
 160, 192, 233, 239, 333, 337-
 339, 353, 370, 401, 403, 421-
 423, 432, 433.
 Sarah, 112, 124, 136, 162, 305.
 Susannah, 276.
 Sylvester, 93.
 Thomas, 5, 9, 10, 63, 67, 68, 141,
 142, 155, 158, 160, 161, 166,
 192-194, 217, 223, 264, 268,
 283, 313, 316, 322, 356, 366,
 370, 401, 402, 422.
 William F., 341.
 Gardner's brook, 7.
 Garford, Jarvis, 3, 5, 9, 10, 98,
 126, 131, 189, 208, 217.
 Garritt, James, 393.
 Garvin, Elizabeth, 233.
 John, 233.
 Gaskill (Gaskin), Edward, 145.
 Mary, 76.
 Nathan, 76.
 Patience, 76.
 Preserved, 236.
 Provided, 53, 433.
 Samuel, 6, 7, 53, 159, 160, 249,
 250, 264, 273.
 Gass, Abigail, 139.

- Gass, *continued*,
 Thomas, 139.
- Gatchell (Getchell), Bethiah, 2.
 Dorcas, 2.
 Ethel Dora, 382.
 John, 2, 47, 177, 197, 199, 202.
 Joseph, 2.
 Josiah, 393.
 Priscilla, 2.
 Samuel, 2, 47, 122.
 Susanna, 2.
- Gauden, Henry, 359.
- Gault (Goult), Benjamin, 139.
 Betsey, 139.
 Deborah, 30.
 Mary, 30.
 Mehitable, 30.
 Rebecca, 30.
 Sarah, 30.
 William, 9, 30, 134.
- Gauss, Stephen, 225.
- Gavett, Elizabeth, 330.
 Joseph, 314.
- Geare, Deborah, 75.
 Ephraim, 75.
 John, 75.
 Mary, 75.
 Samuel, 75.
 Sarah, 77.
 Tryphena, 75.
 William, 75, 77, 402.
- Gedney, Bartholomew, 5, 8, 10, 67,
 68, 157, 189, 337, 338, 350,
 361, 366, 368, 392, 400-403,
 421, 434.
 Eleazer, 9, 10, 160, 189, 358, 363,
 367, 401, 403, 432, 434.
 John, 3, 9, 10, 14, 31, 100, 142,
 158, 183, 184, 193, 195, 211,
 221, 231, 248, 270, 301, 302,
 322, 323, 352, 353, 365, 366,
 374, 398, 399, 401, 403, 422,
 431, 432.
 Katherine, 183, 184.
 Lydia, 38.
 Martha, 98.
 Mary, 298, 328.
 Nathaniel, 298, 328.
 Susanna, 38, 183, 432.
- Gell, Richard, 101.
- Gen. Brooks (brig), 379.
- General Court, 161.
 Expelled Edmond Batter, 398.
- Geneva, N. Y., 391.
- Geneva, Switzerland, 378.
- Gennings, Lydia, 277.
- George (Indian), 122, 241.
- George Bonaventure (ship), 364.
- Georgetown, Md., 318.
- Georgia University, 106.
- Georgianna, Me., 266.
- Gerrish, Abigail, 20.
 Benjamin, 9, 20, 82, 97, 160, 352,
 400, 403, 432.
 Elizabeth, 299, 339, 340.
 Hannah, 97.
 Joseph, 349.
 Sarah, 105.
 William, 120.
- Gibbon, Edward, 128.
- Gibbs, Elizabeth, 38.
 Gregory, 221.
 Henry, 79.
 John, 366.
 Mehitable, 79.
 Robert, 38.
- Giddings, Mary, 389.
- Gifford, Harriet Ellen, 331.
 Martha Slade, 41.
 Thomas J., 41.
- Gift (ketch), 364.
- Giggles. See *Jeggles*.
- Gilbert, Hannah, 423.
 Humphrey, 423.
- Giles (Gyles), Daniel, 367.
 Edmond, 72, 194.
 Edward, 61, 142.
 Eleazer, 6, 7, 9, 16, 160, 161, 401,
 434.
 Elizabeth, 425.
 Hannah, 162.
- Gill, Hannah, 391.
 John, 329.
 Priscilla, 329.
 William, 391.
- Gillett, Mathew, 119, 197.
- Gillingham, Benjamin, 277.
 Elizabeth, 277, 280.
 Hannah, 235.
 James, 280, 357.
 Rebecca, 280, 386.
- Gilloway, John, 280.
 Sarah, 280.
- Gillum, Zachariah, 372.
- Gilman, Elizabeth, 137, 388, 405,
 425.
 Joseph, 425.
 Josiah, 425.
 Moses, 388, 405.
 Rebecca, 425.
 Sarah, 227.
 Somerby, 227.
- Gilson, Mary, 236.
- Gingell, John, 294, 394, 439.
- Girdler, Hannah, 55.
- Glanfield, Lydia, 101.

- Glanfield, *continued*,
 Rebecca, 32.
 Robert, 32, 101.
 Glass works, 53-59, 158-161, 419.
 Glastonbury, Conn., 65.
 Globe Tavern, 28.
 Gloucester, Mass., 20, 23, 61, 75,
 77, 92, 102, 104, 133, 138, 145,
 146, 151, 185, 187, 197, 315,
 323, 351, 352, 358, 360, 386,
 394, 404.
 Gloucestershire, England, 82.
 Glover, Charles, 75.
 Elizabeth, 75, 82.
 Esther, 75.
 John, 118, 319.
 Jonathan, 280.
 Joseph, 43, 82.
 Malvina Tabitha, 104.
 Mary, 43, 75, 118.
 Priscilla, 280.
 Rebecca, 201.
 Richard, 201.
 Sarah, 47, 75.
 Goit. See *Coit*.
 Goldsmith, Goodman, 30.
 John H., 96.
 Maria, 71.
 Olive A., 380.
 Richard, 154.
 Thomas, 155, 158, 208.
 Goldthwaite, Abigail, 23.
 Amelia P., 315.
 Elizabeth, 377.
 Esther, 76.
 Eunice, 216, 277.
 Ezekiel, 76, 216.
 Mary, 23.
 Samuel, 23, 99.
 Sarah, 112.
 Thomas, 6, 10, 158, 189, 221, 277,
 304, 322, 401, 421.
 Golt, Rebecca, 280.
 Sarah, 391.
 Goodale (Goodell), Abigail, 296.
 Abraham, 300.
 Barbara, 139.
 David, 112.
 Emme, 32.
 Eunice, 76.
 Experience, 103.
 Hannah, 377, 404.
 Isaac, 318, 319, 438.
 Jacob, 377.
 James, 139.
 Lydia, 112.
 Mary, 107, 297.
 Mehitable, 377.
 Goodale, *continued*,
 Phebe, 377.
 Rachel, 113.
 Robert, 160, 193, 212, 213, 312,
 438.
 Ruth, 300.
 Sarah, 377.
 Zachariah, 7, 438.
 Goodhue, Augusta, 118.
 Benjamin, 117.
 Charles B., 118.
 Eliza, 118.
 Hannah, 24, 106.
 James B., 118.
 Ruth, 117.
 Goodrich, Abigail, 116.
 Goodridge, Hannah, 226.
 Lydia, 163.
 Goodspeed, Margaret, 109.
 Goodwin (Gooden), Margaret, 20.
 Seaborne, 327.
 William, 189.
 Goog, Mr., 178.
 Goose, Mr., 16, 213.
 John, 3.
 Mary, 3, 321, 324.
 William, 321.
 Gorey. See *Corey*.
 Goss, Elizabeth, 225.
 Francis, 225.
 Gott, Charles, 5, 13, 60, 61, 87,
 140, 154, 178, 218.
 Lydia, 300.
 Martha, 24, 164.
 Mary, 116.
 Gould, Abigail, 210.
 Daniel, 259-261.
 John, 23, 60.
 Mary, 120.
 Moses, 428.
 Oliver H., 390.
 Priscilla, 109.
 Rachel, 210.
 Ruth, 56.
 Sarah, 23, 60, 117.
 Sarah Elizabeth, 390.
 Thomas, 401, 423.
 Zacheus, 198.
 Goult. See *Gault*.
 Governor's farm, 6, 12.
 Governors, 400.
 Deputy, 400.
 Govis, Obadiah, 165, 166.
 Gowan, Hannah, 46.
 Grafton, Elizabeth, 135.
 John, 7, 9, 347, 368, 403, 432.
 Joseph, 7, 9, 13, 16, 135, 200,
 213, 228, 347, 350, 358, 362,

- Grafton, *continued*,
 401, 403, 421, 428, 432.
 Joshua, 192.
 Nathaniel, 358, 362, 432.
 Sarah, 20.
 William, 20.
 Graham, John, 349.
 Grand Turk (ship), 384.
 Granger, Launcelot, 47.
 Joanna, 47.
 Grant, Mehitable, 45.
 Grave digger, 64.
 Graves, Abigail, 15.
 Hannah, 224.
 Mary, 396.
 Richard, 49, 60, 155, 194, 206, 219.
 Gravesend, England, 363, 366, 368,
 371.
 Gray, Arthur, 383.
 Benjamin, 386.
 Edward, 299.
 Elizabeth, 117, 299, 389.
 Hannah, 383.
 Joseph, 321.
 Lydia, 105.
 Margaret, 44.
 Mary, 236, 386.
 Robert, 302, 389.
 Thomas, 2, 197.
 William, 44.
 Winthrop, 117.
 Great Ashing swamp, 207.
 Great Cove, 30, 61, 145, 206.
 Great Neck, 47.
 Great Pond, 151, 154, 188, 212.
 Green (Greene), —, 120.
 Widow, 3.
 Ann, 28.
 Anstiss, 138.
 Anthony, 123.
 B., 89.
 Eliza, 138.
 John, 28, 301, 367, 399.
 Joseph, 420.
 Mary, 123.
 Rebecca, 120.
 Greeneway, Richard, 2.
 Greenman, Imogene, 225.
 Greenleet (Greenslett), Ann, 398.
 Thomas, 398.
 Gregory, Mary, 387.
 Griffin, Abigail, 102.
 Richard, 367.
 Samuel, 102.
 Grig, Thankful, 54.
 Grindstone Hill, 205.
 Groce, Simon, 212.
 Gross, Rebecca, 22.
 Groton, 19.
 Groton, Conn., 111.
 Groton, England, 14, 18.
 Grove, Edward, 7, 9, 10, 229, 401.
 Joseph, 362.
 Grover, Edmund, 140, 141, 173, 189,
 203, 208, 231, 283, 323, 417.
 John, 159, 283, 417.
 Guilford, Conn., 65, 287, 288.
 Guinea, 347.
 Guinn, Lucy, 38.
 Thomas, 38.
 Gunpowder, 68, 126.
 Gunpowder plot, 327.
 Guppy, Abigail, 119, 135.
 Bethiah, 119.
 Eleanor, 118.
 Elizabeth, 119, 295.
 John, 118, 119, 135.
 Mary, 118.
 Rachel, 118, 119, 328.
 Reuben, 118, 433, 434.
 Susanna, 119.
 Gutch, Deborah, 77.
 Elizabeth, 77.
 John, 77.
 Lydia, 77.
 Magdalen, 77.
 Patience, 77.
 Robert, 50, 76, 178, 184, 215, 283,
 403.
 Sara, 77.
 Gutterson, Susanna, 21.
 Gwinn, Mercy, 387.
 Thaddeus, 387.
 HACKER, Anna, 56.
 Bethiah, 391.
 George, 391.
 Jeremiah, 56.
 Haddam, Conn., 409.
 Hadley, Mass., 143.
 Hadlock, Abigail, 375.
 Damaris, 375.
 Hannah, 375.
 James, 375, 438, 439.
 John, 375, 404.
 Joseph, 375.
 Marah, 375.
 Margery, 375.
 Mary, 375.
 Nathaniel, 404.
 Pascho, 375.
 Rebecca, 375.
 Remember, 404.
 Ruth, 375.
 Samuel, 375.
 Sarah, 375.

- Haggett, Ann, 151.
 Deliverance, 151.
 Hannah, 151.
 Henry, 151.
 Mary, 151.
 Moses, 151.
 Haines (Haynes), Mary, 282.
 Richard, 192, 282, 417.
 Sarah, 282, 299.
 Thomas, 402.
 William, 165, 192, 282, 299.
 Hale, Apphia, 230.
 Elizabeth, 414, 425.
 Francis H., 315.
 James, 414.
 Joanna, 414.
 John, 230, 349, 407-412, 414, 417.
 Lydia, 230.
 Margaret E., 315.
 Mary, 43, 110, 230.
 Rebecca, 230, 409, 414.
 Robert, 409, 414.
 Samuel, 230, 414.
 Sarah, 230, 414.
 Thomas, 6, 9, 158, 189, 228, 230, 301.
 Thomasine, 230.
 Hall, Edward, 8.
 Sally, 330.
 William, 330.
 Hamilton, Mass., 83, 306 331, 382.
 Hamilton, Duke of, 86.
 Hammersmith (Saugus), 376, 377
 Hammond, Abigail, 386.
 Benjamin, 109, 191.
 Hamor, Mary, 256.
 Hampstead, N. H., 46, 116.
 Hampton, N. H., 2, 7, 31, 54, 218, 255.
 Handy, Patience, 54.
 Hannah (ketch), 364.
 Hannah and Elizabeth (ship), 364, 388.
 Hanson, Elizabeth, 76.
 Mary, 4.
 Thomas, 4.
 Harding, John, 226.
 Joseph, 276.
 Lydia, 103.
 Hardy, Elizabeth, 364, 369.
 James, 376.
 John, 9, 10, 60, 109, 145, 180, 191, 213, 226, 344, 348, 359, 363, 364, 369.
 Joseph, 9, 10, 145, 160, 276, 363, 364, 369, 371, 401, 421.
 Mary, 136.
 Ruth, 376.
 Hardy, *continued*,
 Seeth, 329.
 Hardy's Cove, 337.
 Harmon, Roger, 363.
 Harmony Grove Cemetery, 39.
 Harnet, Edward, 61, 232, 246, 247.
 Eupice, 61.
 Jonathan, 61.
 Priscilla, 61.
 Harod. See *Harwood*.
 Harper, Robert, 263.
 Harraden, Abigail, 21.
 Lydia Ann, 426.
 Timothy, 21.
 Harriette (brig), 137.
 Harriman, Mehitable, 113.
 Reuben, 113.
 Susanna, 116.
 Harrington, Me., 377.
 Harrington, Mehitable, 113.
 Reuben, 113.
 Harris, Elizabeth, 161.
 George, 3, 155.
 Hannah, 48, 213.
 James, 161.
 Joseph, 155, 158, 159, 283.
 Mary, 115.
 Richard, 213.
 Samuel, 399.
 Sophie C., 306.
 Hart (Heart), Abigail, 133.
 Anne, 133.
 Deborah, 133.
 Elizabeth, 20, 133.
 Florence, 133.
 John, 2, 13, 133, 179, 197.
 Jonathan, 122, 133.
 Lydia, 122, 133.
 Margaret, 133.
 Mary, 133, 276.
 Peleth, 133.
 Rebecca, 133.
 Sarah, 122, 133.
 Hartford, Conn., 129, 287.
 Hartshorn, Elizabeth, 328.
 Susanna, 329.
 Hartwell, Nancy, 320.
 Harvard College, 27, 29, 38, 93, 102, 111, 114, 115, 117, 118, 124, 125, 135, 148, 163, 229, 299, 384, 385, 389, 391, 409, 426, 441, 444.
 Harvey, Abigail, 279.
 Anna, 279.
 David, 423.
 Elizabeth, 279.
 George, 42.
 Hannah, 423.

- Harvey, *continued*,
 Jehoidan, 279.
 John, 279, 423.
 Laura Peirce, 42.
 Mary, 423.
 Peter, 423.
 Richard, 232, 279, 301, 324, 333.
 Sarah, 279, 423.
 Harwich, 191.
 Harwood (Harod, Harrod, Hayward, Haywood, Herod, Herrod, Howard), Abigail, 135, 278.
 Anna, 135.
 Archelaus, 136.
 Bethiah, 135.
 Daniel, 136.
 Diadem, 136.
 Dudley, 136.
 Elizabeth, 48, 73, 135, 136, 411.
 Em—, 48.
 Frances, 29.
 Hannah, 135, 136.
 Harriet Maria, 379.
 Henry, 48, 73, 156, 166, 199, 290, 403.
 Hephzibah, 136.
 Israel, 136.
 Israel Porter, 136.
 James, 125.
 Jemima, 136, 319.
 John, 49, 136, 319, 322, 324.
 Jonathan, 49, 135, 136, 276.
 Lydia, 21, 136.
 Mary, 76, 135, 136, 276, 324.
 Mehitable, 136.
 Nathaniel, 135, 402, 411.
 Nehemiah, 135.
 Nicholas, 135, 136, 180, 211, 227.
 Paul, 136.
 Robert, 136.
 Ruth, 111.
 Samuel, 135, 136, 272.
 Sarah, 135, 136.
 Stephen, 135.
 William Serls, 379.
 Hashamomack, 57.
 Haskell, Anna, 139.
 Elenor, 114.
 Elijah, 383.
 Elizabeth, 411, 414.
 Hannah, 383.
 Hubbard, 139.
 Mark, 363, 417.
 Mary, 42.
 Miriam, 204.
 Roger, 6, 9, 145, 158, 159, 206, 231, 301, 302, 401.
 Haskell, *continued*,
 William, 204, 302.
 Haskett, Elias, 321.
 Elizabeth, 321.
 Hannah, 321.
 Martha, 321.
 Mary, 321.
 Sarah, 321.
 Stephen, 159, 189, 222, 321, 402, 423.
 Haskins, John, 393.
 Roger, 48.
 Ruth, 48, 190.
 Hatch, Jonathan, 103.
 Hathaway (Hatheway), John, 13.
 Lillie E., 382.
 Hathorne, Abigail, 37, 102.
 Anna, 334.
 Anne, 162.
 Benjamin, 102.
 Eleazer, 6, 9, 37, 228, 368, 371, 372, 390, 392, 403, 421, 422, 432.
 Elizabeth, 25, 162.
 Elizabeth Clarke, 390.
 Hannah, 102, 224.
 John, 5, 8, 9, 68, 140, 165, 185, 189, 219, 239, 370, 400-403.
 Joseph, 136, 224.
 Nathaniel, 390.
 Ruth, 114.
 Sarah, 136.
 Sarah E., 330.
 William, 3, 5, 8, 11, 20, 25, 30, 50, 62, 64, 66, 68-70, 102, 107, 108, 122, 125, 128, 131, 156, 161, 167, 169, 174, 180, 194, 204, 207, 209, 211-213, 217, 218, 228, 229, 232, 234, 239, 247-249, 254, 257, 266, 270, 288, 292, 294, 298, 315, 319, 322, 325, 334, 335, 343, 344, 352, 353, 360, 392, 393, 395, 400, 401, 405, 408, 409, 431, 434.
 Hauker, Elizabeth, 305.
 Havana, Cuba, 24, 124, 378.
 Haverhill, England, 409.
 Haverhill, Mass., 15, 20, 104, 123, 224, 226, 280, 299, 441.
 Haverhill, N. H., 113, 300.
 Hawkes, Abigail, 224.
 Benjamin, 224.
 Elizabeth, 375.
 George Lathrop, 426.
 John, 101, 375.
 Lydia, 101.
 Mary Ellen, 426.

- Hawkins, Gamaliel, 361.
 Martha, 4.
 Thomas, 367.
 Hayward. See *Harwood*.
 Haywood. See *Harwood*.
 Hazelton, Marston, 320.
 Sarah Fitch, 320.
 Healy, Sarah, 420.
 William, 420.
 Heath, Mass., 116.
 Helen (schooner), 379.
 Hemenway, Sally, 377.
 Samuel, 377.
 Hempfield, Elizabeth, 312.
 Hempstead, L. I., 409.
 Henschman, Mary, 299.
 Henderson, Abigail, 44, 386.
 Benjamin, 386.
 Elizabeth, 43, 79, 332, 386.
 Joseph, 43.
 Peter, 386.
 Sarah Ellen, 426.
 William Cleveland, 426.
 Hendley, Elias, 201.
 Henfield, Anne, 102.
 Benjamin, 332.
 Edmund, 339, 340, 348, 364, 387.
 Elizabeth, 21.
 Joseph, 102, 339.
 Martha, 124.
 Mary, 78, 332, 387.
 Sarah, 103.
 William, 21.
 Henstredge, England, 321.
 Henstredge, Ireland, 321.
 Henville, Amanda Malvina, 104.
 Herbert (Harbutt), Elizabeth, 37,
 236, 325.
 John, 31, 37, 101, 193, 369, 385.
 Mary, 82, 385.
 Hercules (ship), 62, 306.
 Heresy, 49.
 Herd, John, 146.
 Mary, 146.
 Hero (schooner), 378.
 Herod. See *Harwood*.
 Herrick, Edith, 162, 376, 411, 414.
 Elizabeth, 163, 411.
 Ephraim, 403, 411, 417.
 Henry, 6, 9, 10, 188, 208, 213,
 216, 231, 282, 386, 402, 410,
 411, 414, 417.
 John, 411.
 Joseph, 439.
 Lydia, 411, 414.
 Mary, 42, 116, 411, 414.
 Susanna, 114, 386.
 Zachariah, 42, 158, 283, 417.
 Herron, Love, 45.
 Susan, 46.
 Hersome, Christopher, 152.
 Mary, 152.
 Hewes. See *Hughes*.
 Hewson (Hughson), John, 235.
 Hibbard, Abigail, 15.
 Elizabeth, 15, 134.
 Hannah, 15.
 Joan, 15.
 Joanna, 15.
 John, 15.
 Joseph, 15.
 Mary, 15.
 Robert, 15, 159, 206, 240, 302,
 322, 417.
 Ruth, 15.
 Samuel, 15.
 Sarah, 15.
 Hibbens, William, 81, 84.
 Hicks, Hannah, 92.
 Mary, 386.
 Hide, Barbara, 383.
 Christian, 383.
 Elizabeth, 383.
 Ephraim, 383.
 Hannah, 383.
 Isaac, 382, 383.
 Mary, 383.
 Rebecca, 382.
 Richard, 199, 240, 382, 383.
 Susanna, 383.
 Higginson, Esther, 339.
 Francis, 53, 185, 286, 287, 339.
 Hannah, 102.
 John, 9, 68, 185, 240, 262, 272,
 286-289, 307, 320, 339, 349,
 356, 370, 398, 401-403, 414,
 431, 432, 434.
 Mary, 286, 299.
 Highway surveyors, 6, 232.
 Highways, 5, 6, 74, 130-133, 141,
 159, 166, 175, 188, 195, 205,
 206, 208, 209, 213-215, 220,
 223, 230, 231, 233, 239, 276,
 279, 311, 394, 399, 404, 410,
 421, 422, 429.
 Hill (Hills), Abigail, 411, 414.
 Ebenezer, 161.
 Elizabeth, 204.
 Hannah Maria, 41.
 James Frank, 41.
 John, 39, 203, 204, 234, 352, 308,
 357, 411, 414, 417.
 Lydia, 39, 204.
 Mary, 197.
 Miriam, 204.
 Philip, 357, 388.

- Hill, *continued*,
 Priscilla, 357.
 Rebecca, 320.
 Robert, 204.
 Rufus, 377.
 Ruth, 161.
 Sarah, 387.
 Susanna, 204.
 Thomasine, 279.
 Valentine, 11.
 Zebulon, 308, 352, 353, 362, 418.
- Hilliard, Abigail, 216.
 Benjamin, 216.
 Edward, 347, 368, 371, 398.
 Job, 216, 228, 360.
 Mary, 216.
 Sarah, 216.
- Hinds, Hannah, 325.
- Hingham, Mass., 135, 161, 327, 388, 406.
- Hinsdale, Elizabeth, 230.
- Hirst, Elizabeth, 121.
 William, 9, 362, 370, 401, 402.
- Hitchcock, Elizabeth, 386.
- Hitchings, Tabitha, 387.
- Hoar, William, 417.
- Hobart. See *Hubbard*.
- Hobart College, 391.
- Hobbs, Samuel, 329.
 Sarah, 329.
- Hoddesden End, England, 234.
- Hodges, George, 311, 312, 327, 329.
 Hannah, 329.
 John, 389.
 Joseph, 424.
 Mary, 15, 384, 389.
 Mary S., 385.
 Priscilla, 103.
 Robert, 15, 363, 432.
 Sarah, 117, 327.
- Hodgkins, Azor, 124.
 Elizabeth, 124.
- Hodson, Peter, 340.
- Holder, Christopher, 243-246, 261.
- Holgrave, John, 5, 9, 10, 48, 49, 75, 79, 142, 156.
 Lydia, 77.
- Holland, 29, 69, 85, 148, 326, 348, 362, 372, 383.
- Holland, Mary, 32.
- Hollingworth (Hollingwood), Widow, 310, 355.
 Mary, 355.
 Richard, 9, 49, 156, 166, 189, 199, 200, 304, 322, 364, 398, 403, 422, 432, 434.
 Susanna, 405.
- Hollingworth, *continued*,
 William, 9, 324, 347, 355, 362, 372, 395, 398.
- Hollis, N. H., 138.
- Holloway, Abigail, 20.
 Edward, 20.
- Holman, —, 272.
 Betsey Barr, 331.
 Elizabeth, 83, 141.
 Gabriel, 141.
 Hannah, 20.
 Huldah, 20.
 John, 20.
 Joseph, 211.
 Mary Smith, 39.
 Sally, 211.
 Sarah G., 25.
- Holmes, Catherine, 53.
 John, 10, 160, 270, 402.
 Mary, 278.
 Obadiah, 9, 53, 57, 65, 141.
- Holt, Humphrey, 300.
 Martha, 21.
 Mary, 300.
 Nathan, 420.
 Nicholas, 21.
 Sarah, 144.
- Holton. See *Houghton and Houlton*.
- Holyoke, —, 174.
 Ann, 109.
 Susanna, 105.
- Hood, Asa, 384.
 Maria, 248.
 Martha, 384.
- Hooker, Thomas, 287.
- Hooper, Abigail, 216, 329.
 Charles, 123.
 Dorothy, 322.
 Edward, 322.
 Elizabeth, 211, 322.
 Francis, 322.
 Hannah, 123, 329.
 John, 216.
 Julian, 322.
 Priscilla, 322.
 William, 322.
- Hope (Indian), 69.
- Hope (ketch), 364, 365.
- Hopewell (ketch), 365.
- Hopkinton, Mass., 280, 300.
- Hopkinton, N. H., 280.
- Horn book, 96.
- Horne, John, 9, 13, 30, 64, 160, 301, 398, 399, 402, 419.
 Joseph, 160, 402.
 Margaret, 236.
- Horse bridge, 6, 186, 187, 440.

- Horseman, Ankias, 333.
 Horton, Sarah, 57.
 Hosman, Hester, 222.
 John, 222.
 Hotham, John, 85.
 Houghton, Joseph, 214, 299, 419.
 Julia, 305.
 Houlton, Me., 113.
 Houlton (Holton), Abigail, 276,
 300.
 Ann, 300.
 Anna, 114, 300.
 Benjamin, 114, 299, 300.
 Ebenezer, 300.
 Elizabeth, 114, 299, 300.
 Eunice, 300.
 Hannah, 299, 300.
 Henry, 276, 299, 300.
 Israel, 300.
 James, 299, 300.
 John, 299, 300, 405.
 Joseph, 9, 10, 299, 300, 427, 428,
 438, 439.
 Keziah, 300.
 Lydia, 32, 300.
 Mary, 24, 299, 300, 405.
 Nathan, 300.
 Rebecca, 300.
 Ruth, 300.
 Samuel, 300.
 Sarah, 111, 299, 300.
 Susannah, 299, 300.
 Timothy, 300.
 House, Baldwin, 234.
 Hovey, Joseph, 45.
 Margaret, 45.
 How (Howe), Edward, 8.
 Ephraim, 347.
 Love, 162.
 Lucy, 103.
 Lydia, 295.
 Mark, 295.
 Howard. See *Harwood*.
 Howlett, Thomas, 152, 298.
 Hubbard (Hobart), Mr., 153.
 Charles, 105.
 Dorothy, 409.
 Elizabeth, 409.
 Hannah, 105.
 Jeremiah, 299, 406, 408, 409.
 John, 372.
 Josiah, 406.
 Margaret, 409.
 Peter, 406.
 Robert, 283.
 William, 108, 152, 167, 249.
 Hughes (Hewes), Arthur, 68.
 Deborah, 123.
 Hughes, *continued*,
 James, 123.
 Hulett, Cornelius, 216.
 Margaret, 216.
 Hull, Mass., 3, 327.
 Hull, Isaac, 316, 322, 417.
 John, 214, 316.
 Joseph, 3.
 Sarah, 316.
 Hulme. See *Holmes*.
 Humber, Edward, 10, 332, 402, 403.
 Humphrey (Humphreys), Eliza-
 beth, 319.
 John, 7, 8, 26, 63, 66-69, 84, 85,
 108, 121, 185, 194, 196, 198,
 217, 301, 322, 344, 400.
 Thomas, 319.
 Hungary, 148.
 Hunn, Nathaniel, 135.
 Priscilla, 135.
 Hunt, Edward, 361.
 Elizabeth, 136.
 Eunice, 136.
 Lewis, 137, 303, 365.
 Mary, 137, 303.
 William, 136.
 Hunter, William, 200.
 Huntington, L. I., 57, 61.
 Hurlston, Nicholas, 365.
 Hutchins (Hutchings), Henry, 54.
 Lois, 330.
 Mary, 54.
 Sarah, 54.
 Thomas, 54.
 Hutchinson, Abigail, 42, 113, 318.
 Ann, 50.
 Bethiah, 113.
 Edward, 42.
 Elisha, 162.
 Elizabeth, 109, 111.
 Ginger, 162.
 Hannah, 113.
 Hannah C., 125.
 Israel, 116.
 Jeremy, 115.
 John, 109, 429.
 Joseph, 6, 9, 10, 207, 208, 228, 394,
 398, 402, 429, 438, 439, 443.
 Lydia, 143.
 Mary, 230.
 Mehitable, 116.
 Rebecca, 375.
 Richard, 71, 165, 173, 206, 214,
 219, 227, 312, 375, 399, 402,
 438-441.
 Robert, 111.
 Ruth, 112.
 Sarah, 109, 111, 115.

- Hutchinson, *continued*,
 Solomon, 113.
 Hutson, Sarah, 330.
 Hyde, Isaac, 61.
 Susanna, 61.
- ILSLEY, Sarah, 230.
 Immigration, 146.
 Indian fort, 199.
 Indian Wars, 14, 327.
 Indiana, 331.
 Indianapolis, Ind., 306.
 Indians, 28, 110, 127, 129, 133, 139,
 170, 191, 226, 240, 241, 280,
 285, 294, 299, 347-349, 374,
 394, 399, 404, 444.
 Industry (ketch), 365.
 Ingalls, Deborah, 277.
 Grace, 42.
 Joseph T., 42.
 Sarah, 113, 329.
 Ingersoll (Ingerson), Elizabeth,
 224.
 George, 61, 151.
 Hannah, 137.
 Joanna, 151.
 John, 7, 9, 10, 137, 165, 193, 240,
 364, 403, 404.
 Margaret, 387.
 Mary, 21, 137, 138.
 Nathaniel, 7, 9, 21, 28, 29, 364,
 402, 438, 439, 443, 445.
 Richard, 23, 77, 155, 165, 299,
 364.
 Samuel, 321.
 Sarah, 23, 282, 299, 321.
 Ingraham, Edward, 60, 61.
 Joseph, 65.
 Sarah, 65.
- Inner Temple, London, 14, 18.
 Ipswich, England, 148.
 Ipswich, Mass., 5, 14, 20-23, 28,
 47, 54, 66-68, 70, 92, 107, 108,
 111, 120, 137, 152, 162, 163,
 172, 174, 207, 215, 230, 233,
 241, 244, 249, 251, 254, 255,
 258, 262, 263, 271, 288, 295,
 313, 324, 383, 387, 389, 390,
 405, 414, 425.
 Boundary line, 152.
 Ipswich River, 192, 206-209, 234,
 278, 302, 394, 395, 419.
 Ipswich road, 7.
 Ireland, 78, 85, 86, 125, 362.
 Iron works, 282.
 Island City (schooner), 191.
 Islands, 240, 241.
 Isle of Shoals, 16, 121.
- Ivers, Micha, 78, 79.
 Ives, Abigail, 425.
 Alfred Southwick, 426, 427.
 Alice Peirce, 426.
 Anna, 425.
 Anna Gardner, 427.
 Anna Maria, 427.
 Anne, 425.
 Anne Warren, 426.
 Arthur Burnham, 426.
 Augustine Perkins, 426, 427.
 Benjamin, 425.
 Benjamin Franklin, 426.
 Benjamin Hale, 425-427.
 Caroline Louisa, 426.
 Catherine Augusta, 427.
 Charles Allen, 427.
 Charles Edwin, 426, 427.
 Charles Frederick, 426.
 Chester Symonds, 427.
 Clara Thorndike, 426.
 Constance, 426.
 Cornelia Allen, 426.
 David Otis, 426.
 David Perkins, 426.
 Deborah, 425.
 Edith Lynwood, 427.
 Edward Lang, 426.
 Edward Perkins, 426.
 Elizabeth, 425.
 Emily Ashby, 426.
 Emily Bertha, 427.
 Emma J., 426.
 Esther M., 427.
 Etta Molineux, 426.
 Florence Alice, 427.
 Francis Safford, 427.
 Franklin Gardner, 426.
 Frederick Manley, 427.
 Frederick Washburn, 426.
 George Augustus, 426.
 George Burnham, 426, 427.
 George Wilkins, 427.
 Hannah, 425.
 Harriet, 426.
 Harriet Vaughn, 426.
 Henry Merritt, 426, 427.
 Henry Perkins, 426.
 Ida Marion, 426.
 Jessie St. Clair, 426.
 John, 102, 425.
 John Mansfield, 57, 425, 426.
 John Southwick, 426, 427.
 Joseph, 425.
 Laura, 427.
 Leonard B., 427.
 Lillian, 427.
 Lillian Gower, 427.

Ives, continued,

Lois Alley, 57, 426.
 Lois Southwick, 426.
 Louisa Mansfield, 426.
 Lucy, 425.
 Lucy Gardner, 425.
 Lucy Perkins, 427.
 Lydia Ann, 426.
 Mabel, 427.
 Margaret, 425.
 Margaret Perkins, 426.
 Martha, 425.
 Martha D., 427.
 Mary, 425, 426.
 Mary Ashby, 427.
 Mary Bradshaw, 425.
 Mary Elizabeth, 426.
 Mary Ellen, 426.
 Mary Louisa, 426.
 Mary Manley, 427.
 Mary Perkins, 426.
 Nathan Frye, 427.
 Oscar Jackson, 427.
 Rebecca, 425.
 Rebecca Southwick, 426.
 Richard, 427.
 Richard M., 427.
 Robert Hale, 425.
 Samuel, 425.
 Samuel Buttrick, 426, 427.
 Samuel Southwick, 427.
 Sarah, 102, 425.
 Sarah Elizabeth Safford, 427.
 Sarah Ellen, 426.
 Sarah L., 425.
 Sarah Shreve, 426.
 Sophie, 426.
 Stephen Bradshaw, 425, 426.
 Susan Shillaber, 426.
 Thomas, 7, 160, 189, 402, 424, 425.
 William, 425.
 William Hale, 425.
 William Lincoln, 426, 427.

JACKSON, —, 108.

Goodman, 192.
 Elizabeth Holman, 83.
 John, 9, 166, 223, 321, 361, 403.
 Mary, 321.
 Sarah A., 381.
 Sarah Ellen, 381.
 William H., 83.
 Jacobs, Desire, 24.
 Ebenezer, 217.
 Elizabeth, 217.
 Margaret, 324.
 Jaffrey, Susanna, 55.

James (ship), 146.
 James, Erasmus, 2, 48, 176, 177, 197, 202.
 Jane, 176, 177, 202.
 Rosamond, 48.
 Thomas, 6, 20, 61, 194, 233, 234, 276, 282.
 James Bonaventure (ketch), 365.
 James River, 369.
 Jamestown, Va., 14.
 Jamison, Sarah, 303.
 William, 303.
 Jarrett, John, 145.
 Jarvis, Hannah, 320.
 Jeanverin, Daniel, 361.
 Jeffords, Elizabeth, 134.
 Simon, 134.
 Jeffrey, Elizabeth, 136.
 William, 136, 172.
 Jeffrey Creek, 61, 75, 107, 156, 172-175.
 Jeffrey Creek Island, 48, 173.
 Jeggles (Giggles), Thomas, 9, 10, 233, 368.
 William, 181, 192, 373, 402.
 Jellet, Mathew, 119, 197.
 Jenkins, Ann Elizabeth, 104.
 James, 104.
 Lydia, 210.
 Sarah, 211.
 William, 210, 211.
 Jennison, Abigail, 286, 299.
 William, 299.
 Jersey, Isle of, 359, 361, 367, 372.
 Jewell (ship), 365.
 Jewett, Hannah, 313.
 John, 341, 342.
 Joseph, 199.
 Nehemiah, 110.
 Priscilla, 110.
 Thomas S., 342.
 John (negro), 302, 393.
 John (ship), 317, 365, 366.
 John and Eliza (ketch), 366.
 John and Elizabeth (pink), 366.
 John and Mary (sloop), 366.
 John and Thomas (ketch), 366.
 John Adventure (ship), 366.
 Johnson, Abigail, 143.
 Adam, 280.
 Alice, 280.
 Anna, 104.
 Arbella, 360.
 Charles T., 138.
 Elizabeth, 20, 65, 126, 138.
 Emily Collins, 380.
 Esther, 98.
 Francis, 11, 140, 155, 165, 179,

- Johnson, *continued*,
 180, 196, 197, 201, 202, 301,
 302.
 Jedediah, 40.
 Kate, 273.
 Lydia, 40.
 Mary, 20.
 Ruth, 300.
 Samuel, 300.
 William, 65, 349.
 Johnston, Thomas, 367.
 Jones, Abigail, 284.
 Ada Simes, 426.
 Deborah, 284.
 Elizabeth, 284.
 Hannah, 283, 284.
 Hugh, 76, 159, 160, 283, 284, 301,
 304, 324.
 John, 284.
 Lydia, 284.
 Mary, 283, 284, 324, 391.
 Rachel, 284.
 Rebecca, 284.
 Remember, 404.
 Samuel, 284.
 Sarah, 284.
 Thomas, 391.
 Joslyn, Mary, 133.
 Jowders, —, 330.
 Judd, David, 21.
 Martha, 21.
 Judges, 14, 38.
 Judkins, —, 135.
 Jupiter House, 318.
 Juniper Point, 36.
 Juno (schooner), 330.
 Juries, Grand, 10.
 Inquest, 11.
 Trial, 8.
- KEAZER (Keisour, Keyser, Key-
 sor, Kezar, Kezer), Benjamin,
 280.
 Edward, 280.
 Eleazer, 101, 280, 402.
 Elisa, 280.
 George, 10, 101, 159, 280, 402.
 Hannah, 101, 280.
 John, 280.
 Mary, 280.
 Rebecca, 280.
 Sarah, 280.
- Kebee, Edward, 397.
 Elisha, 43, 396, 397.
 James, 397.
 John, 397.
 Rachel, 43, 396.
 Keene, Will, 47.
- Kehew, Aaron Augustus, 41.
 Anna Maria, 41.
 Kieney (Keene, Keyney, Kiene),
 John, 159, 422, 423.
 Sarah, 423.
 William, 47, 124.
 Keith, James, 70.
 Susanna, 70.
 Keller, Eliza Jane, 379.
 Kelley, Ellen Maria, 380.
 Harry L., 380.
 Mary, 225.
 Rebecca, 420.
 William, 225.
 Kellham. See *Killam*.
 Kellogg, Elizabeth, 143.
 Kemball. See *Kimball*.
 Kempe, John, 72.
 Kempton, Ephraim, 9, 141.
 Mary, 141.
 Kendall, Ill., 104.
 Kendall, James, 271.
 Sarah, 271.
 Kennebec River, 191.
 Keniston, Allen, 10, 61, 142, 145,
 183, 212, 230, 403.
 Dorothy, 142.
 Kenney (Kenny), Aaron, 188.
 Amos, 188.
 Ann, 187.
 Anne, 187.
 Bartholomew, 188.
 Benjamin, 188.
 Daniel, 187, 188.
 David, 188.
 Dinah, 187.
 Elisha, 188.
 Elizabeth, 187.
 Esther, 187.
 Eunice, 188.
 Hannah, 179, 187.
 Henry, 187, 312, 398, 400, 402,
 403, 429, 438, 439, 443.
 Isaac, 188.
 Israel, 188.
 Jacob, 188.
 James, 188.
 Jemima, 187.
 Jeremiah, 188.
 Jesse, 179.
 John, 187, 188.
 Jonathan, 143, 187, 188.
 Jonathan A., 341, 342.
 Joseph, 187.
 Josiah, 188.
 Keziah, 188.
 Lois, 188.
 Lydia, 187, 188.

Kenney, *continued*,

- Martha, 188.
- Mary, 187, 188.
- Mary E., 381.
- Mehitable, 187.
- Moses, 188.
- Nathan, 188.
- Priscilla, 187, 188.
- Rebecca, 143, 188.
- Ruth, 188.
- Samuel, 187, 188.
- Sarah, 187.
- Stephen, 188.
- Theophilus, 187.
- Thomas, 187, 188.
- Kensington, N. H., 40.
- Kent, Benjamin, 116.
- Mary, 116.
- Ketcherill, Joseph, 65.
- Kettle, Elizabeth, 135.
- James, 135.
- John, 120, 162.
- Jonathan, 163.
- Mary, 162, 163.
- Samuel, 323.
- Kettle holes, 199.
- Kettle Island Cove, 48, 173.
- Kilburn, Elizabeth, 146.
- Ephraim, 146.
- Lydia, 24.
- Killam (Kilham), Asa, 124.
- Augustine, 53, 65.
- Austin, 65, 75, 149, 403.
- Bethiah, 56.
- Daniel, 77.
- Elizabeth, 4.
- Hannah, 124.
- Sarah, 77, 385.
- Killingly, Conn., 217, 277, 441, 442.
- Kimball (Kemball), Abraham, 300.
- Elizabeth, 300.
- Harriet Matilda, 145.
- Lydia, 320.
- Nancy Ann, 315.
- Rebecca, 114.
- Richard, 154.
- Ruth, 112.
- Samuel, 112.
- Sarah Elizabeth Safford, 427.
- King, Brother, 136.
- Widow, 74, 193.
- Abigail, 217, 325.
- Ann Churchill, 82.
- Anstiss, 314.
- Charles, 358.
- Daniel, 402.
- Dorothy, 212.
- Ebenezer, 55.

King, *continued*,

- Elizabeth, 20.
- Gedney, 123.
- Hannah, 43, 55.
- James, 82, 340, 358.
- John, 9, 99, 160, 221, 402.
- Judith, 82.
- Katherine, 212.
- Lydia, 123.
- Mary, 55, 98, 127.
- Nathaniel, 98.
- Peter, 20.
- Rebecca, 329.
- Samuel, 350.
- Sarah, 340.
- William, 10, 43, 61, 125, 227, 231, 260-263, 265, 267, 314, 329.
- Zachariah, 55.
- King's Chapel churchyard, 17.
- King's Cove, 127.
- King Philip's War, 28, 276, 386, 389.
- Kinsale, Ireland, 372.
- Kinsman, Elizabeth, 57.
- Hattie W., 118.
- John, 235.
- Kippen, Abigail, 213.
- Arthur, 213, 228.
- Elizabeth, 213.
- Hannah, 213.
- Joseph, 213.
- Mary, 213.
- Sara, 213.
- William, 213.
- Kirk, Henry, 374.
- Kitchen, Abigail, 119, 135.
- Benjamin, 135.
- Bethiah, 135, 299.
- Edward, 135.
- Elizabeth, 135, 263, 264.
- Freake, 135.
- Hannah, 135.
- John, 9, 10, 135, 145, 167, 194, 217, 234, 263, 403.
- Joseph, 135.
- Mary, 4, 135.
- Priscilla, 135.
- Robert, 7, 9, 135, 160, 357, 401.
- Kittery, Me., 92.
- Kittredge, Alden, 45.
- Mary T., 45.
- Knapp, Abigail, 329.
- Imogene, 225.
- Joseph Jenkins, 330.
- Roderick N., 225.
- Knight (Knights), Elizabeth, 187.
- Ezekiel, 68, 75.

- Knight, *continued*,
 John, 308.
 Jonathan, 438.
 Joseph, 115.
 Margaret, 295.
 Marie, 197.
 Mary, 134.
 Mehitable, 115.
 Nathaniel, 104.
 Philip, 295, 438, 439, 441.
 Rebecca, 297.
 Robert, 197, 200.
 Sarah, 104, 392.
 Knockers' hole, 350.
 Knott, Richard, 323, 324.
 Knowlton, Elizabeth, 313.
 Hannah, 278.
 Kun, Nathaniel, 349.

 LAGUIRA, 378.
 Laighton, Hannah, 70.
 Thomas, 70.
 Lake, Captain, 191.
 Abigail, 303.
 Ann, 303.
 Mary, 303.
 William, 9, 159, 189, 303, 352,
 353, 398, 399, 402, 433.
 Lake George, Battle of, 32.
 Lambert, Abigail, 238.
 Alic, 365.
 Benjamin, 135, 236.
 Daniel, 236, 358, 388, 402, 405.
 Ebenezer, 236, 358.
 Elizabeth, 236-238, 388, 405.
 Eunice, 236, 237.
 Ezekiel, 236.
 Ezra, 366.
 Hannah, 236, 238, 389.
 Hester, 211.
 Jehoaden, 236.
 John, 124, 236, 240, 349, 402, 417.
 Jonathan, 236.
 Joseph, 28, 236-238.
 Lydia, 28, 236, 238.
 Margaret, 236, 237.
 Margaret J., 124.
 Mary, 236-238.
 Mercy, 135.
 Michael, 4, 48.
 Patience, 236, 295.
 Preserved, 236.
 Priscilla, 237, 238.
 Rachel, 236.
 Richard, 8, 97.
 Samuel, 236.
 Sarah, 227, 236, 237.
 Seeth, 236.

 Lampson, Edward, 225.
 Ellen M., 225.
 Lancashire, England, 53.
 Lancaster, Mass., 285.
 Lander, Betsey, 123.
 Daniel, 367.
 Edward, 306.
 Elizabeth, 306.
 John, 189, 321, 402.
 Sarah, 103.
 Landing place, 405.
 Lane, Abigail, 390.
 Nancy, 41.
 Thomas, 197.
 Lang, Bridget, 278.
 Edward, 102.
 Esther, 82.
 Rachel, 102.
 Langdon, Sophia, 106.
 Langford, Elizabeth, 280.
 Paul, 280.
 Langmaid, Caroline Louisa, 426.
 Frank Augustus, 426.
 Lansford, John, 303.
 Priscilla, 303.
 Larcom, Benjamin, 425.
 Charlotte, 425.
 Larrabee, Sally Stone, 379.
 Lash, Joanna, 389.
 Laskin, Hugh, 141, 155, 178, 283.
 Lassell, Edward, 369.
 Lathrop (Lothrop), Bethiah, 411,
 414.
 Charles D., 106.
 Deborah, 112.
 Mark, 145, 214.
 Mary G., 106.
 Thomas, 3, 5, 6, 9, 10, 100, 132,
 145, 156, 161, 167, 169, 173,
 175, 188, 207, 215, 218, 226,
 237, 394, 400, 401, 406, 408,
 410, 414, 418, 440.
 Lattimer, Christopher, 201.
 Laud, Archbishop, 85, 86.
 Laughton, Hannah, 383.
 Thomas, 383.
 Lawes, Francis, 9, 10, 132, 166, 219,
 220, 322, 403.
 Mary, 122.
 Lawless, John, 318.
 Mehitable, 318.
 Lawrence, Abel, 341.
 Amory A., 385.
 Charles, 105, 341.
 Daniel S., 46.
 Emily Fairfax, 385.
 John B., 341.
 Lucy Ann, 105.

- Lawrence, *continued*,
 Sally B., 46.
 Laws, 5, 122.
 Lawson, Deodat, 444.
 Layton, Lydia, 391.
 Leach (Leech), Abigail, 277.
 Alice, 133.
 Anna, 22.
 Asa, 163.
 Elizabeth, 163, 276.
 Ginger, 162.
 John, 7, 9, 48, 77, 110, 140, 191,
 283, 401-404, 417, 438, 439.
 Lawrence, 8-10, 64, 68, 75, 77,
 155, 175, 188, 191, 231, 409.
 Lydia, 224, 300.
 Mary, 22, 112, 140.
 Rachel, 110.
 Richard, 9, 77, 159, 302, 395, 399,
 400, 402, 403, 405, 438, 439.
 Robert, 133.
 Ruth, 114.
 Samuel, 162, 224.
 Sarah, 411, 414.
 Leather, 71.
 Leavitt, Rebecca, 137.
 Lebanon, Conn., 441.
 Lebanon Springs, N. Y., 380.
 Lechford, Thomas, 81, 85.
 Ledra, William, 247-250, 262, 265,
 266.
 Lee, Deborah, 20.
 Elizabeth, 425.
 Richard, 425.
 Sarah, 82.
 Thomas, 20.
 Lefavor, Hannah, 55.
 Lydia, 210.
 "Legacy" of Hugh Peter, 88, 89.
 Legg, Elizabeth, 200.
 John, 78, 179, 197, 199, 200.
 Legg's hill, 26, 343.
 Lemon, Hannah, 386.
 Mary, 142, 418.
 Robert, 9, 142, 232, 310, 403.
 Leonard, Isaac, 161.
 Mary, 161.
 Lester, Sarah, 40.
 Letters, 16, 18, 46, 80, 81, 87, 150,
 262, 268, 287.
 Le Vallois, Frances, 106.
 Leveret, John, 222, 238, 239, 351.
 Lewis, Abraham, 369.
 Alonzo, 124.
 Esther Ann, 124.
 Ethel Appleton, 118.
 Isaac, 93.
 John Hart, 118.
 Lewis, *continued*,
 Mary, 93, 295.
 Priscilla, 187.
 Lexington, Mass., 163, 377.
 Lexington, Battle of, 32, 44, 56,
 114, 377.
 Lightfoot, William, 107.
 Lighthouse, 103.
 Lincoln, Mass., 114.
 Lindall, Abigail, 286, 298, 299.
 Bethiah, 135, 299.
 Caleb, 298.
 Elizabeth, 38, 299.
 Hannah, 299.
 James, 38, 286, 298, 299, 433.
 Mary, 286, 298, 299, 328.
 Nathaniel, 298.
 Rachel, 299.
 Sarah, 286, 298, 299.
 Timothy, 7, 9, 135, 298, 299,
 356, 370, 401, 403.
 Veren, 299.
 Lindsey (Lindsay, Linsey), Con-
 tent, 76.
 Mary, 300.
 Naomi, 271.
 Sarah, 76.
 Linen manufacture, 100.
 Lion (ship), 75, 366.
 Lion (Lyon), John, 2, 47, 179, 197.
 Lion's Whelp (ship), 366.
 Liquor, 5, 25, 34, 69, 73, 100, 184,
 189, 212.
 Liston, Nicholas, 3, 47.
 Littlefield, Edmund, 2.
 Elizabeth, 2.
 Keziah, 23.
 Rebecca, 2.
 Livermore, Mr., 407.
 Locker, Elizabeth, 223.
 George, 39, 160, 161, 204.
 Lydia, 39, 204.
 Lodi, Cal., 125.
 Log bridge, 394.
 London, England, 3, 14, 18, 22, 25,
 29, 31, 52, 60, 88, 135, 140,
 163, 166, 167, 186, 193, 198,
 201, 321, 332, 351, 359, 360,
 363, 366, 368, 386, 388, 444.
 Long, Eleanor, 178.
 Ellen, 178.
 Long Hill, 206, 312.
 Long Island, N. Y., 60.
 Longbottom, Thomas, 313.
 Longham, 154, 226.
 Look (Looke). Elizabeth, 187.
 Jonathan, 146.
 Mary, 145, 146.

- Loomis, John, 10, 160, 282.
 Mary, 282.
 Looney, John, 168.
 William, 168, 169.
 Lord, Dorothy, 122, 386.
 Emeline, 330.
 Martha Clark, 331.
 Miriam, 390.
 Richard, 360.
 Robert, 230.
 Samuel, 331.
 Susan Harris, 330.
 William, 3, 9, 10, 31, 68, 91, 107,
 137, 155, 180, 226, 282, 301,
 386, 398, 433, 434.
 Lords of Trade, 351.
 Lord's Increase (ship), 367.
 Lost goods, 74.
 Lothrop. See *Lathrop*.
 Louisburg, C. B., 22.
 Expedition against, 22.
 Louisville, Ky., 306.
 Love (Luff), Bridget, 15, 411, 412.
 John, 15, 231, 322.
 Lovell, Alexander, 178.
 Elizabeth, 178.
 Thomas, 98, 99.
 Lovett, Abigail, 70.
 Agnes, 70.
 Benjamin, 70.
 Bethiah, 70, 411.
 Elizabeth, 70, 425.
 Hezekiah, 425.
 John, 6, 70, 98, 99, 120, 159, 170,
 203, 417.
 Joseph, 70.
 Josiah, 70.
 Mary, 70, 71, 411, 414.
 Samuel, 70.
 Simon, 70.
 Susanna, 70.
 Thomas, 70.
 Lowell, John, 359.
 Rebecca, 230.
 Lowell, Mass., 237.
 Lowell Island, 237.
 Lowestoft, England, 42.
 Lowther, Elizabeth, 375.
 John, 375.
 Luckin, William, 122, 200.
 Lucy (ketch), 367.
 Luff. See *Love*.
 Lufkin, Mary, 103.
 Sarah, 330.
 Lumm's, Edward, 244.
 Lunenburg, Mass., 110, 115, 134,
 144, 325.
 Luscomb, Elizabeth, 45, 79.
 Luscomb, *continued*,
 Hannah, 319.
 Lydia, 123.
 Samuel, 123, 319.
 Susannah, 45.
 William, 45.
 Luther, Martin, 24.
 Nathan, 24.
 Polly, 24.
 Lutwyche, Lawrence, 299.
 Sarah, 286, 299.
 Luxor, George, 213.
 Hannah, 213.
 Lyde, Edward, 38.
 Susanna, 38, 357.
 Lyman, Charlotte, 385.
 Lyme, Conn., 123.
 Lyme, England, 86.
 Lynde, Benjamin, 339, 340.
 Hannah, 340.
 Mary, 339, 340.
 William, 339, 340.
 Lyndeborough, N. H., 93, 113, 116,
 139.
 Lyndhurst, Lord, 317.
 Lyndon, Augustine, 369.
 Lynn, Mass., 4, 22-24, 30, 40-42,
 50, 54, 55, 57, 62, 66-70, 76,
 103, 105, 109, 110, 124, 132,
 134, 137, 140, 143-145, 169,
 187, 193, 194, 197, 201, 228,
 231-233, 271, 273, 280, 288,
 294, 299-301, 308, 311, 330,
 332, 336, 375, 380, 383, 404,
 427.
 Bounds of, 66.
 Lynnfield, Mass., 66, 112, 144, 210.
 Lyon. See *Lion*.
 MABBETT, Mary, 56.
 Maber, Mary, 376.
 Macall, Duncan, 213.
 Macarter, John, 391.
 Rebecca, 391.
 MacGregor, Hannah, 384.
 John, 384.
 Machias, Me., 170.
 Mackcarwithe, Abigail, 146.
 James, 146.
 Mackerel Cove, 3, 70, 71, 99, 120,
 127, 140, 158, 173, 175, 180,
 184, 203, 201, 206.
 Mackey, Daniel, 340.
 Esther, 339.
 Margaret, 92.
 William, 92.
 Mackintire, Joseph, 317.
 Philip, 295.

Mackintire, *continued*,

Rebecca, 82, 295.

Mackmillion (Mackmallin, Mackmallon, Mackmillian), Abigail, 236.

Alexander, 236.

Allister, 235, 323, 399.

Elizabeth, 235, 236, 323.

Eunice, 236.

Hannah, 236.

James, 82.

John, 139, 236.

Jonathan, 23, 236.

Joseph, 236.

Kezia, 236.

Mary, 82, 236.

Preserved, 139.

Rachel, 23, 236.

Rebecca, 236.

Sarah, 236.

Timothy, 236.

Madeira, Island of, 360, 362.

Madockawando, 349.

Magee, Susan, 103.

Maine, 106.

Maine (ship), 379.

Malcolm, Ann Sophia, 115.

Malden, Mass., 46, 134, 426, 427.

Malloon, Daniel, 340.

Manhattas, 362.

Manchester, Mass., 13, 79, 103, 123, 133, 151, 172-175, 191, 197, 206, 214, 394, 408.

Incorporation of, 174.

Manning, Abigail, 390.

Anna, 389.

Anna Louisa, 390.

Anstice, 388, 389.

Benjamin, 236, 389.

Daniel C., 96.

Daniel Cogswell, 390.

Elizabeth, 389.

Elizabeth Clarke, 390.

Frances Wilkins, 390.

Francis Brown, 390.

George, 390.

George Francis, 390.

Hannah, 223, 236, 389.

Jacob, 389.

Jane, 389.

Joanna, 389.

John, 389, 390.

Joseph, 223, 389, 390.

Judith, 390.

Katherine, 389.

Louisa, 390.

Marcellina R., 390.

Margaret, 389.

Manning, *continued*,

Maria, 390.

Maria Miriam, 390.

Miriam, 390.

Mary, 383, 389, 390.

Mary Elizabeth, 390.

Miriam, 390.

Nicholas, 9, 159, 321, 350, 370, 388, 389, 401, 402.

Priscilla Miriam, 390.

Rebecca, 389, 390.

Rebecca Dodge, 390.

Richard, 388-390.

Richard Clarke, 390, 391.

Robert, 389, 390.

Ruth, 389.

Samuel, 389, 390.

Sarah, 389, 390.

Sarah Elizabeth, 390.

Susan, 390.

Thomas, 389, 390.

William, 390.

Man-of-War (ketch), 367, 370.

Mansfield, Conn., 23.

Mansfield, Andrew, 122.

Anne, 102.

Hannah, 24.

Isaac, 45.

Jonathan, 102.

Lucretia Derby, 381.

Lucy, 137.

Margaret, 45.

Mary, 122.

Matthew, 24.

Paul, 240, 424.

Sarah, 44.

Manufacture, 220.

Mappor, William, 301, 415.

Maranham, 106.

Marble, Daniel, 23, 111.

Emma, 297.

Esther, 111.

Hannah, 110.

John, 24.

Kezia, 113.

Mary, 23.

Ruth, 24.

Marblehead, Mass., 2, 3, 13, 20, 22, 23, 27, 28, 34, 40, 45, 47, 48, 65, 66, 75, 77-79, 97, 98, 100-102, 107, 119-122, 124, 125, 133, 139, 141, 149, 156, 157, 161, 166, 176-179, 181, 185, 187, 196-202, 216, 219, 223, 232, 237, 241, 279, 300, 312, 320, 323, 328-332, 340, 342-346, 349, 351, 352, 361, 377, 382, 383, 387, 403, 405, 425.

- Marblehead, *continued*,
 Marblehead gate, 26.
 Records, 196.
 Church, 200, 202.
 Margaret (ketch), 367.
 Markets, 35, 189.
 Marckham, Daniel, 391.
 Deborah, 391.
 Marks, George, 313.
 John, 123.
 Sarah, 123.
 Marriage, 72.
 Marsh, —, 70.
 Bethiah, 383.
 Elizabeth, 277.
 Emma Frances, 83.
 John, 205, 228.
 Katherin, 217.
 Mary, 216, 383.
 Ruth, 376.
 Samuel, 277.
 Susannah, 205.
 Zachariah, 383, 403.
 Marshall, Edmond, 3, 62, 213.
 Marshalls, 182, 400.
 Marshfield, Mass., 79.
 Marsters (Masters), Benjamin, 216.
 Deborah, 213, 216.
 Edward, 216.
 Elizabeth, 216.
 Francis, 216.
 Hannah, 216.
 John, 213, 216.
 Jonathan, 216.
 Moses, 216.
 Nathaniel, 216.
 Samuel, 216.
 Marston, Abigail, 78.
 Alice, 78.
 Benjamin, 7, 9, 78, 79, 358.
 Bethiah, 79, 119.
 Damaris, 44.
 Deliverance, 218.
 Elizabeth, 78, 79, 218.
 Ephraim, 78.
 Hannah, 78, 218.
 James, 78.
 Jeffs, 79.
 Jephah, 79.
 John, 7, 9, 20, 78, 79, 159, 160,
 178, 193, 240, 369, 402, 403.
 Joseph, 78, 79.
 Lucy, 79.
 Lydia, 78, 313.
 Manasseh, 7, 9, 10, 78, 160, 240,
 321, 350, 358, 402, 403, 434.
 Margaret, 79.
 Mary, 78, 79, 123, 218.
 Marston, *continued*,
 Mehitable, 78, 79.
 Mercy, 20, 78, 79.
 Miriam, 79.
 Patience, 78, 79.
 Penelope, 79.
 Ruth, 78, 79, 328.
 Samuel, 78.
 Sarah, 78, 79, 218.
 Susanna, 78, 79.
 Thomas, 78, 79.
 William, 218, 255.
 Winslow, 79.
 Zachariah, 79.
 Martha and Mary (ketch), 367.
 Martha's Vineyard, 137, 240.
 Martin, Abigail, 374.
 David, 137.
 Elizabeth, 21.
 Jacob, 45.
 Lucy, 45.
 Mary, 137.
 Martin's Vineyard Sound, 367.
 Mary (ketch), 367.
 Mary (sloop), 367.
 Mary and Eliza (brig), 384.
 Mary and Jane (ship), 29.
 Mary and John (vessel), 149, 252.
 Mary Ann (ship), 30, 71, 315, 368.
 Maryland, 278, 360, 372.
 Mascoll, Anna, 179.
 Benjamin, 178.
 Bethiah, 178.
 Christopher, 178.
 David, 178.
 Eleanor, 178.
 Elizabeth, 178.
 Ellen, 178.
 Hannah, 178, 179, 383.
 Hester, 178.
 James, 178, 179.
 John, 75, 178, 310, 322, 383, 402,
 403.
 Jonathan, 178.
 Joseph, 178, 179.
 Mary, 178, 179, 224, 333.
 Mehitabel, 178.
 Mercy, 179.
 Nicholas, 178.
 Patience, 178, 277.
 Preserved, 178.
 Ruth, 178, 179.
 Sarah, 75, 178, 179.
 Stephen, 178, 179.
 Thomas, 178, 179, 363.
 Mason, Abigail, 375.
 Amos, 40.
 Elias, 9, 194, 215, 227, 234, 290.

- Mason, *continued*,
 Elizabeth, 194.
 Hannah, 194, 234.
 Jane, 40, 194.
 John, 234, 235.
 Jonathan, 313.
 Martha, 194.
 Mary, 194.
 Preserved, 236.
 Sarah, 4, 194.
 Susannah, 224, 313.
 Thomas, 236, 375.
 Massachusetts Horticultural Society, 390.
 -Massey, Jeffrey, 5, 7-10, 62, 66, 97, 99, 100, 119, 122, 141, 151, 152, 158, 189, 200, 212, 219, 227, 231, 237, 302, 308, 401, 402, 408.
 John, 6, 99, 159, 160, 240, 267, 398, 402, 403.
 Louisa, 390.
 Mary, 305.
 Nathaniel, 23.
 Rachel, 23.
 Rebecca, 133.
 Sarah, 101.
 Masts for the King, 399.
 Masury, Elizabeth, 24.
 Elizabeth P., 315.
 Margaret, 332.
 Martin, 360.
 Mary, 104.
 Richard, 387.
 Sarah, 45, 387.
 Susanna, 102.
 William, 102.
 Matanzas, Cuba, 105, 378.
 Mather, Cotton, 285.
 Mathews, John, 236.
 Sarah, 236.
 Mathewson, Catheran, 174.
 Matlock, England, 19.
 Maugerville, N. B., 377.
 Maule, Deliverance, 271.
 Elizabeth, 271.
 John, 271.
 Joseph, 271.
 Margaret, 271.
 Naomi, 271.
 Peleth, 133, 271.
 Sarah, 133, 271.
 Susanna, 271.
 Thomas, 7, 64, 160, 271-275, 402, 434.
 Maury. See *Morey*.
 Maverick, Mary, 139.
 Moses, 2, 10, 13, 27, 34, 47, 176,
 Maverick, *continued*,
 179, 181, 196-200, 346, 399, 418.
 Sarah, 112.
 Maybury, Hannah, 139.
 Mayfield, Sarah, 233.
 Mayflower (ship), 1, 2, 368.
 Mayhew, Thomas, 240.
 Mayo, Eliza Ann., 138, 379.
 Josiah, 138, 379.
 McDonald, Gertrude A., 138.
 McIntire, Esther, 320.
 John, 376.
 Lois, 376.
 Meachum, Goodman, 160.
 Alice, 391.
 Bethia, 391.
 Deborah, 391.
 Ebenezer, 391.
 Hannah, 391.
 Ichabod, 391.
 Isaac, 391.
 Israel, 391.
 Jeremiah, 10, 160, 252, 391.
 John, 391.
 Jonathan, 391.
 Joseph, 391.
 Lydia, 391.
 Margaret, 391.
 Mary, 252, 391.
 Priscilla, 391.
 Rebecca, 391.
 Rhoda, 391.
 Sarah, 76, 391.
 Mears, Abigail, 313.
 Medford, Mass., 105, 116, 117, 141.
 Medical practice, 292, 323.
 Meekins, Thomas, 263, 264.
 Meeting house, 93, 228, 419, 430-434.
 Care of, 64, 434.
 Enlargement of, 62-64.
 hatch, 157.
 Heating of, 430.
 Seating of, 228, 430-434.
 Quaker, 273.
 Melcomb Regis, Dorchestershire, England, 327.
 Melzard, Ann B., 331.
 Mendon, Mass., 43, 55, 76, 324, 339.
 Mercantile Bank, 57.
 Merchants National Bank, 385.
 Merriam, Elizabeth, 304.
 Merrill, Abbie C., 39.
 Merritt, Mary, 100.
 Nicholas, 2, 100, 196, 197.
 Sarah, 24.

- Merriweather, Edward, 368.
 Metcalf, Elizabeth, 425.
 Ruth, 20.
 Thomas, 20.
 Methuen, Mass., 134.
 Micklefield, William, 340, 341.
 Middleton, Mass., 32, 47, 110, 115,
 125, 188, 206, 277, 294-298,
 300, 377, 394, 396, 441.
 Middleton, Richard, 233.
 Mighill, Elizabeth, 392.
 Samuel, 392.
 Milborne, Peter, 360.
 Miles, Abigail, 233.
 Elizabeth, 233.
 Exercise, 233.
 Joseph, 233, 281, 399.
 Mary, 233.
 Sarah, 110, 233.
 Susanna, 233.
 Military, 68, 156, 161, 169, 180,
 206, 290, 322, 349.
 Milk, Elizabeth, 312.
 John, 312, 313.
 Mary, 312.
 Sarah, 312.
 Mill lane, 190.
 Millbridge, Me., 377, 378
 Miller, John, 229.
 Millett, Elizabeth, 141.
 Rebecca Chapman, 125.
 Mills, 11, 68, 99, 108, 132, 141,
 155, 158, 166, 171, 185, 189,
 190, 199, 231, 336, 429.
 Grist, 99, 185, 189, 190, 199, 336.
 Saw, 68, 429.
 Mills, Elizabeth Ropes, 380.
 Robert, 380.
 Millord, John, 9.
 Milod, Frances K., 41.
 Milton, Mass., 385.
 Miner, George R., 381, 382.
 Mary Stocker, 381.
 Mingo beach, 316.
 Ministry, 76, 289.
 Minot, N. D., 118.
 Mint, 214.
 Misery Islands, 240, 241.
 "Missive". "The King's", 268.
 Mitchell, Elizabeth, 143.
 Lydia, 278.
 Mary Jane, 381.
 Winfield S., 381.
 Mobile, Ala., 384, 425.
 Money, 214, 290, 327.
 Monk, General, 14.
 Montrose, Cal., 138, 382.
 Moody, Deborah, 142.
 Moody, *continued*,
 Henry, 142.
 Moore (Moor, More, Moores),
 Widow, 75, 166.
 Caleb, 1, 2, 193.
 Christian, 1, 2.
 Ellen, 1.
 Jane, 1.
 Jasper, 1.
 John, 156, 172.
 Joshua, 1.
 Mary, 187.
 Richard, 1, 2, 9, 10, 75, 287, 348,
 356, 371, 373, 398, 403.
 Samuel, 1, 2.
 Sarah, 2.
 Susanna, 1.
 Thomas, 1, 2, 145, 172, 403.
 Moors, The, 350.
 Moreshed, Benjamin, 298.
 Sarah, 298.
 Morey (Maury), Roger, 9, 13, 19,
 116, 304.
 Morgan, David, 364.
 Deborah, 133.
 Joseph, 133.
 Moses, 319.
 Robert, 3, 8, 203, 215, 221, 410,
 411, 414, 417.
 Moriarty, Deborah, 137.
 Thomas, 137.
 Morong, Jemima, 319.
 John, 45.
 Martha, 45.
 Thomas, 319.
 Morrill, Esther, 98.
 Green, 98.
 Morris, Ill., 104.
 Morris, W., 269.
 Morse, Alice F., 382.
 Elizabeth, 139.
 Leopold, 400.
 Lillian, 427.
 Thomas, 139.
 Mortlake, Conn., 404.
 Moseley, Elizabeth, 306.
 Moses, Eleazer, 101.
 Hannah, 101.
 Joseph, 310.
 Mosier, Isabel, 398.
 Mott, Cassandra, 54.
 Harriet Elizabeth, 384.
 Jacob, 54.
 John N., 384.
 Mould, Mary, 280.
 Thomas, 280, 402.
 Moulton, Batt. 226.
 Elizabeth, 82, 193, 210.

- Moulton, *continued*,
 Hannah, 226, 276.
 James, 9, 75.
 John, 193.
 Josiah, 124.
 Margaret, 31.
 Margaret Ellen, 381.
 Mary, 43, 124.
 Robert, 3, 4, 9, 14, 43, 130, 165,
 193, 204, 217, 438.
 Samuel, 82.
 William, 31.
 Moulton's brook, 192.
 Moulton's Misery Island, 240.
 Mountegue, Robert, 192.
 Mowle, Edward, 421.
 Mowser (Mousar), John, 73, 76.
 Mudgett, Thomas, 361.
 Mulford, Hannah, 53.
 Munnion, Edward, 23.
 Sarah, 23.
 Munroe, Hannah, 163.
 Murphy, Annie E., 138.
 Murray, Mary, 105, 224.
 Sarah, 224.
 Thomas, 224.
 Muscat, 225.
 Musgrave, Lydia, 230.
 Muskeet, Bridget, 205.
 Mussey, Judith, 56.
 Ruth, 55.
 Mylord, Harriet, 138.
- NAHANT, Mass., 318.
 Nancy (brig), 315.
 Nantucket, Mass., 3, 223, 264.
 Narbonne, Sarah, 425.
 Narragansett War, 299.
 Nashua, N. H., 138.
 Nathaniel (ship), 313, 325.
 Naumkeag Trust Company, 306.
 Navy, 103, 125.
 Neal (Neale), Abial, 124.
 Abigail, 123.
 Alice H., 125.
 Anne, 123.
 Annis, 123.
 Anstiss, 123.
 Benjamin, 123, 124.
 Benjamin Baldwin, 124, 125.
 Betsey, 123.
 Caroline A., 125.
 Caroline Frothingham, 215.
 Catherine, 76.
 Charles H., 125.
 David, 123, 124.
 David Augustus, 124, 125.
 Deborah, 123.
- Neal, *continued*,
 Dorothy, 122.
 Elizabeth, 82, 123-125.
 Elizabeth Boardman, 125.
 Elizabeth Matingini Whittridge,
 125.
 Esther Ann, 124.
 Eunice, 123, 124.
 George Harding, 125.
 George L., 125.
 Hannah, 103, 123-125.
 Hannah C., 125.
 Harriet Charlotte, 125.
 Henry, 125.
 James Monroe, 125.
 Jane, 124.
 Jeremiah, 9, 10, 39, 122, 123, 133,
 159, 160.
 Jeremy, 159.
 John, 6, 9, 10, 122, 123, 132,
 158, 167, 232, 366, 403.
 Jonathan, 103, 122-124, 272.
 Joseph, 122-125, 160, 388.
 Joseph W., 125.
 Judith, 123, 388.
 Katherine, 123.
 Louisa, 125.
 Lydia, 122-124, 133.
 Margaret J., 124.
 Margaret Maria, 125.
 Martha, 123-125.
 Mary, 39, 122-124, 339.
 Mary Ellen, 125.
 Mehitable, 124.
 Mercy, 123.
 Nathan Ward, 124.
 Rebecca, 123.
 Rebecca Chapman, 125.
 Robert, 76, 123.
 Robert Buffum, 124.
 Rufus B., 125.
 Sarah, 122-124, 133.
 Sarah Ann, 124.
 Sarah H., 125.
 Theodore Augustus, 125.
 Theodore Frederick, 124, 125.
 Thomas, 123.
 William, 124.
 William Francis, 125.
 William Henry, 124.
 William Silver, 125.
- Neck, The, 6, 289, 318, 332.
 Necke, John, 373.
 Needham, Abigail, 210, 211.
 Ann, 210, 252, 254.
 Anna, 210, 254.
 Anthony, 210, 240, 247, 252, 253.
 Benjamin, 210.

- Needham, *continued*,
 Daniel, 40, 210.
 Dorothy, 210.
 Eliza Peele, 211, 379.
 Elizabeth, 210.
 George, 210.
 Hannah, 210.
 Humphrey, 210.
 Isaac, 210.
 Jasper, 43, 210.
 John, 210, 211.
 Judith, 375.
 Lydia, 210.
 Martha, 210.
 Mary, 43, 210, 211.
 Molly, 211.
 Nathaniel, 210, 211.
 Provided, 210.
 Rachel, 210.
 Rebecca, 210.
 Robert, 210.
 Ruth, 210.
 Sally, 211.
 Sarah, 40, 210, 211, 299.
 Seeth, 210, 329.
 Stephen, 210.
 Thomas, 210, 211, 329.
 William, 210.
 Negroes, 37.
 Nelson, Elizabeth, 111.
 Netherlands, 346.
 Neves, Goodie, 231.
 Nevis, 29, 347.
 New Boston, N. H., 330.
 New Brighton, N. Y., 106.
 New Brunswick, 377.
 "New England's Persecutors", etc., 268.
 New Hampshire, 211.
 New Haven, Conn., 108, 128, 306, 347, 361.
 New London, Conn., 2, 14, 17.
 New Orleans, La., 104, 211, 378.
 New Salem, Mass., 54, 113, 114, 300, 325, 391.
 New York, N. Y., 21, 53, 71, 82, 83, 104, 106, 116, 144, 191, 225, 347, 370, 378-381, 384, 389.
 Newbury, Mass., 45, 47, 62, 109-111, 114, 120, 149, 151, 166, 187, 218, 226, 227, 230, 253, 352, 392, 420, 441.
 Newbury, Sarah, 3.
 Newburyport, Mass., 115, 139.
 Newcastle, Pa., 123.
 Newfoundland, 85, 348, 364.
 Newgate, England, 90.
 Newgate, *continued*,
 prison, 258.
 Newhall, Amos, 55.
 Elizabeth, 24, 425.
 Gilbert, 95.
 Margaret, 55.
 Newman, Antipas, 14, 17, 414.
 Elizabeth, 14, 17.
 Robert, 211, 212.
 Ruth, 278.
 Newmarket, England, 86.
 Newmarket, N. H., 21, 224, 381.
 Newport, R. I., 24, 39, 40, 60, 136, 172, 236.
 Newton, Mass., 83.
 Nicholale, Charles, 403.
 Nichols, Abigail, 277.
 Andrew, 105, 396.
 Ann, 276.
 Anne, 123.
 Cassandra, 56.
 David, 24.
 Ebenezer, 22, 276.
 Elizabeth, 22, 32, 276.
 George, 34.
 Hannah, 47, 295.
 Isaac, 295.
 John, 22, 47, 295.
 Lydia, 47, 295, 297.
 Margaret, 297.
 Martha Ann, 24.
 Mary, 40, 47, 252.
 Mary Holyoke, 105.
 Priscilla, 268.
 Sarah, 295.
 Stephen, 56.
 Thomas, 40, 276.
 William, 42, 47, 219, 252.
 Nichols brook, 206, 400.
 Nicholson, Christopher, 166.
 Edmund, 197.
 Edward, 166.
 Elizabeth, 166.
 Jane, 262.
 John, 166.
 Joseph, 166, 262-264, 266.
 Samuel, 166.
 Thomas, 166.
 Nick, Mary, 405.
 William, 405.
 Ning-po, China, 106.
 Nixon (Nicks), Elizabeth, 48, 73.
 Mathew, 48, 73, 74, 212.
 Nathan, 373.
 Noman's meadow, 185.
 Noonan, Mary, 105.
 Norfolk County, 145.
 Norman, Elizabeth, 139.

- Norman, *continued*,
 John, 9, 173, 197, 200, 240, 347,
 398, 408, 432.
 Richard, 3, 109, 130, 139, 155,
 197.
 Norris, Abiel, 82.
 Ada L., 83.
 Ann, 82.
 Caroline Agnes, 83.
 Caroline M., 83.
 Charles, 83.
 Charles Henry, 83.
 Charles S., 83.
 Clara C., 83.
 Dolly, 83.
 Dorothy, 82, 432.
 Edward, 82, 83, 91-93, 125, 158,
 166, 177, 185, 192, 216, 228,
 229, 248, 285, 293, 346, 402.
 Eliza H., 83.
 Elizabeth, 82, 83.
 Elizabeth Holman, 83.
 Emma Frances, 83.
 Esther, 82.
 George, 82, 83.
 George Henry, 83.
 Hannah M., 83.
 Helen M., 83.
 Henry, 82.
 Henry L., 83.
 Henry Lee, 82, 83.
 James, 82.
 Jeremiah, 82, 83.
 Joanna, 82.
 John, 82, 83, 402.
 Judith, 82.
 Lizzie, 83.
 Lydia, 82.
 Mary, 82.
 Rebecca, 82.
 Remember, 82.
 Sarah, 82.
 Sarah Ann, 83.
 Sarah K., 83.
 Thomas, 82.
 Vivian May, 83.
 William M., 83.
 William S., 83.
 Norris brook, 234.
 North Andover, Mass., 396.
 North Beverly meeting house, 397.
 North Carolina, 306.
 North Collins, N. Y., 56.
 North field, 12, 42, 133, 141, 157-
 161, 215, 218, 227, 404, 422.
 North Reading, Mass., 376.
 North River, 308.
 North Yarmouth, 55.
 Northampton, Mass., 106.
 Northampton, N. J., 54.
 Northey, John, 197.
 Northport, Me., 139.
 Norton, Mass., 162.
 Norton, George, 8-10, 21, 173, 174.
 John, 159, 256, 259, 260, 288.
 Joseph, 2.
 Susanna, 2.
 Norwalk, Conn., 65.
 Norwich, England, 49.
 Nottinghamshire, England, 57.
 Nourse (Nurse), Aaron, 144, 145.
 Abigail, 143, 144.
 Allen, 144.
 Amee, 144.
 Amos, 144.
 Anna, 144.
 Benjamin, 143, 144, 387.
 Caleb, 144.
 Catherine Elizabeth Ellison, 145.
 Cynthia B., 145.
 Daniel, 143.
 Debby, 144.
 Deborah, 143, 144.
 Dorcas C., 145.
 Dorothy, 143.
 Dorothy K., 145.
 Ebenezer, 143, 144.
 Ede, 144.
 Edith H., 145.
 Edward, 144.
 Eli, 144.
 Elijah, 144.
 Elizabeth, 113, 115, 143, 144.
 Elizabeth F. P., 145.
 Elizabeth Matingini Whittridge,
 125.
 Elizabeth Prince, 145.
 Eunice, 113, 143, 144, 163.
 Francis, 9, 10, 100, 113, 143,
 144, 149, 158, 322, 404.
 Frederick Rand, 125.
 George, 143, 144.
 Hannah, 143, 144.
 Harrie K., 145.
 Harriet Matilda, 145.
 Harriet S., 145.
 Henry Prince, 145.
 Howes, 144.
 Jacob, 144.
 James, 143.
 Jane, 144.
 John, 143, 144.
 Jonathan, 143.
 Joseph, 143, 144.
 Lucy H., 145.
 Lydia, 143.

- Nourse, *continued*,
 Margaret, 143, 144, 387.
 Martha, 143, 144.
 Mary, 143, 144.
 Mary G., 145.
 Michel, 144.
 Nathaniel, 143.
 Peter, 144.
 Phebe, 143, 144.
 Philip, 144.
 Rea, 144.
 Rebecca, 21, 143, 144, 188, 433.
 Roger, 144.
 Rufus, 144.
 Sally, 144.
 Samuel, 143, 144.
 Sarah, 115, 143, 144.
 Tomasin, 143.
 Vesta S., 145.
 William, 144, 145.
 Nova Scotia, 113.
 Noyes, Nicholas, 46.
 Thomas, 209.
- OAKES, Caleb, 165.
 Elizabeth, 204.
 Oakham, Mass., 325.
 Oatly, Adam, 198.
 Ober, Abigail, 133.
 Andrew, 124.
 Anne, 133.
 Hannah, 425.
 Mary, 116.
 Sarah Ann, 124.
 Thomas Woodbury, 425.
 Odell, Benjamin, 134.
 Sarah, 134.
 Odlin, Elisha, 28.
 Offat, Nathan, 44.
 Rachel, 44.
 Offley, Thomas, 352.
 Old Corner Bookstore, 426.
 Old Ladies' Home, 385.
 Oleron, Laws of, 365.
 Oliver, Captain, 269.
 Benjamin Lynde, 340, 341.
 Bridget, 181.
 James, 259.
 Mary, 49, 51, 156, 216, 340.
 Peter, 340, 341.
 Ruth, 41, 305.
 Sarah, 340.
 Thomas, 9, 49, 51, 61, 107, 181,
 199, 208, 399.
 Orange, Hannah, 20.
 Robert, 20.
 Orchard, Endecott's, 189.
 Ordinaries, 22, 24, 67, 74, 100, 189.
- Ordinaries, *continued*,
 Downing's, 22.
 Hewes, 67.
 Preston's, 22.
 Procter's, 24.
 Sandin's, 100.
 Ormes (Orms), Elizabeth, 216.
 John, 228, 240.
 Ormsby, England, 31, 78.
 Orne, Elizabeth, 112.
 John, 9, 320.
 Jonathan, 112, 136.
 Margaret, 236.
 Mary, 136.
 Samuel, 95.
 Sarah, 320.
 Timothy, 94, 95, 307.
 Orr, Susanna, 55.
 Osborne (Osborn), Abigail, 163.
 Alexander, 31, 33.
 Amos, 55.
 Ann Hendfield, 137.
 Cornelia Allen, 426.
 Eleanor, 54, 376.
 Elizabeth, 76, 97.
 Eunice, 163.
 Frederick Manton, 426.
 Hannah, 40, 56.
 Isaac, 124.
 John, 40, 54, 97.
 Jonathan, 387.
 Joseph, 325.
 Lydia, 55, 124, 387.
 Margaret, 40.
 Mercy, 54.
 Nancy, 41.
 Patience, 76.
 Rachel, 325.
 Samuel, 54, 76.
 Sarah, 31, 33.
 Thomas, 340.
 William, 7, 9, 137, 160.
 Osgood, Charles, 105.
 Hannah, 303, 313.
 Henry, 382.
 Joseph, 102.
 Laura Titus, 382.
 Lucretia, 102.
 Mary Shepard, 38.
 Nathaniel, 303, 313.
 Peter, 356.
 Susanna, 105.
 Oswego, N. Y., 112.
 Ottignon, Lucy Ann, 387.
 Owen, Margaret, 387.
 William, 387.
 Oxford, Mass., 389.
 Oxman, William, 396.

Oyster Bay, L. I., 83.
Oyster River, N. H., 266, 391.

PACY, Katherine, 42.
Nicholas, 42, 60, 149.
Paddock, Deborah, 2.

Zechariah, 2.

Page, Francis, 31.

Hannah, 31.
Hazleton, 46.
Isaac, 253, 254.
John, 164.
Lucy, 31.
Lydia, 113, 114.
Margaret, 31, 155.
Martha Ellen, 378.
Mary, 31, 116.
Mary Ann, 46.
Mary J., 387.
Rebecca, 31.
Robert, 31.
Sarah, 114, 164.
Susanna, 31.
Thomas, 31.
Timothy, 113, 114.

Paine (Payne), Mr., 206.

Dorothy, 149.
Elizabeth, 148, 149.
Frank M., 382.
Ida F., 382.
John, 149.
Mary, 71, 149, 383.
Sarah, 149.
Thomas, 62, 148, 149, 368, 403.
William, 167, 199, 359.

Palfrey (Palfray), Elizabeth, 77.

Hannah, 319.
Margaret, 328, 389.
Peter, 8-10, 77, 107, 156, 194, 301.
Sarah, 117.
Thomas, 117.
Walter, 389.

Palmer, Edward, 14.

Lucy, 14.
Mary, 141.
Richard, 141.

Para, Brazil, 379.

Parker, Abraham, 224.

Hannah, 224.
Lawrence, 83.
Vivian May, 83.

Parkman, Deliverance, 7, 9, 183, 184, 357, 363, 402.

Mehitable, 38.
Susanna, 183.

Parlet, Mr., 390.

Parlin, Hannah, 325.

Parmiter, Benjamin, 30, 173.

Parris, Elizabeth, 445.

Samuel, 444, 445.

Parrott, Abigail, 278.

Abner, 278.

Parsonage, Beverly, 407, 408.

Salem, 276, 286.

Parsons, Josiah, 21.

Susannah, 21.

Partridge, Emma Ann, 387.

Pascataway, 16.

Pasque, Sarah, 375.

Patch, Abraham, 70.

Benjamin, 71.

Caroline, 380.

Caroline M., 138.

Edmond, 70.

Elizabeth, 71, 203, 411, 414.

Ethel Arnold, 331.

Eunice, 70.

Hannah, 203.

James, 6, 71, 203, 231, 232, 408.

John, 6, 10, 71, 154, 159, 179, 203, 299, 402, 410.

Maria, 71.

Mary, 71, 203.

Nicholas, 70, 71, 184, 194, 206, 411, 414, 417, 418.

Richard, 71.

Sarah, 71.

Stephen, 71.

Thomas, 71.

Warner P., 138.

Warren P., 380.

William, 71.

Patient Betty (ketch), 368.

Patten, David, 384.

Sarah, 384.

Patterson, Elizabeth B., 378.

Mary, 382.

Sarah, 106.

William, 286.

William B., 378.

Pattin, Thomas, 140.

Patty, Nathaniel, 283.

Pauley, Benjamin, 185.

Pawtucket, R. I., 34.

Peabody, Mass., 3, 19, 23, 36, 44, 47, 53, 56, 66, 76, 98, 99, 157, 183, 193, 210, 221, 229, 234, 244, 246, 248, 252, 257, 259, 273, 301, 318, 325, 332, 376, 382, 419, 420, 423, 435.

Peabody, Deborah, 224.

Francis, 230.

Hannah, 111.

Mary, 134.

Nathan, 111.

- Peabody, *continued*,
 Ruth, 134.
 Thomas, 134.
 Peach, John, 2, 47, 48, 179, 196-198, 200.
 Pearce (Pearse, Peirce, Pierce), Mr., 107.
 Abigail, 211.
 Abraham, 23.
 Calvin, 244.
 Elizabeth, 34, 378.
 Eunice, 236.
 George, 34.
 John, 236.
 Lewis, 426.
 Louisa Mansfield, 426.
 Marmaduke, 73.
 Mary, 23.
 Mercy, 78.
 Nathan, 34.
 Prudence S., 138.
 Rebecca, 378.
 Rebecca Allen, 378.
 Sally, 211.
 William, 361, 366, 368.
 Pease, Elizabeth, 319, 396.
 Gertrude, 197.
 Henry, 177, 197, 202.
 Isaac, 396.
 John, 11, 158-160, 402, 403.
 Nathaniel, 319.
 Robert, 99, 213, 322.
 Samuel, 367.
 Peaslee, Lydia, 20.
 Peck, John M., 384.
 Rebecca, 384.
 Sarah, 384.
 Thomas, 384.
 Peel (Peale, Peele), Elizabeth, 224, 226.
 Eunice, 315.
 George, 261.
 Jonathan Willard, 384.
 Lydia, 45.
 Margaret, 141.
 Sarah Ann, 384.
 William, 224.
 Pelican (ship), 348.
 Pelican (sloop), 368.
 Pemaquid, 349.
 Pembroke, 187.
 Pembroke, England, 86.
 Penacook, N. H., 311.
 Penelope (ketch), 368.
 Penn, Robert, 43.
 Pennsylvania, 78, 122, 365, 368.
 Penny. Robert, 46.
 Penobscot River, 170.
 Pepin, James, 351.
 Pepperell, Mass., 315, 425.
 Pequot War, 374.
 Perambulation of town lines, 66, 185.
 Perkins, Ada L., 39.
 Deborah, 391.
 Elizabeth, 111.
 Harriet, 426.
 Harriet Maria, 380.
 Isaac, 329.
 John, 391.
 Joseph, 163.
 Mary, 163, 426.
 Olive, 329.
 William, 111.
 Perley, Anna, 163.
 Aphia, 163.
 Asa, 163.
 Eliphalet, 163.
 Elizabeth, 110.
 Eunice, 110.
 Francis, 110, 117.
 Huldah, 110.
 Maria Adelia, 42.
 Rebecca, 112.
 Ruth, 117.
 Sarah, 117.
 Thomas, 110.
 Perry, Abbie B., 331.
 Francis, 165, 180, 188, 194, 217.
 Perry's wigwam, 207.
 Pester, William, 5, 30, 31, 99.
 Peter (Peters), Benjamin, 305.
 Deliverance, 80, 84, 86.
 Elizabeth, 80, 84.
 Gilbert, 361, 367.
 Hugh, 5, 14, 27, 47, 48, 52, 60, 69, 72, 79-90, 91, 148, 150, 151, 198, 304, 359.
 Sarah, 305.
 Peter's pulpit, 151.
 Petford, Peter, 201.
 Pettingall, Joanna, 151.
 Mary, 47.
 Nathaniel, 151.
 Richard, 151, 165, 402.
 Petty, Peter, 349.
 Pew, George W., 315.
 Mary Ann, 315.
 Phelps, Abigail, 376.
 Christopher, 402.
 Elizabeth, 80, 84.
 Francis, 248.
 Hannah, 252, 260, 261.
 Henry, 119, 209, 248, 257, 304, 313.
 John, 68, 110.

Phelps, continued,

- Nicholas, 6, 234, 248, 251-257, 260, 268.
- Rachel, 119.
- Samuel, 402.
- Philadelphia, Pa., 118, 271, 380, 426.
- Phillips, Elizabeth, 70, 237.
 - Hannah, 116.
 - Henry, 237.
 - Jacob, 32.
 - John, 147, 149, 150.
 - Lydia, 277.
 - Richard, 70.
 - Samuel, 233.
 - Sarah, 32, 233.
 - Stephen, 34.
- Philpot, Elizabeth, 425.
 - John, 425.
- Phippen (Phippeny), Abbie B., 331.
 - Abbie L., 331.
 - Abbie M., 331.
 - Abiel, 328.
 - Abigail, 102, 305, 328, 329.
 - Alice M., 382.
 - Amme, 328.
 - Ann, 327, 328, 330.
 - Ann B., 331.
 - Ann Maria, 330.
 - Anna, 330.
 - Anna Kennedy, 330.
 - Anna Maud, 331.
 - Anne, 143, 327, 330.
 - Anstiss, 328-330.
 - Arthur, 331, 332.
 - Arthur Henry, 331.
 - Atwater, 328.
 - Barbara Emily, 331.
 - Becca, 330.
 - Benjamin, 78, 224, 304, 327, 330.
 - Benjamin Cook, 330, 331.
 - Benjamin Franklin, 330.
 - Benjamin Howard, 331.
 - Betsey Bass, 331.
 - Caroline Barton, 331.
 - Carrie Lillian, 331.
 - Charles, 330.
 - Charles Endecott, 331.
 - Charlotte, 330.
 - Charlotte Lane, 330.
 - Cromwell, 328.
 - Damaris, 327, 391.
 - Daniel, 327.
 - David, 3, 9, 143, 189, 327-331, 363, 402.
 - Dorcas, 327.
 - Ebenezer, 238-330.

Phippen, continued,

- Edith Whipple, 331.
- Edward A., 331.
- Eleanor Gifford, 331.
- Eliza, 330.
- Elizabeth, 44, 327-330.
- Elizabeth Chamberlain, 331.
- Elizabeth M., 331.
- Elizabeth Russell, 331.
- Emeline, 330.
- Esther Adams, 330.
- Ethel Arnold, 331.
- Eunice, 329, 330.
- Eunice Louise, 331.
- Gamaliel, 327.
- George, 327, 330.
- George Barton, 331.
- George Dean, 330, 331.
- George Stodder, 331.
- Geraldine, 332.
- Hannah, 224, 328, 329.
- Hardy, 329, 330.
- Harriet Ellen, 331.
- Henry, 329.
- Henry Osgood, 331.
- Israel, 327, 328, 330.
- James, 328-330.
- Jane, 328.
- Jane West, 332.
- Joan Almira, 332.
- John, 327-329.
- John Prince, 331.
- Jonathan, 328.
- Joseph, 6, 7, 9, 10, 327-329, 391, 398, 402, 403.
- Joseph E., 331.
- Joseph H., 330.
- Joseph Hardy, 330.
- Joshua, 329-331.
- Joshua B., 331.
- Lois, 330.
- Lucy, 330.
- Lydia, 328-330.
- Margaret, 328, 329, 331.
- Margaret Barton, 331.
- Margaret Chamberlain, 331.
- Maria, 329.
- Martha, 328.
- Martha Ann, 331.
- Martha C., 331.
- Martha Clark, 331.
- Mary, 298, 315, 328, 386.
- Mary A., 330, 331.
- Mary Dustin, 331.
- Mary Eliza, 331.
- Mary Elizabeth, 331, 332.
- Mary Massey, 330.
- Mary R., 331.

- Phippen, *continued*,
 Mehitable, 328.
 Moses Hitchings, 330.
 Nancy, 329, 330.
 Nathan, 328, 329.
 Nathaniel, 328-331.
 Olive, 328, 329.
 Peggy, 330.
 Polly, 330.
 Priscilla, 329.
 Rachel, 44, 118, 328.
 Rebecca, 3, 327-330, 386.
 Rebecca Maria, 329.
 Richard Dane, 332.
 Robert, 327.
 Robert Jordains, 331.
 Rufus, 329.
 Ruth, 78, 304, 328.
 Sally, 330.
 Samuel, 9, 118, 189, 327-330, 386, 433.
 Samuel Webb, 331.
 Sarah, 327-330.
 Sarah Addie, 331.
 Sarah E., 330, 331.
 Seaborne, 327.
 Seeth, 210, 329.
 Stephen Sims, 330.
 Steven, 328.
 Susan Harris, 330.
 Susan Kennedy, 330.
 Susanna, 304, 327-329.
 Thomas, 298, 328-330.
 Ursula, 329.
 Ursula K., 330.
 Ursula Symonds, 330.
 Walter Gray, 331.
 William, 329, 330.
 William Trumbull, 331.
 Pickering, Alice, 20, 139.
 Benjamin, 168.
 Elizabeth, 383.
 Eunice, 123.
 Hannah, 383.
 Jane, 143.
 John, 6, 7, 9, 10, 20, 60, 63, 64, 66-68, 130, 132, 158-160, 168, 194, 221, 232, 238, 281, 282, 322, 337, 338, 345, 401-403, 421, 432.
 Jonathan, 143, 337, 421.
 Joseph, 23.
 Mary, 23, 141.
 Timothy, 282.
 William, 123, 168.
 Pickering house, 281.
 Pickett, Anna, 330.
 Daniel, 188.
 Pickett, *continued*,
 Jacob, 188.
 James, 188.
 John, 188, 218.
 Rebecca, 188.
 Sarah, 188, 225.
 Thomas, 188.
 Pickman. *See Pitman.*
 Abigail, 15, 93, 298.
 Benjamin, 9, 15, 46, 279, 298.
 Bethiah, 15.
 Anna, 377.
 Elizabeth, 15, 279.
 Hannah, 15, 65.
 Isannah, 15.
 John, 65, 101.
 Joseph, 15.
 Margaret, 101.
 Mary, 15.
 Nathaniel, 9, 10, 15, 158, 198, 226, 238, 354, 402.
 Parina, 15.
 Rachel, 102.
 Samuel, 9, 233, 238, 421.
 Sarah, 38.
 Tabitha, 15.
 William Dudley, 384.
 Pickton (Picden, Pigden), Ann, 69.
 Thomas, 69, 158, 159, 194, 214, 218, 234, 312, 402, 407, 408, 417.
 Pickworth, John, 75, 173, 333.
 Samuel, 78, 333.
 Sarah, 78.
 Pike, Abigail, 328.
 Ebenezer, 44.
 Hannah, 44.
 Israel, 165.
 John, 165.
 Nathaniel, 328.
 Pilgrim, Thomas, 362.
 Pilgrims, 148, 357.
 Pillory, 134.
 Pine meadow, 114.
 Pink (pink), 368.
 Pine Tree shilling, 214.
 Pingree, David, 244.
 Pinkham Memorial, 1.
 Pinson, Rebecca, 120.
 William, 120, 160, 355.
 Pirates, 237, 347-350, 367, 370.
 Piscataqua River, 259, 261, 266.
 Pitford, Peter, 177, 197.
 Pitman. *See Pickman.*
 Atwood, 233.
 Bethiah, 383.
 Elizabeth, 233.

- Pitman, *continued*,
 Joshua, 233.
 Lydia, 233.
 Mary, 137.
 Michael, 137.
 Nathaniel, 10, 69, 352, 353.
 Peter, 233.
 Samuel, 233.
 Sarah, 233.
 Thomas, 197, 199, 201.
 Pitt, William, 201, 418.
 Plain farm, 198, 344.
 Plaice, William, 145.
 Plaisted, Mary, 324.
 Planters marsh, Old, 234.
 Plantin, John, 103.
 Sarah, 103.
 Platts, Sarah, 55.
 Pleasantville, N. Y., 306.
 Plummer, Beatrice, 62.
 Francis, 62.
 Plymouth, England, 359, 372.
 Plymouth, Mass., 2, 42, 79, 128,
 166, 174, 245, 247.
 Point of Rocks, 7.
 Poland, 148.
 Poland (Powllen), Betsey, 139.
 James, 7, 160, 402.
 Pollard, George, 197.
 Poller, Hannah, 55.
 Pomeroy, John, 279, 324.
 Mary, 324.
 Pomfret, Conn., 32, 33, 112, 116.
 Pond farm, 198.
 Pool (Poole), Daniel, 191.
 Elizabeth, 102.
 Lucy Ann, 378.
 William, 37, 102.
 Poor, Elizabeth Russell, 331.
 Judith, 304.
 Mary, 304.
 Tamson S., 225.
 Walter Everett, 331.
 Pope, Benjamin, 268.
 Bethiah, 56.
 Damaris, 39, 268.
 Ebenezer, 40.
 Eleazer, 40.
 Elizabeth, 40, 210.
 Enos, 40.
 Eunice, 44, 116.
 Gertrude, 276.
 Hannah, 40, 112, 404.
 Joseph, 3, 7, 9, 66, 111, 192, 232,
 248, 252, 253, 257, 302, 402, 404.
 Joshua, 56.
 Lydia, 40.
 Martha, 4.
 Pope, *continued*,
 Mary, 40.
 Mehitable, 111.
 Nathaniel, 391.
 Priscilla, 391.
 Samuel, 4.
 Stephen, 40.
 Port Royal, 170, 171, 349.
 Porter, Abigail, 162, 163.
 Allen, 164.
 Amos, 163.
 Ann, 161.
 Anna, 162, 163.
 Anna S., 382.
 Anne, 161.
 Apphia, 111, 163.
 Asa, 163.
 Asahel, 163.
 Bartholomew, 163.
 Benjamin, 161-163, 165.
 Bethiah, 162.
 David, 163.
 Ebenezer, 163.
 Edith, 162.
 Eleanor, 162.
 Eleazer, 162, 163, 277.
 Eliezer, 162.
 Elizabeth, 110, 111, 162, 163.
 Eunice, 61, 163.
 Ezra, 163.
 Francis, 163.
 George, 163.
 Ginger, 162, 163.
 Hannah, 161-163.
 Helen Maria, 380.
 Hephzibah, 162.
 Huldah, 163, 164.
 Israel, 7, 9, 111, 161-165, 401.
 James, 163.
 John, 5, 6, 9, 10, 111, 158, 161-
 165, 180, 183, 184, 188, 192,
 205, 207, 209, 215, 223, 226-
 229, 279, 291, 301, 333, 334,
 352, 353, 399, 401, 402, 405,
 417, 419, 429, 432, 434, 438,
 439.
 Jonathan, 61, 161-163, 189, 219,
 224, 403.
 Joseph, 161-163, 277, 309, 334,
 335, 402, 403, 438, 441.
 Josiah, 162.
 Love, 162.
 Lucy Gardner, 425.
 Lydia, 112, 162, 163, 277.
 Martha, 164.
 Mary, 32, 115, 161-163, 277.
 Mehitable, 24, 162, 163.
 Nathan, 162, 163.

- Porter, *continued*,
 Nathaniel, 9, 64, 162.
 Peter, 164.
 Phebe, 162, 164.
 Priscilla, 162, 277.
 Ruth, 162.
 Sadie A., 382.
 Samuel, 161-163, 228.
 Sarah, 111, 161-164.
 Susanna, 224.
 William, 162, 163, 425.
 William H., 380.
- Portland, Me., 56, 444.
- Portrait painter, 317.
- Portsmouth, N. H., 20, 102, 106, 330.
- Portsmouth, R. I., 54.
- Potomac River, 372.
- Potter, Ann, 210.
 Anne, 98.
 Judith, 98.
 Lydia, 111.
 Nicholas, 301, 302, 402.
 Rebecca, 76, 98.
 Ruth, 389.
 Samuel, 76.
 Thomas, 98.
- Pound, 65, 157, 189, 233.
- Pound, Thomas, 367.
- Powder, 227.
- Powell, William, 323, 391.
- Powling, Anstice, 389.
 James, 216, 389.
 Mary, 216.
- Prance, Philip, 365.
- Praser, Thomas, 323.
- Pratt, Caroline H., 381.
 Margaret, 184, 325.
- Prescott, Edward, 360.
 Hannah, 92.
 Peter, 403, 445.
- Preston, Conn., 111, 205, 358.
- Preston, Aaron, 22.
 Andrew, 237.
 Anna, 22.
 Betsey, 118.
 Daniel, 22.
 David, 21, 22.
 Elizabeth, 21, 22, 32.
 Hannah, 22, 113, 124, 332.
 Jacob, 21.
 John, 21, 22, 113, 124.
 Jonathan, 21.
 Joseph, 22.
 Joshua, 22.
 Levi, 22.
 Martha, 21.
 Mary, 21, 22, 237.
- Preston, *continued*,
 Moses, 22.
 Philip, 22, 112.
 Rebecca, 21, 22, 143, 376.
 Roger, 21, 22.
 Ruth, 112.
 Samuel, 21.
 Susanna, 21.
 Thomas, 21, 22, 143.
- Price, Anne, 120.
 Elizabeth, 97, 120, 121, 235, 303, 338, 363.
 Freestone, 121.
 Hannah, 120, 121.
 Harriet Charlotte, 125.
 John, 5, 9, 67, 68, 120, 121, 192, 239, 363, 366, 370, 373, 401-403.
 Joseph, 303.
 Mary Elizabeth, 331.
 Mathew, 303, 304, 374, 399.
 Nathaniel, 240.
 Richard, 331.
 Samuel, 120.
 Sarah, 121, 303.
 Theodore, 46, 96, 120, 228, 422.
 Walter, 5, 7, 9, 10, 46, 120, 121, 134, 158, 212, 228, 237, 292, 302, 311, 323, 336-338, 342, 346, 351, 353, 357, 358, 360, 361, 363, 365, 366, 368, 373, 374, 401-403, 434, 440.
 William, 120, 121, 363.
- Pride, John, 346.
 Mary, 70.
 William, 360.
- Pride's mountain, 205.
- Priest, Elizabeth, 319.
 Hannah, 391.
 James, 333.
 John, 391.
- Prime, Thomas H., 341, 342.
- Prince, Abel, 32, 33.
 Abigail, 32.
 Amos, 32.
 Anna, 32.
 Anne, 32.
 Asa, 32.
 Bethiah, 31.
 Betty, 33.
 Charity, 32.
 Daniel, 32.
 David, 32-34.
 Ebenezer, 32.
 Elizabeth, 4, 32, 75.
 Emme, 32, 112.
 Ezra, 32, 112.
 Hannah, 32, 33, 74, 75, 178, 383.

Prince, *continued*,

Huldah, 32, 33.
 James, 32-34, 111.
 John, 32, 33, 34, 74, 75.
 Jonathan, 32, 74, 162, 300.
 Joseph, 4, 32, 33, 74, 75, 160, 383.
 Lydia, 31, 32, 300.
 Martha, 32, 384.
 Mary, 32, 33, 74, 75, 113, 162, 304.
 Nathan, 32.
 Phebe, 32, 33.
 Rebecca, 31, 109.
 Richard, 9, 10, 74, 75, 77, 151, 158, 159, 205, 302, 304, 308, 321, 358, 401, 421.
 Robert, 6, 7, 31-33, 74, 187, 195, 211, 228, 400, 402, 403, 438, 439.
 Ruth, 32.
 Samuel, 32, 33, 74.
 Sarah, 31-33, 74, 75, 178, 205.
 Solomon, 32.
 Stephen, 32.
 Susanna, 32, 74.
 Timothy, 32, 33, 113.
 William, 32.
 Princeton, N. J., 83.
 Prior, Mathew, 60.
 Sarah, 60.
 Prison, Boston, 245, 249-251.
 Salem, 318, 392, 393.
 Pritharch, Richard, 9, 402.
 Proctor (Procter), Abigail, 22-24.
 Augusta Pierce, 25.
 Benjamin, 22-25.
 Caroline Elizabeth, 25.
 Charles Edward, 25.
 Charles Frederick, 25.
 Daniel, 23, 24.
 Deborah, 24.
 Desire, 24.
 Eben, 24.
 Ebenezer, 23, 24, 300.
 Elisha, 23.
 Elizabeth, 22-25, 92.
 Elizabeth Hathorne, 25.
 Elizabeth M., 25.
 Francis, 23.
 Francis Pierce, 25.
 George Frederick, 25.
 Hannah, 22-24.
 Horace Masury, 25.
 Jacob, 23, 24.
 John, 6, 9, 22, 23, 25, 92, 402, 433.
 Jonathan, 23, 24.
 Joseph, 22-24, 92.

Proctor, *continued*,

Joseph Holman, 25.
 Keziah, 23.
 Lydia, 23, 24, 325.
 Martha, 22-24, 105.
 Martha Ann, 24.
 Mary, 22-25, 92, 93, 300, 390.
 Mary Elizabeth, 25.
 Mehitabel, 24.
 Nathan, 23, 24.
 Polly, 24.
 Priscilla, 23, 324.
 Prudence, 24.
 Rachel, 23, 236.
 Robert, 23, 24.
 Ruth, 24.
 Samuel, 23.
 Sarah, 22-24, 55.
 Sarah Ellen, 25.
 Sarah G., 25.
 Sarah Holman, 25.
 Stephen, 24.
 Sylvester, 23.
 Thorndike, 23-25, 325.
 William, 23-25.
 William Henry, 25.
 Proctor's Crossing, 19.
 Prospect Hill, 205.
 Prosperous (ketch), 368.
 Providence (ship), 368.
 Providence (ketch), 368.
 Providence, R. I., 65, 187, 380.
 Providence, W. I., 321, 361.
 Provincial Congress, 389.
 Pudeator, Ann, 398.
 Isaac, 398.
 Isabel, 398.
 Jacob, 398.
 Pudney, Johanna, 404.
 John, 43, 284.
 Judith, 43.
 Mary, 284.
 Puerto Cabello, 21.
 Pulsifer, Sarah, 315.
 Punchard, John, 104.
 Sarah, 104.
 Punishments, 30.
 Purchase, Abraham, 356.
 Hannah, 43.
 Ruth, 179, 356.
 Thomas, 43, 348.
 Purington, Abijah, 56.
 Anne, 41.
 Daniel, 56.
 Hannah, 56.
 "Puritanismus Anglianus", 148.
 Putnam, Aaron, 113, 114, 117.
 Abide, 114.

Putnam, *continued*,

Abigail, 110, 113, 115, 116, 297.
 Abraham, 117.
 Ada, 118.
 Adaline, 118.
 Adelaide Martha, 118.
 Alice Edmands, 118.
 Alice Louise, 118.
 Alice Rebecca, 379.
 Allen, 112.
 Amos, 111-113, 116, 117.
 Andrew, 116.
 Ann, 109.
 Ann Sophia, 115.
 Anna, 109, 110, 112, 114-117, 300.
 Anne, 114.
 Apphia, 111, 163.
 Archelaus, 111, 113-117.
 Asa, 112, 115.
 Asahel, 116.
 Augusta, 118.
 Bartholomew, 110, 111, 114, 117, 118.
 Benjamin, 109, 111, 113, 117, 300, 445.
 Bethiah, 113, 115, 117.
 Betsy, 118.
 Betty, 113, 115.
 Billings, 115.
 Caleb, 111, 113, 115, 116.
 Caroline Matilda, 118.
 Charles Appleton, 118.
 Charles Fiske, 118.
 Charles Gideon, 117.
 Clarissa, 115.
 Cornelius, 111.
 Cynthia, 118.
 Daniel, 111-114, 116, 117, 377.
 David, 110-112, 114, 117, 300.
 Deborah, 112.
 Deliverance, 109, 110.
 Eben, 118.
 Ebenezer, 110, 111, 114, 117, 118.
 Ede, 113.
 Edmund, 112, 116.
 Edward, 7, 109, 110, 118, 402, 445.
 Elbridge Gerry, 118.
 Eleanor, 110, 114.
 Eleazer, 109, 111, 114, 115.
 Elijah, 115, 117.
 Elisha, 110, 112, 114.
 Eliza, 118.
 Elizabeth, 109-118, 162, 276, 300, 420, 422.
 Elizabeth Cabot, 117.
 Elizabeth W. A., 118.
 Ellen Maria, 118.

Putnam, *continued*,

Emma, 112.
 Emme, 112.
 Enoch, 114.
 Enos, 112.
 Ephraim, 113, 116.
 Esther, 111.
 Esther Orne, 118.
 Ethel Appleton, 118.
 Eunice, 110, 112-114, 116, 117, 144.
 Experience, 110.
 Ezra, 110, 112.
 Florence, 118.
 Frances Tuttle, 118.
 Francis, 116, 118, 379.
 Francis Goodhue, 118.
 Frederick Ward, 118.
 George, 118.
 George Granville, 118.
 Gideon, 113, 117.
 Granville A., 118.
 Hannah, 22, 32, 109-117, 216, 445.
 Hannah Phillips, 117.
 Hannah Wier, 115.
 Harriet, 118.
 Hattie W., 118.
 Helen M., 118.
 Henry, 111, 116, 117.
 Holyoke, 110.
 Houlton, 114.
 Huldah, 110, 114, 116, 278.
 Isaac, 110.
 Israel, 110-113, 115, 116.
 Jacob, 113, 116.
 James, 109, 111, 114, 116, 117.
 James Phillips, 116.
 Jephtha, 111.
 Jeremiah, 117.
 Jerusha, 111.
 Jesse, 112.
 Jethro, 110, 111, 114.
 John, 5, 9, 10, 31, 66, 109-112, 115, 117, 162, 165, 166, 207, 214, 216, 217, 219, 228, 230, 232, 233, 298, 312, 400-403, 409, 438, 439, 443, 445.
 John Fisk, 118.
 John Pickering, 117.
 John Preston, 118.
 Jonathan, 7, 9, 109-111, 114, 117, 300, 445.
 Joseph, 109, 110, 112, 114-116, 162, 277, 377, 422, 443.
 Joshua, 111, 113.
 Josiah, 110-112, 115.
 Kezia, 113.
 Levi, 117.

Putnam, continued,

Loisa, 117.
 Lucy, 112, 115.
 Lydia, 111-115, 117, 162, 277.
 Margaret, 109, 110, 117, 118.
 Margery, 110.
 Martha, 114.
 Mary, 33, 109-117, 162, 163, 277.
 Mary Ann, 117, 118.
 Mary E., 118.
 Mary Eliza, 118.
 Matthew, 111.
 Mehitabel, 110-113, 115, 116, 377.
 Miriam, 111, 113, 116, 278.
 Mitchell, 115.
 Moses, 111, 114, 115.
 Nabby, 117.
 Nanny, 114.
 Nathan, 111, 112, 114-117.
 Nathaniel, 6, 7, 9, 10, 66, 109, 111, 113, 116, 159, 189, 194, 205, 207, 208, 214, 230, 232, 234, 239, 279, 301, 312, 395, 400-402, 438-440, 442, 443.
 Nehemiah, 110.
 Nicholas, 109.
 Olive, 116.
 Oliver, 112, 115.
 Patience, 116.
 Perley, 117, 118.
 Perley Zebulon Montgomery Pike, 118.
 Peter, 112, 114-116.
 Peter Schuyler, 112.
 Phebe, 109, 112, 116, 332.
 Philip, 116.
 Phineas, 111, 113.
 Porter, 115.
 Priscilla, 109-111, 113, 118.
 Prudence, 109, 110.
 Rachel, 110, 112, 113, 116, 117.
 Rebecca, 31, 109-112, 114, 115, 445.
 Rebecca Augusta, 118.
 Rebecca Cleves, 118.
 Roger, 115.
 Rufus, 110, 113, 114.
 Ruth, 104, 109-112, 114-118, 277, 286.
 Samuel, 109-115, 117, 420.
 Sarah, 109-118, 162, 163, 278, 300, 445.
 Sarah Goll, 117.
 Seth, 110.
 Silence, 115.
 Solomon, 113, 114, 116.
 Stephen, 111, 113, 114, 116.

Putnam, continued,

Susannah, 109-111, 114, 116, 117, 300.
 Tarrant, 111, 113, 114, 163.
 Thomas, 6, 7, 9, 10, 66, 109-112, 115, 189, 207-209, 223, 227, 229, 232, 233, 311, 395, 400-403, 429, 439, 441, 443, 445.
 Timothy, 110, 113, 115.
 Uzziel, 113.
 William, 110-112, 114, 115, 117, 118.
 William Henry Appleton, 118.

QUAKER Persecution, 242-275.
 Quakers, 39, 53, 55, 76, 196, 242-275, 289, 318, 327.
 Quebec, Can., 280.
 Quincy, Charles Francis, 426.
 Etta Molineux, 426.
 Quinpiack (New Haven, Conn.), 16.

RADOUX, Francis, 390.

Susan, 390.
 Ramsford, Priscilla, 2.
 Solomon, 2.
 Rand, Clara Thorndike, 426.
 Randall, Mary, 161.
 Ruth, 315.
 Randolph, Edward, 351.
 Rantoul, Harriet Charlotte, 125.
 Robert Samuel, 125.
 Rattlesnake Hill, 205.
 Rawson, Ann, 300.
 Edward, 371, 417.
 Ray (Rea), Bartholomew, 428.
 Daniel, 7, 9, 10, 98, 111, 133, 165, 166, 188, 219, 227, 230, 402, 428.
 Ebenezer, 117.
 Elizabeth, 32.
 Hannah, 144.
 Jemima, 136.
 John, 299.
 Joshua, 6, 7, 9, 10, 402, 403, 438, 439, 441, 445.
 Keziah, 300.
 Lydia, 117, 324.
 Mary, 22, 111, 299.
 Sarah, 32, 445.
 Raymond, Me., 390.
 Raymond (Rayment, Remont), Alfred A., 41.
 Bathsheba, 233.
 Emily F. M., 41.
 Hannah, 181, 411.
 Jennie Abbott, 107.

- Raymond, *continued*,
 John, 9, 10, 154, 158, 159, 215,
 279, 402, 410, 417.
 John Marshall, 107.
 Richard, 9, 147, 299, 365.
 Samuel, 41.
 Sarah Slade, 41.
 William, 6, 9, 181, 417.
 Razilly, —, 170.
 Read (Reade, Reed), Colonel, 421.
 Ensign, 62, 108.
 Aaron, 421.
 Abigail, 40.
 Alice, 62.
 Bethiah, 62.
 Christian, 277.
 Daniel, 44, 56.
 Desire, 44.
 Edward, 14.
 Eleanor, 56.
 Elizabeth, 14.
 Esdras, 9, 10, 97, 135, 145, 154,
 402.
 Haffield White, 384.
 Isaac, 377.
 James, 360.
 John, 44.
 Lydia, 44.
 Martha, 92.
 Mary, 24, 111.
 Mathew, 60.
 Obediah, 62.
 Rebecca, 384.
 Ruth, 377.
 Sarah, 384.
 Thomas, 13, 60, 125, 155, 166,
 177, 180, 192, 217, 422.
 Reading, Mass., 21-23, 45, 54, 55,
 110, 111, 113, 119, 136, 143-
 145, 209, 230, 234, 276, 277,
 288, 295, 301, 329, 376-378,
 383, 404.
 Records, 72, 194, 219.
 Recovery (ship), 369.
 Red rocks, 205.
 Reddin, Sarah, 32.
 Thomas, 32.
 Reddington, Abraham, 208.
 John, 208.
 Redford, Charles, 9, 10, 366, 402.
 Redman, Mr., 169.
 Reeves, Abigail, 141.
 Benjamin, 141.
 Cockerel, 141.
 Elizabeth, 140, 141.
 Freeborn, 141.
 Hannah, 141.
 Jacob, 140, 141.
 Reeves, *continued*,
 Jane, 140.
 John, 140, 141, 159, 192.
 Judith, 141.
 Margaret, 141.
 Mary, 141.
 Mercy, 141.
 Nathaniel, 141.
 Samuel, 141.
 Sarah, 141.
 Susanna, 141.
 William, 141.
 Rehoboth, Mass., 75, 82, 181.
 Reith, Richard, 200.
 Return (ship), 369.
 Return (ketch), 369.
 Revere, Mass., 39, 427.
 Revolution, 110, 112, 117, 124, 163,
 278, 305, 325, 332, 377.
 Reynolds (Renolds, Renalds),
 Henry, 58, 125, 151, 234, 402,
 403.
 Sarah, 125.
 Rhoads, Eliza, 330.
 Rhode Island, 31, 40, 59, 172, 196,
 210, 243, 245-247, 250, 259,
 260, 263, 267.
 Rial Side, 14, 158, 178, 206, 218,
 301, 302.
 Rice, Annie L., 381.
 Charles W., 381.
 Hannah, 238.
 Matthias, 238.
 Rich, Mary, 376.
 Rachel, 376.
 Thomas, 376.
 Richard (bark), 106.
 Richards, Abigail, 76.
 Anne, 14.
 Daniel, 22.
 Elizabeth, 22, 141.
 Jesse Mayne, 425.
 John, 14, 76.
 Mary, 188.
 Mary Bradshaw, 425.
 Richard, 141.
 Sarah E., 379.
 Richardson, Ann, 137.
 Anne Warren Brazer, 426.
 Eunice, 112, 377.
 Hannah, 124.
 Lydia, 188.
 Nancy, 137.
 Nathaniel, 112.
 Robert, 225.
 Samuel Pierpont, 426.
 Sarah, 225.
 Stephen, 124.

- Richardson, *continued*,
 William, 137.
 Ricker, George B., 378.
 James, 124.
 Mary, 124.
 Mary Elizabeth, 378.
 Rider, Ellen A., 382.
 Riland, Joanna, 283.
 Ring, Anna, 330.
 Rio Grande, Brazil, 379.
 Rising, Elizabeth, 230.
 James, 230, 301.
 Ritter, James, 124.
 Mary, 124.
 Riverside, Ill., 425, 426.
 Rix, Bridget, 205.
 Elizabeth, 205.
 Hannah, 205.
 Hester, 205.
 James, 205, 358.
 Lydia, 205.
 Margaret, 101, 205.
 Mary, 205.
 Remember, 205.
 Sarah, 205.
 Susanna, 205.
 Theophilus, 205.
 Thomas, 10, 101, 159, 205, 218,
 333, 399, 402.
 Roads, 5, 130, 342-344.
 Roanoke, 372.
 Robbins, Elizabeth, 112.
 Isabel, 120.
 Lucy, 387.
 Mary, 120.
 Thomas, 6, 9, 120, 158-160, 206,
 227, 228, 234, 308, 402.
 Roberts, Abiah, 20.
 Hannah, 113, 328.
 John, 360.
 Joseph, 328.
 Richard, 311.
 Robinson, Abel, 4.
 Anna, 3.
 Annie, 4.
 Elias, 4.
 Elizabeth, 4, 32, 141.
 Gordon, 315.
 Hannah, 123.
 Hester, 3.
 Isabelle, 3.
 Jane, 4.
 Job, 4.
 John, 3, 4, 9, 50, 51, 60, 148,
 160, 169, 178, 193, 194, 279,
 309, 324, 398, 402.
 Joseph, 3, 4.
 Lydia, 104.
 Robinson, *continued*,
 Margaret, 279.
 Martha, 3, 4.
 Mary, 3, 4, 133, 135.
 Nathaniel, 4.
 Samuel, 3, 4, 123, 271.
 Sarah, 3, 4, 194.
 Susanna, 4.
 Susanna Archer, 315.
 Thomas, 4.
 Timothy, 3, 4, 135.
 Whittemore, 4.
 William, 3, 4, 166, 203, 258-261,
 271, 276, 304, 403.
 Rochdale, Mass., 138.
 Rochelle, France, 14, 170, 351.
 Rochester, N. Y., 125.
 Roff, Daniel, 295.
 Elizabeth, 295.
 Marjary, 296.
 Rogers, Abigail, 32.
 Elizabeth, 61.
 Florence Alice, 427.
 Hannah, 404.
 Jeremiah, 189, 402.
 John, 7, 61, 160, 189, 402.
 Joseph, 399.
 Joshua, 399.
 Judah, 404.
 Roles, Peter, 365.
 Rolfe, Apphia, 230.
 Benjamin, 230.
 Elizabeth, 111.
 Hannah, 296.
 Root (Roots), Arthur M., 381.
 Bethiah, 70.
 Grace, 381.
 Joseph, 158, 159, 169, 410, 411.
 Joshua, 222.
 Josiah, 10, 170, 203, 214, 227,
 411, 414, 417.
 Richard, 3.
 Thomas, 9, 10, 36, 158, 159, 192,
 215, 247, 254, 263, 264, 402,
 417, 431, 433.
 Ropes, Ann, 28, 328.
 Benjamin, 28, 29, 328.
 Daniel, 237.
 Ebenezer, 315.
 Elizabeth, 315.
 Frances Wilkins, 390.
 George, 9, 28, 51, 402.
 George Nathan, 379.
 Hannah, 29.
 Jane, 104.
 John, 318.
 Lydia, 123, 236.
 Nathaniel, 117.

- Ropes, *continued*,
 Priscilla, 237, 379.
 Priscilla Lambert, 379.
 Samuel, 123.
 Sarah, 101, 117, 124.
 Sarah Sophia, 380.
 Thomas, 28.
 Rosario, Brazil, 379.
 Rose, Edward, 328.
 Mary, 328.
 Ross, Mary, 54.
 Rotterdam, Holland, 148, 150.
 Routh, Abigail, 93.
 Richard, 93.
 Rowden, John, 191.
 Mary, 191.
 Rowell, Hannah, 224.
 Joseph, 105.
 Priscilla L., 105.
 Thomas, 224.
 Rowland, Richard, 27, 177, 197-199,
 202, 343, 344, 433.
 Rowley, Mass., 55, 107, 110, 145,
 146, 199, 313, 325, 352, 396.
 Rowley Village (Boxford), 146,
 400, 441.
 Roxbury, Mass., 72, 84, 118, 141,
 224, 225, 375, 441, 442.
 Royal Act of Trade, 351.
 Royal Neck, 127, 227.
 Royal Society, England, 17.
 Ruck, Mr., 75, 166.
 Abigail, 97, 98.
 Bethiah, 97, 98.
 Damaris, 39, 97, 98.
 Elizabeth, 97, 98, 120, 338.
 Esther, 98.
 Hannah, 97, 98.
 James, 97, 98, 316.
 John, 5, 9, 10, 39, 97, 98, 120,
 159, 160, 189, 198, 214, 219,
 239, 288, 315, 316, 336, 337,
 339, 358, 362, 366, 369, 370,
 400-403, 422, 432, 434.
 Martha, 98.
 Mary, 97, 98.
 Rebecca, 97, 98.
 Ruth, 97, 98.
 Samuel, 97, 98, 316, 317.
 Sarah, 97, 98.
 Stephen, 97.
 Thomas, 97, 98, 218, 316, 350,
 358, 402.
 William, 98.
 Ruck's tree, 343.
 Ruck's Village, 350.
 Rue, Sara, 224.
 Susanna, 224.
 Rue, *continued*,
 Thomas, 224.
 Rum bridge, 6.
 Rumball, Alice, 156, 375.
 Daniel, 11, 156, 158, 159, 240,
 270, 286, 302, 320, 333, 420.
 Sarah, 11, 156.
 Rumford, Me., 116.
 Rupton, John, 376.
 Russell, Abigail, 37, 38, 236, 277.
 Anna, 377.
 Benjamin Webb, 390.
 Eliza H., 83.
 Elizabeth, 143.
 Henry, 315, 363.
 James, 37.
 John, 3, 377.
 Maria Ruth, 315.
 Mary Elizabeth, 390.
 Richard, 199, 369.
 Robert, 277.
 Ruth, 112.
 William, 143.
 Russia, 148.
 Rust, Elizabeth M., 25.
 John, 306.
 Susan, 306.
 Rutland, Mass., 325.
 Ruyter, Admiral de, 347.
 SABBATH, 49, 50, 185, 187.
 Sables, Isle of, 362.
 Saco (ship), 315.
 Saco, Me., 266.
 Safford, Dolly, 83.
 Sarah B., 381.
 Sage, Daniel, 384.
 Deborah, 384.
 Margaret, 118.
 Salem, Mass., 1-445.
 Salem and Boston Stage Com-
 pany, 390.
 Salem Hospital, 1, 306, 356.
 Salem Lead Company, 385.
 Salem Observer, 425.
 Salem Savings Bank, 384, 385.
 Salem Village, 275-277, 419, 421,
 430, 435-445.
 meeting house, 443.
 parsonage, 443.
 Salisbury, Mass., 2, 109, 165, 352,
 361, 409, 441.
 Salisbury, Jane, 21.
 Sallows, Freeborn, 193.
 Hannah, 411, 414.
 Michael, 151, 155, 185.
 Robert, 193.
 Thomas, 228, 240, 291.

- Salmon (Salmonds, Samon), Clement, 283.
 Elizabeth, 219, 283.
 George, 218, 219.
 Joanna, 283.
 John, 219, 283.
 Mary, 219, 283.
 Remember, 218.
 Samuel, 264, 283.
 Sarah, 57.
 Susanna, 219.
 William, 57.
 Salt, 14.
 Salt house, 14, 16, 17.
 Salt house point, 16, 17.
 Salt making, 14.
 Saltatudas, 364.
 Saltmarsh, Deborah, 95.
 Saltonstall, Elizabeth Sanders, 385.
 Georgiana Crowninshield, 384.
 Henry, 384.
 Richard, 126, 167, 217, 218.
 Saltpeter, 69, 126.
 Sampson, Cyrian, 282.
 John, 282, 417.
 Mary, 282.
 Sarah, 282.
 Sams (Sam), Thomas, 47, 78, 179.
 Samuel (ship), 383.
 Samuel (brig), 378.
 San Diego, Cal., 390.
 San Francisco, Cal., 379.
 Sanborn, Elizabeth, 105.
 Elizabeth M., 331.
 Ira, 105.
 Sarah, 379.
 Sanbornton, N. H., 102.
 Sander, Abigail, 98.
 Philemon, 89.
 Sanders (Saunders), Edward Augustus, 426.
 Elizabeth, 135.
 Esther, 75.
 Hannah, 15.
 Helen May, 426.
 John, 9, 15, 108, 126, 135, 213, 268, 356, 432.
 Return, 268.
 Sandin (Sanden, Sands, Sandy), Arthur, 100, 179, 197, 198, 201.
 Margaret, 100.
 Mary, 100.
 Sandwich, England, 62.
 Santa Clara, Cal., 380.
 Santiago, Cuba, 379.
 Sargent (Sergeant), Lydia, 56.
 William, 231.
 Sattle, Sarah, 216.
 Saugus, Mass., 282, 376, 377.
 Savage, Thomas, 221, 346, 418.
 Savannah, Ga., 115, 425.
 Savory, Harriet Ellen, 380.
 Sawing lumber, 131.
 Sawyer, John, 226.
 Sarah, 226.
 William, 151.
 Saybrook, Conn., 65.
 Scadlock, Elizabeth, 375.
 Scales, James, 146.
 Sarah, 146.
 Scarcemaid's Hill, 42.
 Scaremaid's Hill, 42.
 Scarlet, Widow, 97.
 Benjamin, 6, 7.
 Elizabeth, 375.
 Schoolhouses, 91-93.
 Schools, 91-96.
 Scituate, Mass., 123.
 Scollay, Margaret, 117.
 Scot, 213, 281.
 Scotchman, 94.
 Scotland, 14, 235, 348, 376.
 Scott, Edith H., 145.
 John, 187.
 Robert, 78.
 Scottow, Joshua, 351.
 Scripture, Abigail, 116.
 Scruggs, Thomas, 5, 9, 10, 108, 193.
 Scudder, Elizabeth, 127.
 Hannah, 127.
 Henry, 127.
 John, 127, 178.
 Mary, 127.
 Penelope, 127.
 Thomas, 127, 134, 188, 192.
 William, 127, 203.
 Seagel, Lydia Henfield, 104.
 William, 104.
 Seagrave, William, 308, 434.
 Seal, 364.
 Seale, Edward, 13.
 Margaret, 13.
 Searl (Searle, Searls), Damaris, 327, 391.
 Elizabeth, 392.
 John, 391.
 Joseph, 224, 392.
 Margaret, 224.
 Mary, 227, 391.
 Sarah, 392.
 Stephen, 227.
 Thomas, 327, 391, 392, 402.
 Seating the meeting house, 228.
 Sedgwick, 378.
 Sedgwick, Major, 187.

- Sedgwick, *continued*,
 Anna B., 385.
- Seers, Abigail, 227.
 Alexander, 227, 228, 362.
 Deborah, 2.
 Dorothy, 2.
 Knyvett, 2.
 Mary, 227.
 Paul, 2.
 Richard, 2, 47.
 Robert, 227.
 Silas, 2.
- Selectmen, 401.
- Senator, United States, 384.
- Sermon, 285.
- Seven men's bounds, 67, 68, 192.
- Sevigne, Mary Cecilia, 380.
- Sewall, Charles, 426.
 Elizabeth, 121.
 Margaret Perkins, 426.
 Mitchell, 121.
 Samuel, 369.
 Stephen, 7, 9, 234, 369.
- Seward, Henry, 387.
 Susanna, 387.
- Shafin, Michael, 9, 142, 156, 158,
 159, 213, 229, 322, 403.
- Sharon, Mass., 382.
- Sharp, Elizabeth, 386.
 Samuel, 47, 70, 162, 167, 216,
 231, 301, 364.
- Shatswell, Sarah, 55.
- Shattock, Damaris, 268.
 Grace, 268.
 Hannah, 268.
 John, 268.
 Margaret, 268.
 Mary, 268, 313.
 Mercy, 268.
 Patience, 268.
 Priscilla, 268.
 Retire, 268.
 Return, 268.
 Samuel, 7, 9, 245-247, 249, 251,
 253, 254, 256, 257, 268, 269,
 271, 402.
 Sarah, 268.
- Shaw, Benjamin, 404, 405.
 Daniel, 325, 404.
 Ebenezer, 54, 404.
 Elizabeth, 404.
 George, 368, 404.
 Hannah, 54, 325, 404.
 Israel, 404.
 Johanna, 404.
 Jonathan, 404.
 Margaret, 404.
 Mary, 404, 405.
- Shaw, *continued*,
 Mehitable, 404.
 Priscilla, 405.
 Samuel, 404.
 Susanna, 404.
 William, 404, 405.
- Sheafe, Elizabeth, 38.
- Sheepscott, Me., 389.
- Sheffield, Deliverance, 80, 81.
- Shelter Island, L. I., N. Y., 53,
 256, 257, 263.
- Shepard, Martha Mansfield, 385.
- Shermaid's Hill, 42.
- Shillaber, Elizabeth, 24.
 Lydia, 24, 325.
 Robert, 24.
 William, 325.
- Ship Tavern, 95, 183.
 pasture, 74, 184.
- Shipley, John, 71.
- Shipyards, 337, 347, 350, 355, 421.
- Shops, 353.
- Shores, Susanna, 102.
- Short, Henry, 47.
 Sarah, 47.
- Shove, Hannah, 54.
 Ruth, 55.
- Sibley, Damaris, 226.
 Elizabeth, 226.
 Eunice, 227.
 Hannah, 223, 227, 329.
 John, 9, 172, 173, 226, 227, 314,
 432.
 Jonathan, 226.
 Joseph, 385.
 Littlefield, 227.
 Mary, 217, 226, 227.
 Meribah, 227.
 Nathaniel, 227.
 Priscilla, 227.
 Rachel, 278.
 Richard, 160, 226, 314.
 Ruth, 210.
 Samuel, 226, 227.
 Sarah, 226, 227.
 Susanna, 227, 385.
 William, 7, 227.
- Sickterdam, John, 367.
- "Sign of the Bishop", 18.
- "Sign of the Globe", 28.
- "Sign of the Indian King", 95.
- Silsby (Silsbee), Abigail, 383.
 Alice Dodge, 385.
 Ann, 383.
 Annie Jean, 385.
 Arthur Boardman, 385.
 Benjamin, 383, 389.
 Benjamin Hodges, 384, 385.

Silsby, *continued*,

Bethiah, 15, 383.
 Caroline, 384.
 Catherine E., 385.
 Charlotte, 385.
 Deborah, 383, 384.
 Dorothy, 70, 383.
 Edward Augustus, 384.
 Eliza Devereux, 385.
 Elizabeth, 383, 384.
 Elizabeth Jane, 385.
 Elizabeth Sanders, 385.
 Elizabeth White, 385.
 Emily Fairfax, 385.
 Ephraim, 54, 70, 383.
 Esther, 54.
 Francis H., 385.
 Francis Henry, 384.
 Frank Boardman, 385.
 George Devereux, 388.
 George S., 385.
 George Zachariah, 384, 385.
 Georgiana Crowninshield, 384.
 Grace, 70, 383.
 Hannah, 70, 75, 383, 384.
 Hannah Hodges, 384.
 Harriet Elizabeth, 384.
 Henry, 70, 383.
 Henry Bellows, 385.
 Jane, 383.
 Joanna, 383, 384.
 John, 15, 70, 383, 384.
 John Boardman, 384, 385.
 John Henry, 384, 385.
 Jonathan, 383.
 Joseph, 383.
 Joseph Lyman, 385.
 Margaret, 383, 385.
 Margaret Hodges, 384.
 Maria Porter, 385.
 Martha, 314, 383-385, 387.
 Martha Mansfield, 385.
 Mary, 383, 384, 389.
 Mary Ann C., 385.
 Mary Ann Devereux, 385.
 Mary Boardman, 384.
 Mary Crowninshield, 384, 385.
 Mary I., 385.
 Nathaniel, 189, 224, 321, 383-385, 402.
 Nathaniel Devereux, 385.
 Polly, 384.
 Rachel, 383.
 Rebecca, 384.
 Rebecca Ann, 385.
 Samuel, 70, 383, 384.
 Sarah, 224, 383, 384.
 Sarah Ann, 384.

Silsby, *continued*,

Thomas, 385.
 Walter J., 385.
 William, 383-385.
 William Edward, 385.
 William Henry, 385.
 Zachariah, 384.
 Zachariah Fowle, 384.
 Simes, Peter, 100.
 Simonds. See *Symonds*.
 Simons. See *Symonds*.
 Simpson (Simson), Francis, 196.
 John, 160.
 Sinclair, George, 179.
 Sarah, 179.
 Skelling, Deborah, 151.
 Mary, 151.
 Thomas, 151.
 Skelton, Samuel, 110, 364.
 Susanna, 205.
 Skerry, Content, 104.
 Ephraim, 383.
 Francis, 9, 10, 158, 159, 189, 193-195, 206, 215, 218, 227, 228, 231, 232, 240, 241, 276, 363.
 Henry, 9, 11, 66, 131, 132, 158-160, 182, 195, 217, 218, 227, 231, 234, 247, 322, 333, 392, 400, 402, 423, 433.
 Margaret, 383.
 Martha, 123.
 Samuel, 104.
 Sarah, 139.
 Skinner, Elizabeth, 404.
 Hannah, 404.
 Samuel, 404.
 Walter, 404.
 Skirbeck, England, 228.
 Slade, Elizabeth, 223.
 William, 223.
 Slaves, 290, 350.
 Slocum, Ebenezer, 224.
 Sarah, 224.
 Small, Abigail, 115, 376.
 Elizabeth, 123.
 George, 376.
 John, 151, 206, 246, 247, 253, 264, 270.
 Joseph, 378.
 Lydia, 210, 332.
 Martha, 378.
 Mary, 43.
 Rachel, 116, 210.
 Ruth, 62.
 Samuel, 428.
 Sarah, 325.
 Thomas, 62, 438, 439, 441.
 William, 210.

- Small pox, 273, 348.
 Smith, Widow, 13.
 Abigail, 320.
 Amos F., 341, 342.
 Anna, 297.
 Anstiss, 329.
 Benjamin, 11, 149.
 Caleb, 305.
 Catheran, 174.
 Elizabeth, 143, 210.
 Elliott, 341.
 Elliott F., 106.
 George, 45, 316.
 Hannah, 124, 141.
 Huldah, 163.
 James, 61, 118, 177, 197, 202.
 John, 31, 39, 253, 260, 262, 263, 266, 268, 329, 421, 438.
 Jonathan, 65, 329.
 Joseph, 124, 421.
 Lydia Henfield, 104.
 Margaret, 39, 253, 260-264, 316.
 Marie, 11.
 Mary, 38, 97, 143, 193, 305, 332, 391.
 Mary Elizabeth, 106.
 Mercy, 135.
 Moses, 104.
 Nathaniel, 11, 332.
 Patience, 268.
 Peter, 135.
 Ralph, 174.
 Rebecca, 31.
 Sally, 45, 328.
 Samuel, 11, 12, 108, 147, 153, 156, 193.
 Sarah, 11, 76, 156, 329.
 Sarah F., 381.
 Thomas, 11, 38, 68, 102, 193.
 Tomasin, 143.
 William, 97, 316, 391.
 Smith's hill, 208.
 Smithfield, R. I., 40, 55, 56, 76, 386.
 Snake Hill, 205.
 Snow, Phebe, 116.
 Soames, Hannah, 268.
 Society (ketch), 370.
 Solart, Elizabeth, 70.
 John, 317.
 Mary, 140.
 Sarah, 317.
 Sollas, John, 418.
 Somerby, Sarah, 230.
 Somerville Mass., 306.
 Somerville, Thomas, 94, 95.
 Souhegan West, 297.
 South Danvers, Mass., 225, 277, 278, 378, 379, 387.
 South field, 155, 158-161, 178, 342, 344.
 South mills, 336-342.
 South River, 11, 13, 76, 336, 337, 342, 353.
 South Williamstown, Mass., 55.
 Southampton, England, 93, 146, 359, 360, 365, 371.
 Southampton, L. I., 155.
 Southard, Mary, 378.
 Southold, L. I., 53, 57, 58, 71, 127, 406.
 Southton, England, 365, 372.
 Southwick, Abigail, 54.
 Abraham, 54, 55.
 Ann, 54.
 Anna, 54, 56.
 Anne, 53.
 Benjamin, 54, 55.
 Bethiah, 56.
 Betty, 295.
 Caleb, 54, 56.
 Cassandra, 53, 54, 56, 244, 247, 249, 251, 256.
 Chloe, 56.
 Copia, 55.
 Daniel, 7, 40, 53-56, 76, 159, 160, 244, 252, 253, 257, 264, 273.
 David, 54.
 Deborah, 54.
 Deliverance, 54.
 Dorcas, 55.
 Ebenezer, 23, 54, 55.
 Edward, 55, 56, 244.
 Eleanor, 54, 56.
 Eliza Kinsman, 57.
 Elizabeth, 40, 54-57.
 Enoch, 56.
 Esther, 54-56, 76.
 George, 55, 56.
 Hannah, 54-56, 385, 404.
 Hephzibah, 56.
 Hopestill, 54.
 Ichabod, 55.
 Isaac, 54, 55.
 Jacob, 56.
 James, 54.
 James Alley, 57.
 Jane, 54.
 Jesse, 55.
 John, 6, 40, 53-57, 159, 221, 247, 252, 253, 262, 301, 322, 385, 402.
 John Alley, 57.
 Jonathan, 54-56.
 Joseph, 54-56, 244.

Southwick, *continued*,

Josiah, 6, 53, 54, 56, 58, 76, 159, 160, 221, 246, 247, 249, 251, 255-257, 273, 421.
 Josiah Erastus, 57.
 Judith, 56.
 Lawrence, 40, 53-58, 65, 98, 117, 187, 192, 206, 221, 244, 246-249, 251-253, 255-258.
 Lemuel, 55.
 Lois, 55.
 Lois Alley, 57, 426.
 Lydia, 55, 56.
 Margaret, 55.
 Martha, 125.
 Mary, 53-56, 76, 124, 252.
 Mary Ann, 57.
 Mehitable, 56.
 Mercy, 40, 54-56.
 Miriam, 55.
 Nathaniel, 55.
 Patience, 54.
 Phebe, 56.
 Philip R., 244.
 Provided, 53, 54, 252, 253, 257, 258, 260-263.
 Prudence, 56.
 Rebecca, 55, 57.
 Rebecca H., 57.
 Ruth, 54-56.
 Samuel, 54, 55.
 Sarah, 23, 53-56.
 Solomon, 54, 59.
 Susan, 56.
 Susanna, 55.
 Tamisin, 40, 54, 56.
 Theophilus, 56.
 William, 55.
 Zacheus, 56.
 Spanish coin, 214.
 Sparhawk, Edward Perkins, 112.
 John, 94.
 Mehitable, 112.
 Sparks, Jared, 384.
 Mary Crowninshield, 384.
 Spear, Emmons Raymond, 426.
 Speedwell (ketch), 370.
 Speedwell (pink), 370.
 Spence, Abby R., 106.
 Andrew, 106.
 George G., 106.
 Spencer, —, 87.
 Elizabeth Colburn, 106.
 Spike's Bay, 373.
 Spinney, Rebecca, 377.
 Splaine, Margaret A., 382.
 Spooner, Hannah, 97.
 Thomas, 9, 11, 167, 189, 208, 281.

Sprague, Ebenezer, 376.

Eleanor, 114.

Hannah, 376.

Spring, Jacob E., 34.

Springfield, Mass., 380.

Springfield, Vt., 104.

Squire, Mary, 236.

St. Andrews Parish, England, 388.

St. Christopher's, 365, 368.

St. Croix River, 170.

St. George's Parish, England, 62, 317.

St. John, N. B., 114, 187.

St. John, Newfoundland, 41.

St. John's Normal College, 34.

St. John River, 170.

St. John, Elizabeth, 228.

Oliver, 228.

St. Lawrence Parish, England, 139.

St. Louis, Mo., 380.

St. Lucia, Barbadoes, 298.

St. Martin's, 369.

St. Mary's Church, Holland, 148.

St. Patrick's Parish, England, 388.

St. Peter's Church, 318.

St. Sebastian, Spain, 314.

St. Thomas, 315.

Stacey (Stacy), Agnes, 149.

Deborah, 149.

Elizabeth, 305, 319.

Hannah, 377.

Henry, 197.

Hugh, 149, 151, 403.

John, 149, 197.

Joseph, 55.

Mary, 300.

Priscilla, 280.

Sarah, 55.

Thomasine, 279.

William, 300, 305, 319, 339, 403.

Stackhouse, Abigail, 48.

Hannah, 48.

Jonathan, 48.

Mary, 48.

Richard, 48, 190, 276, 362, 417.

Ruth, 48, 190.

Samuel, 48.

Sarah, 48.

Susanna, 48.

Stackpole, Charles R., 318.

Stafford, Ellen Cecilia, 380.

Staffordshire, England, 271.

Stage point, 101.

Stages, 180.

Standish, James, 3, 9, 75, 173, 194, 213, 402.

Standley, Annie, 4.

Standley's grove, 205.

- Stanwood, Carrie J., 315.
 Stark, William, 125.
 Starkey, Susanna, 119.
 Starling (Sterling), Anne, 123.
 William, 123.
 Starr, Hannah, 385, 405.
 Mary, 53, 82, 299, 405.
 Richard, 405.
 Robert, 53, 193, 405.
 Sara, 405.
 Susanna, 405.
 Stearns, Anna, 144.
 Hannah, 223.
 Isaac, 223, 234.
 Stegge, Thomas, 362.
 Stephens (Stevens), —, 266.
 John, 210.
 Mary, 2.
 Mercy, 179.
 Nathan, 378.
 Rachel, 210.
 Sally, 378.
 Thomas, 179.
 William, 2, 77, 358, 402.
 Stephenson, Marmaduke, 258-261,
 271.
 Stepney, Parish of, England, 368,
 388.
 Sterling, Mass., 112.
 Steuben, Me., 377.
 Stevens. See *Stephens*.
 Stewart (Steward, Stuard), Eu-
 nice, 237.
 Mary, 324.
 Mehitabel, 325.
 Sarah, 324.
 William, 237.
 Stileman, Elias, 4, 9, 11, 108, 110,
 165, 189, 194, 219, 229, 266,
 398, 400, 403.
 Elizabeth, 139.
 Richard, 193, 205.
 Stiles, Abigail, 146.
 Stillman, Lydia, 375.
 Stillwater, N. Y., 278.
 Stocks, 8, 49, 125, 226.
 Stockwell, Eunice, 325.
 Stoddard, Anthony, 29.
 Elizabeth, 321.
 Mary, 29.
 Simeon, 321.
 Solomon, 27, 198.
 Stodder, Mary Eliza, 331.
 Sarah, 138.
 Stone, —, 378.
 Abigail, 411.
 Alfred, 118.
 Anstiss, 314.
 Stone, *continued*,
 Ellen Maria, 118.
 Hannah, 21.
 John, 13, 206, 402, 411, 414.
 Lydia, 133.
 Nathaniel, 402, 403.
 Nehemiah, 133.
 Remember, 411.
 Robert, 314, 347, 370, 402.
 Sarah, 273, 389.
 Stonington, Conn., 132, 441.
 Stony beach, 343.
 Stony brook, 209, 396.
 Stony Butts brook, 206.
 Stony Cove, 227.
 Stowe, Abigail, 279.
 Anne, 41.
 Stratford, Conn., 188.
 Stratton, Ami, 303.
 Elizabeth, 114.
 John, 11, 76, 143, 226, 283, 403.
 William, 199.
 Stratton Island, N. Y., 389.
 Streeter, Gilbert Lewis, 426.
 Rebecca Southwick, 426.
 Strongwater brook bridge, 6, 13,
 68, 99, 159, 233, 263, 421.
 Stuart, Eleanor, 376.
 Sturbridge, Mass., 140.
 Styles, Susanna, 116.
 Success (ship), 370.
 Sudbury, Mass., 112, 141.
 Suffield, Conn., 47.
 Sullivan, Mary, 384.
 Sumatra, 315.
 Sumner, Mary Jane, 381.
 Supply (ketch), 367, 370.
 Susan (ketch), 371.
 Susan and Ellen (ship), 22.
 Susannah (ketch), 371.
 Sutton, Mass., 32, 110, 111, 113,
 187, 217, 295, 300.
 Swain, Mary, 329.
 Swallow (ketch), 371.
 Swallow, Phebe, 376.
 Swampscott, Mass., 66.
 Swan, Henry, 61, 97.
 Swansey, Mass., 4, 40, 41.
 Swasey, Hannah, 299.
 John, 212.
 Katherine, 212.
 Mary, 178.
 Rebecca, 224.
 Sweatland (Swetland), Agnes, 70.
 William, 9.
 Sweet, John, 316, 350.
 Swett, Sarah, 79.

Swinerton (Swinerton), Benjamin, 387.

Ede, 113.

Emma, 112.

Hannah, 278, 339.

James, 112.

Job, 11, 205, 206, 215, 312, 402, 438, 439.

John, 9, 113.

Margaret, 387.

Mary, 210.

Ruth, 115.

Sarah, 376.

Swinnock, John, 223.

Margaret, 223.

Symmes, Eliza Coffin, 106.

Elizabeth, 329.

Hannah, 321.

Richard, 321.

Zachariah, 259.

Symonds (Simonds, Simons), Abigail, 40, 162.

Anna Gardner, 427.

Benjamin, 24, 40.

Elizabeth, 44.

James, 4, 11, 160, 321, 402.

John, 11, 155, 217, 281, 324.

Jonathan, 329.

Lydia, 24.

Mary, 4, 44, 82, 387.

Ruth, 54.

Samuel, 44, 162, 167.

Sarah, 230, 324, 325.

Ursula, 329.

Ursula K., 330.

William, 375, 387.

Synod, 185, 288.

TABERNACLE CHURCH, 318.

Taft, Eunice, 376.

Talbot, Mr., 278.

Talbot (ship), 14, 371.

Talby (Talbey), Anne, 52.

Difficulty, 51.

Dorothy, 51.

John, 51, 52, 221.

Stephen, 52, 359.

Tanning, 71, 304, 421.

Tapley, Aaron, 333.

Amos, 22, 332.

Asa, 333.

Daniel, 333.

Elijah, 333.

Elizabeth, 296, 332.

Gilbert, 7, 113, 332, 402.

Hannah, 22, 332.

John, 332.

Joseph, 332, 333.

Tapley, *continued*,

Lydia, 332.

Margaret, 332.

Mary, 179, 296, 332, 333.

Phebe, 113, 332, 333.

Sally, 333.

Sarah, 332.

Thomasine, 332.

William, 179, 332, 333.

Tappan, John, 420.

Martha, 420.

Tarbell, Elizabeth, 44.

Hannah, 277.

John, 143, 277.

Jonathan, 44.

Mary, 143, 333.

Tarr, Caroline, 225.

Jacob, 225.

Tarrant, John, 44.

Susannah, 44.

Taunton, Mass., 70, 379.

Taverns, 28, 31, 94, 183, 201, 211.

Tawley, Elizabeth, 98.

John, 357, 361.

Taxes, 2, 34, 126, 221.

Taylor, Captain, 329.

Abigail, 325.

Bethiah, 105.

Elizabeth, 236.

Nathan, 325.

Thomas W., 105.

Taylorville, Ill., 426.

Taymour, Thomas, 202.

Telford, Constance, 426.

Temple, N. H., 116, 166.

Temple, Abraham, 60.

Richard, 16, 199.

Templeman, John, 318.

Tenne, Mary, 304.

Terreno, Sophie De, 426.

Test, Esther Adams, 330.

John B., 330.

Tewksbury, Mass., 110.

Texell, The, 137.

Thanksgiving days, 37, 75, 121,

226, 279, 300, 312, 328, 390,

397, 422.

Thatcher (Thacher), Anthony, 2, 176.

Hannah, 38.

Peter, 38.

Thayer, Jonas, 116.

Phebe, 116.

Theresa (brig), 21.

Thissell, Jeffrey, 418.

Thomas (ship), 348.

Thomas, David, 197, 322, 417.

Deborah, 235.

- Thomas, *continued*,
 Elizabeth, 396.
 George, 396.
 Hannah, 396.
 James, 166, 193, 348.
 Mary, 396.
 Richard, 396.
 Ruth, 396.
 Thomas and Mary (ketch), 371.
 Thompson (Tomson), Archibald,
 2, 121.
 Edmond, 46, 97.
 Mildred A., 382.
 Sarah, 376.
 Thorndike, Anna, 179.
 Elizabeth, 22.
 John, 11, 48, 140, 155, 194, 212,
 219, 222, 397, 410, 418.
 Thorne, Eliza Coffin, 106.
 John, 106.
 Three Bibles, 88.
 Thresher, Deborah, 54.
 Throckmorton (Throgmorton),
 John, 65.
 Patience, 65.
 Thropp, England, 211.
 Thurston, John, 149.
 Margaret, 149.
 Richard, 3.
 Thomas, 149.
 Tibbetts, Barbara, 139.
 Martha J., 41.
 Samuel, 139.
 Tidd, Samuel, 53.
 Sarah, 53.
 Tidmarsh, Richard, 301.
 Tiley, Thomas, 160.
 Timor, Island of, 306.
 Tinker's Island, 240.
 Titus, Laura Ann, 381.
 Tompkins (Tomkins), Deborah,
 383.
 Hannah, 283.
 John, 3, 159, 160, 316, 322, 403.
 Martha, 324.
 Ralph, 135, 191, 218.
 Tongue, Mary, 279.
 Toppan, Abraham, 392.
 Elizabeth, 392.
 Isaac, 392.
 Jacob, 392.
 John, 392.
 Mary, 340.
 Peter, 340.
 Susan, 392.
 Susanna, 392.
 Topsfield, Mass., 32, 47, 92, 110,
 113, 114, 116, 145, 162, 163,
 Topsfield, *continued*,
 173, 181, 188, 205-208, 230,
 277, 295, 297, 315, 328, 330,
 391, 395, 396, 400, 405, 409,
 423, 441.
 Topsham, England, 317.
 Torbay, 371.
 Torrey, Esther, 56.
 James, 56.
 William, 417.
 Torrington, England, 86.
 Tortuga, 361.
 Totness, England, 313.
 Tour, Charles de la, 170, 171, 350.
 Tower, Daniel Gordon, 331.
 Eleanor Gifford, 331.
 Tower of London, 186.
 Town's end, 6, 131.
 Town house, 93, 221, 393, 421.
 Town House Square, 238.
 Towne, Elizabeth, 295.
 Jeremiah, 295.
 Lillian S., 382.
 Rebecca, 143.
 Sarah, 405.
 William, 108, 230.
 Townsend, Elizabeth, 225.
 Jacob, 305.
 Lydia, 238.
 Margaret, 305.
 Mercy, 379.
 Moses, 238.
 Priscilla Lambert, 105.
 Trade, 351.
 Trading houses, 167, 170.
 Trask, Abigail, 140, 325.
 Alfred, 165.
 Ann, 109, 252.
 Anna, 324.
 Benjamin, 268.
 Eunice, 113.
 Henry, 53, 252, 253, 260.
 John, 7, 9, 99, 110, 160, 336,
 402.
 Lydia, 113.
 Martha, 140, 217.
 Mary, 53, 55, 252, 260-264, 282,
 391.
 Mercy, 268.
 Nancy, 329.
 Osborne, 227.
 Osman, 231, 429.
 Osmund, 159, 212, 283, 301, 302,
 417.
 Rachel, 110.
 Rebecca, 76.
 Sarah, 103, 252.
 Susanna, 329.

- Trask, *continued*,
 William, 5, 6, 11, 31, 68, 69, 99,
 108, 109, 123, 131, 159-161, 169,
 180, 194, 221, 228, 231, 325,
 336, 374, 401, 420, 421.
 Trask burying ground, 419, 420.
 Treadwell, Mr., 21.
 Trevett (Trevy), Elizabeth, 328.
 Henry, 177, 197.
 Rebecca, 22.
 Sarah, 101.
 William, 22.
 Trial (ketch), 371, 372.
 Triggs, Agnes, 313.
 Trinidad, 137, 379.
 Trinity College, Dublin, Ireland,
 14.
 Trow, Charity, 32.
 Solomon, 32.
 Troy, Ind., 378.
 Troy, N. Y., 41.
 True, Benjamin, 165.
 Henry, 165, 194, 369.
 Israel, 165.
 Jane, 165.
 Jemima, 165.
 John, 165.
 Joseph, 165.
 Lydia, 165.
 Ruth, 165.
 Trusler, Eleanor, 248, 257, 290.
 Thomas, 11, 43, 47, 60, 75, 165,
 166, 212, 217, 248, 403, 405.
 Tuck, Margaret, 306.
 Robert, 151.
 Sally, 305.
 Thomas, 78, 79, 165, 166, 180,
 199, 304, 305, 417.
 Tucker, George, 197.
 John, 99, 203.
 Tuexbury, Jonathan, 386.
 Katherine, 386.
 Tufts, Aaron, 103.
 John, 109.
 Mary, 109.
 Sarah, 103.
 Tumulty, Edna Annie, 382.
 Patrick Henry, 382.
 Turk's Island, 315.
 Turner, Charles, 78, 304.
 Edward, 8, 88.
 Elizabeth, 356.
 Freestone, 121.
 Habakkuk, 9, 369.
 John, 9, 135, 184, 239, 241, 356,
 360, 363, 364, 366, 368, 370,
 373, 401, 432, 433.
 Mary, 78, 135, 136.
 Turner, *continued*,
 Rachel, 78.
 Turnup swamp, 154.
 Turtle Hill, 205.
 Tusker, Florence, 118.
 Tuttell, John, 152.
 Twiss (Twist), Elizabeth, 143.
 Eunice, 376.
 John, 143.
 Jonathan, 143.
 Lydia, 277.
 Martha, 143.
 Mary, 82, 143, 210.
 Peter, 143.
 Ruth, 210.
 Sarah, 143.
 Two Brothers (ship), 387.
 Tyler, Annie, 382.
 Joshua, 236.
 Margaret, 236.
 Thomas, 240.
 Tyng, Mr., 107.
 William, 128.
 ULMER, Hannah, 224.
 Ulmerin, Rosina Barbarina, 139.
 Underhill, John, 34.
 John Winn, 106.
 Mary G., 106.
 Underwood, George M., 34.
 James, 9, 199, 248, 362, 402.
 Sarah, 237.
 United Colonies, 128.
 Unity (ketch), 372.
 Upham, Cynthia B., 145.
 Elizabeth, 113, 115.
 Richard, 113, 115.
 William P., 145.
 Upshall, Nicholas, 262.
 Upton, Abby M., 379.
 Abiel, 377.
 Abigail, 376.
 Albert Ezra, 382.
 Alice, 381.
 Alice Dolores, 380.
 Alice F., 382.
 Alice Louise, 382.
 Alice M., 382.
 Alice R., 381.
 Alice Rebecca, 379.
 Alma, 382.
 Amos, 376.
 Andrew, 377, 378.
 Ann, 376.
 Anna, 376-378.
 Anna M., 379.
 Anna S., 382.
 Annie, 382.

Upton, *continued*,

Annie L., 381.
 Annie M., 380.
 Arthur, 380.
 Arthur Jackson, 380.
 Asa, 377.
 Benjamin, 376, 378, 379.
 Betsey, 377.
 Caleb, 376, 377.
 Carl Frank, 380.
 Caroline, 380, 382.
 Caroline Bowditch, 380.
 Caroline H., 381.
 Catherine J., 381.
 Charles, 378, 380.
 Charles H., 379.
 Charles Horace, 378.
 Charles Oliver, 382.
 Charles P., 381.
 Charles Rider, 378.
 Charles S., 382.
 Clarence Hatheway, 382.
 Clarence Webster, 380.
 Colcord, 381, 382.
 Cornelia A., 380.
 Daniel, 377, 379.
 Daniel King, 379.
 Daniel Ropes, 379.
 David, 377.
 Dorcas, 376, 377.
 Eben, 377, 379, 381.
 Eben Albert, 382.
 Ebenezer, 377-379.
 Ede, 278.
 Edith, 376.
 Edith E., 382.
 Edna Annie, 382.
 Edmund, 377-379.
 Edmund Augustus, 379, 381, 382.
 Edmund T., 381.
 Ednah Marguerite, 382.
 Edward, 376, 379, 380.
 Edward Peirce, 378.
 Edwin, 378, 380.
 Edwin Augustus, 379.
 Eleanor, 376.
 Eliza, 378, 379.
 Eliza Ann, 379.
 Eliza Jane, 379.
 Eliza M., 379.
 Eliza Peele, 211, 379.
 Elizabeth, 377-379.
 Elizabeth Ann, 382.
 Elizabeth B., 378.
 Elizabeth Lewis, 380.
 Elizabeth Ropes, 380.
 Ella C., 381.
 Ellen, 380.

Upton, *continued*,

Ellen A., 382.
 Ellen Celia, 380.
 Ellen F., 380.
 Ellen Francisca, 380.
 Ellen M., 380.
 Ellen Maria, 380.
 Emily Augusta, 382.
 Emily Caroline, 380.
 Emily Collins, 380.
 Emily L., 380.
 Ernest Ropes, 380.
 Ethel Dora, 382.
 Ethel R., 382.
 Ethel M., 382.
 Eunice, 376, 377.
 Eva F., 381.
 Ezekiel, 21, 376.
 Ezra, 138, 377-379.
 Florence Louisa, 381.
 Frances E., 382.
 Francis, 376, 379.
 Francis E., 381.
 Francis Henry, 378.
 Francis Torrey, 381, 382.
 Franklin, 378, 379, 381.
 Frederick D., 381.
 George, 377, 378, 380-382.
 George Augustus, 382.
 George F., 379, 381.
 George Larrabee, 379, 381.
 George N., 380.
 George Washington, 379.
 Georgiana J., 380.
 Grace, 380, 381.
 Grace L., 382.
 Grace W., 382.
 Hannah, 376, 377.
 Hannah J., 381.
 Harriet, 378.
 Harriet Ellen, 380.
 Harriet Maria, 379, 380.
 Helen A., 381.
 Helen Augusta, 378.
 Helen Maria, 137, 380.
 Henrietta F., 382.
 Henry, 211, 378, 379, 382.
 Henry Fitch, 380.
 Henry Orlando, 379, 382.
 Henry Paul, 378, 380.
 Henry Roberts, 381.
 Herbert A., 382.
 Herbert Wheelock, 380.
 Horace Frederick, 381.
 Horace G., 379, 381.
 Ida, 382.
 Ida F., 382.
 Isabel, 376.

Upton, *continued*,

Isabel Emeline, 380.
 Isabel Francisca, 380.
 Jacob Barker, 381.
 James, 376, 378, 380.
 James Frederick, 380.
 James Henry, 380.
 Jeduthun, 377, 378.
 Jemima, 376.
 Jesse, 377-379.
 Jesse F., 381, 382.
 Joanna, 376.
 John, 376-379, 441.
 John Henry, 382.
 John Pierce, 379.
 Jonathan, 378.
 Joseph, 376, 378, 379, 381.
 Joseph Bowditch, 380.
 Joseph Marshall, 381.
 Katherine B., 382.
 Laura A., 381.
 Laura Ann, 381.
 Laura Titus, 382.
 Lillian M., 382.
 Lillian S., 382.
 Lillie E., 382.
 Lizzie H., 381.
 Lois, 376.
 Lucretia Derby, 381.
 Lucy, 378.
 Lucy Ann, 378, 380.
 Lucy Houghton, 380.
 Lucy Maria, 381.
 Luther, 137, 378, 380.
 Lydia, 376.
 Margaret A., 382.
 Margaret Ellen, 381.
 Maria Francisca Corea, 379.
 Maria Louisa, 379.
 Martha, 378, 380.
 Martha E., 381.
 Martha Ellen, 378.
 Mary, 55, 376-379, 381, 382.
 Mary Ann, 138, 379.
 Mary Atwood, 382.
 Mary Bell, 379.
 Mary Cecilia, 380.
 Mary E., 381.
 Mary Elinor, 378.
 Mary Elizabeth, 378, 379.
 Mary G., 381.
 Mary Jane, 381.
 Mary L., 381.
 Mary R., 381.
 Mary Rebecca, 379.
 Mary Stocker, 381.
 Mehitable, 377.
 Mercy, 379.

Upton, *continued*,

Mildred A., 382.
 Moses T., 381.
 Moses Townsend, 379, 381.
 Nancy, 378.
 Nathan, 377.
 Nathaniel, 376.
 Noah, 376.
 Olive, 380.
 Olive A., 380.
 Oliver, 377.
 Ollie G., 380.
 Paul, 376-379, 381.
 Phebe, 376, 377.
 Polly, 377, 378.
 Priscilla, 378, 379.
 Priscilla Lambert, 379.
 Rachel, 376, 377.
 Rebecca, 21, 376-378.
 Rebecca Allen, 378.
 Rebecca Gray Peirce, 379.
 Rebecca Peirce, 378.
 Richard, 376.
 Richard Henry, 380.
 Robert, 377, 378, 380.
 Rufus Allyn, 378.
 Ruth, 376, 377.
 Sadie A., 382.
 Sally, 377, 378.
 Sally Stone, 379, 381.
 Samuel, 376-379.
 Samuel F., 379, 381.
 Sarah, 376, 377, 379.
 Sarah A., 381.
 Sarah Augusta, 378.
 Sarah B., 381.
 Sarah E., 379.
 Sarah Elizabeth, 379.
 Sarah Ella, 382.
 Sarah Ellen, 380, 381.
 Sarah F., 381.
 Sarah Foster, 378.
 Sarah M., 382.
 Sarah Sophia, 380.
 Stephen, 376, 379, 380.
 Sumner Mortimer, 382.
 Sumner W., 381, 382.
 Susan A., 381.
 Susan T., 381.
 Susanna, 376, 377.
 Tamisin, 376.
 Thomas Needham, 379.
 Timothy, 376, 377.
 Wallace Carey, 382.
 Walter B., 380.
 Walter Conant, 382.
 Walter Pratt, 381, 382.
 Warren Augustus, 379, 381.

- Upton, *continued*,
 Warren C., 382.
 Warren G., 381, 382.
 Wheelock Samuel, 378.
 William, 376-378.
 William Bowditch, 379, 382.
 William F., 379, 382.
 William H., 381.
 William Mack, 382.
 William Mudgett, 379, 381.
 Willie, 382.
 Winslow, 380.
 Upton's Quadrille Band, 382.
 Urann, Sarah, 114.
 Utica, N. Y., 106.
 Uxbridge, Mass., 54, 55.

 VANE, Harry, 359.
 Varney, Lizzie H., 381.
 Mehitable, 56.
 Varnum, Olive, 116.
 Vassall, William, 101.
 Vealy, Mercy, 135.
 Veley, Mary, 296.
 Venner, Thomas, 8, 9, 213.
 Venus, William, 229.
 Vermais, Abigail, 42.
 Alice, 42, 61.
 Benjamin, 42, 347, 403.
 Mark, 11, 42, 47, 402.
 Mercy, 42.
 Verrin (Veren), Mr., 48.
 Abigail, 78.
 Hannah, 120.
 Hilliard, 9, 46, 67, 120-122, 165,
 192, 276, 301, 302, 308, 323,
 351, 352, 398, 400, 402, 421,
 431.
 James, 349.
 Jane, 60.
 Joshua, 43, 60, 97, 165, 180.
 Mary, 109, 298.
 Nathaniel, 109.
 Philip, 10, 11, 130, 158, 165, 193,
 203, 205, 218, 234, 264, 270, 403.
 Very, Benjamin, 76.
 Elizabeth, 23, 143.
 Esther Gilbert, 105.
 Hannah, 143.
 John, 143, 377.
 Jones, 420.
 Joseph, 324.
 Mehitable, 377.
 Nathaniel, 105.
 Rebecca, 76.
 Ruth, 324.
 Thomas, 23.
 Vessels, 358-373.

 Vickery, George, 3, 327.
 Hannah, 135.
 Rebecca, 3, 327.
 Viles, Bowman, 424.
 Village, The, 7, 22, 31.
 Vincent, William, 403.
 "Vindication" of Quaker persecu-
 tion, 259, 260.
 Virgin (ketch), 372.
 Virginia, 101, 186, 193, 232, 239,
 257, 282, 288, 346-348, 362,
 364, 366, 371, 372, 378, 391.
 Visitation (ship), 372.
 Vital records, 122, 182.
 Vitty, Albert, 42.
 Laura Peirce, 42.
 Voden, Elizabeth, 21.
 Votin, Nathaniel, 244.

 WADLEIGH, Jane, 40.
 Joseph, 40.
 Wadsworth, Benjamin, 419, 420.
 Wadsworth burying ground, 419,
 420.
 Wainwright, Francis, 92.
 Hannah, 92.
 John, 28.
 Mary, 20.
 Samuel, 20.
 Wakefield, Mass., 378, 379, 426.
 Wakefield, N. H., 329.
 Wakefield, Elizabeth, 2, 213.
 John, 2, 47.
 Samuel, 7, 213.
 William, 2.
 Walcott (Wolcott), Deliverance,
 109, 445.
 Elizabeth, 210.
 Freake, 135.
 Jonathan, 10, 109, 210, 240, 402,
 404, 438, 439, 443.
 Josiah, 38.
 Mary, 115.
 Penelope, 38.
 Sarah, 121.
 William, 122, 213.
 Walden, Abigail, 216.
 Clara H., 138.
 John, 216.
 Mary, 143.
 Nathaniel, 143.
 William W. P., 138.
 Waldern, John, 15, 349.
 Ruth, 15.
 Walderswick, England, 101.
 Waldo, Sarah, 112.
 Waldron, John, 202.
 Wales, Elizabeth, 148.

- Walker, Alexander, 305.
 Jane, 103.
 Martha, 305.
 Mary, 425.
 Samuel, 420.
 Waller, Christopher, 75, 192, 234, 420.
 John, 160.
 Margaret, 75, 192.
 Mathew, 60.
 Waller's plot, 85.
 Walley, Abiel, 38.
 Margaret, 38.
 Wallingford, Conn., 43, 386.
 Wallis, Ann, 162.
 Elizabeth, 389.
 Hannah, 144.
 Nathaniel, 417.
 Samuel, 162.
 Walnut Tree Hill, 207.
 Walpole, Mass., 325.
 Walter, Lydia, 340.
 Walton, Charles N., 381.
 Hannah J., 381.
 John, 369.
 Samuel, 201.
 Susan A., 381.
 William, 47, 65, 173, 174, 179, 197, 201, 202.
 Walton's spring, 200.
 War of 1812, 379.
 Ward, —, 121.
 Mr., 150.
 Abby R., 106.
 Abigail, 102-105, 328.
 Abigail Richardson, 106.
 Adeline, 105.
 Alicia, 104.
 Amanda Malvina, 104.
 Amelia Henrietta, 104.
 Andrew, 102, 103, 105, 106, 314.
 Andrew W., 106.
 Ann, 102.
 Ann Elizabeth, 104.
 Anna, 103, 104.
 Anne, 102.
 Annie Goodhue, 107.
 Annie Victoire, 107.
 Augusta Holyoke, 105.
 Benjamin, 102, 105, 314.
 Bethiah, 103, 105.
 Betsey, 104, 105.
 Betsey F., 105.
 Burrill, 102.
 Caleb, 102, 104.
 Chang Mei, 106.
 Charles, 104.
 Charles Burrill, 104.
 Ward, *continued*,
 Charles William, 107.
 Chipman, 106.
 Christina, 105.
 Content, 104.
 Curwen Glover, 106.
 Daniel, 102.
 Ebenezer, 101, 102, 104.
 Ebenezer Buttolph, 104, 105.
 Edmund, 103.
 Edward, 103.
 Eliza, 103, 106.
 Eliza Coffin, 106.
 Elizabeth, 102-106, 314.
 Elizabeth Colburn, 106.
 Elizabeth Holyoke, 105.
 Elizabeth Wetmore, 104.
 Ellen Sophia, 104.
 Ellie Frances, 107.
 Esther Gilbert, 105.
 Experience, 103.
 Fanny, 105.
 Frances, 106.
 Francis Chipman, 107.
 Frank, 106.
 Frederic Abbott, 107.
 Frederick Gamaliel, 105, 106.
 Frederick Townsend, 106.
 Gamaliel Hodges, 103, 104.
 George, 103.
 George Atkinson, 104, 106.
 George Curwen, 102.
 George Richard, 106.
 George Washington, 104.
 Georgianna M., 106.
 Hannah, 20, 101-106, 124, 280.
 Harriet, 103.
 Henrietta, 106.
 Henry, 103.
 Henry Gamaliel, 106.
 Henry Orne, 104.
 Israel, 103, 105, 106.
 James, 103.
 James Cushing, 106.
 James Robinson, 104.
 Jane, 103, 104.
 Jane Sparhawk, 104.
 Jane Wallis, 107.
 Janet, 104.
 Jehoidan, 279.
 Jennie Abbott, 107.
 Joanna, 105.
 John, 101-103, 105, 106, 120, 121, 263, 264, 279, 328.
 John A., 106.
 John Andrew, 106.
 John Dodge, 105.
 John Langdon, 106.

Ward, *continued*,

Jonathan, 10, 103, 105.
 Joseph Chipman, 104-106
 Joshua, 20, 101-105, 347, 366,
 369, 432.
 Joshua Holyoke, 105.
 Josiah, 102.
 Laura Alicia, 104.
 Lawrence Pierson, 106, 107.
 Lucretia, 102.
 Lucy, 103.
 Lucy Ann, 104.
 Lydia, 101, 103-105.
 Lydia Henfield, 103.
 Lydia Robinson, 104.
 Malthus Augustus, 104, 106.
 Malvina Glover, 104, 106.
 Malvina Tabitha, 104.
 Margaret, 101, 205, 304.
 Marguerite D., 106.
 Martha, 101, 102, 105, 314.
 Martha B., 106.
 Mary, 102-107.
 Mary Ann, 104, 106.
 Mary Ann Bassett, 104.
 Mary Elizabeth, 106.
 Mary Frances, 107.
 Mary G., 106.
 Mary Holyoke, 105.
 Mary Louisa, 106.
 Mary P., 105.
 Mary Townsend, 105.
 Mehitable, 38, 102-106.
 Miles, 28, 101-105, 205, 280, 403.
 Nancy, 105.
 Nathan, 103.
 Nathaniel, 5, 102, 103.
 Oliver, 103.
 Peter Murray, 105.
 Priscilla, 103.
 Priscilla L., 105.
 Priscilla Lambert, 105.
 Rachel, 102, 104.
 Rachel Pickman, 106.
 Raymond Lee, 106.
 Richard, 38, 102, 104.
 Richard B., 105.
 Richard Melville, 104.
 Ruth, 102-104, 117.
 Samuel, 102, 103, 343, 344.
 Samuel Curwen, 38, 102, 104.
 Samuel Linsey, 104.
 Sarah, 101-106, 425.
 Sarah Adeline, 106.
 Sarah Jane, 104, 106.
 Sarah P., 103.
 Sophia, 103, 106.
 Sophia Langdon, 106.

Ward, *continued*,

Stephen, 103, 105.
 Susan, 103.
 Susanna, 102, 105.
 Thomas Dean, 105.
 Thomas Wren, 105.
 William, 102, 104-106, 117.
 William Raymond Lee, 104, 106.
 William Wallace, 104.
 Wardell, Uzall, 402.
 Ware, —, 29.
 John, 363.
 Warehouses, 352-358, 398.
 Warner, Benjamin, 210.
 Mary, 300.
 Ruth, 210.
 Warren, Mass., 83.
 Warren, Abraham, 301.
 Ralph, 48.
 Sarah, 31.
 William, 367.
 Warwick (bark), 361.
 Warwick, Earl of, 86.
 Washburn, Ida Marion, 426.
 Washington, D. C., 115, 164, 317,
 378, 390.
 Washington, George, 282.
 Watch, 75, 127, 184, 435-438.
 Watch house, 93, 422.
 Waterman, Richard, 132.
 Sarah, 162.
 Waters, Abel, 24.
 Abigail, 24, 105, 163.
 Benjamin, 224.
 Elizabeth, 44, 224.
 Ethel R., 382.
 Ezekiel, 402.
 Hannah, 24.
 John, 160, 402.
 John G., 124.
 Lydia, 23, 113.
 Mary, 124.
 Mary Elinor, 378.
 Phebe, 304.
 Richard, 11, 316.
 Waters River, 12.
 Watertown, Mass., 31, 36, 70, 79,
 140.
 Watertown, Wis., 41.
 Wathin, Margary, 290.
 Watkins, John, 120.
 Watson, Elhanah, 79.
 Elizabeth, 79.
 Patience, 79.
 Sadie A., 382.
 Thomas, 11, 16, 158, 193, 194,
 208, 215, 218, 234, 398, 402.
 William, 79.

- Watts, Jeremiah, 439.
 Samuel, 367.
 Way, Persis, 445.
 William, 445.
 Weather, 12, 121, 125.
 Weathersfield, 216.
 Webb, Daniel, 178, 223, 224, 372.
 Elizabeth, 45, 102, 328.
 Eunice, 163.
 Hannah, 102, 124.
 John, 328.
 Jonathan, 95.
 Joshua, 387.
 Lydia, 387.
 Margaret, 43, 45.
 Mary, 178, 223, 224, 306.
 Michael, 118.
 Nathaniel, 162.
 Ruth, 118.
 Samuel, 102.
 Sarah, 117.
 Stephen, 117.
 Susannah, 21.
 Webb's beach, 343.
 Webber, Elizabeth, 377.
 John, 133.
 Sarah, 133.
 Webster, John, 3, 174.
 Martha, 102.
 William, 102.
 Wedge, John, 399.
 Weeks (Wickes), Alice, 65.
 Bethiah, 65.
 Hannah, 65.
 Helen A., 381.
 Thomas, 11, 65, 74, 140, 158.
 William R., 381.
 Welcome, Elizabeth, 238.
 Margaret, 144.
 Sarah, 387.
 Stephen, 387.
 Thomas, 238.
 Weld, Barbara, 383.
 Bethiah, 135.
 Daniel, 324, 401, 402, 431, 432, 434.
 Edward, 299.
 Mary, 299.
 Thomas, 84.
 Wellesley Farms, Mass., 118.
 Wells, Open, 211, 374.
 Wells, Me., 2, 23, 55, 444.
 Wells, Mary Massey, 330.
 Sarah, 226.
 Welman, Ann, 137.
 Nancy, 137.
 Rebecca, 330.
 Sarah, 384.
 Welman, *continued*,
 Timothy, 384.
 Wenham, Mass., 3, 14, 15, 17, 39, 42, 67, 70, 71, 75, 77, 87, 116, 138, 140, 147-154, 161-164, 187, 194, 206, 210, 214, 234, 279, 300, 320.
 Incorporation of, 152.
 Boundaries of, 154.
 Wenham causeway, 208.
 Wenham church, 152, 414.
 Wenham Pond, 151.
 Wesket, Stukly, 155.
 West, Abigail, 44, 305, 329.
 Abigail Phippen, 306.
 Alice, 305.
 Annie D., 306.
 Arthur Webster, 306.
 Benjamin, 304-306, 329.
 Benjamin A., 306.
 Betsey, 306.
 Caroline D., 306.
 Daniel, 304, 305.
 Deborah, 306.
 Dorcas H., 306.
 Ebenezer, 305.
 Edward, 305.
 Edward Gibaut, 306.
 Eliza Ann, 306.
 Elizabeth, 82, 304-306, 319.
 Elizabeth M., 306.
 Emily C., 306.
 Francis, 306.
 George, 44, 305, 306.
 George Eden, 306.
 George Edward, 306.
 George W., 306.
 Henry, 11, 64, 304, 306, 328.
 John, 154, 304, 305, 394, 398, 410, 418.
 John A., 306.
 Jonathan, 304.
 Joseph, 304.
 Judith, 304.
 Julia, 305, 306.
 Margaret, 304, 305.
 Martha, 305.
 Martha Derby, 306.
 Martha Moseley, 306.
 Mary, 75, 216, 304-306, 387.
 Mary Bowles, 306.
 Mary Elizabeth, 306.
 Mehitabel, 305.
 Nabby, 306.
 Nancy, 305.
 Nancy B., 306.
 Nathaniel, 304-306, 341, 342.
 Patty, 305.

- West, *continued*,
 Phebe, 304.
 Rhoda, 391.
 Richard, 306.
 Ruth, 304, 305, 328.
 Sally, 305.
 Samuel, 304-306.
 Samuel Massey, 305.
 Samuel Symonds, 306.
 Sarah, 305.
 Sarah Derby, 306.
 Sarah E., 306.
 Sophie C., 306.
 Susan, 306.
 Susanna, 304, 305.
 Thomas, 134, 149, 151, 158, 227,
 301, 304-306, 322, 403.
 Thomas Barnard, 306.
 William, 216, 305.
 William Henry, 306.
 West Hoboken, N. Y., 83.
 West Indies, 1, 103, 250, 346, 347,
 361, 368, 378, 387, 425, 444.
 West Wrentham, Mass., 106.
 Westerly, R. I., 38.
 Westgate, Adam, 176, 369.
 Benjamin, 176.
 Elizabeth, 176.
 John, 176.
 Joseph, 176.
 Mary, 176.
 Robert, 176.
 Thomas, 176.
 Westminster, England, 150.
 Weston (Wesson), Charles, 105.
 Francis, 4, 13, 30.
 John, 301.
 Mary P., 105.
 Phineas R., 310.
 Sarah, 312.
 Wexford, Ireland, 366.
 Weymouth, England, 135, 317,
 359.
 Weymouth, Mass., 70, 172, 333.
 Wharf, Bethiah, 98.
 Matthew, 98.
 Wharton, Edward, 186, 212, 221,
 252, 261-263, 265-267, 273, 421.
 Eliza, 420.
 George, 186.
 Martha, 14.
 Richard, 14, 372.
 Wharves, 352-358.
 Wheaden, Robert, 48.
 Wheeler, Abraham, 150.
 Isaac, 132.
 Mary, 132.
 Thomas, 132, 185, 336, 403.
 Wheeler, *continued*,
 William, 176.
 Ziporah, 132.
 Wheelock, Anna, 377.
 Wheelwright, Alice R., 381.
 Joseph, 381.
 Whelase, Mary, 233.
 Whelp (ship), 14.
 Whipple, Elizabeth, 111.
 Mary, 113.
 Ruth, 110, 377.
 Susanna, 377.
 Whipping, 226, 257.
 Whipping post, 226, 267.
 Whiston, Abigail, 134.
 Increase, 134.
 Whitcomb, Mary, 112.
 White, Abigail, 383.
 Elias, 2.
 Elizabeth, 37, 70, 425.
 Elizabeth Jane, 385.
 John, 20, 37, 70, 71, 151.
 Margaret, 216, 237.
 Mary, 2, 297, 320.
 Mary Bowles, 306.
 Rebecca, 20.
 Remember, 82.
 Resolved, 11, 403.
 William, 237.
 Zachariah, 428.
 White Sea, 138.
 Whitefoot, Elizabeth, 404.
 Joseph, 404.
 Whitehall, 88, 269.
 Whitfield, Henry, 287.
 Sarah, 287.
 Whitar, Abraham, 252.
 Sarah, 252.
 Whiting, Abigail, 323.
 Benjamin, 285.
 Dorcas, 229, 285.
 Dorothy, 285.
 Elizabeth, 285.
 Eunice, 285.
 James, 285.
 John, 285.
 Joseph, 285.
 Oliver, 285.
 Samuel, 228, 229, 285.
 Whitman, Elizabeth, 420.
 Mary, 55.
 Whitney, Mary E., 118.
 Whittemore, Alice, 305.
 Edmund, 429.
 Sarah, 429.
 Whittier (Whiteare, Whitehaire,
 Whiteheare). Abraham, 3, 77,
 78, 179, 197, 200.

- Whittier, *continued*,
 Abram, 8.
 Ruth, 165.
 Whittredge, Elizabeth Boardman,
 125.
 Mary, 23.
 Sarah, 43.
 Sarah E., 306.
 Thomas, 43.
 Whitwell, Frederick Augustus, 385
 Mary Crowninshield, 385.
 Whitworth, Elizabeth, 104.
 Wickes. See *Weeks*.
 Wickford, England, 14.
 Wiggins, Thomas, 266.
 Wight, Isle of, 364.
 Wild, John, 208.
 Sarah, 181.
 Wiley, Lydia, 387.
 Wilkes, Robert, 357.
 Wilkins, Abigail, 116, 295-297.
 Abner, 297.
 Amos, 297.
 Anna, 294, 295, 297, 325, 445.
 Aquila, 295.
 Archelaus, 297.
 Asa, 296.
 Benjamin, 61, 295, 296, 445.
 Betty, 295.
 Bray, 294-296, 298, 394, 439, 442,
 445.
 Daniel, 295-297.
 David, 295.
 Ebenezer, 295.
 Edward, 297.
 Edward Nichols, 297.
 Elisha, 297.
 Elizabeth, 54, 119, 295, 296.
 Emma, 297.
 Esther, 297.
 Hannah, 47, 295-297.
 Henry, 295, 445.
 Ichabod, 297.
 Isaac, 295, 297, 325.
 Israel, 297.
 Ithamar, 297.
 John, 54, 295-297, 439.
 Jonathan, 295, 296.
 Joseph, 295, 297.
 Joshua, 297.
 Josiah, 297.
 Lois, 296, 297.
 Lydia, 295, 297.
 Margaret, 295, 297.
 Marjery, 296.
 Mary, 295-297.
 Mehitable, 297.
 Mercy, 295, 296.
 Naomi, 296.
 Nehemiah, 119, 295, 297.
 Othniel, 296.
 Patience, 295.
 Penelope, 297.
 Phineas, 297.
 Priscilla, 61, 188, 295, 296.
 Rachel, 296, 297.
 Rebecca, 295, 297.
 Ruth, 295.
 Samuel, 295-297.
 Sarah, 123, 295, 296.
 Solomon, 295.
 Stephen, 295.
 Susannah, 295, 297.
 Thomas, 47, 295, 439.
 Timothy, 297.
 "Wilkins' Way", 394.
 Will's hill, 294, 296, 394, 395.
 Willard, Jacob, 20.
 Josiah, 424, 428.
 Priscilla, 303.
 Sarah, 20.
 Simion, 10, 189, 303, 424.
 William (ketch), 373.
 William and John (ship), 373.
 William and John (ketch), 373.
 William and Mary (ketch), 373.
 William and Sarah (ketch), 373.
 Williams, Abraham, 199.
 Alice, 20.
 Elizabeth, 82, 314.
 George, 10, 119, 158, 172, 194,
 197, 218.
 Hannah, 111.
 Isaac, 10, 11, 178, 228, 301, 308.
 John, 10, 158-160, 286, 311, 333,
 351, 373, 402.
 Jonathan, 82.
 Mary, 237.
 Mascoll, 328.
 Patty, 325.
 Roger, 246, 366.
 Ruth, 328.
 Samuel, 10, 159, 163, 352, 353,
 398.
 Sarah, 163, 178, 328.
 Thomas, 314.
 Zerubbabel, 328.
 Williamson, John, 389.
 Sarah, 389.
 Williamstown, Mass., 54.
 Willing Mind (ketch), 373.
 Willington, Sally, 144.
 Thaddeus, 144.
 Willis, Eliza, 379.
 Willoughby, Abigail, 339, 340.

- Willoughby, *continued*,
 Francis, 340.
 Nehemiah, 7, 10, 156, 363, 402.
 Wilmington, Mass., 376.
 Wilmington, N. C., 103.
 Wilson (Willson), Abigail, 24.
 Ann, 252.
 Anna, 324.
 Annie D., 306.
 Deborah, 39, 253.
 Edward, 185.
 Elizabeth, 43, 55, 56.
 John, 52.
 Mary, 23, 56.
 Robert, 23, 39, 55, 252, 253, 270, 324.
 Robert W., 306.
 Wilton, N. H., 114, 116.
 Wincanton, England, 76, 216, 226, 283.
 Winchendon, Mass., 390.
 Winchester, Mass., 331, 427.
 Winchester Castle, 86.
 Windett, John, 186.
 Windham, Conn., 21, 277.
 Windmill, 132, 336.
 Windsor, Conn., 230.
 Windsor, Me., 138.
 Wing, Fanny, 105.
 Wingrave, England, 109.
 Winslow, Edward, 1, 37.
 Elizabeth, 37, 79.
 Winter, Deborah, 30.
 Edward, 30.
 Winter Harbor, 4.
 Island, 6, 36, 48, 237, 350, 363.
 Winthrop, Adam, 18, 28.
 Anna, 18.
 Anne, 14, 28.
 Elizabeth, 14.
 John, 4, 8, 14, 17, 18, 38, 46, 48, 49, 52, 65, 68, 69, 81, 83-85, 87, 88, 101, 107, 128, 161, 166, 174, 359, 360, 371, 400.
 Lucy, 14, 18, 29.
 Margaret, 14, 38.
 Martha, 14.
 Stephen, 16.
 Waitstill, 14.
 Wiscasset, Me., 163.
 Witches, 177, 193.
 Witch lane, 205.
 Witchcraft, 22, 32, 33, 143.
 Witchcraft Delusion, 22, 25, 33, 38.
 Withe, Martha, 425.
 Woburn, Mass., 44, 77, 109, 110, 162, 284, 378.
 Wolcott. See *Walcott*.
 Wolfe, Freeborn, 193.
 Martha, 411, 414.
 Peter, 10, 158, 169, 172, 193, 411, 414, 418.
 Wolliston River, 16.
 Wolves, 397.
 Wood, Widow, 169.
 Anne, 120.
 Eliza, 378.
 Elizabeth, 57, 378.
 Joseph A., 41.
 Matthew, 311.
 Peace, 41.
 William, 13, 19.
 Wood Hill, 376.
 Wood lane, 205.
 Woodbridge, N. J., 230.
 Woodbury (Woodberry), Andrew, 228, 301.
 Anna, 411, 414.
 Ebenezer, 191.
 Elizabeth, 411, 414.
 Frank A., 397.
 Hannah, 161, 411, 414.
 Hugh, 206, 214, 283, 411, 414, 417.
 Huldah, 116.
 Humphrey, 3, 10, 11, 127, 154, 159, 180, 206, 212, 323, 401, 402, 410, 411, 414, 418.
 Isaac, 360, 411.
 Israel, 191.
 John, 4, 5, 8, 10, 11, 15, 25, 48, 62, 64, 66, 77, 100, 107, 217, 411.
 Joseph, 116.
 Mary, 357, 411, 414.
 Nicholas, 3, 203, 212, 225, 302, 394, 402, 418.
 Paul, 418.
 Peter, 403, 411, 417.
 Susanna, 411.
 Thomas, 161, 362, 411, 417.
 William, 10, 11, 97, 98, 175, 184, 302, 402, 410, 414, 417, 418.
 Woodcock, Hannah, 306.
 Susanna, 306.
 William, 290, 293, 301, 302, 306-308.
 Woodis, Elizabeth, 20.
 John, 20.
 Woodman, —, 47.
 Woodrow, Benjamin, 62, 438, 441.
 Rebecca, 62.
 Woodward, Maria Porter, 385.
 Ruth, 102.
 Woodwell (Woodall), Alice, 280.
 Ann, 279.

- Woodwell, *continued*,
 Benjamin, 280.
 David, 280.
 Dorcas, 279.
 Elizabeth, 279, 280, 314.
 Gideon, 279.
 John, 279, 280.
 Jonathan, 280.
 Joseph, 279, 280.
 Lydia, 279, 280.
 Margaret, 279.
 Mary, 279, 280.
 Matthew, 279, 337, 338, 342, 405.
 Priscilla, 280.
 Samuel, 279, 280.
 Sarah, 279.
 Stacy, 280.
 Thomasine, 279.
 Woodworth, Nancy, 378.
 Woolcott, Josiah, 402.
 Woolen (Woolland), Edward, 10,
 11, 211, 309, 312.
 Worcester, Mass., 114, 306.
 Worcester, Samuel, 318.
 Workington, England, 38.
 Worthen, Charles, 24.
 John, 375.
 Mary, 375.
 Sarah, 24.
 Wren, Christopher, 150.
 Matthew, 150.
 Wrentham, England, 147-150.
 Wrentham, Mass., 324.
 Wright, Copia, 55.
 George, 141, 403.
 Wright, *continued*,
 Margaret, 216.
 Wyman, Annie M., 380.
 Eliza, 378.
 Elizabeth, 378.
 Eunice, 139.
 Prudence, 109, 110.
 William, 109, 110.
 YARD, EDWARD, 398.
 Yarmouth, England, 30, 71, 148,
 368.
 Yeaton, Sarah Elizabeth, 390.
 Yell, Rebecca, 295.
 Yeo, Sarah, 327.
 Thomas, 327.
 Yonkers, N. Y., 390.
 York, Me., 174, 266, 315.
 Yorkshire, 39.
 Young (Yonge, Yongs, Younges,
 Youngs), Mr., 101.
 Benjamin, 136.
 Christopher, 151, 154.
 Hannah, 319.
 Jemima, 319.
 John, 149.
 Joseph, 61, 126, 149, 152, 157, 200.
 Mary, 136, 305, 314.
 Samuel, 319.
 William, 319.
 ZANZIBAR, 390.
 Zanzibar trade, 106.
 Zimmerman, Henrietta, 106.

HECKMAN
BINDERY INC.



MAY 93

N. MANCHESTER,
INDIANA 46962

